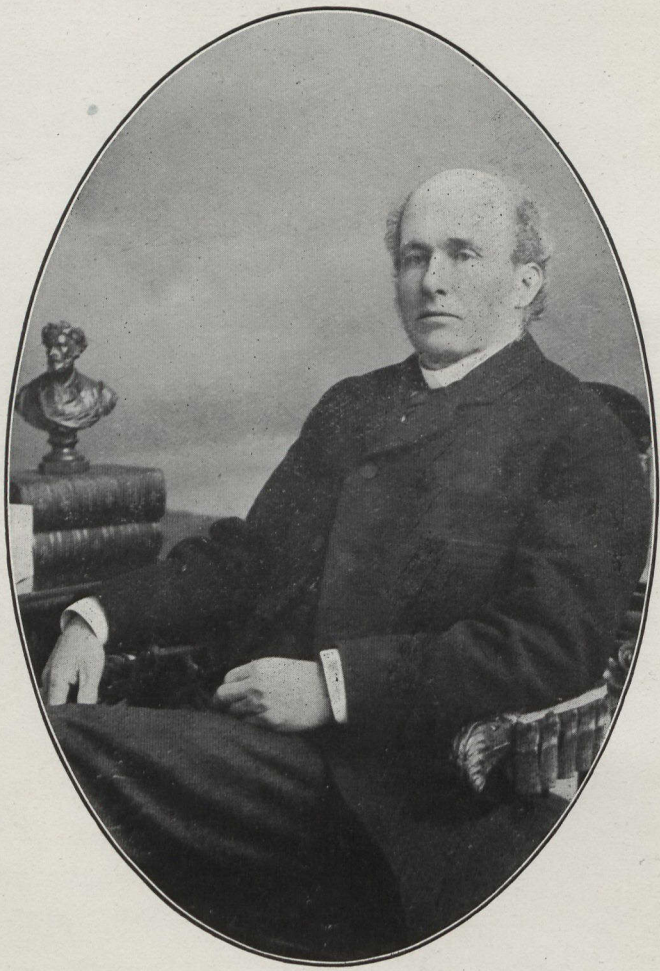


Daniel McNeill Parker, M.D.

HIS ANCESTRY AND A
MEMOIR OF HIS LIFE

William Frederick Parker



Ever yours faithfully
S. M. Parker

Daniel McNeill Parker, M.D.

**His Ancestry and a Memoir
of His Life**

Daniel McNeill and His Descendants

**BY
WILLIAM FREDERICK PARKER**

**TORONTO
WILLIAM BRIGGS
1910**

Copyright, Canada, 1910, by
WILLIAM FREDERICK PARKER

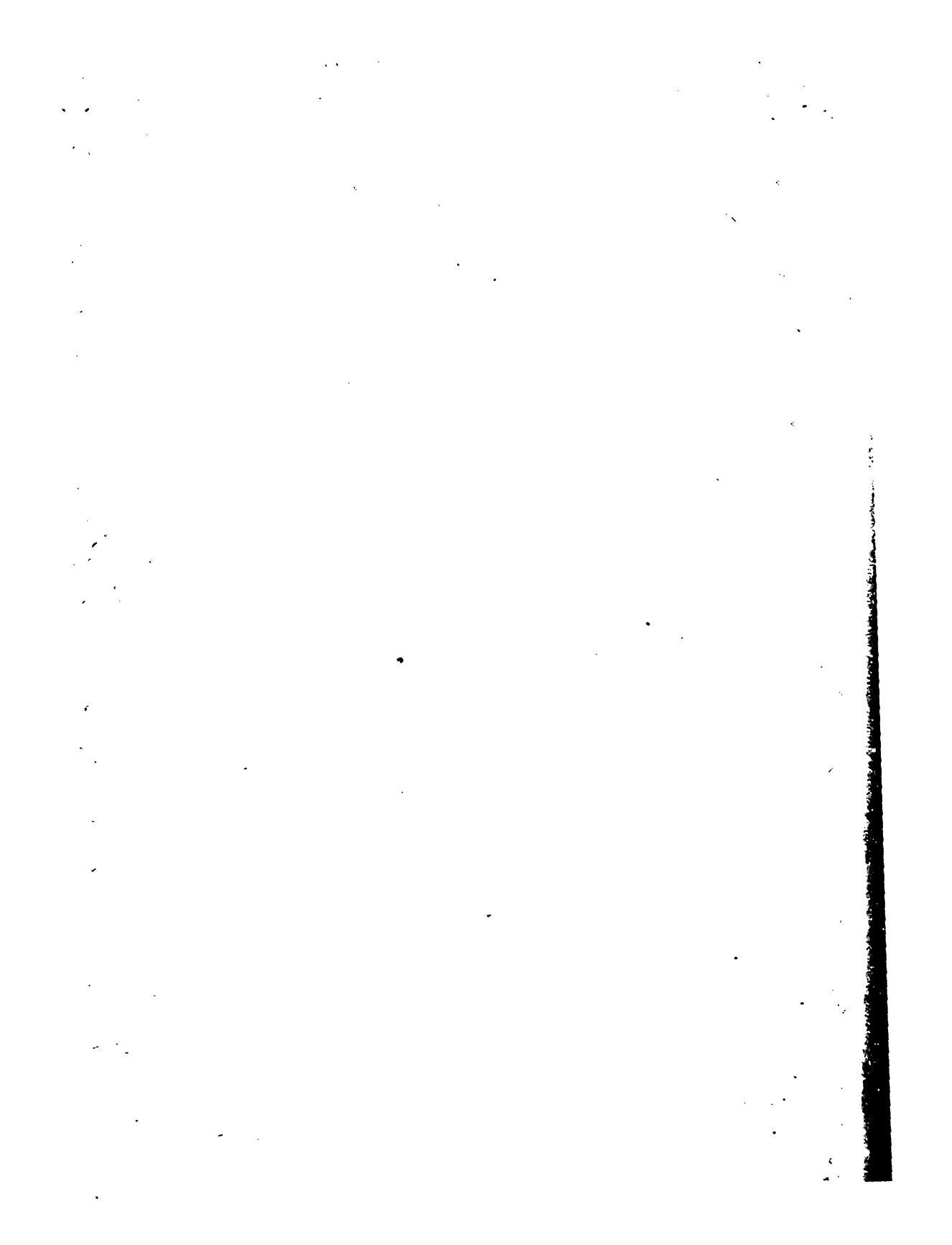
PAAP
FC
2323.1
P6 P6

100728

TO
MY MOTHER

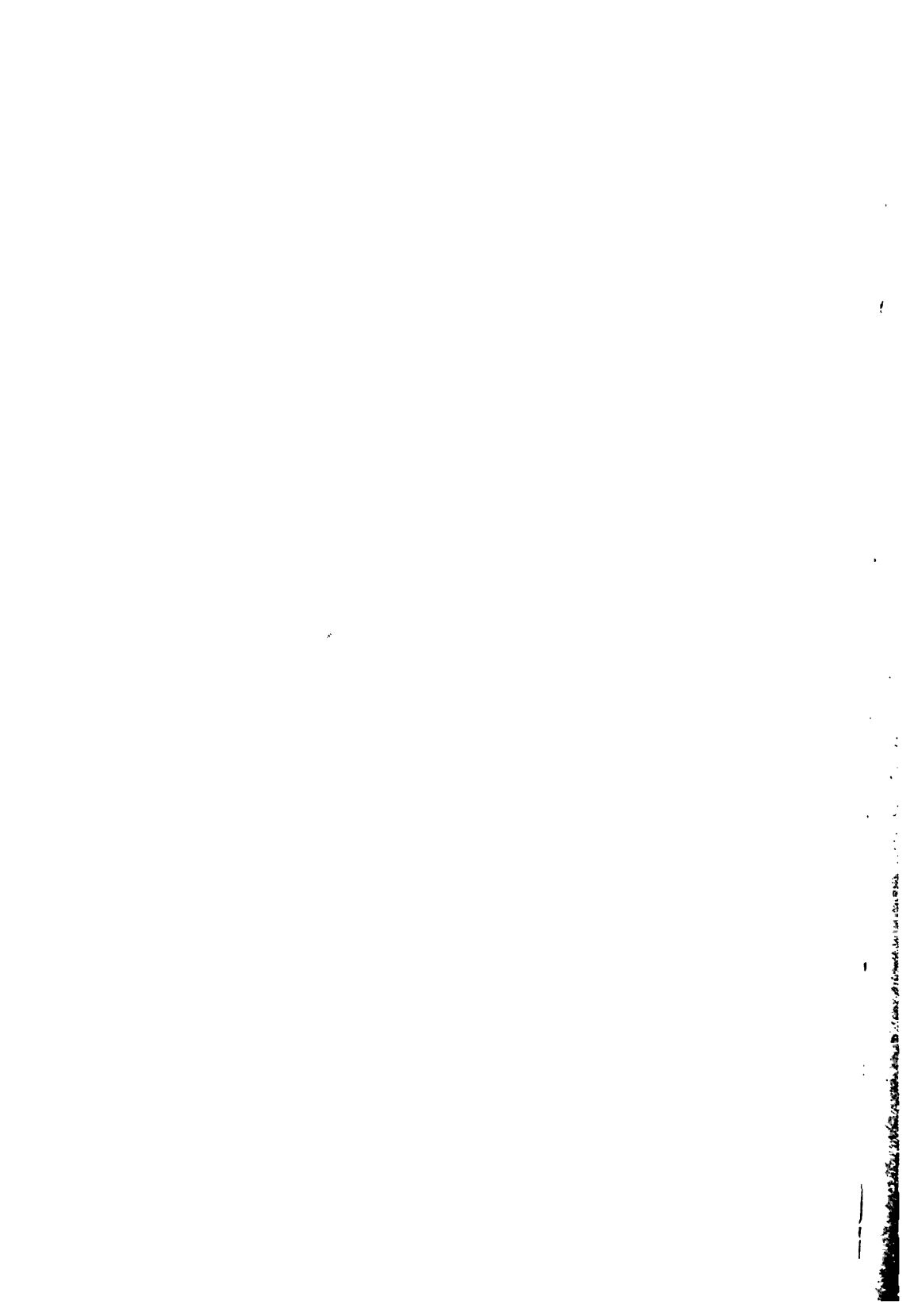
in mind and character peculiarly adapted to her husband ;
who through fifty-three years supported every
effort of his noble life ; sustained and solaced
him ; made his domestic life a fount of
strength, and love, and happi-
ness, as deep, and pure,
and perfect as mortal
man may find

I DEDICATE
THESE MEMOIRS



CONTENTS

CHAPTER.	PAGE.
Introductory	7
Daniel McNeill and His Descendants	9
I. The Parker Family	31
II. The McNeill Family	45
III. Early Years	86
IV. 1845 to 1861	111
V. The American Tour of 1861	146
VI. 1861 to 1871	203
VII. Edinburgh; 1871 to 1873	261
VIII. First Years of Consulting Practice, 1873 to 1881	322
IX. Across the Continent	335
X. The Closing Years of Activity	372
XI. The Jubilee	387
XII. Politics, and the Legislative Council	413
XIII. The Declining Years	489
XIV. "Denominational"	505
XV. From Life to Life	521
XVI. Characteristic, and General	540
APPENDICES.	
A. Recollections of Travel, Fanny A. Parker	561
B. Lectures Before the Mechanics' Institute	563
C. Cheloid. The last paper read before a Medical Society	598



INTRODUCTORY.

"Scribere jusset amor."
—Ovid.

FOR the instruction and benefit of the children, grandchildren and future descendants of my father, I desire to leave some record of his ancestry and his life.

In this ancestry, humble though it be, they will discover no cause for shame; while in the imperfect narrative of my father's life they will find that to which they may ever point with pride. From him they derive the heritage of a noble name—*clarum of venerabile nomen*; of a character and career which should ever be to them a memory and example of an exalting and inspiring nature.

My narrative is necessarily imperfect. Apart altogether from my own limitations as a narrator, I am embarrassed by the scant measure of material at my disposal. After he had relinquished the practice of his profession in the year 1895, many times did I press upon my father a suggestion that he should employ some of his leisure in writing something of a biographical or reminiscent nature. But I was always checked in this by that innate spirit of humility which characterized him, and which relentlessly forbade any such thing. Great has been our loss as a family in consequence; irreparable the loss to one who would attempt my task.

For the ancestral record materials are not altogether wanting. William Parker, senior, left a brief chronicle of family names and dates, with some other slight information. Since my father's death I discovered the original of this in the possession of Mrs. Sarah Dimock, of South Rawdon, Hants County, who derives descent from William through his daughter Mary, with whom he left these family notes. The chronicle appears to have been continued by Mary after her father's death. Through the kind offices of a kinaman, Mr. Lewis Parker, of the Assistant Receiver-General's Office at Halifax, I have procured a copy of it.

Material concerning the McNeill family I have derived from my father himself, from my personal investigations in North Carolina in 1898, as well as by correspondence with members of the family in Georgia, New York and Washington. I have thus been enabled to prepare a fairly accurate family chart or "tree" of the McNeills, which I have in my possession. Other sources

of information are the books: "Revolutionary Incidents and Sketches of Character, chiefly in the Old North State," by Rev. E. W. Carruther, D.D., published in 1854, and "Colonel Fanning's Narrative of his Exploits and Adventures as a Loyalist of North Carolina in the American Revolution," published first at Richmond, Virginia, in 1861. Judge Savary, of Annapolis, Nova Scotia, published an edition of this Narrative in 1908, critically annotated from the Loyalist point of view. Other books of reference are noted hereafter.

For information concerning the Nutting family I am chiefly indebted to the late Charles Martyr Nutting, who received it, many years ago, from a Miss Mary Nutting, of Boston, Mass.; and to Page's "History of Cambridge, Massachusetts."

A biography of the Reverend William Black was first written by Rev. Matthew Richey in 1839. Rev. T. Watson Smith, in his "History of Methodism in Eastern British America," devotes considerable attention to this ancestor of my mother, and in 1907 a smaller biography of him was published by Rev. John Maclean. An historical record of Reverend William Black's posterity was published by Cyrus Black, of Amherst, N.S., in 1885.

Concerning the Grants and other families who enter into the record I have attempted, I rest upon authenticated tradition, received from members of those families, from my father, and my uncle, Francis G. Parker.

It seems necessary to add that my monograph entitled "Daniel McNeill and his Descendants" was written by request in 1906 to supply some data for an historical record of the McNeill family which Mr. Lewis S. Atkins, of the Postmaster-General's Office at Washington, and another member of the family had in contemplation, and also for the more immediate information of kinsfolk in North Carolina, Georgia and Texas. This paper of mine, therefore, was restricted in its scope, and confined, in point of time, to the McNeills in Nova Scotia and their descendants. I have now revised it in some particulars, and I prefix it to the narrative more immediately relating to my father. In detailing the events of his life in the latter, I have tried to avoid any repetition of statement found in the former, and to make the subsequent narrative supplement and fill out the earlier one, in which only the more prominent facts in his career are given, and in condensed form.

It remains to be said that the volume which I now present has been compiled with no commercial intent, but solely as a labor of love; as a memorial record of my father, for the use of his immediate family and his descendants.

W. F. PARKER.

Wolfville, N.S.,
January 31st, 1910.

AN ACCOUNT OF DANIEL McNEILL AND HIS DESCENDANTS.

(Revised.)

DANIEL McNEILL, son of Archibald and Janet (Bahn) McNeill, was born at Lower Little River, Cumberland County, North Carolina, in 1752. Upon the outbreak of the American Revolutionary War he espoused the British cause, and for a time served as lieutenant in the 71st regiment. He first took service in May, 1776, when Sir Henry Clinton and Admiral Sir Peter Parker were at Wilmington, N.C., on their way from New York upon the first expedition against Charleston, S.C. In 1780 he obtained a commission in a North Carolina Royalist regiment, as appears by an original certificate which seems to have been granted to replace his commission, which had been lost. This certificate is as follows:

“ INSPR.-GENL'S. OFFICE, NEW YORK,
30th Aug., 1783.

“ It appears by the Records in this Office that Daniel McNeil, Esqr., was appointed captain of a company in the North Carolina Volunteers by the Right Honorable Lieut.-General Earle Cornwallis, bearing date the twenty-fourth June, one thousand seven hundred and eighty.

“ (Sgd.) AUG. PREVOST,
“ D^y. Ins.-Generl. B. A. Forces.”

Captain McNeill's next commission in the British forces is here given, from the original, as a matter of historical curiosity. The regiment mentioned is not the same as that named in the foregoing certificate.

Seal.

“ By His Excellency Sir Henry Clinton, Knight of the Most Honorable Order of the Bath, General and Commander in Chief of all His Majesty's Forces within the colonies laying on the Atlantic Ocean, from Nova Scotia to West Florida, inclusive, &c. &c. &c.

“ To Daniel McNeil, Esq.

“ By virtue of the Power and Authority in Me vested I Do hereby constitute and appoint you to be Captain of a Company

in the North Carolina Volunteers, commanded by Lieutenant Colonel Commandant John Hamilton. You are therefore to take the said Company into your care and charge, and duly to exercise as well the Officers, as Soldiers thereof in Arms and to use Your best Endeavours to keep them in good order and Discipline: and I Do hereby command them to obey You as their Captain: and You are to observe and follow such Orders and Directions from Time to Time, as You shall receive from the General or Commander in Chief of His Majesty's Forces in North America, now and for the Time being, Your Lieut. Colonel Commandant, or any other Your Superior Officer, according to the Rules and Discipline of War in Pursuance of the Trust hereby reposed in You.

Given under my Hand and Seal, at Head Quarters in New York the Twentieth day of August, one thousand Seven Hundred and Eighty One in the Twenty First Year of the Reign of our Sovereign Lord George the Third by the Grace of God, of Great Britain, France and Ireland, King, Defender of the Faith: and forth:

“By His Excellency's Command

“(Sgd) JOHN SMITH.

“(Sgd) H. CLINTON.”

Of the Captain's personal experiences in his military service few particulars have been preserved to his Nova Scotia descendants now living. He served, however, through the war from beginning to end, and was wounded twice. When his grandson, Dr. Daniel McNeill Parker, removed his remains from one cemetery to another, he extracted from one of the thigh-bones a bullet which was embedded in the bone. It was a rough slug of rolled lead, and must have been fired at close quarters to retain the position in which it was found.

At the close of the war there was a large outpouring of Royalists from the States into the British Provinces, in part compulsory and in part voluntary. These exiles became known in Canadian history as the United Empire Loyalists. Of this exodus Nova Scotia received its share. In March, 1783, the commanding officers of fourteen Provincial (Loyalist) regiments petitioned the Crown for grants of land in the colonies to the Loyalist officers and men, for pensions, half-pay, etc. On June 6th of that year the Governor of Nova Scotia informed the British Secretary of State that since the 15th of January upwards of 7,000 refugees had arrived in Nova Scotia, and that they were to be followed by 3,000 of the Provincial forces, and others besides. Murdoch, in his “History of Nova Scotia,” states that between November, 1782, and August, 1783, upwards of 13,000 Loyalist refugees had

arrived in the Province, and that in July, 1784, the total number of Loyalists arrived in Nova Scotia was 28,347.

Captain McNeill first appeared in Nova Scotia in November, 1783, when he was in Halifax in connection with the business of procuring a Crown grant of land for North and South Carolina Loyalists. On the 18th of May, 1784, a grant was made to about 400 officers, non-commissioned officers and men of Captain McNeill's regiment and the King's Carolina Rangers. Among the grantees were some South Carolina Royalists. The grant contained 61,250 acres at Country Harbor in what was then part of Halifax County, but now lying within the County of Guysborough. Captain McNeill's share, set off to him, was 1,250 acres. These settlers were brought from St. Augustine, Florida, by sea, at the expense of the British Government, in the spring of 1784. They called their settlement Stormont, a name which has been perpetuated in what is now known as the Stormont Gold District, under the Mining Laws of the Province. Murdoch, speaking of the place in August, 1784, says: "At Country Harbor (anciently called Mocodome) a new settlement or town on the East side of it, called Stormont, was in progress. The inhabitants were nearly 400 in number. Some were officers who had served in the late war."

While living here, Captain McNeill married, at Halifax, Mary Nutting, daughter of Captain John Nutting, of the corps of Royal Engineers in the British Army, and his wife, Mary Walton (Nutting), a native of South Reading, Mass. The date of the marriage was November 27th, 1788. James Walton Nutting, for fifty years Clerk of the Crown and Prothonotary (Chief Clerk) of the Supreme Court of Nova Scotia, was a brother of Mrs. McNeill. Another brother, John, was a captain in the Royal Artillery. Mary Nutting was born in Cambridge, Mass., March 6th, 1768. Her father, John, as a young man, served with Massachusetts troops against the French in America. Proscribed as a Royalist in 1778, he was forced to leave his home and property in Cambridge, and came, with his wife and family of eleven children, to Halifax. He was employed by the British Government as King's Messenger to carry despatches between America and England during the Revolutionary War. At one time when so engaged he was captured by a French man-of-war and imprisoned in France. Being well up in Freemasonry, he was assisted by brother Masons to escape, and so got safely to England. Afterwards he received a commission in the Royal Engineers and served in the Revolutionary War, being several times wounded. As captain in that corps, later, he was employed for some years at Halifax in constructing the defences of that city. Among other works, he built the old "Chain Battery" near the entrance of

the North-west Arm of Halifax Harbor, which, with a chain boom beneath it, was designed to protect the city from attack in the rear. He died in 1800, and his wife in 1830. In consideration of her husband's services to the Crown, and his heavy losses of property at Cambridge by confiscation, the Duke of Kent (father of Queen Victoria), while Commander-in-Chief in Nova Scotia, procured for the widow a special pension from the Crown. Mrs. McNeill's father (John) was a grandson of Jonathan Nutting, of Cambridge, Mass., and a great-grandson of John Nutting, a New England Puritan who was living in Woburn, Mass. in the year 1650, was one of the petitioners for the town of Chelmsford, Mass., and one of the "original proprietors" of Groton, Mass., in which latter place he settled about the year 1660. According to the family tradition this ancestor was killed in an attack by Indians on his garrison house in King Philip's War.

Little is known of Captain McNeill's life at Stormont. He had ten slaves employed upon his plantation, which must have proved an unpromising undertaking, for the locality was largely a wilderness of rock and poorly timbered. It has since proved rich in gold; but as the Crown grant of 1784 reserved this royal mineral the settlers lost nothing through ignorantly living over potential gold mines. Here his elder daughter, Mary Janet, was born, September 24th, 1789. The McNeills visited Halifax frequently. The Captain had business interests there, and the social life of the Provincial Capital was made attractive by the presence of the large military and naval forces maintained there during the European wars of the period. There were no roads in the eastern part of the Province, and communication between Stormont and Halifax was by small coasting vessels or open boats. On one occasion the Captain, in default of better conveyance, employed two Frenchmen from Cape Breton to take him to Halifax, about 110 miles distant, in a small open boat. These men knew that he had a sum of money with him, and arranged to murder him on the voyage. They talked of it as they rowed, little thinking that their passenger knew some French, and that he was armed. When their time came they threw down their oars, one reached for an axe in the bottom of the boat, and the other drew a knife. Throwing back his military cloak, their intended victim whipped out a brace of horse-pistols, and covering both of the villains, bade them, in vigorous if not elegant French, to row, threatening to kill instantly either of them who dropped a stroke. There were yet many miles to go, but all night he kept them at it, calmly but ruthlessly sitting with a pistol on each knee. Arrived at the landing beach in Halifax next day, the weary Frenchmen took to the water before the boat was beached, and, despite the Captain's efforts to have them detained by the people

on shore, they broke through the busy throng, and taking to the woods, were never discovered. But the Captain had the boat by way of compensation. In her correspondence with members of the Nutting family his elder daughter refers to some of the family excursions to Halifax. In one letter she describes a return voyage to Stormont after a visit to the city to do some shopping. The passengers were huddled in the cabin of a little schooner for the night. Yet, she says, "the voyage would have been pleasant enough but for the continual screaming of Captain Marshall's cross baby." Captain Marshall was a brother officer of her father, who became one of the Stormont settlers. This obnoxious infant became Chief Justice John G. Marshall, of the Court of Common Pleas for Cape Breton, and his daughter married a brother of the second wife of Dr. Daniel McNeill Parker, Captain McNeill's grandson.

During his military career Daniel McNeill had met at New York Captain Robert Grant, of the 42nd Highland Regiment ("The Black Watch"), and an intimate friendship arose between them. Grant was the British officer who, to win a wager, cantered his horse through Trinity Church—up the main aisle from the Broadway entrance, wheeling to the right before the altar, and out by the rear door into the churchyard—during divine service on a Sunday morning. This occurred when the British cause was waning at New York, and the mad prank might have cost him his life. Grant quitted the army at the close of the war. He married a Miss Bergen, of New York, and, removing to Nova Scotia, had settled at "Loyal Hill," on the Avon River, about eight miles below Windsor, the county town of Hants, and fifty miles west of Halifax. Their son, Michael Bergen Grant, married, July 10th, 1800, Sophia Elizabeth Nutting, a sister of Mrs. Daniel McNeill.

Captain McNeill often visited the new "Loyal Hill" plantation. Windsor, near by, the seat of King's College, a busy little town rapidly increasing in size and importance through the Loyalist immigration, and being, moreover, a garrison town, was a much more desirable place than Stormont; while the better soil for tillage and the fine natural scenery about the Avon and the Basin of Minas must have proved most attractive to one coming from the rougher and less congenial eastern part of the Province. To these considerations add the prospect of having the Grants for neighbors, and it is not difficult to understand McNeill's resolution to remove into the neighborhood of "Loyal Hill." In or about the year 1797 he removed thither and founded a new home on the eastern shore of Minas Basin, in Hants County, calling the place Cambridge, after old Cambridge, the birthplace of his wife, whence, as a child ten years of age, she had fled with her

proscribed father from the Massachusetts "Whigs." His brother-in-law, James, acquired an adjoining estate, though living most of the time in Halifax. Previous to his permanent removal to Hants County, the Captain's twin children, Archibald John and Sophia Margaret, were born at Windsor, March 27th, 1793. The son died in early boyhood.

In 1811 Captain McNeill revisited North Carolina. His father had died, and, as appears by his will, dated April 17th, 1801, had devised to his son Daniel 323 acres of land in Chatham County, near the mouth of New Hope, and other land on McKay's Creek, in Cumberland County (N.C.), with a provision that "in case my son Daniel nor any of his heirs in Nova Scotia should never come to claim the said plantations," then they should be equally divided between "my son Hector's son Daniel and my grandson John McNeill's son also named Daniel." The will also bequeathed to Captain Daniel "twenty milch cows out of my stock to be sold and the money put to interest for the benefit of Daniel and his heirs"; and there was a contingent reversionary devise of another plantation to Daniel and his heirs. It is known that the Captain, during this visit, engaged in litigation with his brother Neill (who was an executor of the will), and with other persons, concerning his interests under his father's will; but his Nova Scotia descendants are unaware of the particulars of this controversy. In a letter, dated Cumberland County, N.C., July 17th, 1838, Dr. John McKay, who married Mary McNeill, youngest daughter of Margaret McNeill, Daniel's sister, informs Francis Parker, Daniel's son-in-law, "that the Captain made some arrangement of his business when he returned to Nova Scotia, expecting in a short time to return to North Carolina," but that since he left, he, Dr. McKay, and his wife had never heard anything more of this business. It seems that the Captain never returned. By his will, dated January 8th, 1814, and probated at Windsor, N.S., he devised the two plantations first above mentioned to his daughter, Mary Janet, but no steps were taken by her to recover these properties. While in his native State on this occasion the following letter to him from his younger brother John (copied from the original) may be of interest to the family. It is addressed: "Mr. Danl. McNeill, Cape Fear, Sproule's Ferry Cumberland County," on the cover, with the added words, "favored by Mr. A. Gilchrist."

The letter is as follows:

"MOORE COUNTY, DEEP RIVER,
"June 3rd, 1811.

"DR. BROTHER,—Last night I had the pleasure of Mr. Malcolm Buie's company, and Mr. Archd. Gilchrist, lately from Tennessee, by whom I shall send these few lines, as he is going directly

down to Mr. D. Shaw's. Since I came to this place there has no remarkable occurrence taken place which is worthy of inserting in a letter. I am happy to inform you that I am perfectly satisfied with my situation, that I have interviews with agreeable companions and hospitable citizens. The inhabitants of this vicinity are more accomplished, their manners and customs more refined than is common in Country villages. This is an advantage which induces me to make choice of this place in preference to any other country situation and even town itself. When I first came I commenced memorising the Greek grammar. I have gone partially through it once and have begun to read the Greek Testament, and I must confess that I find it more difficult than any study I have ever undertaken; but I hope time and application will surmount this difficulty. My classmate, Mr. Moor, is a very agreeable young man and spares no pains to give me every information he can and in making me acquainted with the most respectable citizens. It is now late in the morning, I must go to school. I have been perfectly well since I came here, hoping this may find you and the family enjoying the same. I wish you every success with your farm. I remain your most affectionate Brother, etc.

“(Sgd.) JOHN MACNEILL.”

“D. McNEILL.”

“N.B.—It is expected we will have an exhibition at our school about the first of July, when there will be a fortnight's vacation. If so I shall write you by the mail if no other opportunity.”

Early in 1812 Captain McNeill returned to Nova Scotia, bringing with him a considerable number of slaves. A short time before he landed at Windsor, doubts as to the legality of slave-owning in the Province had arisen, in consequence of some ill-considered, off-hand dicta of Chief Justice Blowers in deciding, upon a writ of habeas corpus, a question of the custody of a slave at Halifax who had run away from Shelburne. The deliverance of the Chief Justice was taken by the people for law. Slaves were encouraged to desert their service, and the losses to slave-owners proved serious in many cases. Most of these slave-holders were Southern Loyalists. As Judge Haliburton, of the Nova Scotia Supreme Court, says in his History of the Province, writing of this period: “On this subject there prevailed much romance and false sentiment in Nova Scotia as well as in England.” He, in common with many other of the best legal authorities in the British Provinces, held that slavery there contravened no law previous to the British Emancipation Act of 1833, which rendered it illegal in all British possessions. However, Captain McNeill's slaves, on landing, were told by certain officious persons in Windsor

that they were "free niggers" when they touched British soil, and nearly all the male slaves ran away.

Dr. T. Watson Smith, in his book, "The Slave in Canada" (p. 115), relating this incident, prefaces the account by saying that "perhaps no experience at this period was more trying than that of Captain Daniel McNeill." Dr. Smith states that these slaves had been accepted by the Captain on account of his property claims in North Carolina. In July, 1812, five hundred acres of the Stormont property were sold. The remaining seven hundred and fifty acres were never disposed of, and fell into the possession of squatters who were never disturbed.

It appears to have been about the year 1800 that the Captain lost his wife. Hers was a tragic end. Delirious in fever on a winter's night, she escaped from her nurse. Her naked footprints in the snow were traced to the brink of a bluff overhanging the waters of Minas Basin, near the house. The Fundy tide, which there rapidly ebbs and flows a full fifty feet, beat against the cliff. Search was unavailing. Her body was never recovered.

Owing to the loss of the family Bible, to which reference is made elsewhere, the date of this event cannot now be ascertained; nor can the date of the marriage of Captain McNeill's elder daughter. She, MARY JANET, married FRANCIS PARKER, of Windsor, N.S., probably in 1819. He was a merchant doing business there at the time of this marriage, but later he removed to Petite Rivière, a few miles north of Cambridge, where through his success in shipbuilding, the quarrying and export of plaster and gypsum, and in the conduct of a general mercantile business, he founded and built up a village which he named Walton, after the maiden name of his wife's grandmother.

No portrait of "Jennet" McNeill in early life remains; but old people who remembered the youth and fashion of Windsor when she was a bride were wont to remark to her descendants that "Jennet McNeill and Francis Parker were the handsomest couple" appearing either in Windsor or in Halifax society. She had a mind well formed and cultivated. As a wife and mother she was to her husband and children incomparable. To the community in which she lived and to all comers she appeared to embody a catalogue of the graces, and by no means least, that of hospitality. Francis Parker, born January 17th, 1797, was a son of John Parker, of Newport Township, County of Hants, N.S., and Sarah Grant, his wife, a daughter of Captain Robert Grant, of "Loyal Hill," the soldier friend of Captain McNeill. John Parker was the son of one of three Yorkshire Parkers (brothers) who, sailing from Hull, England, in March, 1774, came to Halifax and settled, two in Hants and one in Colchester County, as farmers and graziers. Francis Parker, from the time of his settlement in

Walton until old age, was the chief magistrate of his township. He was well read in law, though not a lawyer, and was a man of fine and discriminating literary taste. His nobility of character comported well with a distinguished courtliness of demeanor, which made him what is called a "gentleman of the old school." In charity he might have rivalled Saint Martin of Tours. The open-handed hospitality of the "Squire's" home is proverbial to this day. He was prosperous in business; and had not his Maine and Massachusetts rivals in the business of milling and grinding plaster leagued against him to secure from Congress a prohibitive duty on ground plaster, thus shutting the manufactured material out of the American market, he would have been comparatively wealthy. Three of his larger ships, "The Walton," "The Pembroke," and "The Wentworth," noted vessels in their day, were commanded by three of his sons. He was originally a member of the Church of England, but in middle life united with the Baptist Church at Walton. Mrs. Parker, too, followed this course of her husband in religious matters.

CAPTAIN DANIEL McNEILL died of apoplexy at Cambridge on May 5th, 1818, aged 66 years, and was interred in the Loyal Hill family burial ground of the Grants. Years afterwards, the Loyal Hill plaster quarry at the beach having gradually encroached upon this old cemetery, his grandson, Dr. Daniel McNeill Parker, removed his body to the Parker family cemetery at Walton, where his dust now mingles with that of his two daughters and many of his descendants.

MARY JANET PARKER died at Walton, March 7th, 1866, aged 76 years. FRANCIS PARKER died at Walton, August 24th, 1882, at the age of 85.

DESCENDANTS OF FRANCIS PARKER AND MARY JANET PARKER.

The children of Francis and Mary Janet Parker are: James Walton, Daniel McNeill, John Nutting, Frederick H., Francis Grant, Wentworth Foster, Mary Sophia.

1. JAMES WALTON PARKER was born at Windsor, in the County of Hants, Nova Scotia, about 1820. He followed the sea from early life, and while commanding one of his father's ships upon a voyage to the East, perished with the ship, which was never heard of after setting sail. He was never married.

2. THE HONORABLE DANIEL McNEILL PARKER, M.D., L.R.C.S. Edin., D.C.L., was born at Windsor, in the County of Hants, Nova Scotia, April 28th, 1822. In his early childhood his father removed to Walton, in the same county. Daniel, when not at school, was employed in getting out ship timber for his father. The only boasting he was ever known to indulge in was

that at eight years of age he could handle a team of as many oxen in the lumber woods,—and do it as well as *any other man*. His early education was obtained principally at King's Collegiate School, Windsor, and at Horton Collegiate Academy, Wolfville, N.S. He began the study of Medicine at Halifax, N.S., with Dr. William Bruce Almon, the son of a Georgia loyalist army officer; and in 1842 went to the University of Edinburgh, Scotland. On July 1st, 1845, he received the diploma of the Royal College of Surgeons, Edinburgh, taking the gold medal for Anatomy. On August 1st of the same year he graduated M.D. at the University of that city. During his course of study there he served, in his vacations, as clinical clerk to Sir James Y. Simpson, the distinguished gynecologist and discoverer of chloroform; and also to Sir Robert Christison, a notable physician. Among many celebrated men of Scotland who were his friends during these years of study was Dr. Thomas Chalmers, the Presbyterian divine. For fifty years Dr. Parker practised his profession in Halifax, N.S., frequently going abroad for advanced study and information, that he might keep pace with the rapid advance of medical and surgical science. In 1871 he relinquished his practice and went to Edinburgh, where, until 1873, he engaged in special surgical research, sometimes visiting London and some of the European capitals. Upon his return to Halifax he established himself as a consulting surgeon, in which capacity his services were sought throughout Nova Scotia and the adjacent Provinces. In August, 1895, he retired from practice. He is an honorary member of the Gynecological Society of Boston, Mass., and of many other medical and surgical societies, and has contributed much to the periodical literature of his profession. Much of his time has been given, during a busy life, to philanthropical and educational work, as well as to the more public service of his country. He was a commissioner from Nova Scotia for the International Exhibition of 1851, at London, and for his services received from the Prince Consort a commemorative medal. In 1867, previous to the confederation of the British Provinces, he was appointed a member of the Legislative Council of Nova Scotia, the Upper House of the Legislature; and when he resigned this office in 1901, on account of impaired health, he was the sole surviving member of that body who derived appointment from the Government of Great Britain. A few extracts from the speeches of his colleagues in the Legislature upon the occasion of his voluntary retirement will be indicative of the esteem in which he has been held in private as well as public life. Said one: "He is a man prized for his sterling worth, his uprightness and integrity, and his great business and executive ability. Notwithstanding Hon. Dr. Parker's political views, I never knew him once actuated solely by party motives.

He was always anxious to do what was right and just in connection with private bills, and what was right and wise in connection with public measures, so that bills coming from the Lower House to this House were often amended in most important particulars through his instrumentality. He was a perfect gentleman, one of nature's noblemen, and it is but voicing the sentiments of honorable members of this House to say that the better he was known the more highly he was appreciated. He was at all times at his post in the Committee on Bills, and he took an active part in the debates of this House. Universal regret has been expressed by honorable members of this House when he tendered his resignation. It is a loss, not only to this House, but to the Province at large."

Speaking for the Government, of which Dr. Parker was an opponent, the Chairman of the Council's Committee on Bills said: "In recent years we (the Government) have told him (Dr. Parker) again and again that if he did not feel able to devote the entire day to the work of the House and its committees, we would be glad to have him come and remain a short time while the House was in session, so that we could still have his valuable assistance. The long period he had spent in this chamber gave him a large experience in legislation and enabled him to speak with matured judgment in every matter that came before it." These remarks had reference to two previous occasions when Dr. Parker had withdrawn his resignation at the earnest request of the Government and his colleagues. In the speech of another colleague in the Legislative Council occurs this tribute: "I realize that Dr. Parker maintained here that high standard in regard to public matters, which in private matters has always been associated with his name. I regard Dr. Parker as one of the choice spirits of this Province. The words 'integrity' and 'honorable dealing' hardly express to my mind the rare qualities which go to make up the doctor's personality. He is a man of most tender regard for the feelings as well as the rights of others, which make all his dealings with his fellow men emanate from the bed-rock of justice. He knows neither Trojan nor Tyrian in church or state. He has that sense of dealing with his fellows as he would be dealt by, which makes his public and private life an embodiment of the golden rule."

In 1877, Dr. Parker was chosen by his political opponents, the Government of the day, as a delegate to the Fredericton Conference on the matter of a Union of the three Maritime Provinces of Canada, and in his capacity of legislator he was frequently engaged in special political service and prominent in the counsels of his country. Yet he uniformly declined various offers of political preferment, both in Provincial and Federal

affairs. In his contributions to educational and philanthropic work in Nova Scotia he has filled, among others, the following offices: He was a Commissioner of Schools for the City of Halifax upon the institution and organization of the Free School System in Nova Scotia. For about twenty-nine years he was a member of the Board of Governors of Acadia College at Wolfville, N. S. He was active in promoting the establishment of the Halifax Medical College, and for many years was an examiner for that Institution. For many years he occupied a prominent position on the original commission which governed the affairs of the Provincial and City Hospital, and of the Poor's Asylum, at Halifax, and was later a valued member of the Boards of the Victoria General Hospital, the Halifax Dispensary, and the Provincial Board of Health. Early in his career he was Chairman of the Commissioners of the Nova Scotia Hospital for the Insane. He was long a consulting physician and surgeon of the Hospitals above mentioned, and of the Halifax Infirmary. He has been President of the Provincial Medical Association of Nova Scotia and of the Canada Medical Association. For thirty years he was President of the Institution for the Deaf and Dumb, at Halifax, and for many years President of the Home for the Aged, in the same city, and a Director of the Protestant Orphans' Home there. In early life he was a manager of the Mechanics' Institute at Halifax, and a frequent lecturer for that Society. He also served on the Managing Board of the Industrial School at Halifax for a time. As a Director of the Halifax Young Men's Christian Association, he contributed much to its work. With the development of all these institutions he has been closely identified. A member of the Baptist denomination, he was active in all its work, filling positions from time to time on various Managing Boards of the Baptist Convention of the Maritime Provinces, of which Convention he was, for a term, the President. In 1882, Acadia College conferred upon him the honorary degree of D.C.L. In business life he was for many years a Director of the Halifax Gas Light Company, and President, both of the Nova Scotia Benefit Building Society and the Halifax and Dartmouth Steam Ferry Company. He was also one of the first Directors of the Windsor and Annapolis Railway (during the period of construction).

Dr. Parker travelled much in the British Isles, Europe, the West India Islands, the United States and Canada. He has been an eye-witness of historic events, including the final scene in the disruption of the Church of Scotland in 1843, the beginning of one great war in the bombardment and surrender of Fort Sumpter in 1861, and the closing scenes of another, after the bloody work of the Commune at Paris which followed the surrender

of that city to the Germans in 1870. When the Civil War in the United States was beginning, Dr. Parker was at McNeill's Ferry, North Carolina, the guest of Colonel Archibald McNeill. During that exciting period he saw, both in the South and in the North, the preparations for that awful struggle. He saw Major Anderson carried a prisoner through the streets of Charleston, and was himself shut up in that city for a few days, a virtual prisoner, forbidden to leave, write or telegraph, and afterwards having to make his way North with the Southern army, and then on to Philadelphia across country by teams and along the coast in small boats.

When Dr. Parker retired from the practice of his profession, in August, 1895, he was the recognized leader, and father of the profession in his native Province, and he has since been styled "the Dean of Canadian Medicine." Such recognition was eulogistically given him by his professional brethren in an address presented to him by them at that time. His published reply to this address embodies an interesting historical retrospect of the progress of medicine and surgery in Nova Scotia during his professional career. From this we learn that he was the first surgeon in Nova Scotia, and probably in Canada, to employ an anesthetic in surgery, first testing it upon himself to see if it would prove harmless to his patient. Among the many tributes of esteem rendered him at that time by the secular and religious press of the Maritime Provinces, the following, from the "Presbyterian Witness" of Halifax, perhaps embodies most concisely the general sentiments expressed. "On the 1st August, Hon. Dr. Parker attained to his 'golden jubilee' as a physician. His career has been long, and it has been honorable, stainless, and altogether worthy of a Christian. He has been a public-spirited citizen, showing his interest in all that concerned the welfare of the people. For twenty-nine or thirty years he has been a member of the Legislative Council. He has given of his time and means unsparingly to help philanthropic and religious societies. A member and trusted office-bearer of the Baptist Church, he has at the same time manifested his generous interest in all Christian work. It is not for us to speak of his admirable and signally successful professional career. As a physician, he won the respect and confidence of thousands, and he placed very many under life-long obligations. We respectfully tender to Dr. Parker our congratulations, and we wish him many additional years of usefulness. Our young physicians could hardly err in marking the career of Dr. Parker, and in imitating as closely as may be his devotion to his profession, his Christian integrity, his unswerving fidelity to principle, and the blameless purity of his whole life."

Dr. Parker was twice married. His first marriage, on June 10th, 1847, was to Elizabeth Ritchie Johnstone, daughter of the Honorable James W. Johnstone, Attorney-General of Nova Scotia, and afterwards the Judge in Equity of that Province. Judge Johnstone was of a Georgia family. His father, as a Loyalist, having been obliged to flee the country, his mother, after the father's death in Jamaica, made a new home in Nova Scotia. By this marriage there was one son, James Johnstone Parker, born August 15th, 1852, died July 1st, 1872, while a medical student at the University of Edinburgh. The mother survived the birth of her son only for a few days. On August 26th, 1854, Dr. Parker married Fanny Holmes Black, daughter of the Honorable William Anderson Black, of Halifax, N.S., merchant, a member of the Provincial Government with a seat in the Legislative Council. Mr. Black was a son of the Reverend William Black, who was the first emissary of John Wesley in America, and who sowed the earliest seeds of Wesleyan Methodism from Upper Canada and Newfoundland to Maryland and the West Indies. It is a curious coincidence that in 1774, the paternal great-grandfathers, both of the doctor and the second Mrs. Parker, came to Halifax from Hull, Yorkshire, in England, strangers to each other, in the same ship. By his second marriage, Dr. Parker had the following children: WILLIAM BLACK PARKER, born April 26th, 1856, died April 28th, 1856. MARY ANN PARKER, born August 14th, 1857; married, July 25th, 1894, Reverend Elias Miles Keirstead, D.D., LL.D., Professor of Moral Philosophy and English Literature in Acadia College, Wolfville, N. S.; later Professor of Systematic Theology in McMaster University at Toronto, Ont. Dr. Keirstead is a descendant of Hans Keirstead, an early Dutch settler of Manhattan Island, whose land comprised the site of Trinity Church, on Broadway, New York City. His nearer ancestors were United Empire Loyalists, expelled from their New York homes to found new ones in the wilds of New Brunswick. Dr. Keirstead has a widespread reputation throughout Canada and the United States for profound scholarship and exceptional ability as a teacher and orator. His cultured mind has been enriched by travel and study in many lands. IDA McNEILL PARKER, born July 26th, 1859; died May 25th, 1860. WILLIAM FREDERICK PARKER, born September 16th, 1860; married, April 5th, 1886, Kate Bell Welton, daughter of the late Reverend Daniel Moree Welton, D.D., Ph.D. (Leipsig), Professor of Semitic Languages at McMaster University, Toronto, Ontario, and earlier a professor at Acadia College in his native Province of Nova Scotia. Dr. Welton's ancestors were Loyalist refugees from Connecticut, driven from their homes at the close of the Revolutionary War. His wife, Sarah Messenger,

derives a Scottish ancestry through a Colonel Graham who commanded a Highland regiment under Wolfe at the taking of Quebec. The Messengers were of New England stock. Mr. Parker was educated at Halifax, N.S.; Edinburgh, Scotland; Acadia College, Wolfville, N.S., and at Harvard University. Admitted to the Bar of Nova Scotia on January 19th, 1885, he practised his profession for sixteen years at Halifax, and afterwards removed to Wolfville, N.S., to reside, on account of impaired health. **LAURA McNEILL PARKER**, born May 30th, 1862; married, October 26th, 1887, McCallum Grant, of Halifax, merchant, a great-grandson of Captain Robert Grant, of the 42nd Highlanders, who has been referred to earlier as a friend and fellow-soldier of Captain Daniel McNeill. Mr. Grant fills a large part in Halifax commercial circles, and is Imperial Consul for Germany at that port. **FANNY ALINE PARKER**, born July 14th, 1868. She is unmarried and resides with her parents at Dartmouth, N.S.

The children of Mary Ann Keirstead are: Ronald McNeill Keirstead, born June 20th, 1895, and Mary Frances Keirstead, born September 30th, 1896.

The children of William Frederick Parker are: Frederick Daniel Parker, born April 5th, 1888; Arthur McNeill Parker, born June 28th, 1895, and William Allan Parker, born June 20th, 1901.

The children of Laura McNeill Grant are: Eric McNeill Grant, born May 8th, 1889; Gerald Wallace Grant, born March 22nd, 1891; Margaret Frances Grant, born August 8th, 1893; John Moreau Grant, born July 17th, 1895; Grainger Stewart Grant, born July 5th, 1897; Harold Taylor Wood Grant, born March 16th, 1899. It may interest the Southern reader to know that the last-mentioned child was named, in part, for the late Captain John Taylor Wood, of Halifax (a dear friend of the family), who, during the Civil War in the United States, rendered distinguished service to the South as Commander of the Confederate cruiser "Talahassee"; as a lieutenant on the "Merrimac" in her engagement with the United States fleet at Hampton Roads which culminated in the famous duel with the "Monitor"; also as commander of a naval detachment in the defence of the James River against the Northern gunboats. Captain Wood was a grandson of President Zachary Taylor (his mother being General Taylor's eldest daughter), and a nephew (by marriage) of President Jefferson Davis, whose first wife was General Taylor's second daughter. At the close of the war Captain Wood was on President Davis' staff with the rank of colonel, and was with him at the time of his capture. After a romantic escape from his captors, Captain Wood made his home in Halifax, N.S., where he died in 1905.

3. JOHN NUTTING PARKER (born 1824, died September 26th, 1868, and buried in Liverpool, England), engaged in a seafaring life and became commander of one of his father's ships, trading mostly between China and Great Britain. In 1868 he was accidentally drowned at Liverpool, England, where his ship was lying. He never married.

4. FREDERICK H. PARKER (born in 1825, died December 3rd, 1858), like his brothers James and John, went to sea from his boyhood, and became a captain in his father's service. His voyages took him chiefly to the Indian and China seas and the Mediterranean, in the barque "Walton." He too, lost his life in following his profession. He was never married. His body was interred at Cardiff, Wales.

5. WENTWORTH FOSTER PARKER was born at Walton in 1828. He began life as a clerk in a bank at Windsor, N.S., and afterwards engaged in business in Walton. He married Eliza Mary Ratchford Crane, of Cumberland County, N.S., a daughter of Silas Hibbert Crane. The Cranes were of a New England Loyalist family, exiled after the Revolutionary War. Mr. Parker's career was short. He died on October 18th, 1868.

The children of Wentworth Foster Parker are: SUSAN HALIBURTON, died in infancy; ANNE CHANDLER, born at Walton, January 13th, 1861. She took up the profession of a nurse, receiving her training at the Boston City Hospital, where she became a superintendent of nurses. For some years Miss Parker has been the superintendent of the Hale Hospital at Haverhill, Mass.; JANET McNEILL, born at Walton, September 13th, 1863, died at Amherst, N.S., October 27th, 1889, unmarried. HELEN SOPHIA GRANT, born November 21st, 1866. Resides with her mother at Amherst, N.S.

6. FRANCIS GRANT PARKER was born at Walton, Hants County, Nova Scotia, August 15th, 1830. In early life he was engaged in business in Chicago, and afterwards in New York. In 1864 he began business in Halifax, Nova Scotia, as a wholesale dealer in flour, tea and salt. Later he engaged in the milling of flour, in partnership with his brother-in-law, John Grant. He was active in promoting the manufacturing interests of Halifax, and was a public-spirited citizen. He was President of the Nova Scotia Cotton Mills Company, and of the Starr Manufacturing Company, whose business consists in the making of the Starr "Acme" patent skate, and in all kinds of iron and steel manufacture, including the construction of bridges. He was also a Director of the People's Bank of Halifax, a chartered bank of Canada. He was actively engaged in politics, and was the first President of the "Morning Herald" Printing and Publishing Company, which, in his time, conducted the chief Nova Scotia newspaper in the interests of the Conservative party.

About 1895 Mr. Parker retired from business, having become a prey to inflammatory rheumatism, which confined him much of the time to his home.

On June 5th, 1867, he married Marianne Grant, daughter of John Nutting Grant, of Loyal Hill, and a great-granddaughter of Captain Robert Grant of the 42nd Highlanders. There were no children of the marriage. Mr. Parker died on the 9th day of August, 1905. His wife survives him. He was of an ardent, impulsive, generous and loving temperament. A friend to the poor and to every good cause calling for benevolence or charity, a friend of every child within a wide radius of his home, especially devoted to his entire family connection, his memory is ever fresh; for "to live in hearts we leave behind is not to die."

7. MARY SOPHIA PARKER was born at Walton in 1834. She married Charles Rathburn Allison of Windsor, N.S., merchant, in 1857. In 1875 she became a widow, and afterwards resided with her father until his death. She died at Hampton, New Brunswick, July 22nd, 1898. Her seven children are: (1) FREDERICK ALLISON, died in infancy; (2) FRANCES ALLISON, died in infancy; (3) FOSTER ALLISON, who followed the sea and became a captain in the merchant service. He died on board his ship, of yellow fever, at Havana, June 23rd, 1882, aged about 22. He was unmarried; (4) MARY McNEILL ALLISON, born September 6th, 1861, married, April 20th, 1887, Rev. Charles Arthur Warneford, of New Brunswick, an Episcopal clergyman, son of Rev. Edmund Arthur Warneford, a native of Surrey, England. She died in the Province of New Brunswick on August 7th, 1888, leaving no child; (5) HARRIET PENNISTON ALLISON, born November 18th, 1864, married, July 20th, 1888, Percy H. Warneford, of Hampton, New Brunswick, Physician, a brother of her sister Mary's husband. She died at Hampton, April 26th, 1905, survived by her husband and the following children: ARTHUR KEMYS SWEETING WARNEFORD, born April 9th, 1890; HARRY McNEILL WARNEFORD, born April 17th, 1892; ERIC PERCY WARNEFORD, born June 9th, 1897; (6) CHARLES RATHBURN ALLISON, born in 1866, went to sea when a boy and became a master's mate on a Nova Scotia ship. During the summer of 1886, while on a voyage to Central America from the West Indies, the officers and crew were stricken with yellow fever, and among those who died and were buried at sea was young Allison. The ship was found in the Gulf of Mexico with two or three dying men on board and was towed to port; (7) FRANK HECTOR ALLISON, born in 1872, died at Amherst, N.S., March 11th, 1889.

In consequence of the loss of Francis Parker's family Bible in a fire which destroyed Dr. Warneford's house at Hampton, certain dates in the foregoing narrative cannot be supplied.

DESCENDANTS OF SOPHIA MARGARET McNEILL.

SOPHIA MARGARET McNEILL was twice married. Her first husband, whom she married, probably in 1809, was STEPHEN TERHUNE, who was of a Loyalist family from New York, settled in Hants County. Of this marriage there were four children: DANIEL McNEILL TERHUNE, born September 6th, 1810; MARY ANN TERHUNE, born May 13th, 1812; SARAH ELIZA TERHUNE, born April 23rd, 1814; and JANET BELINDA TERHUNE, born June 15th, 1816; died April 17th, 1869. Save in the case of Janet Belinda, further records of the Terhune family cannot now be ascertained. The children and grandchildren have removed to the United States, where they seem to have scattered widely. Daniel McNeill, Mary Anne and Sarah Eliza are dead, and their descendants have not communicated with their Nova Scotia kinsfolk. Daniel's son, Alpheus, resides in Everett, Mass.. Sarah Eliza married a Salter, and a son of hers lives in Hantsport, N.S. JANET BELINDA TERHUNE, married, February 23rd, 1835, Isaac O'Brien of Noel, Hants County, farmer. Mr. O'Brien died March 29th, 1894. Their children are: (1) ADELA O'BRIEN, born January 21st, 1836, married January 18th, 1859, Isaac O. Christie, of Truro, Colchester County, N.S., farmer, who died May 13th, 1862; (2) LORENZO O'BRIEN, shipbuilder, born June 24th, 1838, married December 14th, 1865, Margaret Stirling of Maitland, Hants County, N.S. They are now living in Humboldt County, California. They have no children; (3) ALBERT S. O'BRIEN, born September 10th, 1843; drowned at sea May 13th, 1865; unmarried.

The children of ISAAC O. and ADELA CHRISTIE are: (1) JOHN CHRISTIE, electrician, born October 22nd, 1859; married December 17th, 1890, Mary Adelia Ruggles, of Weymouth, Digby County, N.S., and who has three children: Marjory Adela, born April 13th, 1892, died January 30th, 1902; Andrew Campbell, born December 4th, 1893, and Mary Alice, born June 7th, 1900. (2) ISAAC O. CHRISTIE, Jr., born December 13th, 1861; married December 2nd, 1886, Lillie Archibald of Truro, N.S.; died in Nevada, April 16th, 1906. His widow and one son, Alexander L., born October 16th, 1887, survive him, and reside in Boston, Mass.

THE SECOND HUSBAND OF SOPHIA MARGARET McNEILL (TERHUNE) was WILLIAM PARKER, of Walton, to whom she was married on March 19th, 1820. He was born in Hants County, N.S., September 10th, 1792, and was an elder brother of Francis Parker, the husband of Mary Janet, the elder sister of Sophia Margaret. William Parker's earlier life was spent at sea. At the age of twenty-eight, after he had been for some years a sea captain,

he relinquished that profession and took up farming at Walton. He was a man of fine parts, resembling his brother in most characteristics, save that Francis was of a more energetic, impetuous and sanguine temperament. William was a man universally respected, and beloved by all the large circle of his family and his friends. In point of character and accomplishments as well as in appearance, there was a strong resemblance between the sisters Sophia and Janet Parker.

The Walton farmhouse (with "the latch outside") and the "Squire's" home vied with each other as centres of family attraction and a boundless hospitality. William Parker died at Walton, August 18th, 1874, within a month of 83 years of age. Sophia Margaret, his wife, died at Walton December 19th, 1875, aged 83.

DESCENDANTS OF WILLIAM PARKER AND SOPHIA MARGARET PARKER.

The children of William and Sophia Margaret Parker are: Caroline, Archibald McNeill, Mary Walton, William Dixon and Ellen Sophia.

1. CAROLINE PARKER was born January 1st, 1821. She married, December 22nd, 1840, THOMAS PARKER, of Colchester County, N.S., farmer, who was born October 6th, 1816, and was a descendant of one of the Yorkshire Parker immigrants of 1774. Her husband died March 9th, 1889. Their children are: (1) BELINDA PARKER, born September 22nd, 1841; (2) WILLIAM PARKER, born September 29th, 1843; (3) MARY PARKER, born June 4th, 1846. In 1871 Mary married in Boston, Mass., WILLIAM RICHARD DINGWALL. Their children are: Nelson Webster Dingwall, born in Boston January 31st, 1872, who married June 2nd, 1896, Christine Rethwisch, of Port au Prince, Haiti, West Indies, and has the following children: Dorothy Lorna, born October 28th, 1900, in New York City; Eleanor Emily, born June 19th, 1902, died July 12th, 1904; Beatrice, born November 7th, 1903; Caroline Parker Dingwall, born in Boston, Mass., who married in 1898, at Souris, Prince Edward Island, HENRY P. DUCHEMIN, and has the following children: E. Parker, born June 15th, 1899; Adela Irene, born December 19th, 1900; Roy DesBarres, born June 22nd, 1902; Rohan Compton, born June 15th, 1905; Belinda Landelles Dingwall, born at Fortune Bridge, Prince Edward Island; Adella Dingwall, born at Fortune Bridge, P.E.I.; Chester Dingwall, born at South Lake, P.E.I., deceased. (4) GEORGE PARKER, born January 24th, 1849. He was for some years in business in Halifax, N.S., but is now doing business in Sydney, N.S. George married at Halifax, N.S., December 7th, 1872, Hannah Thompson (born February 20th, 1847), and has the following children:

Belinda, born October 12th, 1873; married JOSEPH A. ERVIN, of Edmonton, Alberta, Canada, January 21st, 1903; George, born December 26th, 1874; Charles, born October 28th, 1876; Allen, born December 7th, 1879; Burton, born October 10th, 1883; Caroline, born November 26th, 1887; Ethel, born April 12th, 1890. (5) SAMUEL PARKER, born April 22nd, 1851. (6) JOSEPH PARKER, born September 11th, 1853. (7) SOPHIA McNEILL PARKER, born August 21st, 1856. She married January 1st, 1874, WILLIAM IRVINE BOOMER, of Sydney, Nova Scotia, and has the following children: Ira Leigh, born June 10th, 1875, who married, November 15th, 1902, Marion McKenzie, and resides at Montreal, Canada; Muriel Beatrice, born February 22nd, 1880, who married, April 13th, 1905, NELSON F. KENNEDY; Gertrude Caroline, born February 12th, 1890. (8) HENRY PARKER, born September 25th, 1859. (9) MARGARET PARKER, born March 31st, 1864; married January 6th, 1885, Burton Fulton, of Colchester County, N.S., who was born February 20th, 1862. Their children are: Foster Leland Fulton, born November 7th, 1887; Caroline Gertrude Fulton, born January 17th, 1889; Nellie Parker Fulton, born April 2nd, 1891; Mary Elina Fulton, born September 3rd, 1893; Muriel Louise Fulton, born October 21st, 1896; Henry Burton Fulton, born November 5th, 1898.

2. ARCHIBALD McNEILL PARKER was born January 11th, 1823, at Walton, where he spent part of his life in farming. He was never married. Deprived, by lameness, of many of life's activities, he read widely and cultivated intellectual tastes. For many years he was collector of customs of the Port. He had a striking personality and a genial, warm-hearted disposition. Anyone regarding the celebrated picture of Sir Walter Scott and his friends at Abbotsford, can see in James Hogg, "the Ettrick Shepherd," an almost perfect portrait of Archibald McNeill Parker. He died at Walton, December 8th, 1890.

3. MARY WALTON PARKER, born April 1st, 1825, married MICHAEL TERHUNE PARKER, of Walton, builder and farmer, December 22nd, 1843. He was a first cousin of his wife, being the son of Joseph, who was the son of John Parker. She died September 3rd, 1904. Her husband is still living. Their children are: (1) RUPERT EATON PARKER, who married in June, 1868, Susan Parker of Walton, and died in 1878, leaving the following children: Edith, who died in July, 1904; Maynard, who died in November, 1904; Clifford Mosher and Almon Rupert; (2) CAROLINE PARKER, who married in October, 1869, Captain C. W. M. Geitzler, of Norway. She died in January, 1881, and her husband, while in command of a ship, was drowned off Delaware Breakwater in March, 1888. Their children are:

Hector Frantz, who died May 2nd, 1886; Julia Maude, Arthur Leland, a sea captain, and Charles Rupert Geitzler; (3) **ARTHUR DIXON PARKER**, a contractor in Truro, N.S., who married in January, 1880, Lillian Bigelow, of Kingsport, Kings County, N.S., and has the following children: Clara Blanche, Mary Josephine, Ethel Elizabeth; Helen Gwendoline; Vera Lois; Arthur Bernard; (4) **NORMAN WILLIAM PARKER**, born September 10th, 1849; married November 3rd, 1875, to Emiline Crowe (born February 15th, 1855). Their children are: Lillian, born September 30th, 1876, who is a school teacher; Archibald Stewart, born November 8th, 1878, who is a builder and unmarried; Elmore Nutting, born December 31st, 1880, and who is a seaman, unmarried; Partis Fulton, born December 15th, 1882, and Carl Richmond, born September 6th, 1895; (5) **ADA SOPHIA PARKER**, married September 1876, to Silvius J. Lake of Cheverie, Hants County, of which marriage there are the following children: Eva Blanche, Gertrude Maud, Ethel Winnifred (died in February, 1880), Irene Madge, Hector, Bertha R., Perry Parker and Trenholm; (6) **EDGAR M. PARKER**, died in infancy, 1855; (7) **IRENE MARGARET PARKER**, married in May, 1880, Charles P. Cochrane, of Windsor, N.S., a sea captain, who died at sea in April, 1897. The widow survives, with three children: Madge Irene, Muriel F. and Charles Maxwellton; (8) Lawrence Edgar Parker, married in August, 1887, Annie Ellen Hunter, of Newport, N.S. He is a sea captain. The children of Captain Parker are Grace Lenore, Annie Laurie, Albertha, Clyde Whitney, Nila, and Howard Bligh; (9) **GERTRUDE MAUDE**, died unmarried, in 1881; (10) **LENA CARLOTTA**, the youngest child of Mary Walton Parker and Michael Terhune Parker, married J. W. Boomer, of Sydney, N.S.

4. **WILLIAM DIXON PARKER**, of Walton, farmer, was born April 27th, 1831, and on January 10th, 1853, he married Hannah Archibald Braden (born April 22nd, 1832), daughter of Samuel Braden, Esq., and Mary Logan Braden, of Musquodoboit, Halifax County, N.S. The children of William Dixon Parker are: (1) **HENRY ANGUS PARKER**, of Walton, farmer, born December 13th, 1853, who married, December 31st, 1879, Mary Janet Weir of Walton, and has three children: Julia Frances, born October 8th, 1880; Foster Leland, born October 23rd, 1882; Harry Weir, born September 20th, 1891; (2) **FOSTER BRADEN PARKER**, of Walton, farmer, born December 9th, 1855, who married, June 14th, 1899, Mabel Pooley, of London, England, and has one child, Margaret Favell, born September 19th, 1905; (3) **MARION SOPHIA PARKER**, born September 22nd, 1857, who married, January 1st, 1883, Hibbert Binney Weir, of Walton, and has the following children: William Parker Weir, born December 12th, 1883; Frederick Harold Weir, born February 5th, 1886; Edna Marion

Weir, born September 25th, 1888; Percy Braden Weir, born June 25th, 1895; Caroline Frances Weir, who died in infancy, March 1st, 1900, and Ernest Conradi Weir, who died in infancy, May 19th, 1903; (4) WILLIAM PARKER, a retired sea captain residing in Boston, Mass., who was born September 21st, 1859, and married, March 4th, 1889, Kathleen Davison, of Hantsport, N.S. His children are: Ernest Wellesley, born January 11th, 1891; Frank Watson, born March 19th, 1895; George Bertrand, born December 17th, 1897; Rex Arnold, born January 6th, 1899; Adria Valentine, born February 14th, 1900; William Dixon, born July 2nd, 1902; Evelyn May, born April 4th, 1906; (5) PERCY PARKER, a sea captain, born January 5th, 1862; married August 5th, 1893, Isabel Mary Patterson, of Yarmouth, N.S.; died in New York City, April 30th, 1905, leaving his wife and two children; Mary Dorothy, born September 12th, 1894, and Jack Walton, born July 18th, 1896; (6) MARY JANET PARKER, born December 11th, 1863; married March 25th, 1885, George William Bradshaw, of Windsor, N.S., and has the following children: Helen Madge Bradshaw, born May 5th, 1886; Bertha Jean Bradshaw, born December 4th, 1888; Janet Mary Bradshaw, born August 20th, 1891; Isabel Margaret Bradshaw, born September 23rd, 1892. George William Bradshaw, died June 22nd, 1897; (7) SAMUEL ADAMS PARKER, born December 9th, 1865, is a sea captain, and is unmarried; (8) Ernest Leslie Parker, born September 10th, 1867, who is a merchant in Boston, Mass., and married, October 16th, 1894, Sarah Morris, of Walton. He has three children: Max Yerxa, born August 18th, 1895; Helena Morris, born December 4th, 1897; Ernestine Mildred, born February 19th, 1901; (9) CAROLINE PARKER, born June 17th, 1870, who married, July 30th, 1895, Avarad Longley Starratt, of Annapolis County, N.S., a sea captain. They live in Walton and have two children: Ralph Parker Starratt, born July 17th, 1896, and Francklyn Zwicker Starratt, born June 20th, 1904; (10) HELEN WING PARKER, born December 15th, 1872, who resides with her parents at Walton, and is unmarried; (11) BERTRAND EVERETT PARKER, born November 5th, 1875; died unmarried, May 19th, 1901.

5. ELLEN SOPHIA PARKER, born December 8th, 1834, married Joseph Moxon, of Walton, now a contractor and builder in the vicinity of Boston, Mass. They have several children. Their present location is unknown.

*Wolfville, N.S.,
September, 1906.*

DANIEL McNEILL PARKER, M.D.

CHAPTER I.

THE PARKER FAMILY.

"Nor you, ye Proud, impute to these the fault,
If Memory o'er their tomb no trophies raise,
Where through the long-drawn aisle and fretted vault
The pealing anthem swells the note of praise."

—Gray.

It is to be noted at the outset, that this family, so far as known, is not connected with the Parkers of Annapolis and Kings Counties in Nova Scotia, who derive their ancestry through settlers from the New England colonies.

Our earliest progenitor of this name of whom we have any knowledge is John Parker, originally of Plympton, near Knaresborough, in the Parish of Spanforth, Yorkshire, England. He was born, probably, near the close of the seventeenth century, and died previous to the year 1769. In his later years he appears to have resided at Cold Carum, Yorkshire. He was a farmer and grazier. In religion the family were Quakers. His wife, Mary, whose maiden name has not been preserved by any record known to us, was born at Plympton in the year 1700, and died at the home of her son, William Parker, senior, near Windsor, Nova Scotia, May 27th, 1780.

John and Mary had the following children:

1. Francis, born at Plympton in 1738; died at Shubenacadie, Nova Scotia, May 3rd, 1800.
2. Joseph, born at Plympton, in 1740; died at Newport, Nova Scotia, September 9th, 1815.
3. William (distinguished hereafter as William Parker, senior) born at Cold Carum, in the Parish of Kilburn, Yorkshire, February, 1742; died at Rawdon, Nova Scotia, September 17th, 1819.

On the 10th of January, 1769, at Mashara, Yorkshire, William (Senior) married Mary Hardaker, daughter of Thomas and Mary

Hardaker, of Ullishaw, near Masham, in the Parish of Kirby Moorside, Yorkshire. Mary Hardaker, wife of this William Parker, was born at Cold Carum, in January, 1734, and died at Rawdon, Nova Scotia, December 30th, 1810. Her father, Thomas, died at Bromley Grange, near Ripon, in Yorkshire, April 4th, 1785. No other information concerning her family has been transmitted to her descendants, except that they were Quakers. William and Mary Parker were married according to the quaint and simple rite of the Quakers, which had become recognized by English law. The Friends held that marriage was the Lord's joining of man and woman, and therefore was not performed by man. Men were but witnesses. The following is a copy of the record of this marriage ceremony. It served as the marriage certificate.

" William Parker, of Cold Carum, in the Parish of Kilburn, and County of York, Husbandman, son of John Parker (deceased) and Mary, his wife, late of Plympton in the Parish of Spanforth and County aforesaid, and Mary Hardaker, daughter of Thomas Hardaker, and Mary, his wife, of Ullishaw, in the Parish of Kirby Moorside and County aforesaid, having declared their intentions of taking each other in marriage, before several meetings of the people called Quakers, in the County aforesaid, and the proceedings of the said William Parker and Mary Hardaker, after due enquiry and deliberate consideration thereof, were allowed by the said meetings, they appearing clear of all others, and having their parents' consent and relations concerned.

" Now these are to certify all whom it may concern that for the accomplishing of their said marriage this 10th day of the first month (called) January, in the year of our Lord, one thousand seven hundred and sixty nine, they, the said William Parker and Mary Hardaker, appeared in a public assembly of the aforesaid people and others in their meeting house at Masham, in the County aforesaid, and he, the said William Parker, taking the said Mary Hardaker by the hand, did openly and solemnly declare as followeth:

" Friends, in the fear of the Lord and before this assembly, I take this my friend Mary Hardaker to be my wife, promising thro' divine assistance to be unto her a loving and faithful husband, until it shall please the Lord by death to separate us (or words to that effect) and the said Mary Hardaker did then and there in the said assembly in like manner declare as followeth:

" Friends, in the fear of the Lord and before this assembly, I take this my friend William Parker to be my husband, promising through divine assistance to be unto him a loving and faithful wife until it shall please the Lord by death to separate us (or words to that effect) and the said William Parker and Mary

Hardaker as a further confirmation thereof, and in testimony thereunto did then and there to these presents set their hands.

“Sgd. WILLIAM PARKER.

“Sgd. MARY HARDAKER.

“We whose names are hereunto subscribed being present among others at the solemnizing of the above said marriage and subscription in manner aforesaid as witnesses have also to these presents subscribed our names the day and year above written.

“Sgd. JOHN HOLESWORTH, SIMON HUTCHINSON, MANTREW THOMPSON, RICHARD THOMPSON, THOS. HARDCASTLE, ——— MULDEN, ELIZABETH FULTON, ESTHER KELVIN, LYDIA KELVIN, MARY KELVIN, JOHN BINKS, RICHARD BINKS, MARY WEATHERHEAD, EDITH HOLDSWORTH, ARMISTEAD FIELDEN, CATHERINE WELLS.

“RELATIONS.

“Sgd. THOS. HARDAKER, A. FRED PARKER, ELIZABETH COLDBECK, JOSEPH PARKER, JOHN COLDBECK, SARAH PARKER, WILLIAM JOHNSON, MARY PARKER, HENRY HARDAKER, WILLIAM THISTLETHWAITE, SAML. ASHTON, THOS. COOK, JOHN JANSON, JOHN THOMPSON, ELIZ. THOMPSON.”



According to the custom, this record would be entered in the Friends' register of births, deaths, and marriages kept at Masham, or at Richmond, in the North Riding.

The list of “relations” who signed as witnesses opens up interesting speculations as to families in England to whom the Parkers are allied.

The parties to this marriage, William Parker, senior, and Mary Hardaker, were the great-grandparents of my father Daniel McNeill Parker. John Parker, above referred to as our earliest known progenitor, and Mary, his wife, were my father's great-grandparents. From my children (inclusive) to the last named ancestors there are thus seven generations.

Of the lives or condition of the Parkers in Yorkshire, no record or tradition remains to us. As appears by the marriage

record William was a farmer. They lived in a part of England where breeding live stock for the London market was a considerable industry, and doubtless some of them were graziers as well as farmers.

It was only in 1722 that the Act for the relief of the Quakers from their political disabilities was passed. Previous to that, under their form of affirmation in lieu of an oath, they were unable to answer in Courts of Equity, take probates of wills, prove debts on commissions of bankruptcy, take up their freedoms, and to poll their votes at elections, as freeholders. John Parker's father, and possibly, he himself, lived during the fierce persecution and stubborn resistance of the Quakers under the Conventicle Act in the reign of Charles II. The father of John was doubtless living when the founder of the Religious Society of Friends, George Fox, in the year 1658, shortly before Cromwell's death, "laid the suffering of Friends before him," when, as Fox wrote, "before I came to him as he rode at the head of his life guards, I saw and felt a waft of death go forth against him; and when I came to him he looked like a dead man." Between the years 1661 and 1697 over 13,000 Friends were imprisoned in England, 198 were transported as slaves, and 338 died in prison or of wounds received in assaults while attending meetings; and for the sole cause of professing and practising their religious beliefs. This historical setting of these forefathers of ours I thus briefly sketch because, without doubt, the moral and religious fibre of such ancestors as these bluff and sturdy Quaker Yorkshiremen schooled by family tradition and actual knowledge to "hold fast the form of sound words," even at the cost of imprisonment, banishment, wounds and death itself, became the heritage, by blood, of Daniel McNeill Parker. Such an ancestry, in large measure, may account for certain temperamental qualities which he had, as also for the strength and depth of his religious nature and convictions, with their practical manifestation in his life.

Two sons were born to William Parker, senior, and Mary, his wife, in Yorkshire, namely, John Parker, born March 8th, 1771, at Ullishaw, and William Parker, junior, born August 16th, 1772. This son, John, was the grandfather of my father.

In the year 1758 Governor Lawrence of Nova Scotia had issued a proclamation inviting settlers from the older American Colonies to come in and take up the lands of the French Neutrals, or Acadians, who had been deported, mainly in 1755. Public interest in Great Britain and Ireland was also aroused, soon afterwards, by the advantageous inducements thus held out; and, about 1760, immigrants from the old country began to arrive in Nova Scotia in considerable numbers. During the period of emigration which followed, four different parties came from

Yorkshire, the first arriving in 1772. In the 178th chapter of Knight's History of England, volume 6, there is an account of the discouraging conditions of rural Yorkshire at this period, due in part to what would be called general "hard times" in England, in part to the exhaustion of the soil through many generations of antiquated and unprogressive methods of farming, and in part to the inability of the people to extend the area of cultivation in proportion to the growth of population. The Marquis of Rockingham, leader of the Whig party, Sir Digby Legard, the Earl of Darlington, Mr. Danby, and other large landed proprietors of the shire were just beginning their public-spirited and ultimately successful labors for the amelioration of these conditions. Mr. Danby was a colliery owner at Swinton, near Masham, the town where William Parker was married, and which was in the immediate vicinity of Ullishaw, the home of Mary Hardaker before her marriage, and where William appears to have located after that event. At this period the older American colonies were seething with discontent, and already startling overt acts of rebellion had occurred; the people were organizing and arming for the inevitable war for independence.

From such circumstances as these it is not difficult to conjecture why the four parties of Yorkshire folk referred to should emigrate, and choose Nova Scotia for their future home, nor why our ancestors should join them.

The three brothers, Francis, Joseph, and William Parker, senior, sons of John, with their wives and families, embarked at Hull, Yorkshire, for Halifax, Nova Scotia, on the 5th day of March, 1774, and landed at Halifax on the 7th day of May following. Emigrants at that time usually came in slow-sailing brigs, which fact may account for the length of this voyage. Their widowed mother, Mary, accompanied them.

The names of the wives of Francis and Joseph, who were of the party, were, respectively Mary; born in Yorkshire in 1737, died at Shubenacadie, N.S., October 17th, 1809; and Elizabeth, born in Yorkshire, died at Newport, N.S.

William brought with him his two children, John, three years of age, and William, Junior, a baby of nineteen months. By what seems a singular coincidence, William Black, my mother's great-grandfather (the father of the future Reverend William Black) was a fellow passenger with the great-grandparents and the infant grandfather of my father on this voyage. Dr. Richey, the Reverend William Black's biographer, says: "His father having for some time entertained the design of emigrating to America, deemed it prudent to visit the intended land of his adoption himself, before he should finally determine on a step so deeply involving the future fortunes of his family. Accordingly, in

the spring of 1774, he came to Nova Scotia, purchased an estate at Amherst in the County of Cumberland, and returning to England in the autumn, moved to America with his family the ensuing Spring "

Owing to the discovery of William Parker's family record, I am able thus to correct the tradition, given in my monograph on Daniel McNeill and his descendants, that the Parkers came out in the brig "Jenny" in April, 1775, when William Black, Senior, brought out his family, including his young son, the future distinguished Wesleyan pioneer preacher.

The three immigrant Parker brothers settled as follows: Francis on a farm at Shubenacadie; Joseph at Mantua, a section of Newport, near Windsor, on a farm known later as the John Allison farm; William, also near Windsor on a property which he designates in his record as "Margaret Farm." The mother went to live with her son William. It is very probable that each of these three farms had belonged to deported French Acadians. Some years passed, after the main body of these unhappy people had been removed in 1755, before all the farm properties from which they had been torn were taken up. As late as 1762 the Acadians were still being removed, and in 1765 there were many of them imprisoned at Fort Edward in Piziquid (later called Windsor), only nine years before the arrival of the Parkers.

When they came to this Province Francis was 38 years of age, Joseph 34 and William 32.

At "Margaret Farm" three more sons and a daughter were born to William, senior, and Mary his wife, namely, Thomas Parker, born October 28th, 1774, whose birth was registered at a monthly meeting of Friends at Richmond in Yorkshire; Mary Parker, born February 9th, 1777; Joseph Parker, born May 5th, 1779, and Francis Parker, born July 25th, 1782. The only other known family event connected with "Margaret Farm" is the death of the elder William's mother, Mary, which occurred there May 27th, 1780, at the age of 80.

Sometime previous to the year 1810, William Parker, senior, removed to Rawdon, in Hants County. His daughter Mary had married Timothy Dimock at Petite (afterwards Walton), December 29th, 1795, and they had settled in Rawdon. His sons Joseph and Francis had also founded homes there, where they both married in 1805. His sons John and William, junior, had settled at Petite and had married, John on November 8th, 1791, and William on November 25th, 1793. This accounts for the marriage of their sister Mary taking place there.

Thomas Parker, the first son of William, senior, to be born in this province, settled at Newport, where he married on January 21st, 1804.

Mary (Hardaker) Parker, wife of William, senior, died at Rawdon on December 30th, 1810. Of the life there he records this incident,—the only attempt at narration which his family chronicle makes. I give it in his own words: "A remarkable accident happened in my family the 16th day of the eleventh month, 1812. The two daughters, one of Timothy Dimock, the other of Francis Parker, namely Hannah Dimock, aged nine years and ten m'ths, & Elizabeth Parker, aged six years and ten m'ths, being sent to drive in a cow about three o'clock of the above day, the cow turning into the woods, the children followed and became bewildered. Leaving the cow, they tried to make their way home or to their uncle's house, but, missing their way, made into the wilderness. An alarm was made to their neighbours. A band of twelve men was quickly raised who exerted themselves to the best of their knowledge, seeking them till past three in the morning, about which time the moon set, and then for some time it had snowed and was very cold, though not much frost. By morning a considerable of snow had fallen. About sunrise fifty men went in search of them, and about nine in the morning, to the astonishment of the greatest part of the searchers, found them, hearing them hallow in answer to the men's hallow one for another. They were found in perfect health, with a good appetite. They were lightly clothed and bare-headed."

From this narration it will be seen that William continued to record his dates according to the old Quaker method. Throughout his chronicle he never uses the heathen names of the months, but numbers them.

Beyond the circumstance that William, senior, caused the birth of his son Thomas to be recorded in the Quaker register at home, as has been stated above, there is nothing to show to what extent, or for what length of time the family continued in the Quaker connexion. There was no Society of Friends in Nova Scotia when they came to the Province, and I am not aware that there ever has been one. The descendants of the immigrant brothers for the most part connected themselves with the Church of England. Others worshipped with the religious congregations which happened to be nearest them. In point of religious association, the family became divided, through the influences of neighborhood or environment. But nevertheless the inheritance of the Quaker lineage has often revealed itself in certain family characteristics. The forms of faith have passed, but their ethical import and influence have remained; though it must be confessed that, sometimes, there has occurred that natural deterioration from type which is sure to affect, in some degree, the scions of an older civilization when grafted upon the crude and rougher conditions of a remote colony upon the frontier of human habitation.

In the year 1815 William Parker, senior, his sons and his son-in-law, Timothy Dimock acquired large tracts of land at and about Petite Riviere, where there had formerly been a small settlement of French Acadians. The name, in time, had become abbreviated to "Petite." The following grants are of record in the Crown Land Office at Halifax. The inclusion of Michael B. Grant and James W. Nutting in the grants is explained by their connection with the family, which appears later.

Book E, page 125. Grant, dated June 3rd, 1815, to Michael B. Grant, of Newport, Francis Parker, John Parker, William Parker the third, Joseph Parker and Thomas Parker, of 2,225 acres, divided thus: To Michael B. Grant, Lot 1, 325 acres, and Lot 2, 175 acres. To Francis Parker, Lot 3, 202 acres, and Lot 7, 148 acres. To John Parker, Lot 4, 450 acres. To William Parker the third, Lot 5, 200 acres. To Joseph Parker, 350 acres. To Thomas Parker, 375 acres.

William Parker the third, here mentioned, is the eldest son of John, my father's favorite "Uncle Willie," who was at this time about twenty-three years of age.

Book E, page 129. Grant, dated June 26th, 1815, to William Parker, senior, William Parker, junior, James W. Nutting, Timothy Dimock and John Warren, of 1,900 acres, divided thus: To William Parker, senior, Lot 3, 200 acres. To William Parker, junior, Lot 5, 375 acres, and Lot 6, 125 acres. To James W. Nutting, Lot 1, 500 acres, and the remaining 700 acres to Dimock and Warren.

The last named grantee does not appear to have been connected with the family. William Parker, senior, owned land in the vicinity earlier. In his family record there is this entry: "I bought the lands at Petite of Wm. Graham, of Halifax, in the 4th month, 1781, and all the writings are registered in Halifax register office."

In the year 1797, Captain Daniel McNeill had acquired by grant his estate, "Cambridge," adjacent to Petite, the record of the grant in the Crown Land Office being as follows: Book 20, page 48. Grant dated December 18th, 1797, to Daniel McNeill, "A half-pay captain in His Majesty's service." This land, estimated at one thousand acres in extent, is described by metes and bounds in Description Book 5, page 254. It is situated on the south-western shore of the river, and its frontage extends thence southerly along the shore of Minas Basin.

The Parkers, Grants, McNeills, Nuttings, Dimocks and other families were now becoming associated in and near the community afterwards to be known as Walton, which was to be the future centre of the Parker family life for many years.

William Parker, senior, died of apoplexy, at Rawdon, September 17th, 1819, in his seventy-eighth year.

I have now brought down the lineage of my father to his grandfather, John, eldest son of William, senior. After John had settled at Petite he married, November 8th, 1791, Sarah Grant, daughter of Captain Robert Grant, of Loyal Hill, concerning whom I have furnished some particulars in my other narrative. John was a bridegroom of 20, and Sarah a bride of 17.

Of this marriage there were the following children:

William Parker, born September 10th, 1792; Hannah Parker, born June 11th, 1795; Francis Parker, born January 17th, 1797; Joseph Parker, born February 28th, 1799; John Grant Parker, born March 9th, 1801. The third child, Francis, was the father of Daniel McNeill Parker.

Sarah (Grant) Parker died at Petite on the 31st of October, 1802, "aged 28 years 7 m'ths, married 11 years wanting 10 days," as her father-in-law has minutely set it down in his chronicle. John Parker subsequently married Sarah Lockhart; and of this second marriage the children were: Wentworth, Maria, Thomas Woodbury, Daniel Dixon, Sophia, Collingwood, Charles and Michael.

John Parker died at Petite June 25th, 1854, aged 83. A brief account of his children, other than William and Francis, with whom I have dealt in my other narrative, seems in order here. I recall a few facts which my father told me relating to his uncles and aunts.

Hannah died early.

Joseph married his cousin, Jane Parker, born March 3rd, 1807, the eldest daughter of his uncle Joseph. Their children were: Wentworth, who became a sea-captain and died at sea; Michael, Jane and one other daughter. Joseph died in New Brunswick, where he had made his home.

John Grant Parker married Mary Potter.

Of the children of the half blood: Wentworth became a clerk with the firm of W. A. & S. Black (my mother's father and uncle) at Halifax, and died there of smallpox, in early life.

Maria married James Smith, son of James. The father was a Scottish-born Loyalist refugee from Rhode Island, who, during the American Revolutionary War, settled in Newport, Hants County, and lived on what became the Bennett property, Poplar Grove, until his death in 1852. Maria's husband, James, junior, was born in 1793, and died in 1849, at Portland, Maine, where they resided. Maria became the mother of eight children. Her husband's brother, Woodbury Smith, entered the British Navy as a purser's clerk, at Halifax, married in England, and after attain-

ing the rank of a captain in the Navy, died at Greenwich, England, in 1853, leaving no issue.

Thomas Woodbury Parker died, unmarried, at the home of Francis, my grandfather, in Walton.

Daniel Dixon Parker was born in 1813, and when a mere boy, went to begin life for himself in Eastport, Maine. There he died, December 6th, 1830, at the age of 17.

Sophia Parker died in infancy, January, 16th, 1816.

Collingwood Parker was lost at sea while supercargo of a ship which was never heard of after sailing.

Augusta Parker married a Payson, of Weymouth, Nova Scotia. The Misses Payson, who formerly lived in Halifax, were daughters of her husband's brother.

Charles Parker went to New Orleans to reside.

Michael Parker once did business in Wolfville, N.S., and afterwards moved to the United States. My father, in 1854, met him at a railway station while travelling in the United States, but when he told me this, late in his life, he could not remember the name of the place. Michael then held some office in a railway company.

Of the children of William Parker, senior, other than John,—my father's grand-uncles and grand-aunts—there is the following record:

The second son, William Parker, junior, at the age of 21 years, married, November 25th, 1793, Letitia Grant, daughter of Captain Robert Grant, of Loyal Hill, a younger sister of his brother John's wife, Sarah. They had the following children:

Mary Parker, born September 18th, 1794, who married James Mitchener, October 15th, 1815, and had a son Abel, born August 25th, 1816. John Grant Parker, born January 29th, 1796, who married Mary Ann Terhune. Sarah Parker, born November 20th, 1797, who married John Shaw. Elizabeth Parker, born October 1st, 1799; died March 27th, 1872. Thomas Parker, born June 25th, 1801. Stephen Parker, born December 18th, 1803, who married a Miss Ryan. Timothy Parker, born January 23rd, 1806, died May 9th, 1882. Rachel Parker, born September 22nd, 1808; died December 12th, 1815. William Parker, born August 28th, 1810. Letitia Parker, born January 23rd, 1813.

Letitia (Grant) Parker died at Petite, January 23rd, 1813, in giving birth to her last child and namesake.

William Parker, junior, died at Petite, May 8th, 1857, aged 85 years.

The third son of William Parker, senior, Thomas, married at Newport, January 31st, 1804, Anne Mumford. They had the following children:

Mary Parker, born December 10th, 1804. George Parker, born March 7th, 1807. William Parker, born November 22nd,

1808. Benjamin Parker, born December 25th, 1810. Thomas Hardaker Parker, born February 2nd, 1813; died December 23rd, 1815. Phoebe Ann and Sarah Letitia Parker (twins), born May 10th, 1815. Francis Parker, born June 29th, 1818. Eunice Jane Parker, born July 5th, 1820.

Mary, only daughter of William Parker, senior, married Timothy Dimock, of Rawdon, December 29th, 1795, at the age of 19. They had issue as follows:

Shubael Dimock, born November 27th, 1796, who married Hannah Baker (born January 6th, 1799). Thomas Dimock, born August 2nd, 1798; died April 26th, 1805. William Dimock, born August 28th, 1800, who married Elizabeth Parker, his cousin, daughter of Francis Parker, July 24th, 1828. Hannah P. Dimock, born January 18th, 1803, who married March 26th, 1827, James Higgins. The only child of this marriage was Dr. Daniel Francis Higgins, for many years Professor of Mathematics in Acadia College. Her husband died July 8th, 1829. She afterwards married William Whittier, December 2nd, 1834, and had another son, James Whittier. Joseph Dimock, born October 4th, 1804, who married Hannah Dimock, September 3rd, 1829. John Dimock, born February 22nd, 1807, who married Sarah Dimock, January 24th, 1833. Daniel Dimock, born September 16th, 1809; died November 24th, 1813. Timothy Dimock, born March 25th, 1811; died December 22nd, 1815. Francis Knowlton Dimock, born April 5th, 1813; died the day of his birth.

Timothy Dimock died at Rawdon, December 21st, 1838, aged 69 years. Mary (Parker) Dimock died at Rawdon, December 30th, 1863, aged 86.

The fourth son of William Parker, senior, Joseph, married Anne McLalan (or McLennan) at Rawdon, December 26th, 1805. Of this marriage there were the following children:

Jane Parker, born March 3rd, 1807. Alexander Parker, born February 16th, 1809.

Anne (McLellan) Parker died at Rawdon, February 24th, 1809.

Joseph was married a second time, to Catherine Terhune, on February 7th, 1810. The following were the children of this marriage:

Ananias Parker, born December 26th, 1810. Hiram Parker, born March 24th, 1826; died June 29th, 1898, at Windsor, N.S. Catherine Parker, born January 16th, 1828.

The fifth son of William Parker, senior, Francis, married Sarah Bond, at Rawdon, February 12th, 1805. They had the following children:

Elizabeth Parker, born January 4th, 1806, who married William Dimock, her cousin, son of Timothy and Mary (Parker)

Dimock, July 24th, 1828. Phœbe Maria Parker, born February 29th, 1808, who married Charles S. Dimock, June 17th, 1834. Sarah Ann Parker, born September 7th, 1810, who married John Doyle. William John Parker, born November 11th, 1812, who married Harriet Nowel Masters, December 2nd, 1834.

Sarah (Bond) Parker died, February 1st, 1815. Francis was married again to Anne Lomer, October 5th, 1820.

Having thus completed the genealogical line of William Parker, senior, the immigrant brother through whom my father's descent is derived (except as contained in my monograph on Daniel McNeill and his descendants), I extend the record to the other immigrant brothers, Francis and Joseph, my father's great-grand-uncles, and their families. By so doing I hope to contribute to the perpetuation of all the information which the brief chronicle of my father's great-grandfather affords; but little remains to be told.

The eldest of the three immigrant brothers, Francis, resided always at Shubenacadie, where he had first settled, and he died there, May 3rd, 1800, at the age of 62. He was married before he left England, but the maiden name of his wife, Mary, has not been recorded. She was born in Yorkshire in 1737, and died at Shubenacadie on October 17th, 1809. They had a son, Francis R., born in Shubenacadie, who resided there and attained great age—I think, 96 years. He was the leading man in that locality for many years, a Justice of the Peace, widely known and respected as a man of high character and excellent qualities of mind and heart. About the year 1892 I had occasion to examine him as a witness in a law suit concerning the old Shubenacadie canal, before a Referee of the Exchequer Court of Canada. The meeting for this purpose took place at his house. Unfortunately I took no notes of a conversation we had on family history. He was about twenty years old when his uncle, my father's great-grandfather, died, and knew and remembered him well. Though totally blind when I met him, he was robust in body, still of a fine physique, a burly, florid, distinguished-looking old gentleman, who seemed rather of the eighteenth than the nineteenth century, and would have made a fine model for my idea of a typical old-time Yorkshire farmer. I could not resist the notion that in him there was reproduced before my eyes a sort of composite portrait of my father's English forefathers. To meet with him was like stepping back a century. His now sightless eyes had seen my ancestors of four generations past. In general appearance he resembled Francis, my grandfather. Like him, he was always "Squire Parker" to everyone. His mental faculties were alert and keen, so that he made an excellent witness in the law suit, as to things he had seen and known thirty to forty years before. To attest the family traditions, not only of

longevity, but of obedience to a certain injunction laid upon the patriarchs, he had then a rather young wife and a son of about twelve or fourteen years of age. This wife was of the Etter family, and a remote collateral relative of my mother, on the maternal side of the Black family.

Of the remaining immigrant brother, Joseph Parker, and his family, who were settled in Newport, the most meagre information has come down to us. Like his brothers, he married in England before coming to this Province. His wife's maiden name is not known, but she was of Yorkshire birth, and her given name was Elizabeth. She died at Newport, where Joseph, as already stated, died on the 9th of September, 1815. Whether they left children or not the records at present available do not disclose.

For further information of the Parker family, in the direct line of my father, and through the two Parker-McNeill marriages, reference may be had to the Daniel McNeill monograph of the year 1906.

To the record of William Parker, senior, as continued by his daughter, I have added, in the lines collateral to my father's descent, only a few names of descendants, from information which I chanced to have. To bring the record down to date, in all its branches, would be a most voluminous undertaking.

CHAPTER II.

THE McNEILL FAMILY.

"'Tis opportune to look back upon old times, and contemplate our forefathers."

—*Sir Thomas Browne.*

The Clan MacNeil was divided into two septs, those of Gigha, and others of Barra, two islands off the coast of Argyle, says the author of "The Scottish Clans and their Tartans"; and he adds: "The name of MacNeil first appears in a charter by Robert I. of lands in Wigton to John, son of Gilbert MacNeil; but the oldest charter to the name for the Isle of Barra—confirmatory of one from Alexander, Lord of the Isles—is dated 1427, and is granted to Gilleonon, son of Roderick, son of Murchard, the son of Neil. The Gigha branch were, so far back as 1472, keepers of the Castle of Swen, in North Knapdale, under the Lords of the Isles." This branch, or sept, had also proprietary rights of ancient date in Kintyre (Cantyre), as evidenced by a sale by Neil MacNeil to James MacNeil, the exact date of which is buried in obscurity. There were also MacNeils in the Isle of Colonsay, and many of the name occupied the western portion of the mainland of Argyle. In the course of time, and through changes in locality, the name has acquired several variations of spelling, but the families who came to North Carolina have spelt it, almost uniformly, "McNeill."

The war-cry of the clan is "Buaidh no Bas"—"Victory or Death." The clan pipe march is "Spaidsearachd Mhic Neill"—"MacNeill's March." The clan badge is "Machall Monaidh."—*Dryas.*

When, in the summer of 1745, Prince Charles Edward landed, first on the Island of Eriskay, between the islands of Barra and South Uist, and a little later at Borodale on the mainland, he was in the immediate neighborhood of the MacNeills, and many of the clan answered the summons to his standard. The autumn of the following year, which saw the Stuart Prince hunted through the western isles, brought to his Highland followers dire disaster. After the cause was forever lost upon Culloden Muir, the MacNeills were among the victims of the atrocities suffered by the clansmen at the hand of that royal butcher, the Duke of Cumberland. Wearied, at length, of hangings, slaughters, and the less merciful barbarities perpetrated upon the prisoners taken at Culloden and

long afterwards in Argyle and the adjacent islands, this odious brother of George the Second gave to many remaining in his power the privilege of taking the oath of allegiance to the Brunswick King and then removing with their families to the American plantations, as an alternative to expiating their rebellion by death. Several families of MacNeills availed themselves of this "saving grace." For some reason these were permitted to linger on at home, under surveillance, suffering the penalties of proscription, extortionate exactions and of persecution, until the year 1748; in which year, but after their departure, the Act was passed for disarming the Highlanders, abolishing the national dress, and imposing other punitive disabilities upon this proud and sensitive people.

There had been some few Scottish settlers on the Cape Fear in North Carolina as early as 1729. "Black" Neill McNeill, the earliest known progenitor of our branch of the McNeills, came first to America, from Argyle, in the year 1742, or 1743. He seems to have been then well advanced in life, probably about 70 years o.d. In 1747 he explored the Cape Fear country with a view to founding a colony of his distressed clansmen and other fellow-sufferers. Whether he had revisited Scotland in time to participate in the Forty-Five is uncertain, but tradition says that his son Lauchlin and his grandson Archibald fought at Culloden. At all events, after his second voyage to America and his tour of exploration in North Carolina in 1747, he returned once more to Argyle and the next year brought out his family and a colony of Highlanders, variously estimated at from three hundred to six hundred souls. All the men of fighting age among them had been out in the Stuart rising, and they brought their arms among their treasured possessions. The claymore was to drink blood in another royal cause, which was to be lost upon another continent.

With them came Flora, or, as she wrote her name, "Florey," McDonald, and her future husband, a McDonald. When through her compassionate courage and sagacity Prince Charles Edward was enabled to escape from South Uist to Skye, thence to the Isle of Rasay, back to Skye, and finally to the mainland, from which he sailed to France, tradition says that some of these McNeills, knowing well the intricacies of the islands and their approaches, were rendering assistance to the fugitives. That she chose to cast in her lot with Black Neill's colonizing party, and, after first settling at Cross Creek (Fayetteville), removed to Little River to reside in the immediate neighborhood of the Bahn McNeills, are circumstances which lend color to the tradition, well established in the Cape Fear region, that our immigrant ancestors were among the friends of Flora McDonald, a name ever to be numbered in the illustrious roll of heroic women.

Black Neill placed his colony at Cross Creek, now within the

town of Fayetteville, at the head of navigation (except for small boats) on the Cape Fear River, 120 miles by water above Wilmington. This settlement they called "Campbellton," in honor of Farquhard Campbell, who, from the Highland point of view, was the principal personage among them. The town became "Fayetteville" after the Revolutionary War, a tribute at once to the popularity of La Fayette and to the detestation of the Loyalist or "Tory" Highlanders.

It was from this point that my father, in 1861, and I, in 1898, began our tours of investigation and our visits to the North Carolina kinsfolk.

From there, as a centre, the Scottish settlements spread, until, in a few years, they extended down to the sea, along the river, far up the Cape Fear and Deep Rivers and thence back to the Pedee. The Deep River flows into the Cape Fear about 29 miles above Lillington. All this region, known as "the Cape Fear," is still very largely inhabited by the descendants of these original settlers, who preserve a remarkable survival of the clan spirit and racial pride; which has been fostered by intermarriage, by the retention of immense tracts of land in families, and, to a certain extent, by slavery—the two latter circumstances tending to the exclusion of other settlers.

With Black Neill McNeill came his son Lauchlin and Margaret, his wife, whose maiden name was Johnstone; also Neill's grandson, Archibald McNeill, son of Lauchlin. Other children of Lauchlin were of the party, but their names do not enter into the record. Hector, a son of Lauchlin, who will hereafter appear, made his peace with the British government by entering the army, and did not appear in North Carolina until after 1763.

Soon after the arrival of the colonizing party in 1748, Archibald married Jennet (Janet) Smith. Her father, John Smith, a lowland Scotsman of that ilk, had emigrated to the Cape Fear country with the earlier Scottish settlers in 1729. His wife, Margaret, whose maiden name was Gilchrist, had died on shipboard during their voyage. They had two children born in Scotland, Malcolm Smith and Jennet. Archibald McNeill and Jennet were both born about the year 1720. She died in 1791, and he on June 26th, 1801.

Archibald and Jennet (Smith) McNeill were my father's great-grandparents; Lauchlin and Margaret (Johnstone) McNeill were his great-great-grandparents, and Black Neill McNeill, whose wife's name has not been transmitted to her descendants, was his great-great-great-grandfather; while, on the maternal side, my father's great-great-grandparents were John and Margaret (Gilchrist) Smith. From my children to Black Neill McNeill there are (inclusively) eight generations.

Black Neill must have been born in the reign of Charles the Second. He was a Covenanter, and the son of a Covenanter. His memory would go back to the insurrection of 1679, the bloody work of Claverhouse, and the fierce fighting at Drumclog and Bothwell Brig, where his father may have borne his part. He himself was then probably a lad of six.

That his family should support the Stuart cause in 1745 is not strange to a student of the times and Highland character. The McNeills of the Isles remained Catholic. Those on the mainland of Argyle, though the Campbell influence had brought them into the Covenant, could not be parted from their clan in a war declared for Scottish kingship.

I have alluded to Daniel McNeill Parker's Quaker ancestry, on his father's side, with its spiritual inheritance. May we not discover in this heritage of the Covenanter blood, through the maternal line, some further explanation of those strong spiritual characteristics which distinguished him? The Quaker and Covenanter blend might well in after years produce, now and then, a composite type of character like my father's.

In accordance with the blunt and quaintly significant fashion of the Scots to designate individuals by physical or temperamental peculiarities, in order to distinguish them from others of their name, Jennet McNeill became known as Jennet "Bahn" (fair-complexioned and light-haired), and Archibald, I regret to say, acquired the appellation of "Scorblin" (or "Scrubblin"), meaning no good, or worthless. To this day in North Carolina, even in family Bibles and other records which I have examined, they remain "Jenny Bahn" and "Archie Scrubblin"; and to add the surname would be deemed redundant. But it has been explained to me that Archibald's designation is not to be taken too literally, and may mean merely that he was a man of little force of character and unsuccessful as a planter. And, again, he appears to have suffered by comparison with his wife, who seems to have been a woman of strong intellect, deep sagacity of the practical sort, and of untiring energy—a veritable queen bee in the community. The shortcomings of Archie were amply redressed by his spouse, and though we find other "Scrubblins" in the family tree, they prove to be sons-in-law of the clan and not his descendants.

The descendants of Archibald and Jennet have always been known as the *Bahn* McNeills, by which prefix they are still distinguished in the "Old North State" from the McNeills descended from the same ancestor, Black Neill, through other children of Lauchlin, and also distinguished from other McNeills not of Black Neill's stock. To be a Bahn McNeill, or to be allied to one by marriage or descent has yet a certain social and even political

significance of a favorable kind, at least in the Counties of Cumberland and Harnett.

Archibald and Jennet had the following children:

Hector, known as "One-Eyed" Hector, to distinguish him from his uncle and other kinsmen of that name. He married Susanna Barksdale and had nine children.

Archibald, who was killed in childhood by falling from a tree.

Malcolm, who married Jennet McAllister and had seven children.

Lauchlin, who died unmarried, November 11th, 1795.

Neill, who married Grissella Stewart and had four children who left descendants, and several others who died in infancy.

Colonel Archibald S. McNeill, who was my father's host at McNeill's Ferry (formerly Sproul's Ferry) in 1861, was a son of Neill. Colonel "Archie" was born in 1804 and died in 1876.

Daniel, born in 1752, died May 5th, 1818. He was my father's grandfather, and is still distinguished in the family as "Nova Scotia Dan'l."

John, known as "Cunning John," for reasons which will appear later. He married Agnes Shaw, and had one son.

Margaret ("Peggy"), who married John McNeill, "Scrublin," and had nine children.

Mary (or Maron) who died at the age of 15.

The order of birth of these grand-uncles and grand-aunts of my father is not known, but John is thought to have been the youngest son.

The various families of the McNeills early became prominent and influential in the Counties of Bladen, Cumberland, Moore, Chatham and Randolph. Archibald and Jennet resided in various places, but their principal homestead and the one upon which they were living during the Revolutionary War was the plantation at Anderson's Creek, Lower Little River, in Cumberland County. This county was afterwards divided into two, and the northern part of it, comprising the Little River settlement, became Harnett County. Jennet seems to have been a remarkable woman, with a versatility of talent which scorned the ordinary limitations of her sex. One shrinks from speculating on what she might have been if she had been projected out of the pioneer period forward into a civilization which has evolved the *bas bleu* and the suffragette. As to her personality, she was small in stature, resembling in that respect her granddaughter, Mary Janet, my father's mother; of her complexion and hair I have already spoken. The following traditional account of her, illustrative of her business capacity, shrewdness and canny ways, I received from some of her descendants amid the scenes of her activities. She acquired large herds of cattle, and had cattle-pens and grazing grounds in many

widely scattered localities. Accompanied by a band of trusty slaves, she would roam over several counties, visiting and herding her cattle, exploring for fresh pasturing lands, driving her beasts sometimes as far as Campbellton to market, and camping at night, all the time, wherever night might overtake her. While she was bearing rule, dictating the policy of the entire family connection, transacting business, such as procuring grants of land, squatting on other Crown lands through her servants and tenants, entering upon and surveying after her own fashion large tracts of valuable timber lands, and directing the management of several extensive plantations—all in addition to the cattle business, Archie, "Scrubblin," who seems to have been a steady, plodding, hard-working sort of man, remained at home and took care of the family, while directing affairs generally at the homestead plantation. Jenny Bahn had an original system of surveying the lands which she acquired for her husband, whether by Crown grant, purchase, or by the simpler process of mere entry and possession. She would guess at the points of the compass and run lines through the forest by sending in slaves on various imaginary courses, with instructions to walk on and blaze the trees until she rang a bell. Following behind, by a code of signals with her bell she controlled the movements of the negroes, and would enclose, "in black and white," as it were, by this idyllic method of surveying, tracts which would aggregate a principality. By virtue of such mystic rites of engineering she would sometimes assert claims to portions of the earth with a complacency that was not altogether shared by her neighbors. Nor have the consequences of her achievements "along these lines" been appreciated by some of her successors in title; though it must be said that lawyers have risen up and called her blessed. It is to be feared that, as a "woman of affairs," her ethical standards were not superior to our present-day code, summarized in the phrase, "Business is business." Yet despite the speculative inquiry which I have suggested on a preceding page, tradition says that, in her family life, she was altogether feminine, a model wife and mother, and not at all what one would call a mannish woman or she-man. Her sharpness in making bargains is illustrated in the incident of her purchase of McNeill's Ferry and the 440 acres to which the ferry was appurtenant, from the original grantee of the land and ferry franchise, one Sproul, or Sproat. The owner, an immigrant, discouraged in mind and sick in body, said to her one day when she "cried in" upon him during one of her cattle-driving expeditions, that he had half a mind to sell out and go home to Scotland. With feigned indifference she listened to the recital of his troubles and failure in the new life, and laying due stress upon the utter lack of purchasers for such an unpromising property, and her own condition of being "land

poor," she gradually led her poor fellow-countryman, homesick for Scotland and fearful of death in the wilderness alone, into making an improvident bargain with her. Nor did she resume her journey until she was able to carry with her a written agreement for the sale at a small figure of what was really a possession of great value. The Ferry property and franchise remained in the family until about the year 1905, and until the era of railway extension which came to that section of country some twenty years after the War of Secession, the ferry franchise itself was always very remunerative. It lies on what used to be the great North and South highway of travel and commerce. Over the ferry passed enormous quantities of cotton and tobacco, going north. It is an historic spot. Washington's continental army of the South crossed and recrossed it; and there Sherman, returning from the march through Georgia, crossed the Cape Fear with his triumphant forces. In the Revolutionary War it was the centre of stirring incidents in the southern campaigns.

Some idea of Archibald's and Jennet's possessions in land may be gathered from his will. I shall give this document in its place. But they seem to have acquired quantities of land for speculative purposes, which was profitably sold to later settlers, in their lifetime. Their sons, too, were rich in land; or, rather, poor, because they had so much of it. We can trace certain of these sons, the grand-uncles of my father, in North Carolina histories and historical sketches relating to the Revolutionary period. Anecdotes of them still pass current among their descendants and further illustrate the men and their times. In such reminiscences their exiled Tory brother, Daniel, finds a place.

In my monograph on Daniel McNeill and his descendants, research beyond the time of his coming to Nova Scotia was not called for. Since that paper was written, investigation has revealed something of his earlier career; and I have found materials to supplement this in some notes concerning him, made from traditional sources when I was among the North Carolina kinsfolk. In the following account of the McNeills in the Revolutionary War, history and tradition are combined, omitting such of the latter as I consider to be against probability, or lacking in corroboration by dates and contemporaneous circumstances. The member of the family most frequently mentioned by Wheeler, Caruthers, Foote, Moore, Fanning and other writers of North Carolina history, is Hector McNeill (senior), who was a brother of Archibald (Scrubblin) and an uncle of my great-grandfather, Daniel. As I have already stated, the elder Hector had entered the British service about the time his family emigrated. It appears that he served in one of the Highland regiments added to the army through the sagacity of Pitt at the commencement of

the terrible contest known as the Seven Years' War, to which regiments, twenty years later, when Earl of Chatham, in one of those remarkable speeches in the House of Lords urging conciliation towards America, the great statesman thus alluded: "I remember, after an unnatural rebellion had been extinguished in the northern parts of this island, that I employed these very rebels in the service and defence of their country. They were reclaimed by this means; they fought our battles; they cheerfully bled in defence of those liberties which they attempted to overthrow but a few years before."

The name of Hector's regiment and the particulars of his European military career have not been recorded. By valor and distinguished services in action he had obtained an ensign's commission before the peace of 1763, and, sometime later, retiring from the army as a half-pay captain, he sought out his family in North Carolina and settled in Bladen County, where he had become a colonel of militia before the Revolution.

When the long-smouldering embers of rebellion were flaming into declared and open war, North Carolina was the first of all the American provinces to declare by a Provincial Congress for absolute independence of the mother country. Yet among the people there was a strong dissenting minority, which was very largely represented in the Cape Fear and other Scottish settlements, where public sentiment was almost altogether Royalist. Any form of government but the monarchical was scarcely conceivable to the minds of these Highland folk, permeated by the still fresh memories and traditions of their Old-World descent, and by their natural habit of thought on matters of State, which postulated the conditions of chieftainship and kingship. The seeds of republicanism could not easily germinate in such soil. Again, before their emigration the elders among them had taken the oath of allegiance to the British Crown, represented in the person of George II.; and though taken in many cases under duress, this oath, they believed and taught their sons and grandsons, was binding on themselves and on their posterity. The *covenant* idea of the ancient Scottish Presbyterian cast of mind appears in this. The benefit of their sworn allegiance, to their minds, descended to the next ruler of the Hanoverian dynasty, George III., and the burden of it descended to their children. This argument of the oath proved unanswerable to any who might otherwise waver in choosing sides, and unto the second and third generation it prevailed. The general result was that the Stuart rebels of the Forty-Five in Britain, with their descendants, fought for the House of Hanover against the rebels in America.

Caruthers, the fierce North Carolina Whig partisan writer, after denouncing these Scottish Tories for their course at this

time, reluctantly admits that they were the flower of the population, and he pays the following significant tribute to them and their fellow-countrymen overseas: "The Scotch people, taken as a whole, have generally been regarded as feeling more solemnly bound by their oath than any others, and I have been told by native Scotchmen, who were pretty well acquainted with Scottish history, that in the High Court of Edinboro', notwithstanding all the vigilance and careful enquiry into the matter on the part of the court, only four cases of perjury had been known in a hundred years." Caruthers wrote in the years 1851 and 1852.

Goldwin Smith, in his "Political History of the United States," says that these Highlanders of North Carolina were among the better elements of population in the Province. Moore, in his "History of North Carolina," says: "These Scotch people were brave, industrious and frugal, and North Carolina has always esteemed them as a part of her best population."

As early as 1775 began the bitter persecution by the "Regulators" and other Whig, or rebel, partisans, against those who were well affected towards the government. This could be effectually met and checked only by reprisals in self-defence, even by Tory sympathizers who desired simply the privilege of holding their own opinions while remaining neutral in conduct. There were many such, who, goaded by the fiendish excesses of the "patriots," exacted a terrible toll of compensation and revenge. The Loyalists became the victims of domiciliary visits by self-constituted committees or bands of their Whig neighbors. They were whipped, tarred and feathered, dragged through horse-ponds, ridden on rails with the word "Tory" on their breasts, plundered, shot from ambush, and openly murdered. Their young men were drafted or impressed as soldiers in the continental army. The Tories of the Cape Fear, as elsewhere, organized, as a matter of course, and retaliated in kind as the one means of defending their homes, their families and themselves. When the Highland blood was up, and the Scots went into the business of "regulating" for themselves, things happened, and happened quickly. They were aided by the better class of the original Regulators, who had taken the oath of allegiance after their organization had been shattered for a time by the prompt measures of Martin, the last of the Provincial governors under the colonial *régime*. The most frightful type of civil war ensued—an irresponsible, scattered guerilla warfare of divided communities, and even families, comparable to the Italian vendetta or to the ancient clan feuds recorded in the history of Scotland. Society was dissolved. Law was transmuted into the primitive code of "an eye for an eye; a tooth for a tooth." When, late in the course of this inhuman war of factions, during the discussion of a proposed cessation of hostilities, the rebel

Colonel Balfour declares that there could be "no resting-place for a Tory's foot on the earth," and the desperado Tory Colonel Fanning shoots him on sight for saying so, we get, as in the lightning's flash, a vivid illustration of the men and the spirit of these times.

Out of the resistance to the "Patriots'" persecutions grew and was organized the Tory Army of North Carolina, composed of such portions of the Provincial militia as remained loyal, various volunteer corps, and irregular or guerilla forces such as the desperate band led by the notorious Colonel Fanning. This composite Provincial force, which comprised one corps of Highlanders armed only with the claymore and dirk, survivors of Culloden, amounted in the whole to about two thousand men as early as February, 1776. Flora McDonald rendered valuable services in their organization at Campbellton, the place of rendezvous. Two British officers, of the 42nd Highland regiment, Donald McLeod and Donald McDonald, had been sent into the Province to rouse and enlist the Scots of the Cape Fear country; and they undertook the organization of the Tory army. Hector McNeill became associated with McLeod in North Carolina's civil war some time before the arrival from Charleston of the regular British troops under Lord Cornwallis in the spring of 1780. Like McNeill, Donald McLeod became a colonel of Loyal Militia.

Commanding the Loyal Militia of Bladen County, Colonel Hector McNeill, during the earlier part of the war, was engaged on detached service against the Whig volunteers or militia, between Wilmington and Deep River. In many successful skirmishes and minor engagements he proved himself a daring and resourceful commander and won the devotion of his troops. In the course of these operations he took a great many prisoners of war, whom he sent or personally conducted to Major Craig, the Commandant of the British base at Wilmington. The Colonel's nephew, Neill McNeill, of Little River, in Cumberland, brother of Daniel McNeill, and a grand-uncle of my father, was a captain in this regiment of his uncle.

Near Little River, in July, 1781, Colonel Hector, having then with him only 300 men, was about to be attacked by the rebel Colonel Wade with 660 men, encamped at McFall's Mills. The redoubtable guerilla leader, Fanning, was in the forest not far away, and had received information of the intended attack on McNeill. In his narrative, Fanning writes: "I instantly despatched an express to know his situation, and offering assistance; in three hours I received for answer he would be glad to see me and my party. I marched direct, and by daylight arrived there with 155 men." More trustworthy authorities say that he brought only his usual complement of about forty men, but they were all well mounted and of the best fighting material.

Readers of Fanning's narrative must largely discount his account of the fight which followed, and of all his performances in the war. The purpose of his egotistical story, written in New Brunswick after the war, was to support his application to the British government for some reward for his services and compensation for his losses. From his narrative one would gather that he was the head and front of all the Loyalist military achievements in which he participated, and in others where it is well established that he had no part whatever. He makes scant mention of other commanders, except where it is necessary to find some one upon whom the blame for his reverses might be cast. He was a man of very bad character, notoriously untruthful, savage and brutal, guilty of the most atrocious crimes in his mode of warfare. Such was the estimation in which he was held after the peace, that the State of North Carolina specially excepted him from its Act of Oblivion, and the British government declined to entertain his claims for reward and compensation. Yet the Scottish leaders recognized and employed his marvellous sagacity, daring, and a certain genius for generalship which possessed him; and they often gave him the chief command in action, especially when, as at McFall's Mills, his bush-ranging adventures had made him well acquainted with the ground. The terror which the very name of Fanning inspired in the rank and file of the Whigs was something to conjure with, and often compensated for a disparity of numbers in battle. Thus, Colonel Hector McNeill gave to his unsavory ally the chief command in this "battle," as the local histories term it.

Not waiting for Wade to make the attack he had planned, the Tories took the offensive in a spirited attack upon his position on a hill. After an hour and a half of brisk fighting the event was decided by a charge of McNeill's Highlanders, which swept Wade's Whigs from the summit of the hill. The affair then became a chase, which the victors gave over after a pursuit of seven miles. The Whigs lost about fifty men. The Tory loss was trifling. They captured many prisoners, who were sent to Wilmington, and 250 pack horses laden with plunder from many Loyalist homes in the neighborhood which Wade had sacked.

Colonel Hector fought a great many of such small engagements, and he was never defeated.

At McFall's Mills he and Fanning separated. Afterwards they co-operated at times, as occasion required, but Fanning, at such times, commanded only his roving, free-booting corps, which averaged forty or fifty men, all pretty much of his own stamp. David L. Swain, when Governor of North Carolina in 1834, delivered a series of lectures on the British invasion of that State,

which were afterwards published in the *University Magazine*. He says that "when Fanning and McNeill united for the purpose of striking sudden and effective blows, at remote and effective points, they commanded alternately day by day." Caruthers, in referring to this statement, and to Fanning, says: "but according to the most reliable traditions I have heard, it was not a general or frequent thing; for I am told that the Scotch would not fight under him, nor be commanded by him. They disliked his character, and all the better part of them abhorred his atrocities. In those days, 'tis said, they would not fight under any other than a Scotch commander; and on this occasion (the capture of Governor Burke) they merely co-operated with him for the purpose of accomplishing the object."

On the 17th of August, 1781, Hector McNeill, commanding a brigade composed of his own regiment and those of Colonels Ray and Slingsby, took the town of Campbellton (now Fayetteville), which was held by a Whig garrison under Colonel Emmet. Slingsby was an Englishman who, after settling in Bladen County, had married Mrs. McAllister, a widowed sister of Hector, named Isabella. At midnight, between the 16th and 17th, McNeill contrived to get into Emmet's hands a delusive message that Fanning with 180 men had crossed the river, late in the evening, below the town and had encamped for the night at Lower Campbellton. Ignorant of the proximity of a real enemy in the opposite direction, for the Tories had arrived with great rapidity, by forced marches, Colonel Emmet fell into the trap. So eager was he to destroy or capture the devastating Fanning, whom he supposed to be upon one of his dreaded raids down the river, that he at once marched out of the town to surprise Fanning's camp in a night attack, with a large part of the garrison. Of course he failed to find Fanning, who was not in the expedition at all; and on returning from his "fool's errand" in the morning, he found the town occupied by the Tory force, which had beaten his reduced garrison. After some resistance he surrendered to McNeill, along with Captain Winslow and many other leading Whig officers. The garrison was despatched, prisoners of war, to Wilmington. Colonel Emmet's report to the Whig Governor of the Province, Thomas Burke, is found in Swain's contributions to the *University Magazine*.

Early in September following this exploit, there was a general muster of the Loyalist forces near Crane's Creek, in the lower side of Moore County, on the Cape Fear, when a plan was formed for an attack on Hillsborough in the northern County of Orange, where the rebel governor, Burke, had established his seat of government, far enough, as he thought, from the region of conflict to be safe as to his own skin and dignities. He held

the rank of general, and was protected by a garrison, with artillery. Referring to this Loyalist muster of troops, Caruthers says: "Colonel McNeill was there, and had the command of the whole. It belonged to him, according to military usage, as the senior officer; but it would have been conceded to him out of respect as the oldest man, for he was now advanced in life, and had the full confidence of all who knew him. Colonel Duncan Ray, young, talented and enterprising, was also present; and Colonel McDougall Much the largest body of Tories was now assembled that appeared in arms at any one time after independence was declared." The strength of this assemblage is not recorded, but it has been estimated at three thousand. On the march to Hillsborough, which was conducted with marvellous rapidity, Fanning joined near Deep River, with what he himself calls "950 men of my own regiment." His figures are questioned by all other writers on the events of these times, and it seems clear that he never had a "regiment." His account of this expedition, and of the battle at Cane Creek which followed, is cunningly contrived in such an equivocal manner that the casual reader would infer that he was in command of the entire forces; and, of course, he appropriates to his own use the whole credit of these achievements as valuable material for his impudent and preposterous appeal to the British government, which has already been referred to. All other writers, and the traditions which I have found well established throughout the Cape Fear region in my personal investigations there, are in accord with Caruthers as to the facts of these events, and the following quotations relating to them and to Colonel Hector McNeill are from this author.

Early in the march to Hillsborough there was a smart skirmish at Kirk's farm between the advanced guard and a strong party of the enemy, who were unaware of this Tory movement. About one-third of the Whigs were killed, and the rest dispersed; but McNeill lost some important officers. An account of this fight is preserved in historical memoranda left by one McBride, a rebel partisan who was present.

"The capture of the governor was one of the most remarkable feats of the Tories during the war, and one of the most memorable events in North Carolina."

Orange County, of which Hillsborough was the county town, was one of the strongest Whig neighborhoods. A regiment of continental regulars, under Colonel Robert Mebane, and a large embodiment of rebel militia lay encamped not far off, all commanded by General John Butler. There was no suspicion that a single Tory existed within a hundred miles of the town. It was therefore a complete surprise for the governor and his garrison when, a little before daybreak on September 12th, the Loyalists

stealthily entered Hillsborough in three divisions by separate roads and took possession of the principal streets, with the public buildings, including the quarters of the governor and his staff. They received the fire of sentries and the main guard, and a desultory fire of musketry from various houses was maintained for some time. But there was not time to get the garrison regularly under arms before their quarters were surrounded. The rebels had fifteen killed, twenty wounded, and some hundreds of prisoners were taken. A multitude of ordinary prisoners was not desired. There was better game in hand; so, many of the Whig troops were allowed to take to the woods. The Loyalists took what pieces of cannon there were, and abundant military stores. The town was looted. Among the prisoners taken were the governor, all the members of his Council, several colonels, captains and sub-alterns of the continental army (regulars), and seventy-one continental soldiers who had occupied a church for defence. Thirty Loyalists and British soldiers were released from the gaol, one of whom was to have been hanged that day. The invaders' loss was one man wounded.

"But to remain long there was neither policy nor interest." An encounter with Butler and Mebane on the long march to Wilmington, burdened with the care of so many prisoners and a heavy baggage train of plunder, was to be avoided, if possible. So, in the afternoon of the same day the victors set out upon their return. However, fugitives from Hillsborough had quickly carried the news to General Butler's camp, and he instantly took measures to intercept the returning Tory force and to bring it to action in some favorable position. With celerity and good judgment he chose his ground at a point on Cane Creek commanding the only road in that rugged and swampy locality by which his enemy could pass southward. Here he was able to conceal his troops behind elevated ground and to set an ambushade in advance of his main position. He was re-inforced by Colonel Alexander Mebane, an escaped prisoner from Hillsborough who had returned to his home, spread the alarm among the Whigs of Orange, and collected a considerable volunteer force of riflemen with which he joined Butler.

Authorities and traditions alike are at variance as to the numbers engaged at the Battle of Cane Creek, and speculation is useless.

McNeill commanded the advance guard of his force. He was too experienced and wary a leader to fall into the ambushade prepared for him. Detecting it, he fell back across the creek for the night and prepared to attack next morning.

That night the old Colonel's mind was possessed by "a presentiment, or what he regarded as a presentiment of his death

. . . . Officers of high standing in their profession, and of undoubted courage, have often had, on the eve of a battle, such a presentiment or impression of their approaching fate, as to become depressed in spirits and comparatively inactive. Several such instances occurred on both sides, during the revolutionary war, and with men who could not be charged with idle fears or superstitious notions. Col. McNeill, on this occasion felt constrained to disclose the state of his mind to some of his friends, who tried to laugh or reason him out of his sombre mood, but in vain. The brave old Hector, who had witnessed more appalling scenes than the one now before him and had stood firm when a thousand deathful balls were flying around him, quailed when summoned, and so distinctly, as he supposed, to appear in the presence of his Maker, that there was no possibility of escape. He was not a man, however, who would bear the charge of cowardice, nor would he shrink from what he considered his duty on such an occasion In the morning, old Hector, like Ahab, King of Israel, when going up to battle at Ramoth Gilead, laid aside his regimentals and appeared at the head of his men in disguise, clothed in a hunting shirt and other parts of dress corresponding, very much like a common soldier; but his time was come and his destiny could not be changed."

As the Tories were crossing the Creek and deploying on a strip of low ground beyond, the Whigs, who during the night had advanced their whole strength to the crest of the opposing slope, where they were well covered among forest trees, delivered a tremendous volley with withering effect upon McNeill's formation of his advance guard for the attack. Seeing, at a glance, that if they continued to advance in a frontal attack, it would involve an unwarranted sacrifice of life, Colonel McNeill ordered a retreat for the purpose of carrying out a flanking movement which he had planned as an alternative mode of attack if he should discover the enemy too strongly concentrated in his immediate front. The troops were falling back in good order, accordingly, when Colonel McDougall, commanding a Scottish regiment, a violent, hot-headed fighter, but with no more notion of tactics than a maddened bull, rode up to McNeill, cursing his commanding officer and taunting him with cowardice for retreating. Had he been in a normal state of mind, the latter would have sent McDougall to the rear, a prisoner; but "the presentiment" had upset his natural balance for the time. Stung by the taunt and scorning to make any explanation, sacrificing his better judgment to the vehement but ignorant zeal of his insubordinate inferior officer, the gallant and infuriated McNeill halted and reformed his men for a second advance. Of course the result was the same as in the first; but this time the presentiment (was it the "second

sight" of the Highlands?) was fulfilled. Leading a charge to certain death, Colonel McNeill fell at the first volley, with three balls through his body and five through his horse. "When he fell someone thoughtlessly cried out: 'The Colonel is dead.' 'It's a lie!' exclaimed McDougall, in a bold, strong voice, 'Hurrah, my boys, we'll gain the day yet!' His death was very prudently concealed, for many of the Scotch declared afterwards that had it been known at the time, they would not have fired another gun, but would have sought safety in any way they could."

The retreat was not orderly this time. In hasty council the officers chose the rash but brave McDougall to take the command, and the proposed flanking movement of McNeill was forced upon him. The invincible Fanning was the better man to succeed McNeill, but the Scots refused to move if he led. Yet, though "regarded merely as a co-adjutor, responsible only to himself and having the command of none except his own men," he it was who retrieved the fortune of the day amid all this disaster and confusion among the Tories. Rallying his own men and such others as would follow him, he cut loose from the blundering McDougall, outflanked the Whigs, and, taking them in the rear, wrought such havoc that, as a Whig narrator naively puts it, "General Butler ordered a retreat and commenced it himself." The loss on both sides was heavy. The Tories got off to Wilmington with their Hillsborough prisoners, Governor and all. The captured cannon were sunk in a mill-pond before the engagement. Not long afterwards, a Tory soldier composed a marching song of doggerel rhymes commemorative of the Hillsborough and Cane Creek successes,—from which effusion the following lines are culled:

" . . . We took all their cannon and colors in town,
And formed our brave boys and marched out of town
But the rebels waylaid us and gave us a broadside,
That caused our brave colonel to lie dead on his side;
The flower of our company was wounded full sore,
'Twas Captain McNeill and two or three more."

The Colonel here referred to is old Colonel Hector, and the Captain is Daniel McNeill's brother Neill. The song-writer seems to have been a member of Neill's company.

In the original edition of Fanning's narrative, the American editor has a note on Colonel Hector which indicates his reputation among his rebel neighbors for military experience and capacity, at the outbreak of hostilities. This editor says: "In the first military elections after the Royal Government was at an end, he received a commission from the Whigs. But in 1776 he appeared in arms against them, and was taken prisoner and confined in jail. Subsequently he held the rank of colonel on the side of the

Crown He is represented to have been a man of good moral character, and as brave as a lion. He fell at the head of his command a day or two after the capture of Hillsborough, at the battle of Cane Creek, pierced by five or six balls." The elections here referred to were held subsequent to July 4th, 1776. The commission was tendered but refused. Hence the illegal imprisonment, of which I find no other account. An earlier Whig writer, in describing his death, terms him "the veteran soldier and brave officer Col. Hector McNeill."

Leaving this most conspicuous military member of the family in his soldier's grave beneath the towering pines which fringe Cane Creek, his nephew, the successor in the command of his regiment, next claims attention.

The clanamen had had enough of Colonel McDougall at Cane Creek, and they would not tolerate him as leader any longer. Before resuming their march to Wilmington, the army (as it was called) chose Hector McNeill, a brother of Captain Neill McNeill, and of Captain Daniel McNeill, to succeed to the command of the whole force for the remainder of the campaign. No doubt the name "Hector" had a sentimental influence upon this choice. His uncle's regiment at the same time elected him to fill the vacant colonelcy. He had been a captain in this expedition, but whether in old Hector's regiment or another, does not appear by any record. Though lacking the experience of his veteran uncle, for whom he was named, he made a good officer and a fearless leader.

The younger Hector, according to the Scottish methods of nomenclature, was distinguished from all others of the name as "One-eyed Hector." After delivering his important prisoners to Major Craig, commanding at Wilmington, who shipped them off to Charleston, South Carolina, the young colonel operated chiefly in the region between the Cape Fear and Pedee Rivers; and when too hard pressed by superior numbers, as he often was, found refuge in the Raft Swamp, and occasionally by passing into South Carolina. In these enforced evasive movements and in appearing unexpectedly at the right time and at well chosen places to deliver swift and effective blows to the enemy, he displayed qualities of generalship of no mean order.

There is no historical record to show that the regiment and the larger forces in which the two Hectors and Neill McNeill served co-operated directly with the regular troops of Lord Cornwallis in the North Carolina campaigns which he conducted between the 12th of May, 1780, and the month of April, 1781, in which month Cornwallis set out from Wilmington upon his march to Virginia, where his career terminated in the surrender at

Yorktown on the 19th of October following. These local forces seem to have been occupied during these campaigns, as before and afterwards, with their own Whig and Tory warfare, of which the incidents already related are typical. But there is a strong probability that they were among the numerous Loyalist auxiliaries who did unite with the British troops in important engagements, at Ramsour's Mills, Camden, King's Mountain, Cowpens and Guildford Court House.

It is not difficult to account for the lamentable lack of any information, save tradition, as to this. Well nigh all who have written upon the revolutionary events in North Carolina have merely served up for the "patriotic" palate of their fellows certain "fearfully and wonderfully" constructed glorifications of the Whig "patriots," biographical-apocryphal sketches, in that familiar style so dear to the United States reader in the earlier years of the republic. Others, though more sane in their method of writing, had not enough of the historical sense to preserve for future historical material anything more than the most meagre statement concerning the achievements on the Loyalist side; and these accounts are spoiled by such silly, childish bias, and such palpable distortion of facts, as not only to discount their value, but to be ludicrous to any intelligent reader, however anti-British in sentiment he might be. The true history of the civil war of this period, in the two Carolinas and Georgia, would make a volume of thrilling interest. But the Loyalists of these Provinces, proscribed, plundered, and banished when the cause was lost, have had no historian, and, in the nature of things, they cannot find one now. The material for such a work was effaced with themselves by unforgiving neighbors and former familiars, who hated as never man hated. There was to be no more resting place on the face of the earth for historical truth than there was to be for "a Tory's foot." Justice and Truth alike were abolished, on the principle of the rebel doctrinal dictum of Colonel Balfour. But before returning from this digression to One-eyed Hector's brief story, it is but fair to say that the Scottish folk of the Cape Fear to-day are very proud of their Tory forbears, and cling fondly to all the traditional accounts of these patriots of "the other side."

After Lord Cornwallis had set out for Virginia, and when there were no British regular troops left in North Carolina except four or five hundred in garrison at Wilmington, the Whig local forces, aided by several regiments of continentals, were attaining the ascendancy. Cornwallis had, at least, been fought to a standstill, and large numbers of Loyalists, already able to foresee the end, began to come to terms with their Whig neighbors in order to save their lives and their property. Many of the Scottish

Tories were getting "skeery" about the consequences of being found in arms against the rapidly growing majority now confident of success and loud in declaring, through their State government, the policy of trials for high treason and confiscations of property, which was afterwards carried out. A story is told which will illustrate the difficulty which Colonel Hector McNeill had in holding his men together at this juncture. He had paraded a body of men, one day in October, 1781, in a clearing on the edge of a swamp, and was drilling them. Just then his brother Neill, commanding a company under him, rode in and told him that the Whigs had received intelligence of the surrender of Lord Cornwallis on the 19th, "and," said Neill, "it's all over now." This message was overheard in the ranks. Hector rode off a short distance with Neill to discuss the eventful news. When he turned to ride back and resume drill, his squads had vanished, taken to the swamps, and he was alone with his brother. Tableau! Hector was a profane man under quite ordinary circumstances, but his comments on his situation are left to the imagination. However, with the greater part of his force, he continued a guerilla warfare for some time afterwards, with varying success. Such men as he could not believe that the British would give up the struggle with the surrender of the army of Cornwallis.

"One-eyed" Hector was noted for his herculean frame and strength. He had a widespread reputation as a champion wrestler and fighter in his earlier years, and he fought many a hard battle in what would now be called the amateur ring, to maintain his supremacy over men from many counties, who would travel far to meet him in attempts to strip him of his laurels. This sort of thing had won for him, when he was a young man, the distinctive designation of "Hector Bully," by which he was always known until, in consequence of losing an eye in one of these encounters, Scottish custom dropped the more invidious suffix to his name and established him as the Polyphemus of the Cape Fear. Of course, once a descriptive suffix to his given name came into usage, the surname of McNeill was never used. He lost his eye by foul play at the hands of a gigantic, half savage mountaineer from the Western borders of the Province, who had challenged him to one of the "rough and tumble" contests usual in those rough times in such localities, when athletic sport gave no law, and the code of the Marquis of Queensberry, like himself, was as yet unborn. His powerful opponent had thrown him, and kneeling on his chest, cried: "Yield, McNeill, or I'll gouge you!" "Gouge and be damned!" shouted Hector, "I'm Hector Bully!" His agony under the operation of "gouging" lent him a quick accession of strength to throw off the mountaineer and reverse the situation. This brutal combat was about to end in the death of

Hector's antagonist when the spectators intervened and saved his life. Disreputable as this incident may be, it is given here to illustrate the men, and something of the spirit of a fighting McNeill, in the revolutionary times. *Autres temps, autres mœurs.*

The following incident, too, is characteristic of this rough period. A neighbor and close friend of Hector, Duncan Murchison, grandfather of Colonel Kenneth Murchison, who long afterwards married one of Hector's granddaughters, became a pronounced "Patriot," and he could not be won over to the Loyalists by any force of argument. As the head of a large and influential family connexion, it was most desirable to have him. After having dealt long and faithfully with his erring neighbor to the limit of his argumentative and persuasive powers, Hector, one evening, in a state of exasperation with Murchison's stubborn adherence to Whiggery, closed a heated discussion by seizing him, binding him hand and foot to a stout pole and throwing him into his own calf-pen. There he lay all night, and was found in a soiled and sorry plight by his wife next morning. Murchison joined the rebels; but he attempted no reprisal for the indignity.

It seems apposite here to make a parting reference to Fanning. In 1823, Duncan Murchison visited St. John, New Brunswick, and, incidentally, ran down the unsavory record of this man from the time of his settlement in that Province after the war until his removal to Digby, where he died in 1825. It is to be regretted that Judge Savary, of Annapolis, should have undertaken the unenviable task of trying to rehabilitate such a character as Fanning, in the *Canadian Magazine*, and in the annotated edition of the ridiculous and lying "Narrative," to which it has been necessary to refer before in these pages. It would almost appear that merely to have been a Loyalist, and to have lived and died in Digby, entitled the unspeakable Fanning to the mantle of charity which the Judge has sought to throw about him,—a sort of cloak which is said to cover a multitude of sins. But charity "rejoices in the truth." However prejudiced against Fanning North Carolina historians may be with reference to his savage barbarities during the war, and his immoral, or rather unmoral, career in general, enough is admitted in the "Narrative" by Fanning himself to sustain their indictment on the first count, while as to the latter, the truth remains of record that in a New Brunswick Court of Justice he was sentenced to death for a crime which cannot here be named, and escaped from the gallows to Digby, only through the machinations of freemasonry in high quarters, which resulted in a pardon. The published researches on this matter of a man with the reputation of Duncan Murchison in North Carolina, cannot be called in question.

Colonel Hector, he of the one eye, died in a ripe old age, at his

plantation on the northern side of the Cape Fear River, a mile or more on the road from McNeill's Ferry. The house, a large square brick structure, stands yet on the place next to Dr. William M. McNeill's plantation. The doctor's father-in-law, Dr. Henry M. Turner, attended the old man in his last illness and used to relate how, having put up medicine for the Colonel in the copious quantities of that day, with directions for a dose three times daily, the irascible and impatient patient, when the hour for the first dose arrived, fiercely seized the pint bottle and drained it at a draught. "Let the damned stuff work all thegither," said Hector, "I'll nae be disturbed by wee bit fule drinks o' doctor stuff every twa, tree 'oors." Whether the Colonel's death was hastened by this remains an open question with Dr. McNeill, who, when the writer enjoyed a sojourn at his house, formerly the home of Dr. Turner, told this story, with some witty and instructive comments on the practice of medicine in North Carolina during the early decades of the nineteenth century.

Dr. Turner married Caroline, daughter of Capt. Neill McNeill, and Dr. William M. McNeill married their daughter, Julia Frances.

Dr. McNeill's father was Daniel McNeill (born December 27th, 1788; died January 17th, 1835) son of One-eyed Hector, and who was named for my father's grandfather, Hector's brother. The doctor's father and my father's mother were first cousins. I can never forget the welcome I received, when dismounting at his door in the dusk of an April evening, a stranger with no credentials but my own word, he admitted me himself and on my self-introduction threw his arms about me, exclaiming: "What, sir! You a great-grandson of Nova Scotia Dan! Come in, come in." When I had recovered my breath, and, hesitating about the disposal of my horse, enquired for a lodging-place, he seized my valise and said indignantly: "There are no hotels in this country, sir, for Nova Scotia Dan's kin!" The good doctor was a distinguished-looking, tall, heavily-built old gentleman, full bearded, with a slight resemblance to General Robert E. Lee. He had served as surgeon and corps commander, together, in a cavalry regiment during the civil war. He proved to be one of the most interesting men I have met.

My father's granduncle, John McNeill, though a mere boy, served as ensign in Hamilton's Royal North Carolina Regiment, in which his brother Daniel was a captain. Toward the close of the war these two brothers were at home on leave while their regiment lay inactive for a time at Charleston, South Carolina. During this visit they bore a hand in an exploit which is typical of the kind of guerilla fighting then being carried on by the men of Little River and its vicinity, including some of their brothers.

In the accounts of local historians John figures prominently in the story of the night surprise at the Piney Bottom, in the region of Little River, the exploit just referred to.

The Whig Colonel Wade, whom old Colonel Hector McNeill had defeated at McFall's Mills, had been out on a successful foray north of the Cape Fear River, in the course of which he had damaged the Tory cause and had accumulated a baggage train heavy with the spoils of devastated Tory homes. On their homeward march, Wade's party "crossed the Cape Fear, at Sproal's, now McNeill's ferry, in the afternoon, and after going a few miles, took up camp for the night. . . . In the course of that night, John McNeill, son of Archd, and Jannet (Bahn) McNeill, then living on Anderson's Creek, having learned where this company of Whigs were, started out his runners to collect the Tories, many of whom were lying out in the swamps and other places, with directions for them to rendezvous, the next night, at Long Street, and pursue Wade. Next morning John McNeill went over to Colonel Folsome's (Whig) and remained until sundown. He then mounted a very fleet horse, joined the Tories at or a little beyond Long Street, and about an hour before day, came up with Wade and company encamped on Piney Bottom, a branch of the Rockfish, and apparently all asleep except the sentinel. They consulted and made their arrangements, got into order and marched up. The sentinel hailed them, but received no answer. He hailed them again, but received no answer. Duncan McCallum cocked his gun, and determined to shoot at the flash of the sentinel's gun. The sentinel fired, and McCallum shot at the flash. One of Wade's men had his arm broken by a ball, and Duncan McCallum claimed the honor of breaking it. Then they rushed upon the sleeping company just as they were roused by the fire of the sentinel's gun, and shot down five or six of them, but the rest escaped, leaving everything behind them. . . . There were two or three hundred Tories. All the McNeills (Bahns) were there except Malcolm." All Wade's plunder was recaptured and his own baggage and camping equipment became the spoils of war. The Tories did not pursue, being doubtful of his strength.

In a few days the Whigs returned, in force, and exacted "a capable and full revenge," in their customary manner of burning isolated houses in the outlying districts, slaughtering their Loyalist occupants and looting their household goods. The particulars, which luminously indicate the vindictive spirit and the deeds of reckless cruelty which were then common all over the country among the Whigs,—triumphant now and gathering the strength of numbers as the ultimate success of the rebellion was attaining certainty—are better left to the imagination than described.

During the reprisals for the affair at Piney Bottom, the McNeill homestead was visited by a party of revengeful Whigs in search of the "boys." The only members of the family then at home were the parents, their daughter Margaret and their son Daniel. The other sons were away, either in a war party or hiding out in the woods. Situated in the heart of the Scottish Tory territory, this McNeill home had hitherto enjoyed immunity from hostile visitation. But the neighboring rebels were now grown stronger and bolder in their prosecution of the civil war. As the unwonted intruders appeared in the distance, the keen eye of the watchful Jenny Bahn caught the glint of sunlight upon steel in an opening of the pine woods on a hill side, far away. Divining the errand of an armed force in that direction, she warned Daniel, who was on the roof of the house assisting his father in making some repairs. Daniel slipped over the ridge of the roof and dropped to the ground in rear of the house. Hastily seizing his arms and enough food for a few days' rations, he lost no time in betaking himself to the swamps along the Little River. The wily Jennet cordially received the unwelcome soldiery. The boys were all away—she didn't know where. Some of them were Tories, she supposed, and some of them were Whigs. How could a woman, in such a time as this, know anything about politics and a pack of crazy men-folks? Archie "Scrubblin" discreetly kept out of sight. The most minute search of the premises discovered no male McNeills. Jennet then set before her deluded visitors such ample store of tempting meat and drink that the party, wearied, hungry and thirsty, could not resist the temptation to lose an hour in the enjoyment of this unwonted hospitality in a Tory home; and tradition says that their enjoyment of a certain Scottish fluid form of refreshment, most liberally provided, neither quickened the wits nor the movements of the soldiers when they took up the trail for the next Tory house. The wary and cool conduct of the mother probably saved Daniel's life that day. Soon after, he and John set out for the South to rejoin their regiment.

The father, Archibald, took no part in the war. So highly respected were the old couple, and so affectionately regarded by the partisans of the other side, that they, at least, were never disturbed on account of their Toryism; nor were the offenses of the sons against militant Whiggery ever visited upon the parents and their property, as often was the case amid the punitive excesses at the ending of the war. On one occasion, however, it was thought advisable to hastily bury the family valuables in a swamp; and there they remained, packed in chests and casks, for a considerable time. The writer has a saucer which was

among the household stuff so hidden, and which was brought out by Jennet Bahn from Scotland, in the emigration.

One son, Malcolm, served for a brief period in a North Carolina regiment of continentals, which was employed chiefly in the North. Whether he did so on account of his political opinions, or by reason of the astute diplomacy of the family chieftain, Jennet Bahn, is hardly doubtful. Family tradition gives the latter explanation; and certain conveyances of land which were made to Malcolm lend color to this view. Should the rebellion be justified by success, Tory land would be forfeited to the State, as was well understood. So Malcolm and the outwardly neutral father, in the language of modern high finance, became a sort of "holding company" for the family's property. Malcolm was sheriff of Cumberland County when the war began; and he found in this office a valid excuse for avoiding service in the field, as well as useful opportunities for protecting his family and Tory friends, to whom he was of greater assistance in his nominal hostile office than if he had renounced it to become a combatant in the Tory ranks. My father's letter of April 10th, 1861, at a later page, touches upon Malcolm's adroit conduct in this critical period of the family fortunes.

One characteristic Sabbath day's work affords an illustration of the ferocity of revenge with which the rebels retaliated for the Piney Bottom affair, and shows what might have happened, under different circumstances, to the McNeill home and its womenfolk. The sufferers were neighbors of the McNeills, but their visiting avengers were not the same company that Jennet Bahn had to deal with.

On a Sunday morning, when David Buchan was not at home, Captain Culp, who was Colonel Wade's second in command at Piney Bottom, burned Buchan's house over the heads of his defenceless family, and then came to "old Kenneth Black's." He and his sons were "hiding out." Both doors of the house being open, Culp's men "rode into the house until it was full of horses, and the family were crowded up into the chimney. On going upstairs they found and broke open two large chests belonging to the families of Captains Verdy, Nicholson and McRae, who were in the British army, and who had left their families under the care of Mr. Black, as their houses were not far apart. One chest was filled with chinaware, which they broke; and the other was full of books, which they strewed over the floor, having first cut open their backs, and rendered them useless." The house was then sacked and fired, and the several families of women and children, after being robbed even of their clothing and bedding, were driven into the woods and subjected to various forms of outrage. Immediately after this, Alexander Black's property

was similarly disposed of, and he was shot, while unarmed, in his house. In the course of the day old Kenneth Black and one son were discovered in their hiding-place. "They tortured the old man Black, very much, by beating him or slapping him with their swords, and screwing his thumb in a gun-lock until the blood gushed out on each side, for the purpose of making him tell where his other sons were, but they could get nothing out of him," ("but blood," it might be added). The reverend author of this quotation has forgotten to say whether this old man was carried off to be murdered with some other Tories who were bagged that Sunday.

"At this time the far-famed Flora McDonald lived four miles north of the scene which we have been describing, upon a plantation belonging to Mr. Black, on Little River. Mr. Black's family having had the smallpox, two daughters of Flora came over to see their friends and his family; but to their utter surprise, they found the Whigs there, who took the gold rings from their fingers and the silk handkerchiefs from their necks; then putting their swords into their bosoms, split down their silk dresses and, taking them out into the yard, stripped them of all their outer clothing."

The foregoing account of a rebel Sabbath day's exercises is condensed from the pages of that savage old Presbyterian Whig divine, Dr. Caruthers. He terms the common episode of war, at Piney Bottom, "massacre," and "robbery," while, with hypocritical and even blasphemous rhetoric of the early American "patriotic" order which is truly comic, he writes approvingly of such enormities as have just been related, and even of atrocious murders. The Tory partisan, Fanning, was bad. He was an exceptional case on that side; but almost every Whig leader was a Fanning in barbarity. Strange it is to find, seventy years after this unnatural and hideous warfare in North Carolina, a professed minister of the Gospel of Jesus Christ, after devoting one hundred and fifty pages to the denunciation of Fanning's evil deeds, possessed with the very spirit of Fanning himself. Throughout the book of this dotard parson there is always traceable a certain fanatical religiosity of spirit which applies to the Whig and Tory civil war in "the old North State," the parallel of the children of Israel and the Canaanites. *C'est pour rire*; but this disposal of Caruthers cannot be dispensed with.

One reads in Caruthers, not without some sense of satisfaction, that Captain Culp, the leader of the Sabbath day's work above related, was shot and killed at his house, and his house was burned, in a summary application of the *lex talionis*, by some free mulattoes named Turner, "who were Tories and very wicked," as our clerical authority quaintly puts it.

This fratricidal strife, which in the last stages of a desultory guerilla war, had raged about the home of the McNeills, endured long after any effectual warfare on the British side had ceased, and, it is said, even after the Treaty of Paris, September 3rd, 1783; for those Scottish folks clung stubbornly, in their isolation, to the fixed faith that Britain would yet redeem the national disgrace of Yorktown with fresh armies from across the sea.

The diplomacy of Jennet Bahn, and the high regard in which the parents stood with the Whig leaders of the Cape Fear country, saved the family property from the confiscation laws passed by the State, and the sons, Hector, Neill and Lauchlin, were enabled to make their peace with the new government under the terms of the Act of Oblivion.

With Daniel and John the case was different. The "Act of Pardon and Oblivion" passed by the Legislature of North Carolina in 1783, contained this provision, which excepted them from its operation: "Provided always that this Act or anything therein contained shall not extend to pardon or discharge, or give any benefit whatsoever to persons who have taken commissions or have been denominated officers, and acted as such, to the King of Great Britain."

Daniel had held three such commissions, and John, one. To be outside the benefit of this Statute meant death, for "treason." The other brothers, save Malcolm, had served in the "Tory army" and in the guerilla forces, without having commissions from the Crown. Though some officers in these auxiliary forces had held commissions, Hector, Neill and Lauchlin (who seems to have served as a subaltern) were elected, Hector by his regiment, in succession to his uncle of the same name, the others by their companies.

Though it was conceded by the family that Daniel would have to leave the country to save his life, they were encouraged by Whig friends to believe that John, a boy of about sixteen years, might safely return home from Charleston, where his regiment was when news of the peace came.

But the thirst of Colonel Wade for vengeance had not yet been slaked by the blood of Tory men and the tears of their widows and orphaned children. He had become a "General" in these days of peace, a very considerable person indeed. He was a doctrinaire of the Balfour school. There must be "no resting place for a Tory's foot on the earth." Moreover, the youngster John McNeill was the instigator of the night attack at Piney Bottom which had disgraced the "General." Accordingly, we read in the author last quoted: "After the close of the war, General Wade had John McNeill tried for his life on account of the robbery and murders committed at the Piney Bottom; but

he was acquitted, principally by the oath of Colonel Folsome, who testified that John McNeill was at his house at or about sundown, the evening before the massacre. This made the impression on the minds of the jury that, considering the distance, it was not probable he could have been there by the time the attack was made."

The reader will, no doubt, appreciate the unconscious humor in the use of the words "robbery," "murder," and "massacre" in this passage. John's visit to the Whig Colonel Folsome on the eve of the attack has been before referred to. It is believed in North Carolina that this visit was designed with a view to the possible need of an alibi at the close of the war. Colonel Folsome, though a Whig, was an intimate family friend and could be relied on to help a Bahn McNeill in case of need.

At Piney Bottom John had found among Wade's plunder stolen from a nearby Tory home, a peculiar piece of coarse cloth which had belonged to a domestic servant of the family, named Marren McDaniel.

"On his way home from the scene of his nocturnal slaughter and depredation, John McNeill called on his friend and neighbor, John McDaniel, and told him what an exploit they had performed, how much plunder, money and other things, they found, and showed him a large piece of new cloth which he had got, and which he seemed to regard as a valuable prize. Poor Marren McDaniel, being present, seized the cloth and claimed it as hers. She said she could prove it by the weaver and by old Daniel Munroe, who had paid the weaver for her. So the poor girl had her plundered web of cloth most unexpectedly returned to her." This recapture and restoration to the Tory servant-maid of property of which she was robbed by Wade's party, constituted the evidence in support of the count for "robbery" in John McNeill's indictment!

"But neither old Daniel Munroe, nor Marren McDaniel, nor the weaver were called into court, either because they could not be found, or because it was not known that they were acquainted with any facts involved in the case." (How this latter supposition could exist, the shade of Caruthers alone can tell us.) "They could have testified that John McNeill had shown them the cloth next day, and told them that he got it at the Piney Bottom, where they had killed so many of Colonel Wade's company the night before; and by their testimony he must have been condemned. Perhaps he had bribed them, and kept them concealed in some place where they could not be found, until the trial would be decided; but, however this may have been, from all these circumstances John McNeill was ever after known by the name of 'Cunning John.'"

Cunning John, at a somewhat mature age, appears to have

abandoned the life of a planter and to have sought some higher education, as is shown by a letter written by him to his brother Daniel which is quoted in the monograph on Daniel McNeill and his descendants.

Beyond a long catalogue of their descendants, nothing more of the lives of Daniel's brothers subsequent to the revolutionary war requires special mention. Like their father, they were well-to-do in plantations and in slaves to work them; and their subsequent lives were blessed in being uneventful.

We come now to the grandfather of my father, the last of these sons of Archibald and Jennet (Bahn) to be mentioned.

Investigation of historical sources of information, not required for the preparation of the earlier monograph on Daniel McNeill and his descendants, and a review of family traditions variously received, have disclosed material sufficient to outline his career during the revolutionary war; though no particulars of his personal conduct or achievements can now be discovered, because he was outside the province of those contributors to North Carolina history who have preserved some account of leaders, Whig and Tory, in the civil strife which has been briefly pictured in these pages.

Born in 1752, at the old homestead on Anderson's Creek, Lower Little River, in the County of Cumberland, he was twenty-four years of age in 1776. Possessed of a soldierly instinct, and seeking a military career to the best advantage, he was not content to remain in the "Tory Army" which organized at Cross Creek (Fayetteville) in the early months of 1776, and which was to be confined in its operations to the civil war in the two Carolinas. So, after it was known that the armament of Sir Henry Clinton, Commander-in-Chief of the British army, and Admiral Sir Peter Parker, commanding the fleet, would be in the Cape Fear at Wilmington in June, on its way from New York for the purpose of reducing Charleston, as the key to South Carolina, Daniel went to Wilmington, and much to the surprise of his family and friends, succeeded in obtaining from Clinton a lieutenant's commission in the 71st regiment, Highland Light Infantry, to fill a chance vacancy. It seems that only a detachment of the regiment accompanied this expedition. The written commission is not extant, but that he obtained it and served in this regiment as hereafter related was vouched for by the late James Walton Nutting, his brother-in-law and his closest friend in after years, who received from Daniel some account of his career, and communicated the story to my father and others.

The 71st was the celebrated regiment known as Fraser's Highlanders, which had earned a distinguished reputation in the Seven Years' War, had covered itself with glory at Louisburg in

1758, before Quebec in the army of Wolfe in 1759, and in the subsequent stages of the war which added Canada to the Empire. As an American writer on the revolutionary war expresses it, the regiment "was noted for its firmness and efficiency in battle." It became a sort of proverbial eulogy, among the rebels, to say of the continental troops in the South, when they displayed unusual steadiness and valor in action: "they fought like the 71st."

At Charleston, Sir Peter Parker's little fleet of two fifty-gun ships and four frigates, with a gun-boat or two, was badly crippled in an ill-advised attack on Fort Moultrie, situated on an island in the harbor. When the intrepid Clinton, on foot, led the troops in a gallant but costly attempt to storm the fort by marching, shoulder deep, along the bar at low water, the men of the 71st were close at his heels. Exposed to a terrific fire of grape and musketry in their slow, wading advance, the troops did not fall back until many had been drowned by the rising tide and those in the front of the attack were obliged to save themselves by swimming.

Upon the failure of this expedition, Fraser's Highlanders returned with it to New York. The regiment was subsequently engaged in the operations and battles on Long Island, at White Plains, in New Jersey and Pennsylvania, with the army having its headquarters at New York and afterwards at Philadelphia. In November, 1778, the 71st (two battalions) was detached by Clinton to form part of the force commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel Campbell (of Maclean's regiment) which was sent to Georgia to assist General Prevost in the reduction of Savannah and the surrounding country. In this work and in the defence of Savannah against the French forces in 1779 the 71st bore a conspicuous part and shared in much hard fighting. Savannah surrendered to Prevost in December, 1778, after which Georgia was held by the British against a strong force of French as well as Americans. Loyal sentiment in that Province was strong. In April, 1779, the regiment participated in Prevost's invasion of South Carolina which, though severely punishing the Americans, failed in its objective—the capture of Charleston.

The second and much stronger expedition of Sir Henry Clinton for the reduction of Charleston brought the 71st regiment once more into the Carolinas, in the spring of the year 1780. The armament of Clinton from New York assembled at Savannah, the base of operations. There Prevost and Campbell joined him, and Fraser's Highlanders served in the operations against Charleston, and throughout the campaigns which followed in the two Carolinas. Clinton was now equipped for a siege, and invested Charleston on April 2nd. On May 12th the city surrendered.

Shortly afterwards, Sir Henry Clinton, leaving 4,000 men

for the Southern service, under Lord Cornwallis, returned to New York. Fraser's Highlanders remained with this Southern force, which was augmented by several North and South Carolina and Georgia regiments of volunteers. Daniel McNeill continued a subaltern in Fraser's until June 24th, 1780, when he exchanged for a captaincy in one of these regiments of North Carolina volunteers.

These volunteer regiments were raised by gentlemen Loyalists of the South, assisted by British officers and by British service funds. Prior to this period of the war they had already seen much service, and in point of efficiency and in valor they were not inferior to the British regiments of the line with which they were brigaded. They were Royal Provincial Fencibles, as distinguished from the loyal militia organization of the Provinces, which was largely broken up by disaffection when the war began. They were also quite distinct from such auxiliary or irregular corps as the Scottish "Tory Army" of North Carolina. The men were enlisted upon the same footing as regular troops. The officers were commissioned by the Commander-in-chief of the British army in America, or by one of his Lieutenant-Generals when he was not accessible and the case was urgent. Thus the first of Daniel McNeill's commissions in the Fencibles was signed by Lord Cornwallis, and the second by Sir Henry Clinton, as appears on page 1 of my earlier paper. Militia officers in North Carolina, after the war began, were given commissions by Major Craig, the Commandant at Wilmington, and often by regimental commanders in the militia; while among the irregulars the officers were usually elected by the regiment or company.

The terms of enlistment in the Provincial regulars, or Fencibles, are illustrated by the following form of advertisement used in 1781:

"ADVERTISEMENT

"Any of His Majesty's loyal and faithful subjects, able and willing to serve in the Royal North Carolina Regiment commanded by Col. Hamilton, are hereby requested to repair to his encampment. The bounty allowed for each man is three Guineas; and the terms of the engagement are that he shall serve during the rebellion and within the Provinces of North and South Carolina and Virginia only; that during his service he shall be entitled to clothing, pay, provisions, and all the advantages of His Majesty's Regular and Provincial Troops. and at the end of the rebellion, when he becomes discharged, of course, he is to receive as a reward for his services during the war a free grant of land agreeable to His Majesty's proclamation."

Regiments of Provincials, or Fencibles, were not numbered, but were distinguished by the names of their commanders, as was the case with some of the Highland regiments in the British army

for some time after their formation,—Fraser's, for example. The distinguishing name of the regiment in which Daniel McNeill commanded a company during the campaigns of Lord Cornwallis in North and South Carolina is not now known. He lost the original commission, which would have disclosed his colonel's name; and the only evidence of its contents is the bare certificate of its grant which he subsequently obtained to assist him in obtaining his half-pay of a Captain in the British army and his share of a grant of land in Nova Scotia. This certificate appears on the first page of my earlier paper.

The two campaigns of Cornwallis in the Carolinas were characterized by rapid movements, hard-fought battles and minor engagements following fast upon each other, all stubbornly contested on either side, and with much in-fighting, or hand-to-hand work,—and all with varying fortune. They ended in the retirement of Lord Cornwallis northward, upon what proved to be his last march, with the American general, Greene, left in undisputed possession of North Carolina.

The battles of these campaigns in which Daniel McNeill participated were the first battle of Camden, one at Charlotte (the "Hornets' Nest," as Cornwallis called it), Cowpens and Guildford Court House. The skirmishes, pursuits, retreats and hand-to-hand struggles between small parties were incessant, and too numerous for these pages to detail. Family tradition says that Daniel received one of his wounds in the British disaster at King's Mountain, North Carolina, at this period; but the writer is satisfied that the only British troops detached for service at that point were 150 men of a line regiment, who went to the assistance of a raw embodiment of local Loyalists or Tory irregulars threatened by a superior force of disciplined continentals.

When, in April, 1781, Lord Cornwallis marched into Virginia, Daniel McNeill's regiment remained with the army of occupation in the South, under Lord Rawdon and Colonel Stewart. Passing into South Carolina, this force fought several engagements with the army of General Greene which followed it, much superior in numbers to the retreating British. On the 25th of April occurred the second battle of Camden, which was won by Lord Rawdon's little army, but with such severe loss that he was obliged to retire to "Ninety-Six," an entrenched camp, about fifty miles north-west from Charleston, and which had long been a British post, or base of operations. General Greene rallied his beaten troops and invested this post, intending a siege. Short, as he was, in artillery and supplies, Rawdon felt compelled to evacuate "Ninety-Six," and cutting his way through the besiegers in June, he marched to Eutaw Springs, nearer to Charleston, and encamped there to refresh his exhausted troops and to care for his wounded.

He had some hope of reinforcement from Georgia, but it did not come.

On August 20th, 1781 (the date of his third commission), or about that time, Daniel McNeill exchanged into Hamilton's regiment of the Royal North Carolinas, Fencibles, which was part of Rawdon's force. His young brother John was an ensign in Hamilton's but the reason for the exchange is not known. This was a regiment which had won distinction in various Southern campaigns. One incident in its career is mentioned by Moore. When, on December 29th, 1778, the American army of General Robert Howe was driven from Savannah, Georgia, by General Prevost, Hamilton's regiment, composed of North Carolina men, was confronted by the Second Regiment of North Carolina Continentals. A bloody and heroic duel of regiments, at close quarters, ensued, embittered by the circumstance that it was a struggle between neighbors and former friends.

On the 8th of September, Greene came up, with overwhelming strength, and the battle of Eutaw Springs was fought. The British lost about 1,100 men in killed, wounded and prisoners. The Americans confessed to a loss as great. It was a drawn battle, both sides retaining their ground as at its commencement, and neither general desirous to resume the debate. But Lord Rawdon's little force was now so greatly reduced, and so burdened with its wounded, that there was nothing for it but to retreat to Charleston. Greene did not attempt to follow, and the Southern campaign of 1781 was closed.

Next month the news of Lord Cornwallis' surrender in Virginia came to Charleston, substantially closing the war.

Greene's army, which had been reinforced by General Anthony Wayne's Rangers, sat down before Charleston, but at a respectful distance. The armies kept close watch upon each other; sorties and minor skirmishes were frequent, but no siege was undertaken by the Americans. Both sides were awaiting the outcome of the British fatality at Yorktown, the reduced army of Rawdon too weak to take the field, and Greene content to await orders from headquarters. Thus passed for Daniel McNeill the closing months of 1781 and the year 1782, until December; but it was towards the close of this period of comparative inactivity that, as has been related, he and his brother John visited the old home at Lower Little River. Daniel then saw his parents for the last time, and his stay had to be brief.

In December, 1782, orders came from Sir Guy Carleton, who had superseded Sir Henry Clinton as Commander-in-chief, to evacuate Charleston and proceed to St. Augustine, in East Florida, in shipping sent from New York, and to remove with the troops such Loyalists as might wish to leave the country. Large numbers

of non-combatants, North and South Carolinians and Georgians, accompanied the army, and from Florida departed to make for themselves new homes in Great Britain, the West India Islands and the British Provinces of North America.

From December, 1782, to September, 1783, Captain McNeill remained at St. Augustine with his regiment. Commissioners from England came to St. Augustine to determine the thousands of claims for compensation made by the Southern Loyalists gathered there, and to distribute accordingly the Southern allotment of the sum of money, very inadequate, which was voted by Parliament, "in support of the American sufferers who have relinquished their properties or professions from motives of loyalty to me and attachment to the mother country," as the King's speech expressed it, on the opening of Parliament in 1782.

Captain McNeill was recommended to the government by the commissioners for the half-pay of a captain in the British army during the remainder of his life, which he afterwards obtained, and, with four or five hundred officers and men from his own regiment, the Royal South Carolina Regiment, and the King's Carolina Rangers, he agreed to accept a share in a grant of land in Nova Scotia, offered by the commissioners, all the grantees to receive full pay until their settlement in that Province, with transportation thither at the expense of government, should be effected.

Colonel John Hamilton, commanding Daniel's regiment, retired to England, accompanied by Lieut.-Colonel Archibald McKay, a Cape Fear Scotsman who commanded another regiment of Royal North Carolina Provincials. From the fact that Captain McNeill, in 1785, was corresponding on intimate terms with Colonel McKay, then in London, it may be conjectured that McKay's Royal North Carolina Regiment was the corps from which the Captain exchanged into Hamilton's. I have learned of only two regiments of this class raised in North Carolina.

As Daniel's name is found signed to a certificate of service, dated at St. Augustine, September 20th, 1783, given by Colonel Hamilton and four captains of his regiment to assist a Loyalist in his claims for compensation, it must have been soon after that date that McNeill and his brother officer, Captain John Leggatt, came to Nova Scotia to attend to the business of locating and obtaining the land grant above mentioned. That he was in Halifax in November is attested by the following receipt for a slave whom he left there, probably when he and Captain Leggatt were travelling about the Province examining "the promised land," and sailed down the eastern coast to look over the site which Governor Parr and his Council proposed to grant, in fulfilment of the award made by the "Commissioners of American Claims."

The receipt which fixes this date reads :

" HALIFAX, 29 November, 1783.

" These are to certify that a Black Boy, by the name of Bill, or William, The Property of Captain Daniel McNeale, late of the Royal North Carolina Regiment Leaves with me, in trust, for six months from the date hereof, the said Black Boy—on consideration of Feeding and Clothing the said boy.

Witness, PHIL. NEWTON."

By Daniel McNeill's endorsement on this receipt, it appears that Philip Newton was a captain in the British army. The receipt was written by him: hence the improper spelling of McNeill's name.

In the following spring the exiled officers and soldiers arrived. Before their arrival Captains McNeill and Leggatt had much arduous duty of detail to perform in the preliminary work of preparing for the temporary shelter and victualling of such a large number of settlers at Country Harbor, many of whom were bringing with them wives and families. To appreciate this, one must remember that at this time there was no settlement whatever in the whole of what is now Guysborough County, and supplies of all necessaries had to be taken by water from Halifax.

From this point, let the reader turn to the narrative on Daniel McNeill and his descendants, to learn more of what is known of his life in Nova Scotia. What follows here will supplement that.

In that narrative a visit to North Carolina in the year 1811 is mentioned. The recent discovery of a letter from him to James Walton Nutting, when the latter was a student at King's College, Windsor, discloses that the Captain made an earlier visit to his old home, near the close of the year 1806, upon the same mission. This letter is dated at Halifax the 29th of November, 1806, and begins: "I am still here day after day expecting the ship to sail. I am much perplexed in mind, dare not go home, fearing I should miss my passage. . . ." It is of too personal a nature to present in full. The writer commits his business affairs at home to the care of young Nutting, his brother-in-law, in whose capacity and judgment he seems to have reposed great confidence. Referring to his daughters, he writes: "Dear James, should anything happen to me before my return, I have a heart-felt satisfaction that you are so far advanced that you will be able to take care of that Dear Female family who have no male of any great ideas to serve them. Make the best of your time where you are at present. If God spares your mother and myself, I have no doubt but we shall be able to complete your education as you have wished. You have good ideas, and I hope you will take care of yourself. Keep clear of Bad Company. Shake off your acquaintance with Mrs. A. . . ." Here follows salutary advice, expressed in lan-

guage pointed and direct, from a man who knew the world to a young college student, exposed to the temptations of the social life of the Windsor of that day. Of the moral aspects of that life the Captain evidently held strong opinions, but not complimentary. The letter concludes: "I hope and trust God that my daughters will never think so little of themselves as (to) mix with such, even should I never return. But I hope in God that I shall be spared to return and arrange my business myself. Be prudent and make the best of your time there. You'll make my best respects to Campbell and Family, and believe me to be,

"Your very affectionate brother,

"D. McNeill."

The few letters extant, written by him, indicate that Captain McNeill was a man of action, quick to think, prompt in decision, ready in resource; upright in character, and one who feared God, though not conspicuous in what usually passes for piety. They indicate a habit of mind contemptuous of the shams and humbugs of conventional "Society." He was evidently a typical blunt soldier of the period, with little education beyond that acquired in early life from his parents at his frontier plantation home, and, later, what military training sufficed for his duty in camp and field. We find in his letters an intense devotion to his wife and daughters, with an overwhelming solicitude for the future of his children when they had become bereft of a mother's care in tender years. That he himself, in exile, was affectionately held in mind by his immediate family in North Carolina, and that the memory of "Nova Scotia Dan'l," as he is called to this day in the Cape Fear country, was cherished for long years among his later kith and kin, is witnessed by the scores of McNeills and members of allied families, from generation to generation, who have borne the name of Daniel in his honor.

No portrait of him exists, but he is said to have been of more than medium stature, ruddy of countenance and smooth-shaven, slight in youth, but with a figure in later life which we designate as burly. A scarlet tunic belonging to one of his uniforms was treasured as a relic by Colonel Archibald McNeill (Neill's son) when he entertained my father at McNeill's Ferry in 1861. My father tried it on and it fitted his figure fairly well, though rather scantily. Nothing would induce this nephew of Captain Daniel to relinquish the "Tory coat" in favor of a grandson. It was consumed when Colonel Archibald's house was burned in 1870.

The object of the Captain's two visits to North Carolina, in 1806 and 1811, was to recover his share in his father's estate. At the risk of being thought tedious, I embody in this narrative a copy of the will upon which his prolonged litigation with the

executors arose. The Supreme Court of North Carolina appears to have decided that devises and bequests to a Loyalist outside the protection of the Act of Pardon and Oblivion were void. Which of his brothers, if any, raised this question, or whether his brother Neill and the other executor felt it to be their duty, in their fiduciary capacity, to raise it, does not appear. There seems to have been a partial compromise in the end.

WILL OR ARCHIBALD McNEILL.

"In the name of God," Amen.

I, Archibald MacNeill, of Cumberland County and State of North Carolina, now considering myself frail in body, tho of perfect mind and memory, and well knowing that it is appointed for all men once to die, do make this my last will and testament.

I assign my soul to its Creator in all humble hope of its future happiness as in the disposall of a being infinitely good. As to my body, my will is that it be buried decently beside my spouse in our old burying place.

I make and appoint my son-in-law John MacNeill and my son Neill MacNeill or whichever of the one survivor of the other, sole executors of this my last will and testament.

As to my worldlye estate I dispose thereof as follows:

I give and bequesath to my son John and his wife during their lifetime, the plantation now occupied by them, and after their decease, if no lawful heir of John's own body survive him or his wife, I order said plantation to be the property of my son Daniel and his heirs.

I also bequeath to said John and his wife during their lifetime two negro wenches, named Tillie and Nell, and after their death if said negroes survive them, I order and desire said negroes, with their issue, to be given up to my daughter Margaret McNeill and her heirs.

Item: I give and devise to my son Daniel three hundred and twenty-three acres of land, more or less, lying in Chatham County, near the mouth of New Hope, also a tract or parcel of land lying on McKay's Creek in this county, and in case my son Daniel, nor any of his heirs in Nova Scotia, should never come to claim the said plantations, I order the said plantations to be equally divided betwixt my son Hector's son Daniel and my grandson John McNeill's son, also named Daniel.

Item: I give and bequeath to my son Hector one hundred acres joining his land on Trantom's Creek, and one hundred and fifty acres on said creek known by the name of the Black Smith's old field. I also bequeath to him two negro fellows, Will and Bacchus, junior.

Item: I give and devise to my daughter, Margaret McNeill, a negro wench, named Teaner, together with her children, and another negro wench named Beth, and also two negro fellows, named Virgil and Angus. I likewise give and devise to her, during her lifetime, two hundred acres of land on the North East side of Cape Fear river below the ferry, commonly known by the name of Sprcoll's ferry, and after her decease I order said two hundred acres of land to be the property of my son Neill and his lawful heirs.

Item: I give and bequeath and devise to her son Daniel the plantation on Jones' Creek, and the lands adjoining it now my property.

Item: I bequeath to her son Archibald a plantation in Moore County, known by the name of Hurd's old field, and in Cumberland County, one hundred acres, Survey known by the name of Loftten's island, also a parcell of land in the fork of Anderson's creek, known by the name of Hodge's Survey.

Item: I give and devise to my son Neill the ferry lands containing four hundred and forty acres, the lands bought from James Patterson,

and all the lands belonging to me in the waters of Lower Little River, also two negro fellows named Charles and Cupid, and the four negro wenches named Judith, Nan, Fanny and Flora.

Item: I give and bequeath to his daughter Janet the little negro wench named Abitha.

Item: I give and devise to my granddaughter Janet Shaw the negro girl named Judith, and after said Janet's death, I order the negro girl Judith and her issue to be equally divided among the lawful heirs of said Janet's own body.

Item: I give and bequeath to my grandson John McNeill, John Scrubblin's son, one hundred acres of land, more or less, lying on the bear branch, commonly known by the name of Peggy Black old field, and likewise another piece of land close to it, known by the name of King's School-house.

Item: I give and devise to my two grandchildren, Daniel Hector's son and Lauchlin Neill's son, to be equally divided betwixt them, a lot in the town of Fayetteville.

Item: I give and bequeath to my son Hector two hundred and fifty acres on the flat land from the meadow to the old place. Also two hundred and fifty acres joining the old survey, that was the property of Roger MacNeill. Also one hundred and fifty acres on the Blue branch and Trantom's Creek, likewise fifty acres lying between the old lands of McKay and McNair.

Item: I give and devise to my grandson Coll MacNeill two hundred acres on Stewart's creek.

Item: I give and devise to my son John two hundred acres on Anderson's Creek joining the old place. Fifty acres on the ford, Carver's Creek, I bequeath to my son John.

Item: I give and devise to my son Neill the plantation I bought from Rob't McKay and the lands adjoining it.

Item: I give and devise to my granddaughters, Malcolm's children, Janet, Flora and Isabel, five shillings sterling each.

Item: I bequeath to my son Daniel twenty milch cows out of my stock, to be sold and the money put to interest for the benefit of Daniel and his heirs.

Item: I bequeath to my son Neill's daughter Janet my flock of sheep.

Item: I give and devise to my son Neill the remainder of my stock of cattle and wild horses on condition he will not interfere with my son Hector's stock, also my stock of hogs. Also a still to be equally divided between Neill and my grandson Archibald John Scrubblin's son.

The rest of my household furniture and worldly property I give and devise to my son Neill in hopes he will make good use of it.

If my daughter Margaret should in a short time after this be taken away by death, I order that her children while they keep together be allowed by my son Neill to live at Sproall's Cowpen on Thornton Creek. I also order that she during her lifetime remain on the place where she and her family now live.

This my last Will and testament written this 17th of April, A.D. 1801, and signed in presence Revd. Angus McDairmid and Hector McNeill, both living on Little River.

(Sgd.) ARCHIBALD MACNEILL.

(Sgd.) ANGUS MACDAIRMID Witnesses.
HECTOR MACNEILL.

From the omission of Malcolm's name in the will it may be inferred either that he died before his father, or that, out of the land "deals" in war time, to which reference has been made, he had received his share of the paternal estates. Coll, named in the will, was one of his four sons. The others are not named, and his three daughters were "cut off" with five shillings apiece.

Malcolm was the Whig or rebel son of this Tory family. There is, in these circumstances, some indication of a "family jar."

The son-in-law John McNeill, named an executor, had married Margaret, commonly called Peggy, the testator's daughter. He bore the suffix "Scorblin" or "Scrubblin" (*no good*). The date of Archibald's death was June 26th, 1801. Examination of his will shows that he specifically devised more than four square miles of land, the acreage of which is expressed, besides five or six other plantations, the extent of which is not defined, and several detached parcels or lots of land as well, while the residuary devise to his son Neill may have included more land. Sixteen domestic slaves are given by the will, but there were doubtless many plantation hands to go with the residuary estate to Neill. In 1861 Neill's son, Colonel Archibald, a first cousin of my father's mother, had seventy slaves on the Ferry plantation alone, and he owned two other plantations, from which, with his timber gangs, he could muster three hundred and fifty slaves for getting in his cotton crops.

There were thirty-two first cousins of my father's mother, exclusive of a number who died young and whose names are not recorded.

The genealogical chart of the Bahn McNeills, referred to in the Introduction to these Memoirs, is too voluminous for insertion here. The manuscript may be copied by any descendant of my father having sufficient interest and patience.

In concluding this account of the family, it will not be amiss to refer to a suggestion made to me by Judge Savary, that the McNeills of Digby County, a numerous progeny, derive descent from a branch of the North Carolina family collateral to that of Archibald and Jennet Bahn. If this be so, there would be a common origin either in Archibald's father, Lauchlin, or in the father of Lauchlin, Black Neill. Judge Savary, who is learned in the history of the Loyalists and has written much on the subject, thinks that the progenitors of the Digby family were North Carolinians. Sabine leaves this in doubt. The ancestors, undoubtedly, were Loyalists who arrived at the close of the Revolution. The similarity of their names to those of the early Bahn McNeills is striking. Neill McNeill was a Loyalist captain. He settled first at Wilmot, Annapolis County, and some of his descendants are there to this day. He afterwards removed to Digby town, and was buried in the Trinity Church cemetery there. He had a son, Archibald; and an Archibald, either Neill's son or his brother, who, according to Sabine, was a captain in the Royal Artillery, settled on the St. John River in New Brunswick. This Archibald married a member of the Sears family, which was among the families who first settled St. John, or Parr Town, as it

was originally called, and had the distinction of registering the first birth in that town.

I may here remark that no connection can be traced between the North Carolina McNeills and those of the name settled in eastern Nova Scotia and Cape Breton.

Of the family life at "Cambridge" and Windsor no materials now remain for any attempt at description. The plantation was not a success, in a financial sense. Captain and Mrs. McNeill appear to have had a standing arrangement to spend the winters in Windsor, and there, chiefly, the daughters were educated. Particulars relating to the Crown grant of "Cambridge" are given in connection with the foregoing account of the Parker grants at Walton. To complete the story of Daniel McNeill's career, a copy of his will, probated at Windsor, is presented here. Something of mind and character usually is revealed by such an instrument. Further, it is of interest to his descendants to know the extent to which fortune and endeavor had finally endowed with worldly possessions this plain soldier, in exile for the lost cause of a political ideal. In his case, at least, the rewards of faith and loyalty are found not to be material.

In describing himself as of Newport, the testator refers to the township of that name.

WILL OF DANIEL McNEILL.

In the name of God, Amen.

I, Daniel McNeill of Newport, in the County of Hants and Province of Nova Scotia, Esquire, late captain in His Majesty's Royal North Carolina Regiment, DO make, publish and declare this my last Will and Testament in manner and form following, that is to say:

I give, devise and bequeath unto my eldest daughter Mary Jenette McNeill, her heirs, executors and assigns all my lands tenements and hereditaments situate, lying and being in the County of Sydney* and Province aforesaid, viz., town lots numbers 42, 44, 45, 47, 156, 209, 210, 211, 212, in the township of Stormont, and two other lots numbers unknown, one drawn by me and the other purchased from Captain John Matric, and ten acres of cleared land back of the town plot, beginning at the lower corner of Broad Street. Also farm lots numbers 61 and 67, containing five hundred acres each, situate in Country Harbour, purchased by me from the said John Matric. Also farm lot, number 33, containing five hundred acres, partly drawn, and partly purchased by me from Thomas Bates and Roger Boyd. Also farm lot number 4 in Country Harbour aforesaid, containing five hundred acres, partly drawn by me and partly purchased from Samuel Dier. Also two other farm lots, thus situate, one on Country Harbour Lake, and the other on the west side of Country Harbour marked on the plan. Also all the lands purchased by me from Major Daniel Manson, from Thomas Manson and Roderick McLeod, and a lot of land granted me at Fisherman's Harbour, and also all my other lands, tenements or hereditaments situate in said County of Sydney. And I also give, devise and bequeath to my said daughter, Mary Jennette, all that farm messuage and premises with the appur-

*Now Guysborough.

tenances, known by the name of Spring Hill Farm, containing one thousand five hundred acres, more or less, situate on the Basin of Minas next lands owned by James Walton Nutting. Also all that lot of land situate on the south side of the Petite River, purchased by me from Leslie, containing five hundred acres, more or less. Also all the marsh land whatsoever, adjoining said last mentioned tract, and also all the marsh adjoining the lower half of the tract of one thousand acres on the south side of said river granted me by Government, except as hereinafter excepted. Also ten acres of marsh land on the north side of said Petite River, purchased by me from William Parker, junior. Also all that tract of land situate on the Cock Magun River, together with a right throughout the township of Newport, purchased by me from John Jones, and all my other lands, tenements and hereditaments whatsoever, in said County of Hants, except as hereinafter excepted.

I also give, devise and bequeath to my said daughter, Mary J. McNeill, all that farm lot of land and premises in Moore County, State of North Carolina in the United States of America, known by the name of Piedd Farm on Deep River, containing three hundred acres, more or less. Also all that farm in said North Carolina in the county aforesaid, known by the name of Cane Brake, containing one hundred acres, more or less. Also all that farm situate on Cape Fear River in Cumberland County in the State last aforesaid, and all my other lands and tenements in said County. Also all the share, title, right and interest which I have or possess in a ferry on Cape Fear River called Sproule's Ferry. And also my other lands, tenements and hereditaments whatsoever, in the said State of North Carolina or elsewhere. I also give and bequeath to my said daughter Mary J. McNeill, all and singular my personal estate, goods, monies, effects or credits which I may die possessed of in the said Province of Nova Scotia, in the said State of North Carolina, or elsewhere whatsoever. To have and to hold all and singular the aforementioned and described lands, messuages, tenements, hereditaments and appurtenances and premises, unto my said daughter, Mary Jennette McNeill, her heirs and assigns, to and for her, and their only proper use, benefit and behoof forever.

And I give, devise and bequeath to my youngest daughter, Sophia Margaret Terhune, the lower half of a tract of land of one thousand acres, granted by Government, situate on the south side of Petite River aforesaid, said half containing five hundred acres, more or less, with the piece of marsh adjoining the same where the Sled road now is, being the piece opposite the mouth of Mill Creek, all the other marsh adjoining said land, being hereinbefore devised to my eldest daughter. To have and to hold the said half tract of land and premises to the said Sophia Margaret Terhune, for her use for and during her natural life, and after her decease I give, devise and bequeath the same to the heirs of her body lawfully issuing, equally share and share alike, to have and to hold to them and their heirs forever, but not to be divided until the youngest shall be of age. And in case my said daughter should die without heirs, I give, devise and bequeath the same to my said eldest daughter, Mary J. McNeill, to have and to hold to her heirs and assigns forever. And I do hereby make, constitute and appoint James Walton Nutting to be the sole executor of this my last will and testament.

In witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand and seal this eighth day of January, in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and fourteen.

Attestation clause.

(Sgd.) DANL. McNEILL (L.S.)

Witnesses:

(Sgd.) JARED INGERSOLL CHIPMAN,
RICHD. KIDSTON,
W. HILL.

CODICIL.

"I, Daniel McNeill, the testator named in the foregoing will, do hereby make, publish and declare the following as a Codicil to my said Will and in revocation of such part thereof as is hereinafter mentioned, that is to say, I hereby revoke, set aside and make void the clause in my said will whereby I have devised to my youngest daughter, Sophia Margaret Terhune, and her heirs, the tract of land and premises therein mentioned, being the lower half part of a tract of land of one thousand acres granted me by Government, I having by deed made over to my said daughter and her heirs a certain other tract of land containing five hundred acres more or less purchased by me from — Leslie, situate on the south side of said Petite River, in said deed mentioned and described, and under certain conditions and restrictions in said deed mentioned.

"(Sgd.) DANL. McNEILL (L.S.)"

"Attestation clause.

"Witnesses:

"(Sgd.) JOHN WALLACE,
" J. W. NUTTING."

The date of Daniel McNeill's death was May 5th, 1818.

The unequal division of his estate by the foregoing testamentary disposition is due to the fact that the Captain highly disapproved of the marriage which his younger daughter, Sophia, had made with Daniel Terhune about five years before her father's will was made, when she was only sixteen. Her father thought she had married beneath her station in life, and too young. The elder daughter married about two years after her father's death.

Though the will devises some nine square miles (in the aggregate) of land in Nova Scotia, beside eleven Stormont or Country Harbor Townsite lots, its maker in reality was "land-poor"; for much of this property was of little if any value then, or for many years afterwards, and he had paid much too dearly for that part of it which he had purchased. He had inherited the Cape Fear Scot's proclivity for multiplying his landed possessions, with the notion that mere acreage would be wealth. His executor and his son-in-law, Francis Parker, did what they could to realize on the Country Harbor properties, but there was no sale for them, and gradually they passed into the possession of land-grabbing settlers. To eject the squatters would have cost more than the land was worth, and nothing was ever derived from these properties after the Captain's death. The grant of 1784 was finally escheated to the Crown about the year 1888, in order to make title to part of the land for gold-mining speculators.

The original name of "Cambridge" given to Captain McNeill's homestead property became attached to the community about it; so we find the homestead, in the will, called by its later name, "Spring Hill Farm."

There is pathos in the unavailing devise of the lost plantations

in North Carolina to the daughter Mary Janet. These comprised about five hundred acres. At no time could the proscribed Loyalist reasonably hope that his children would be forgiven for the father's loyalty to the British Crown. Yet, to the last, the old soldier clung to the idea that somehow, sometime, his daughter might succeed, where he had failed, in obtaining natural justice, albeit nothing but legislation by the State of North Carolina could have redressed the father's and the daughter's wrongs. To think of regaining these properties in 1814, or afterwards, was a futility, but surrender claim and hope the Captain would not. A will speaks from the testator's deathbed. The transmission of his righteous claim was but a dying father's cry for justice to his helpless child from a relentlessly vindictive government which visited upon the children the so-called sin of their fathers: the loyal patriotism of gallant men converted into political sin by successful rebellion.

CHAPTER III.

EARLY YEARS.

"Faber quisque fortunæ suæ."

—Sallust.

By way of preface to this account of my father's life, I shall quote from a tribute to the memory of his father, written at the time of the latter's death, for *The Christian Messenger*, by Rev. Jeremiah Bancroft, the Baptist pastor at Walton for many years. The extracts here given will justly fill out the portrait of my grandfather briefly sketched in my earlier paper, while throwing some light upon the early home life and influences which contributed to the moulding of my father's character in the plastic time of youth. Mr. Bancroft wrote:

"Francis Parker, son of the late John and Sarah Parker, was born at Walton, February, 1797. When about sixteen years of age he went as clerk to the late Benjamin DeWolf, of Windsor. In consequence of his faithfulness in that department he was some years after taken into the firm. After some time he moved to Cambridge, and finally to Walton. He received a Magistrate's Commission at an early day. He here engaged in extensive business and did much toward the improvement of the place, and the encouragement of industry in agriculture, plaster and shipbuilding. Naturally generous and obliging, he sometimes divided his last barrel of flour with those who were destitute, and the last loaf of bread has been by him divided while supplies were being expected. In times of prosperity, although not a professor of religion, he erected a house for worship. After finishing the outside so far as to make it comfortable for service, the Episcopalians aided him in finishing the building, which he donated to them, with land adjoining for a burying-ground. Possessing a benevolent disposition, his house was a home for all Protestant ministers visiting Walton. The writer first visited the place in December, 1848, under the direction of the Baptist Missionary Board, and was invited to make Mr. Parker's house his home when there. This continued till June, 1850. The Episcopal clergyman, the Wesleyan and the Baptist were each in turn made welcome every four weeks. Other ministers visiting the place partook of his hospitality and found not only a resting-place, but a home. This continued while he kept house. In the summer of 1860, the

Rev. Mr. Scott visited Walton as a missionary, through whose efforts (encouraged by Mr. Parker) a Baptist meeting-house was undertaken and finished the winter following, the late J. W. Nutting, Esq., of Halifax, giving the ground. When the house was completed (after Mr. Parker paying all his subscription) there was due him on the building eighty pounds, which was never called for. When enquired of by the writer, after the house was dedicated, as to how this sum was to be raised, he said, 'I have concluded to let it stand.' This act of generosity was most advantageous to the Baptist interest here. During the winter, while the house was being finished, young men from Acadia College and others visiting the place, preached and held protracted meetings. As a result a number were baptized by Rev. D. G. Shaw, who, with the late Rev. George Dimock, had attended for that purpose, among whom were F. Parker, Esq., and his amiable wife, a truly pious woman who was an ornament to society and to the Church as well. In March following the house was dedicated, and in April, four weeks from the dedication, a church was organized, consisting of fourteen members. Brother Parker was ordained to the office of Deacon, which he creditably filled till called home. Brother Parker was also requested to act as church clerk, which he did till 1880, when he tendered his resignation The consistent faithfulness of our departed brother in church matters was most satisfactory, and on trying occasions convinced those present of the reality of his profession. He was gentle and unassuming, yet faithful under trials; he also possessed decision and perseverance in carrying out what he thought was right. . . . His was a peaceful, happy end; the state of his mind may be understood by his requesting others to meet him in Heaven, and suggesting the reading of the twenty-third Psalm, when prayer at his request was about being offered. His mind was clear and his faith strong; thus the righteous hath hope in his death. He died on the evening of the twenty-fourth of August, in his eighty-sixth year. . . . Mr. Parker's first wife was removed by death, June 14th, 1866. She was faithful through life and peaceful in death. In June, 1868, he was again united in marriage with Anna, widow of the late Dr. Boyington, of Portland, Maine. She also departed this life, November, 1876, at Halifax, N. S., on her return from Portland, Maine."

I am unable to fix the time when Francis Parker removed from Windsor to Cambridge, where he resided for a time at Spring Hill Farm, at the commencement of his business operations in Walton; but my father was then very young, probably three years old. His earliest recollection gathered about a serious accident which befel him at Cambridge, when he was in his fifth year. Straying into the pasture where his father's favorite old mare, "Maggie," was

at large, he approached from behind to drive her by the tail, when the animal flung out her heels and the front of one shoe caught the child on the forehead, hurling him many feet away. An Irish farm hand who was near by picked him up for dead, and holding him by the ankles, to protect his own clothing from the streaming blood, carried the little inanimate form to the house, where he deposited his burden on the kitchen floor before the mother, exclaiming, "He's kilt, marm, he's kilt entirely!" There was no doctor nearer than Windsor; but the mother's resourcefulness was equal to the emergency, and "Maggie," with the father behind her, atoned for her offence that day by fetching the far-away doctor at a speed which established a record for the distance. The terrific blow indented the boy's skull. Had the frontal bone been hardened by a few more years' growth, it would have been fractured. All who knew him will recall the imprint of that mare's shoe over my father's right eye, for he carried this mark to the grave.

At a tender age he had a second narrow escape from death, when he fell out of a boat into the Petite River. Two of his brothers were with him, and one seized him by the feet as he was disappearing, head downwards, beneath the surface. Then keeping his head under water by holding fast, each to a foot, both brothers screamed lustily for help, finding that they were not strong enough to pull him back into the boat. Their father chanced to be near by, and, plunging into the river, he brought the drowning child's head to the surface and forcibly released the frantic grip of the others upon the feet. It was done barely in time, for there was much ado to resuscitate the victim of this novel method of his little brothers, who were drowning him in their endeavor to save him.

Daniel was still a small boy when his father built the well-remembered house overlooking the river in the central part of Walton village, set into the slope of the hill with its access from the rear above, and its large general country store and counting-house beneath forming the first floor on a level with the main street. This became at once the homestead and the centre of Walton's business activity when it was the thriving community which Francis Parker made it.

The intensity of my father's love for this old home of his boyhood and of his filial affections can be attested by his children, who from time to time accompanied him on his visits to Walton; while in his last years his conversation with them showed that his mind was continually reverting tenderly to this scene and the times of his earliest recollection, in which his father and his mother were the central figures about whom his thoughts revolved.

His first school-teacher was Michael Cody, a Roman Catholic

Irish immigrant who had settled at Walton and established a boarding and day school for boys. He was an intelligent man, of fairly good education, and a successful teacher. His daughter, Margaret, widow of Henry Conlon, now eighty-two years of age, still resides in Walton, and has a clear recollection of "Doctor Dan" as a little schoolboy. She recalls also that she was present in his home in 1845 when his mother read from *The Nova Scotian* a paragraph announcing that he had won a gold medal at Edinburgh. He was about six years old when he entered this Walton school, and he attended it for about six years. The school dictionary, a tattered volume, well thumbed by the boys and doubtless handled often by my father, is now a relic in our family.

Francis Parker was a believer in "the gospel of work." The country schoolboys of those days, who innocently knew not football, baseball, hockey, or any other "sports" as the all-absorbing occupation of youth, though their games held due place in the economy of their lives, took their natural part in the work of the home and of their fathers' occupations. Accordingly, the boy Daniel, with his brothers, when at home throughout his schoolboy career, shared the labor of the lumber woods, the quarry and the shipyard to the best of a schoolboy's time and strength.

In the year 1834, when he was twelve years of age, the boy was sent to the Collegiate School in connection with King's College at Windsor; but his stay there was brief, in consequence of his revolt against the system by which the College students fagged the Academy boys. He was appropriated as a fag by a collegian, a man nearly thirty years old and of low character. For refusing to black this fellow's boots the little fag was soundly beaten by him and then thrust headlong into a large wood-stove in one of the class-rooms, with the stove door fastened behind him. It was late on a winter's afternoon, and the embers of the day's fire still glowed among a mass of stifling ashes. He contrived to kick the door out of the stove and to escape to his room, after the bully had left him to shift for himself. A few minutes sufficed to pack up his wardrobe and books. With these in a bundle on his back, the enraged, high-spirited child set out in the dusk of evening to walk the twenty-five miles to his home. But as he passed through the college gate he was confronted by Dr. Porter, the College President, riding in, and who, divining his intention to run away, asked him where he was going. Reluctantly he was obliged to tell his story. "Come back with me," said the angry doctor, and he rode up to the front of the College, followed by the runaway. Just then, unluckily issued from a door the object of the President's wrath, the perpetrator of the outrage. Leaping, in a passion, from his horse, the doctor, a large, powerful man, charged him with what he had done, and

hardly waiting for an answer, administered to the bully, in full view of College and Academy, a tremendous thrashing with a heavy dog-whip which he used when riding. The innocent cause of this disturbance of the scholastic calm of King's was ordered to return to his studies, but it is easy to understand how by petty persecution, secretly conducted, this disgrace of a public flogging endured by a grown man, and for such a reason, was avenged upon the unwilling cause of it, and why, at the end of the school year, the youngster who had the spirit to challenge the fagging system and to persist undaunted in his defiance of it while he remained at Windsor, was removed from that school by his father. The late Alfred Haliburton, Sergeant-at-Arms of the House of Assembly, a schoolmate, backed my father in this campaign for liberty, and being a redoubtable pugilist for his age, more than once thrashed a collegian at Windsor on his behalf.

While there, Daniel used to be a visitor at "Clifton," the home of Judge Thomas Chandler Haliburton, who was then publishing in the *Nova Scotian* his famous "Sam Slick" papers. Francis Parker was an intimate friend of this founder of the school of American humor. I have a book on "Parish Law" (published in 1743) which the judge sent by our young schoolboy as a present to his father in 1835. The book had belonged to Judge Isaac Deschamps, noted in Provincial history for the charges of maladministration of law preferred against him in the year 1778; and it had been purchased from him by W. H. O. Haliburton, "Sam Slick's" father, who was a judge of the Court of Common Pleas. The title page bears the autograph of both these former owners.

During his school days at Windsor my father made occasional visits home, when he would usually walk the whole way, taking short cuts through the Newport woods. On one of these walks he encountered a wildcat which disputed his passage; but after a brief encounter he succeeded in driving off the beast with a cudgel and came out unhurt. To point a moral, he was wont to tell how, driving home from Windsor for a vacation with an Irish servant of his father, he made his first, and last, attempt at smoking. The Irishman treated him to a cigar which made him in a few minutes so horribly ill that, as he lay groaning in the bushes by the road side, expiating the offence against his stomach, he resolved never to try smoking again; and he never did.

In the autumn of 1835, or early winter, he went to Horton Academy, at Wolfville, where he was a student until November, 1837.

The Rev. John Pryor was Principal of the school. In a letter to one of the Presidents of Acadia College, written in 1899,

referring to the old Academy, my father says: "Isaac Chipman, whose life was so sadly ended in the Basin of Minas, was one of the Assistants. I became much attached to him, and he was a valued friend during my sojourn at the Academy, and was one of my Nova Scotia correspondents at a later period while I was pursuing my professional studies at the University of Edinburgh. He was a quiet, unassuming Christian man, of marked ability, and a born naturalist."

Among his school-fellows there were, James Forman, who became a distinguished engineer; P. C. Hill, for some years Provincial Secretary and leader of the government; his brother, George Hill, long rector of St. Paul's, Halifax; John P. Mott and William J. Stairs, who both attained distinction and wealth among the merchants of Halifax; Alexander James, who became Judge-in-Equity of Nova Scotia; and Charles Tupper, distinguished in the foremost rank of Canadian statesmen.

We recall the close, affectionate and life-long friendship between these men and my father, founded upon the strong bond of school associations and schoolboy experiences. He retained many other such school-bred friendships with men in humbler walks of life, and not different in kind or strength.

William B. C. A. Parker, of Crimean fame, whose memory, conjointly with that of Welsford, is conserved by the monument in St. Paul's Cemetery at Halifax, was another fellow-student at Horton Academy.

While at Horton he bore an active part in planting those now venerable ornamental trees which have since adorned the grounds of Acadia College. The boys of the Academy (the College was not yet founded) brought the trees in a scow or flatboat down the Cornwallis River from points near Kentville. Some of the fruits of these labors perished in the fire which destroyed the old College building in 1877, many have been cut down since in the process of what is thought to be "improvement," but a few yet remain as monuments to the memory of those Academy boys of William the Fourth's reign. The College fire consumed the old Academy building, which formed the central section of the College structure, and the old Academy boarding-house, in which my father lodged, went down in a later fire. Both were very familiar to the writer.

Though always of studious habits, my father, while at Horton, indulged much in his favorite pastimes, shooting and fishing. Game was then abundant in the vicinity. The late Judge James and he were usually companions of the order of the gun, and they kept the Academy larder stocked with the various victims of their prowess.

The course at Horton closed his academic education, so far

as schools were concerned, and there he completed the subjects necessary for matriculation at the University of Edinburgh. There was no graduation ceremony or granting of degrees in those days at this school. The *testamur* closing his studies was merely this certificate:

“This may certify that the bearer, Daniel Parker, has been for some length of time a pupil in the Horton Academy. And, being now about to leave, I have much pleasure in testifying to the good advancement he has made in his studies, as well as to his uniformly attentive, obedient, and studious habits and his correct moral deportment, while under my care.

“Sgd. JOHN PRYOR, A.M.,

“Principal Horton Academy.

“November, 1837.”

The reader familiar with the history of the old Granville Street Baptist Church, Halifax, and Daniel Parker's share in it, may find something pathetic in this certificate.

The choice of medicine as a profession seems to have been made during the course of study at Horton,—at an early age, for he was but fifteen when he left school. That he was more than ordinarily mature for his years seems probable. But youth seems to have ripened, as a general thing, more rapidly then than now, when the distractions surrounding and worked into our schools of learning too easily tempt the student and retard his progress toward knowledge and manhood; when play, degenerated into “sport,” appears too often to usurp the place of first importance and threatens the reversal of the old adage into the form: “All play and no work makes Jack a dull boy.”

Two months or more were now spent at home, after which, early in the year 1838, medical studies were begun in Halifax with Dr. William Bruce Almon, a man distinguished in the profession. Pharmacy occupied much of the junior student's time in those days, and it was acquired practically in the drug store; for every physician was then his own apothecary. Dr. Almon's shop, with his offices attached, was located about midway in that block on the north side of Duke Street which extends from Water Street to Hollis Street,—a little east of the present Acadia Sugar Refinery office. The articles by which my father was bound or apprenticed to Dr. Almon are here given. The document will not be without interest to anyone for whom the Provincial history of medical education, with its charged customs, has attractions; and certainly the quaint and now obsolete terms of his apprenticeship must interest the descendants of the boy of fifteen who by this instrument became wedded, as it were, to the profession of his choice.

"INDENTURE OF APPRENTICESHIP.

"This indenture made the ninth day of February, in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and thirty-eight, between Daniel McNeill Parker, the son of Francis Parker, of Walton, in the County of Hants, and Province of Nova Scotia, Esquire, which said Daniel McNeill Parker is an infant of the age of fifteen years of the first part, William Bruce Almon, of Halifax, Nova Scotia, Doctor of Medicine, of the second part, and the said Francis Parker, of the third part, witnesseth that the said Daniel McNeill Parker at the desire and with the consent and approbation of the said Francis Parker hath and by these presents doth put himself apprentice to the said William Bruce Almon, to learn the science profession and practice of a physician, and the art and mystery of a surgeon, and the trade and business of an apothecary and druggist, and with him after the manner of such an apprentice to remain, continue and serve, from the day of the date of these presents for, and until the full end and term of four years thence ensuing and fully to be complete and ended.

"And the said Daniel McNeill Parker on his behalf, and the said Francis Parker in consideration of the promises herein contained, for himself his executors and administrators, do severally covenant and promise to and with the said William Bruce Almon, his executors and administrators, that during all the term aforesaid the said Daniel McNeill Parker his said master faithfully shall serve after the manner of such an apprentice, his secrets conceal, his lawful and reasonable commands, everywhere, readily perform and obey, that his said master's goods or estate of any kind he shall not waste, embezzle, purloin or lend unto others and will not suffer to be wasted, embezzled, purloined or lent unto others without giving notice thereof to his said master. That he shall not frequent taverns or ale-houses or play at any unlawful games or contract matrimony with any person during the said term, whereby or by means of any of the said matters his said master shall or may sustain any damage, loss or injury, that he shall not at any time by day or night absent himself or depart from his said master's service without his leave, but in all things as a good and faithful apprentice shall and will behave and demean himself to his said master during all the said term. And the said Francis Parker for himself doth further covenant and promise that during the whole of the said term he will find and provide for the said Daniel McNeill Parker suitable board, lodging and apparel, will pay all rates, taxes and assessments made upon him, and will well and truly pay or cause to be paid to the said William Bruce Almon the full and just sum of one hundred pounds as an

apprentice fee for the instruction which is hereinafter covenanted and agreed to be given to the said Daniel McNeill Parker. And the said William Bruce Almon for himself, his heirs, executors and administrators does covenant, promise and agree to and with the said Daniel McNeill Parker separately and also with the said Francis Parker, his executors and administrators, that he, the said William Bruce Almon, shall and will during the said term, to the best of his power and ability, teach and instruct or cause to be taught or instructed the said Daniel McNeill Parker in the science profession and practice of a physician, and the art and mystery of a surgeon, and the trade and business of an apothecary and druggist within the Township of Halifax, according to the manner in which he, the said William Bruce Almon, now or hereafter during the said term does or shall practice, use, or carry on the said science, art and business aforesaid, and as fully and effectually as the said term of four years and the means afforded or to be obtained within the said Township will permit or allow the said Daniel McNeill Parker to be instructed in the science, art and business aforesaid.

"In witness whereof the parties to these presents have hereunto their hands and seals subscribed and set on the day and year first above written.

"SIGNED, SEALED AND DELIVERED

"in the presence of

"(Sgd.) J. W. NUTTING.

"Sgd. DANIEL McNEILL PARKER (L.S.).

" " FRANCIS PARKER (L.S.).

" " WILLIAM BRUCE ALMON, M.D. (L.S.).

"It is understood and agreed that the said Daniel McNeill Parker shall at the end of three years with his father's consent have the option of ending his apprenticeship in order to complete his professional education.

"Sgd. WILLIAM BRUCE ALMON, M.D."

In Halifax the young apprentice, for the most part, made his home with his great-uncle, James W. Nutting, who lived at 95 Hollis Street, where the Nova Scotia Building Society is now located, and for a time he boarded in the old house on Bedford Row since occupied for offices by the law firms in which Chief Justice McDonald, Judges Rigby, Meagher and Drysdale, and their successors, were members. It came about that I began the study of my profession in the latter building, and for a time I occupied as an office the room in which my father slept at 95 Hollis Street when a boy. This room, strangely enough,

became his private office in 1882, while I was studying in what had been the other bedroom of his boyhood, on Bedford Row.

The personal charm and character of Mr. Nutting, his fatherly solicitude and his instructive powers of conversation, taken together with the influences of the Nutting home, were forces which contributed to mould the character and form the mind of my father. They left indelible impressions for good upon him. He loved and revered this scholarly, polished, old school gentleman and devout, God-fearing man as a second father. In public addresses, as in private discourse, I have known him many times to quote the sayings of Mr. Nutting and to impress upon his hearers some truth or lesson drawn from the life of his great-uncle, who indeed was a remarkable man.

When Captain Marryat, the novelist *par excellence* of the navy and the sea, was much in Halifax as midshipman and junior officer, he and Mr. Nutting, then a student-at-law, were on terms of intimacy, and Marryat, when on shore leave, shared the other's lodgings. From Mr. Nutting my father received many amusing stories of Marryat's youthful days, which tales, together with incidents of Mr. Nutting's association with the author, kindled an interest in the Captain's writings which was never extinguished. When he was nearing his eightieth year I found him one day deeply engrossed in "Newton Forster," though little given to reading fiction since the times when Dickens and Thackeray, and even Scott, were new and read by everybody.

Dr. Almon seems to have had only the one apprentice at the period now under review, but associated with him in the Duke Street apothecary shop were the late William A. Hendry, who became well known as a Crown Land Surveyor in after life, and a little negro boy, singularly named Dan Parker, who carried out the medicines and performed the menial offices of the establishment. This ebony namesake will appear again in the story.

From the reminiscences of those first years of medical study I select one, illustrative of examinations for admission to practice seventy years ago in Nova Scotia. The first Medical Act in the history of the Province, that of 1828, entitled "An Act to exclude ignorant and unskilful persons from the practice of Physic and Surgery," was then in force, under which a Licensing Board, appointed by the Governor in Council, conducted these examinations. This was the system until 1856. The last members of this old-time Board were Drs. Edward Jennings, William J. Almon, and my father. Dr. W. B. Almon with two or three other senior medical men now conducted the examinations, in his office. They were altogether oral, and my father sometimes was privileged to listen to them, for his instruction. There were

empirics, young and old, among the candidates; for the efficient Statutes of the Province regulating matters relating to the profession were of later date and registration was as yet unknown.

One evening there presented himself for examination a middle-aged Irishman, not long off "the sod," who had been professing to act as a doctor in one of the central counties, and had been summoned to Halifax to show his qualifications. His answers to elementary questions showed that he knew nothing of any medical or surgical subject, but his quick wit and powers of repartee repaid the amused and quizzical doctors for spending the evening in a species of professional farce. They drew from the candidate many novelties in the practice of physic, and some discoveries in anatomy that would astound even a twentieth century surgeon. But his *pièce de résistance* was that he, of all mankind, possessed the knowledge of a certain hair on the human head which, if pulled, would lift the palate; and he claimed that this discovery of his was so important to the profession and to suffering humanity at large as to entitle him to a license, by way of reward. He had a great shock of hair himself, brilliantly red, and one examiner gravely requested that he select from his own abundance the hair required and demonstrate the discovery for which medical science had long been waiting. "Ah, gintlemen," said he, "that wud be tellin!" This saying of the Irishman was often used by my father to illustrate that species of quackery which professes the discovery of medical remedies, but declines to divulge the formulæ, or ingredients, to the profession and the public.

Beside being health officer of the port, Dr. Almon was the medical and surgical officer of the poor-house and gaol, and his apprentice would attend on him at these institutions for clinics.* There was no other hospital. Beginning with dentistry (tooth-pulling) and the letting of blood—the old school panacea—he soon began to try his 'prentice hand generally, in physic and simple surgery, by way of practice on the paupers and the gaol population, who were thought fair game for students. In his second year of study he was practically in charge there, as medical attendant. He too briefly refers to his experiences there in his reply to the address presented by the profession on his retirement in 1895.

When leaving the poor-house one day with his master, an attempt was made on the latter's life by a demented man who cherished a grudge against Dr. Almon for some fancied injury.

* The poor house was on the north side of Spring Garden Road, a little to the eastward of the site of the present Baptist church. The gaol, or bridewell, as it was called, stood about where the Baptist vestry now is and opposite the old theatre.

The would-be assassin fired a pistol at the doctor, but another person at that instant, while coming out of the door, roughly jostled the doctor and stepped in front of him, just in time to receive the bullet. This individual paid for his incivility by being badly wounded; but he recovered.

The term of apprenticeship to Dr. Almon was prematurely ended by his death after two years' and four months' service had been performed. By this time the apprentice had become so necessary to the business of the drug store that the doctor's widow and family pressed him to remain and carry it on for a year or so, until the son William J. Almon (afterwards Dr. Almon, the Senator), who was then completing his medical studies at Edinburgh, should return to take up his father's practice. To this earnest request he yielded, and beside successfully continuing the business (receiving one-fourth of the profits) he proved his capacity further by adjusting the books and realizing the credits of his late master's estate for the family. While conducting the drug store on his own responsibility he lodged around the corner on Water Street, in an attic room overlooking Black's wharf. This lodging-house, save for the present grog shop below, remains as it then was.

In the summer of 1841, upon the return of Dr. William J. Almon, who had then obtained his degree, he severed relations with the Almons and returned home to study, chiefly by way of review for his matriculation at the University of Edinburgh. But he had worked so assiduously at Halifax that his health had become affected, and he was threatened by a weakness of the chest; so, under medical advice, most of the winter of 1841-2 was spent in the West Indies. He sailed from Halifax in a brigantine for Bermuda, after Christmas.

An incident of the voyage was the capture of a large man-eating shark, which he hooked, unintentionally, while amusing himself fishing for a porpoise during a tedious calm. A quick hitch of the line on a belaying pin, and the boy fisherman's presence of mind barely saved him from going overboard. Then followed a fight between all hands and the shark. After a long struggle, the line which held the monster was passed through a block aloft, a noose on another was slipped over the thrashing tail, this line also rove aloft, and with all the crew on the falls of both tackle, the shark was laboriously hoisted on board between the masts and lowered to the deck, where he was despatched with firearms and axes; but not without difficulty, for he was of immense bulk and his convulsive struggles about the deck made close approach dangerous. The student passenger now performed his first *post mortem*, and in the course of his examination he took from the stomach of his subject several knives, forks, spoons,

a tin plate or two and some smaller miscellany, swallowed, no doubt, among refuse food thrown from vessels which this scavenger of the sea had followed in the course of his business.

In trying to make the harbor of Hamilton, Bermuda, the brigantine went ashore on a reef. The weather was calm, and, as the tide was low, the captain anticipated no difficulty in getting off at high water. But soon several boats, swarming with negroes, appeared. The captain, familiar with the island, recognized these visitors as belonging to a dangerous class of wreckers or land-pirates, formerly slaves, who, freed by British law a few years before, had become a menace to shipping and to the lives of seamen becalmed near the coast or becoming wrecked upon it. The blacks offered, politely enough, to come aboard and render assistance. But, forewarned by the experience of shipmasters who had suffered by this little by-product of the "Eman-cipation Act," the Nova Scotia master was fore-armed, and literally. When the leading boat had ranged alongside and the negroes made a show of coming aboard, willy-nilly, a dozen muskets suddenly rose over the bulwarks and looked the scoundrels in the eyes, and the captain threatened to fire if they touched the vessel's side. It was enough. The boats were scurrying to a more respectful distance when the captain recognized an elderly negro whom he had known to act as a pilot, and he ordered him to come on board, or he would fire on his boat. The order was obeyed, but the boat was kept covered by the muskets until it drew off again. The captain then very seriously and emphatically gave this old rascal to understand that he was to pilot the vessel in at high water and that if she touched ground on the way he would be shot. They got off the reef, without damage, in the afternoon. With a fair wind, the terrified ex-pilot took them safely into harbor, having his memory and other faculties mildly stimulated by an occasional application of the captain's pistol in the region of the short ribs, and by exhortations in the language pertaining to the sea, with which the passenger did not charge his memory.

After a short stay in Bermuda the young voyager sailed to Jamaica, where most of the winter was spent. Obtaining a chance passage thither in a British transport carrying troops, he spent part of his time in the island of Nevis. There he lodged in the house in which Nelson was married thirty-four years before, Prince William Henry, afterwards William the Fourth, giving away the bride. My father was wont to indulge a little in hero-worship, in Carlyle's sense of the term. Who that is a man does not? This house in Nevis, because it had been much frequented by Nelson, seemed to him, even in later years, a minor shrine to the memory of one of his few heroes, and the quarter-

deck, great cabin and the cock-pit of the "Victory" major ones, after he had visited that historic ship at a later period. Such was his pride in the achievements of Nelson and his emotion of reverence for Nelson's memory that I have known his voice to tremble and his eyes to fill with tears when, recounting the death scene at Trafalgar, he would come to the dying hero's request: "Kiss me, Hardy."

While in the West Indies much of his time was given to study, and he accomplished much general reading. The residence there and the sea voyages had removed all apprehensions as to his health when he returned in the spring of 1842.

He had previously made voyages, during school holidays, to Portland, Boston and other points on the United States coast. He was now to cross the Atlantic. Midsummer found him in Halifax making his preparations for Edinburgh. His father's capital being tied up in the Walton enterprises, it became necessary to borrow five hundred pounds, sterling, for the completion of his education. It speaks something for the friendships and the reputation he had made in Halifax that on applying to Mr. William C., a young man of independent fortune, to whom he was well known, the loan was obtained, and a greater amount pressed upon him, without even the security of a promissory note which was proffered, satisfactorily endorsed. The security was laughingly rejected by his friend, who remarked: "Pay me when you have earned the money, and say nothing more about it." Nor would he hear anything more about it. In the sequel, the loan was repaid within two years from the commencement of the borrower's practice, with interest; and such was the lender's esteem for him that upon Mr. C.'s death, some years later, he appointed his young family physician the guardian of his infant children, a trust which continued for many years and to the burden of which was added tragedy, when one of the wards was murdered by Indians in Colorado.

A Halifax firm of merchants had a ship at Pictou loading lumber for Glasgow, and a passage was procured. No floating hotels in the shape of steamships had then reduced the Atlantic voyage to a trifle for trippers. It is true the Cunard line had now for two years been running their four pioneer paddle-wheel steamers, known as "mail packets," on the round route from Liverpool to Halifax, thence to Boston and back to Liverpool, but this novelty was a luxury for the rich. The voyages, too, could not be termed speedy. No railway existed in Nova Scotia. Pictou was two days distant from Halifax, by coach. The medical students who crossed to the Old Country for their education remained there three years, the time required for their degree. Vacations were shorter than now, and if they had been longer, this particular

student could have afforded neither the time nor the means for enjoying them at home. So, coaching it to Pictou, he embarked upon his three years' exile.

The ship sailed late in July. There was only one other passenger. The voyage was very stormy, with head winds, and the heavily-laden ship made bad weather of it and slow time. Off the west coast of Ireland a gale was encountered. The vessel lost several spars and sails, her upper works were badly damaged, and the rudder was carried away. With much difficulty she was brought, leaking, into an Irish bay, where temporary repairs had to be made. The long voyage and this mishap delayed the student so that he did not reach Edinburgh until about the end of October.

The matriculation examinations were passed successfully, and the hard grind of three years at the University and the Royal College of Surgeons was begun. In the following letter to Charles Martyr Nutting, written from his first lodging-place in Edinburgh, the student speaks for himself of his new work and manner of life as well as of his first impressions in that city which afterwards he came to love. This is the earliest of his letters which can be found, written when he was twenty years of age. One detects in its style a rather unusual maturity of mind for that age. The warm interest in the things of home, and in old friends, is characteristic of all periods of his life.

“ WILSON'S LODGINGS, 19 SALISBURY STREET,

“ EDINBURGH, JANUARY 2nd, 1843.

“ MY DEAR MARTYR:

“ Many thanks for the *short* epistle, and newspapers received by the two last Packets. I had been nearly two months in Scotland without receiving a single line from home, and was quite rejoiced at the sight of your letter and those that accompanied it. Your handwriting is so much improved that I did not know it and could hardly believe my eyes when I saw the signature.

“ The war between the *Christian Messenger* and the Honorable Joseph has been raging, I perceive, to a very great extent. I have seen the whole correspondence, as Tupper takes the *Messenger*. It will have the effect of opening the eyes of the Baptists of Nova Scotia as to the real character of the worthy exciseman. It must be very annoying to your father as one of the editors of the paper to have his name brought before the public in such a manner.

“ I was rather surprised to hear of Miss Almon's marriage. Of course I expected that it was to take place, but did not think it would be so soon. The letter you spoke of was from the *bride* herself. It was a very kind one, giving me a short account of the wedding, etc.

"I am extremely sorry to hear that Miss Ella has been obliged to leave the Province, and hope shortly to hear more favourable accounts of her health. The news contained in my father's letter was very satisfactory. He had just gained a lawsuit for rather a large amount, of which he felt somewhat doubtful when I was with them in Walton. On Friday, the 30th, his second came to hand. They were all well, at its date, the weather was cold and they had more than two feet of snow on the ground. How very different from this climate. Here we have had no ice as yet, the fields are quite green, and since my arrival there has not been one day cold enough to make an overcoat necessary.

"I am glad to hear that Annand is doing well in my old place of business; did not know before that he was a married man. *D. Parker Jun'r* was discharged before I left the Province.

"I am now very comfortably situated, and have commenced my studies in good earnest. It will have to be all hard work and no play with me while the Session lasts. I have a neat little parlour and small bedroom with very good furniture, one piece of which is a piano. Not being at all musical, as you are aware, it has been converted into a sideboard. Living entirely by myself was so very different from what I have been accustomed to, that I was very lonesome at the change until a Portuguese friend from Madeira called *Da Costa* proposed that I should live with him. He has been here more than a year, but in order to get a better knowledge of the language, lived for the first twelve months in a gentleman's family (a son-in-law of Mr. Innes, the Baptist minister to whom your father introduced me) after which he went to lodgings, and like myself was not at all pleased with the change. He was very desirous that I should go with him, but as he was paying nearly a pound per week for his room, I told him that I could not afford it. He then said that as money was not so much an object to him he would be very glad if I would go, and pay only a proportion of the living. Not wishing to place myself under an obligation to a person that I had only known for a few days, I refused, but told him, if he felt inclined, he could join me in my lodgings. He at first said they were entirely too small and, as I thought, had given up all idea of coming, but after some time told me that he could not live alone any longer, so we are now together. He is a very good fellow, well informed and musical. He plays the guitar, flute and piano, all remarkably well. If I had time to spare he would teach me the French language. Before he came I was paying 6s. 6d. st'g. for my rooms. Now my proportion is but 4s. 6d. I am living very economically. How long *Da Costa* will continue to like it I cannot tell. The difference in his lodging bill alone will be over £30 st'g. per annum. We breakfast at nine o'clock and dine

at four, the intermediate time being occupied in attending classes and dissecting. On the 24th our Christmas recess commenced, which ends on the 3rd January, to-morrow. Last year I spent a much happier Christmas than this has been, although my friends are very attentive and kind. Still, I am not in Nova Scotia. It is not observed at all in Edinburgh. Had it not been on Sunday, the business of the city would have gone on as usual. I dined on that day with Mr. Hunter Peters, the son of the Attorney-General of New Brunswick, who will pass and go to America in August next. A few evenings since I had a small party of six Nova Scotia students at tea. One was Dr. Gordon, of Pictou, who is married and in practice here. Another was James Forman, our old schoolfellow, who is learning to be a civil engineer in Glasgow, and came over to spend a few days with his countrymen. The remainder were medical students. The entertainment was, of course, a primitive one. I meet a large dinner party at an English student's rooms this evening, which, as the classes commence to-morrow, will wind up my gaiety until the end of the Session, for I find that parties and studies cannot, with me, walk hand in hand.

"I am much pleased with Edinburgh, both as a medical school and a place of residence, but have seen very little of it as yet. Knowing that I have three years to remain I am taking it easy and intend seeing it by degrees.

"There are yet seven months to come before the end of the session, at which time I intend visiting the Highlands, having received a very kind invitation from Dr. Gray, formerly of Fredericton, N.B., now of Inverness, to whom I had a letter of introduction from Mrs. Almon. Mr. Johnston gave me a letter to Dr. Duncan, of Dumfries, who invited me to spend the Christmas recess with him, but as it would have interfered with my studies and dissecting I did not go. Will you ask your father to remember me to Mr. J. and thank him in my name for that, as well as the other letters he was kind enough to give me.

"I perceive by the papers that the Gas Works are progressing. Should I arrive in Halifax at night three years hence I'm afraid it will trouble me to recognize it. I burn gas in my room, and am so much pleased with it, that I would rather pay double than be without it.

"Remember me to Monk and give him my address, tell him to write. I would commence the correspondence but have to pay my debts by this Packet, which will take all my spare time. Will you tell Dr. Almon that I have entirely forgotten the name of the paper he wished me to send him, but if he tells you, please mention it in your next. Tell him I am much obliged for the *Times* papers received by the two last steamers. In future he can

direct them to 19 Salisbury Street. You can also mention when you see him that Bothwick and Cutler and Kemp the Chemist are dead, and that Hilliard is now the best surgical instrument maker in Edinburgh.

"Shortly after my arrival I breakfasted with Mr. Innes. I attend his church in the morning and an Episcopal one in the afternoon.

"When you write, which must be soon, do not be afraid of making the letter too long. Many things that you perhaps may think too trifling to mention will, no doubt, interest me very much. If you cannot fill a sheet of paper make that lazy fellow Ned add something.

"Please remember me to the Almons, Twinings, Fergusons, Binneys, Lawsons, (do not forget Mary) Miss Hutchinson, Mrs. John Johnston, etc., etc. Those persons that you are not likely to see, tell Mary Ann that I will thank her to act for you in remembering me to them.

"I enclose this in my father's letter as the paper is so thin that the two weigh less than $\frac{1}{2}$ oz., consequently the postage will be the same for both as one.

"When mentioning the *Honorable* Joseph in the first of this letter I forgot to state that my opinion of him exactly coincides with your own. Please direct to me in future as at the head of the letter.

"I hope your grandmother enjoys good health this winter. Give my love to her, your father and all the family, also to Sophia and Letty.

"Excuse haste, my dear Martyr,

"And believe me to be,

"Your affectionate cousin,

"(Sgd.) D. MCN. PARKER."

A word of explanation as to some persons named in this letter will assist some readers to a better understanding of it.

"The *Honorable* Joseph" is Joe Howe, the Nova Scotia Tribune of the Plebs. "Tupper" is Charles Tupper, Howe's redoubtable antagonist in Nova Scotia politics, in days to come. He had preceded my father by a year, at Edinburgh. "Miss Almon" is a daughter of Dr. William Bruce Almon. "Annand" is a medical student. "D. Parker, Jun'r" is the negro boy who has been before mentioned. "James Forman" (junior) became chief engineer of the first public railroad built in Nova Scotia, and afterwards a consulting engineer in Glasgow. "Monk" is a brilliant young Halifax lawyer, who did not live to fulfil the promise of his youth. He was a son of Judge Monk,

of the Supreme Court. "Mr. Johnston" is James W. Johnston, the future statesman and distinguished Judge-in-Equity. "Ned" is Martyr's brother. "Mary Ann," "Sophia" and "Letty" are three daughters of my father's favorite "Aunt Grant," a sister of James W. Nutting and wife of Michael Bergen Grant, who was the son of Captain Robert Grant, of Loyal Hill. These three girls and the children of Mr. Nutting were second cousins of my father.

Martyr's "grandmother" is Mrs. Maclean, his mother's mother, a lady of about eighty at that time. The mention of the well-known Halifax families to whom the writer desires to be remembered indicates some of his early friendships and the homes which he used to frequent during his term of study in that city.

When he penned the casual reference to the introduction of gas at Halifax the young letter-writer little dreamed that for many years in the dim future he would be a valued director of that enterprise.

What was the youthful Tory's opinion of Howe, hinted at in this letter, requires no speculation.

There is a story of Da Costa, who is described in this letter, which, with a slightly different ending, might have affected the political history of Nova Scotia and of Canada by causing it to be written without the name and achievements of him who is now The Right Honorable Sir Charles Tupper, Baronet. Some time after the date of this letter he joined the student lodgers at 19 Salisbury Street. Da Costa spoke English very imperfectly and was exceedingly sensitive about his mistakes. He was, moreover, of a fiery, passionate temperament, native to his blood, and of a jealous, revengeful disposition. He resented the intimacy between Tupper and my father, but more the ridicule which the former habitually cast upon his ludicrous blunders in English by repeating them in his presence for the benefit of the other students, and with no small powers of mimicry.

One evening my father was at work in the study which he and the Portuguese occupied in common, when Da Costa rushed in, boiling with passion, and tore open a bureau drawer in which, as my father knew, he always kept a loaded pistol, after his kind. He had complained bitterly to his room-mate that day of the indignities put upon him by Tupper, and had been by turns moody and excited; therefore when Da Costa, livid with rage, and muttering Portuguese imprecations, rushed from the room, pistol in hand, my father sprang to the door after him and was at his heels when he entered the room where Tupper was seated at a table with his books. The pistol was levelled at Tupper's head when my father sprang over the assassin's shoulders and seized the weapon by the barrel. Almost at the same instant Tupper, roused by a warning

call, cleared the table at a bound and grappled with the man. The three went down together in a fierce struggle. My father wrested the pistol from Da Costa's grip, while Tupper choked him into submission. The latter made the *amende honorable* for his conduct which, unwittingly, had brought about this scene; the Portuguese, now thoroughly ashamed, was satisfied, and my father locked up the pistol in his trunk. Next day, domestic relations with Da Costa were severed, and he quit the lodgings. But his strong affection for my father, which had led him to share the humble quarters on Salisbury Street in preference to living in the style to which he was accustomed, remained unaffected, and the friendship between them lasted as long as they were fellow-students.

A picture at "Beechwood" is connected with an incident which occurred at these lodgings. I refer to an oil painting, the central feature of which is an ancient mill on a Highland stream.

Upon the floor above the student quarters there resided a young artist and his wife. He was the son of another Scottish artist, who had attained celebrity throughout Britain, and he himself was winning some distinction; but he was now falling into dissipated habits, and intemperance was threatening the ruin of his career. One day my father heard an unusual uproar overhead and the violent screaming of a woman. He rushed upstairs and found the young artist, crazed with drink, cruelly beating his wife. Under the impulse of the moment the medical student saw no other remedy for the situation but a punitive one, for he was himself savagely attacked for his interference; so he administered to the husband a sound thrashing. This so far restored him to his senses as to make him conscious of what he had been doing. He was a gentleman, and the sudden knowledge that he had struck a woman, and that woman his wife, of whom he was very fond, while it further sobered the man, filled him instantly with deep shame and contrition. The medical student used the opportunity to follow the physical remedy with wholesome, kindly counsel and the offer of his friendship, both of which were well received by the other, who gave a remorseful promise of amendment then and there. They had never met before, but from that day became fast friends. The promise was kept, the artist's work prospered, and the young couple of the upper floor entered upon a new and uninterrupted happiness. Grateful appreciation on the part of husband and wife ripened, upon further acquaintance, into a warm admiration for the student and a devotion to his welfare and comfort. Ere the latter left Edinburgh the artist took him into his studio, hung with many specimens of his art, and begged that his friend, to whom he confessed that he owed both happiness and prosperity, would select what pictures he might fancy and accept them in token of gratitude and affection. As might be expected,

despite the protests of the painter and much urging on his part, the student selected only one—the smallest of the collection.

When he lay in the "Beechwood" parlor, forever silent, and ready for the tomb, some sixty-three years afterwards, this little painting looked down upon its owner in silent testimony to a service and an influence by which, when but a boy, he had been the instrument of saving two young lives from degradation and sorrow to prosperity and joy.

Later in his course my father lodged on Rankeillor Street; but there were too many medicals there whose nocturnal habits and boisterous conduct were incompatible with serious study by their neighbors. This street was pre-eminently a medical student quarter. The gentry of that ilk dominated its life and contested with the police the title to its proprietorship. They regulated its customs and fashions, even in such minute details as permitting no Rankeillor Street cat to wear more than one inch of tail. The ambitious Nova Scotian, who was there to work to the best of his time and ability, burdened, too, with the extra duty of clinical clerkships to Sir Robert Christison and Sir James Y. Simpson in the Royal Infirmary, thought it advisable now to abandon the customary student quarter altogether, and as his health was feeling the effect of too close application, he removed out of town to the little hamlet of Duddingstone, by the loch of that name. The daily walk by way of the Queen's Park afforded fresh air and exercise, of which he had been depriving himself too long, and the change proved beneficial for work and for health alike.

In 1871 he showed to his children the rooms which he had occupied in these various lodging-places, and I well remember his pleasure in revisiting them.

The friendship with Charles Tupper which had been contracted at Horton Academy was further cemented by the two years which they passed together in Edinburgh. His friend graduated in 1844. Their Sunday excursions into the delightful surroundings of the city, teeming with historical associations, were often recalled by my father with delight. That such rambles were not in accord with the Scottish sabbatarianism of the period he used to illustrate by telling how, when swinging down the High Street one fine Sunday afternoon, whistling as they went, they were rebuked by a small boy who, gazing at them open-mouthed, exclaimed, "What! whustlin' on the Sawbuth!"

His own career there was not marked by striking incident for story-telling, for he adhered most strictly to the routine of work, and in after days could never say with Justice Shallow, anciently of Clement's-Inn: "O, the mad days that I have spent!" But he had a fund of anecdote concerning his contemporaries who walked less rigidly in the narrow way of serious study. How

some of them set Edinburgh in an uproar by robbing churchyards for dissecting purposes when the supply of material from legitimate sources fell short; how others desecrated a royal tomb, which he once pointed out to me in Holyrood Abbey, to procure some specimens for osteological uses, but could get only one which a rat had carried out from the depositary too strong for them,—and other stories both gruesome and amusing,—it would be going beyond the record to set out in these pages.

Some of his vacation or recess time was occupied with the special work in the Royal Infirmary, already alluded to. One summer recess was spent in recuperation at Rothesay, on the Isle of Bute, in delightful travel among the western isles, the original homes of his McNeill ancestors, and in the Highlands. This was done under medical advice, because of overwork. But he read much while he rested or supposed himself to be resting. Application to professional study had become a passion with him. That it was so always, and how hard a thing it was for him to rest and do nothing, even in periods supposed to be devoted by him to recreation, we of his family can bear testimony. The *dolce far niente* was an art he could never acquire.

Through the quality of his work at Edinburgh he attracted the personal attention of Professors Simpson, Christison, Miller, and others of his teachers. Sir James Y. Simpson was particularly kind to him in a social way, and he was a frequent visitor at the home of this great man and greatly beloved physician. The friendship with the father descended, as it were, to the nephew, who likewise became a celebrated professor of the University. Entertaining at breakfasts was then a feature of Edinburgh social life, and my father was wont to meet at breakfast in the Simpson home, and other like homes, with many celebrated men. It was through the introduction of Sir James that he made the acquaintance of the venerable Dr. Thomas Chalmers and became a guest at his house, where on one or more occasions he met at breakfast distinguished Scottish divines and other celebrities of the day. It was his rare privilege to witness the culminating scene of the Disruption in the Established Church of Scotland, in November, 1843, when the kingly Chalmers led out the solemn, heart-stirring procession of seceding clergy. For Dr. Chalmers, as the outcome of personal intercourse with him, he cherished the strongest reverence and veneration, as for a prophet.

At Edinburgh, as before at Halifax, this medical student, at the impressionable period of his life, was fortunate in the social circles where he moved. His natural endowments of personal grace and charm of manner were no doubt cultivated and enhanced by early and close association with that culture and refinement which pertained to the friends of those early years and to the

homes amid which his lot in society had been cast. Doubtless, likewise, such youthful association with men of large calibre and elevated types of character, while stimulating his native ambition, contributed to form his mind, to enlarge his conceptions and to mould his character.

An illustration of the progress of surgery since the early forties, and another of examination methods in the University at that period (happily of an exceptional character), and we must pass with him from the years of preparation to those of his professional career.

Discussing the vermiform appendix and the dangers incident to its situation, a very learned and distinguished surgeon on the staff of the Royal College, in a lecture to my father's class, raised the question of abdominal surgery, a thing that had not been attempted, and he said with much emphasis: "Gentlemen, any surgeon who would attempt to open the abdomen should be indicted for manslaughter." The attempt, it was then taught, could result only in death. The appendix itself was jocularly disposed of by the lecturer as an inexplicable anatomical curiosity, with a possible Malthusian function for maintaining the death rate, with the natural assistance of cherry-pips and the like. Long before the fashionable operation for "appendicitis" had become a newspaper joke my father used to quote the dictum of his professor with merriment.

The Professor of Botany at the University was a quaint and elderly *savant* of the species that would now be classed by the always irreverent student as "cranks." His hobby was to conduct his classes on botanizing tramps through the country on Saturdays—when there were no lectures—for what he was pleased to call practical work; and any student who cut these expeditions incurred his sore displeasure. My father was one of the offenders against the hobby, and habitually so, for the benefit of what he deemed more serious work. When he presented himself in July, 1845, for his degree examination in Botany, an altogether oral test, and was called in his turn to the examination chamber, he saw the old professor consult two lists of names, and he surmised that he was marked for severe treatment. But he was not prepared for what followed: "Well, Mr. Parker, what flora do you find in the glen on the farther side of Loch —, on the Fenlenick road?" "I cannot say, sir; I was never there," was the hopeless answer. "That will do, Mr. Parker," and the student left the room knowing he was *plucked*. But the same spirit that was in the school-boy who resisted the fagging system at Windsor was roused in the man of twenty-three by this absurdity of injustice, and he prepared to fight. He waited until the pass-lists were posted. He stood well up on all save in Botany, and there his name was absent.

Then he called on various members of the Medical Faculty, by all of whom he was esteemed as a student of unusual parts and industry, and to them he stated his case. They took the matter up and it was put before the Senate. Summoned to appear before a committee of that august body, he was asked to relate his examination experience in Botany, and to explain why he had cut out the Saturday excursions, which, it must be stated, were not obligatory upon students. The committee had his record and the testimony of his other professors before them. The idiosyncrasy of the examiner was well known, so much so that it was not thought necessary to consult him; but he had not hitherto carried it to this serious and vindictive extremity. The plucked student was then asked: "Have you done the practical work in the Botanical Gardens required?" "I have," he answered, "and I am prepared to be examined on that and the lectures, at a moment's notice." "Well, sir, you are passed," said the chairman, after consulting his colleagues. The committee was so seized by the humorous aspect of the case that they concluded it with a joke on the Professor of Botany himself. His pass-list was sent for, and then and there the name of "Daniel McNeill Parker" was added to it, by a sort of pious fraud; after which it was re-posted. It does not appear whether the old botanical gentleman ever heard of this summary procedure to right the wrong he had worked; but the incident had some bearing upon his retirement from the Faculty not long afterwards. Though the rejected student of Botany could join in the humor of his judges when they disposed of his case, it had been no fun for him previously; for, had he not obtained this redress he would have lost his degree and been obliged to go up for another degree examination a full year later.

He received in July the diploma of L.R.C.S.E. from the Royal College of Surgeons, and on the first day of August (1845) the degree of M.D. from the University.

NOMINA EORUM
QUI
GRADUM MEDICINAE DOCTORIS
IN
ACADEMIA JACOBI SEXTI REGIS, QUAE EDINBURGI EST
ANNO MDCCCXLV, ADEPTI SUNT.

A printed copy of the M.D. pass-list for 1845 with this sonorous caption lies before me. Seventy-nine names appear upon it, arranged in alphabetic order, with the title of each graduate doctor's thesis set opposite his name and country. England, Scotland, Ireland, Wales, the Isles of Man and Anglesey, Nova Scotia, Quebec, Ontario, Bermuda, Barbadoes, India, Prussia and

Russia are represented here. "Parker, Daniel McNeill, Nova Scotia, On the Mechanism and Management of Parturition," form two lines in this catalogue of youth's achievement, hope and promise. There was one other Nova Scotian, James Allen. One reads it as a casualty list in life's battle now. "Nomina eorum!" Few of them there are, in this tenth year of another century, that could not be found graven upon some monument more enduring, at least, than this souvenir of my father's graduation, which I discovered among his papers after his spirit had passed on with the majority of his classmates.

Among these men, some of whom established great professional reputations, there was no more interesting personality than William Judson Van Someren, who, after many years in the military medical service, spent principally in India, whence he had come as a medical student, became the chief of the service in the British army. He was of the Havelock and Hedley Vicars soldier type, a spiritually-minded man whose deep-seated religious convictions and devout life answered to my father's in after years, when the two veterans, having retired from professional activity, resumed their correspondence of an earlier time in a series of letters which, I regret, are not available for production here.

Within a few days after being "capped" Doctor in public convocation, my father made his first visit to London, where he completed his supply of books and surgical instruments and also purchased his stock-in-trade for the opening of an apothecary's shop in Halifax. Proceeding then to Liverpool, his eager voyage home was made in a packet of the Cunard Line—his first experience of steamship travel. Arrived in Halifax, the return to the Walton home and "Doctor Dan's" reception there, with the pleasures of a holiday for much-needed rest, must be left to the imagination.

Soon there appeared in *The Acadian Recorder* and *The Christian Messenger* the following notification to the public:

"CARD.

"Dr. Parker, graduate of the University, and Licentiate of the Royal College of Surgeons, of Edinburgh, intends practising Medicine in its various branches, in the city of Halifax, and may be consulted at his residence, No. 8 Hare's Buildings, near the Province Building.

"DRUGS AND MEDICINES.

"Dr. P., having procured from London a supply of Drugs, &c., has opened an establishment at his residence above named, where he will keep constantly on hand a large assortment of Medicines, as well as all other articles usually sold at Drug Stores."

CHAPTER IV.

1845 to 1861.

"In devotion to duty you have the great secret of life."—*Gladstone.*

WE are not without assistance in attempting to picture, with its surroundings, the first place of business and residence of the young doctor of twenty-three, now upon the threshold of life's task—to "earn his bread and butter" (to borrow a phrase of his) and to do what good he could in the world while passing through. His old and valued friend, Dr. T. B. Akins, in his "History of Halifax City," writing of the year 1821, says: "The old wooden range known as Cochran's building, which occupied the site of the present Dominion building, had been only lately vacated by the Legislative Assemblies and the Courts of Law, and was now being fitted up for shops. Among those who first occupied shops in this building were Winkworth Allen, who afterwards went to England, Mr. David Hare, who afterwards became the purchaser of the property; W. A. Mackinlay, on the north side, and Clement H. Belcher, at the north-west corner, both well-known stationers and booksellers, occupied their respective shops a long time, the latter for more than twenty years. At the opposite corner, to the south, on Hollis Street, stood a large three-story building erected by the late James Hamilton, who carried on an extensive dry-goods business. It was afterwards sold to Burns & Murray, who erected the present handsome freestone edifice on the corner. Mr. William A. Black kept his watchmaker's establishment at the corner below, now occupied by the P. Walsh Hardware Co." On the corner of Hollis and George Streets, where the Royal Bank building now is, we learn from the same authority, stood in 1845 "the handsome freestone building erected by the late Martin Gay Black. . . . Opposite, near the Province Building rail, was the old town pump, known as Black's pump, remarkable for its good water, where dozens of boys and girls might be seen towards evening getting water for tea. . . . Mr. Benjamin Etter had his watchmaker's shop at the corner of George and Barrington Streets, now known as Crosskill's corner, in the same old wooden building, which has since undergone extensive alterations."

In 1845 the site of William A. Black's watchmaker's establishment had become the place of business of the firm of W. A. & S. Black, founded by him. The other conditions of the locality, as

above described, remained substantially unchanged at this date. I have noted here what is said of the Blacks and Mr. Etter because they enter into our family history.

"The Dominion building," occupying the site of Cochran's, afterwards Hare's, buildings, will be better recognized by younger readers as the Post Office.

Number 8 Hare's buildings, the "establishment" and "residence" designated in the advertisement I have quoted, was situated on the Cheapside front, and, as located for me by my father, stood where the main southern entrance to the Post Office now stands. It consisted of a quaint little shop, lighted by one small-paned window; a consulting-room or office in the rear, looking into a tiny space by courtesy termed a courtyard; a front room upstairs which served as living-room and bedroom; a combined dining-room and kitchen off this, in the rear; and a sort of closet attached to that, large enough to hold a truckle bed for that same "Dan Parker, junior," who had served in Dr. Almon's drug store under the other Dan, and had now enlisted in his service. This "junior partner," as the young physician's familiars facetiously called him, combined in himself the functions of "chief cook and bottle washer," shop attendant, wielder of the pestle, errand boy and general domestic servant. Furnish the shop, as full as its meagre dimensions permit, with the diverse and many-odored stock-in-trade of an old-time 'pothecary; the office with all the books and surgical equipment it can contain, compatible with the existence of a writing-desk and a few chairs; the upper rooms with the bare necessities for living, throwing in two or three extra plates and accompanying utensils of the table for an occasional guest,—and you have an interior view of the material *res angusta domi* during the earliest years of practice.

Of his competitors in the field of practice at that time, and the conditions attending the work of the profession in the city and beyond, he has himself spoken in the address of 1895, which will be found at a later page.

In the very nature of things it is not to be expected that this narrative should attempt anything like a record of his work as physician and surgeon, or an estimate of his professional ability and worth. Though occasional instances from the former may appear, yet, in the main, both must be illustrated, but in the most general manner, by the testimony of others and by the professional reputation which he established and which will long adhere to his honored name in Nova Scotia and beyond.

Medical practice came to him at the outset and increased in volume with unusual, even marvellous rapidity. There was no anxious, discouraging period of waiting, usually so oppressive to the beginner. On the contrary, patients awaited him. He was

well known in Halifax already, and had many influential and solicitous friends. Mature in appearance beyond his years, with a self-reliance that was begotten by knowledge of himself, he inspired confidence in others, even in practitioners of long standing, so that his services as a surgeon were called in requisition earlier in his career than is usually the case with juniors in the profession.

Then, and for some time afterwards, he knew well what probably no living surgeon now knows—the horrors of surgery when anæsthetics were unknown; nor can even surgeons of the present day imagine the “nerve” and the will-power required in the performance of operations of any duration in the forties,—the exhaustive drain upon an extremely sensitive nervous system and a tender, sympathetic spirit like my father’s. I cannot attempt to portray surgical operations at that period which he has described to me, but the instance given in his address of 1895 may be supplemented in a few lines. The subject was a large, unusually powerful man. The operation was the removal of half the lower jaw, which had to be sawn through at the chin and dislocated at the socket. As usual, all the brandy that the patient could swallow was administered. At a critical moment his struggles broke the straps which bound him to the heavy deal operating table. He leaped to the floor, and half naked, his body crimsoned with blood, fought his way to the door, to escape into the street. The medical students in attendance fainted and fell about the room. Special attendants, engaged for such an emergency, overpowered the wretched man upon the floor, where they lay upon his arms and legs, while, seated across his body, the surgeon completed the ghastly work, the patient shrieking “Murder!” and frightful imprecations, so that the hideous clamor brought an excited crowd and the town constabulary to the door.

That he came at once into public notice and showed, from the beginning, public spirit and deep interest in what pertained to the moral and intellectual uplift of his fellow-citizens,—a disposition which was characteristic,—is evinced in his connecting himself with the work of the Halifax Mechanics’ Institute within a few months of his settlement there, and becoming one of its managers. This was a new movement then, an English institution which spread through many of the colonies and had a considerable educational value. Its lecture courses were popular in Halifax and were open to the general public, by whom they were largely attended. He delivered, in these courses, the following lectures: “Respiration,” in the session of 1845-6; “Vitality,” in the session of 1846-7; “Instinct and Mind,” in the session of 1847-8; and two lectures on “The Circulation” (of the blood), in the session of 1848-9. The manuscripts of these lectures have been found, but on account of their volume it has been thought inadvisable to

include more than two of them in these pages. These will be found in the Appendix "B." They are all alike scholarly in matter and style, while the mode of presentation is admirably adapted to the instruction of a general audience. When he delivered the first of these lectures he was but twenty-three years of age.

Endowed with social gifts of a rare order, a vivacious and attractive conversationalist, interested in every subject which affected his fellow-men, delighting to enlarge in a discriminating manner the circle of his friendships while he drew to himself the comradeship of many through his admirable qualities of mind and heart, he soon came to fill a conspicuous place in Halifax society. He formed many friendships in the garrison and the navy, and was a frequent guest at mess dinners, and aboard ship, in gun-room and cabin. Strangely as it may read to those who knew him in later life, he was not unknown as a participator in those social functions called balls, and has been heard to own his attendance at a masquerade ball in the cotton-duck and palmetto costume of a West India planter. The early association with young army and navy officers thus formed led to many friendships with men who returned to the Halifax station in after years distinguished by high rank and by achievement in their professions.

But keen as was his enjoyment in the social life of the garrison town and naval station, he found that the profession to which he was wedded was a jealous mistress, and that with him, as he used to say in referring to this period of his life, "it must be one thing or the other." What he had said in an Edinburgh letter, quoted at a previous page, still held good: "I find that parties and studies cannot, with me, walk hand in hand." So gradually he weaned himself from the allurements of social pleasures that he might respond with unstinted loyalty to the increasing and imperative demands which his growing reputation in the profession was making upon his talents and his time. Not that he would, or could, totally suppress his social instincts, but subordinate their gratification to duty—an attitude of mind and a practice which throughout life he always maintained.

During the first twenty years of his career, or thereabouts, he was a contributor to the *Edinburgh Medical Journal*, one of the first-rank periodicals in the medical world, writing chiefly upon cases, both medical and surgical, occurring in his own practice. His first article for the *Journal*, an account of an unusual surgical operation he had performed, was sent to Dr. James Miller, one of his professors in Surgery at the University, during the second year after graduation. The Professor's letter, acknowledging receipt of the article says, after discussing the subject-matter: "The case does you infinite credit and will appear in the next number of the *Journal*." The writer then proceeds to warn the young surgeon

against repeating the operation, and states facts as to unsuccessful attempts to perform it at Edinburgh, showing that at that time it was rarely successful and was considered daring. Yet this particular operation succeeded, and the operation, in general, has become common. Another instance of surgical progress since the forties. This letter concludes by expressing the satisfaction with which its writer and his colleagues of the Faculty had heard of their late pupil's health. "We were somewhat afraid of your chest when you left us," adds the Professor.

Later in life, when the accumulated burden of practice was taxing his time and strength to the utmost and he was more and more engaging in philanthropic and business directorships, he wrote less, though occasionally he furnished contributions to medical magazines on both sides of the Atlantic. In January, 1870, he became a corresponding editor of *The Canada Medical Journal*, in conjunction with Dr. Canniff, of Toronto, and Dr. William Bayard, of St. John, and continued on this editorial staff for some years. For obvious reasons no particular account of his work for the literature of his profession can be presented here. There was much of it, yet his time was so absorbed by other labors that he found less opportunity for this congenial task than most practitioners capable of undertaking it.

He had so prospered in less than eighteen months of practice that the diminutive quarters in Hare's Buildings were outgrown. Sometime before his marriage, which occurred on June 10th, 1847, he had rented and furnished a three-storied wooden house on the east side of Granville Street, located upon or adjoining the site now occupied by A. & W. MacKinlay's shop. The house was of moderate size and there was accommodation for the drug business on the first floor. It was one of a row of residences, some of which had shop fronts, for, as yet, merchants and professional men deigned to live over their places of business. The imposing row of lofty buildings on the opposite side of the street had not then appeared. The southern end of that block of Granville Street was known as Romans' corner and was the home of the Romans family. From there, northward, there were dwelling-houses and small shops, intermingled, as far as Ordnance Square. To this Granville Street home my father brought his bride, and there he resided for about three years.

His next home was the brick house on the east side of Hollis Street which became afterwards the residence of the Le Noir family. With several others, it was built by Judge William Hill and his brother after the "Haliburton fire" of 1816 had swept away the original wooden buildings of that block and the western side of Bedford Row in the rear. In my school days this house remained as it was when rented and occupied by my father. The ground floor has since become converted into a shop.

The drug store business was now abandoned, and the apothecary work, confined to the preparation of his own medicines, was carried on in a dispensing room. Dr. Alexander F. Sawers, who died in June, 1853, lived next door. Across the way, at the corner now occupied by J. C. Mackintosh & Co.'s building, stood old St. Matthew's Church, which was burned in the great fire of New Year's Day, 1859.

Here, in the month of August, 1852, he endured a very serious illness, of typhoid fever, and his life was despaired of. While he lay unconscious, grappling with death, his wife gave birth to her only child, and within a few days afterwards passed away. It was several days after her burial ere the stricken husband regained consciousness and passed the crisis of his disease, and many more elapsed before he knew that while conscious existence was blotted out for him, his wife had entered through the portal where he lay but whence he had returned,—returned to find her gone, but leaving him love's legacy of a son. An old patient of my father has told me how the whole town seemed moved by a wave of suffering concern while this domestic tragedy was enacting; how, at a word from an attending physician, men heaped the roadway high with straw to still the noise of traffic, rough carters would not pass that way, and the people, suppressing conversation, tip-toed by the house.

It was in May of this year that he had become a member of the Granville Street Baptist Church, where he was baptized by the Reverend Edmund A. Crawley, D.D., then in his second pastorate there.

My father appears to have habitually attended that church from the time of his first residence in Halifax. His early association with the Nuttings, Fergusons, Johnstons and other families of the seceders from St. Paul's who had attached themselves to the Reverend J. T. Twining, curate and garrison chaplain, when he was dismissed by the Rector, would naturally be the preponderating influence upon my father in his selection of a place of worship in Halifax. His parents, at home, in 1852, and for some time after, remained adherents of the Church of England, in connection with which he had received his early religious nurture. He was thirty years of age when he assumed the obligations of membership in a church, and had been married about five years. That he deferred this step so long, living, as he did, so closely connected with leading men and families of the Baptist denomination, is an indication of that lofty conception of church obligations and of the serious responsibilities attaching to a public profession of religious faith and practice which was characteristic of him. He could not lightly take this step. His cast of mind and morals emphasized the ethical basis and import of religion. Profoundly

thoughtful from boyhood in regard to the soul life, and reverential in spirit and conduct towards the things of religion, it may be said that what is called, in the spiritual sense, a Christian, he always was. But to avow himself such in the sense of uniting publicly with any body of Christians meant for him much thoughtful deliberation and a careful investigation of the Scriptures. His becoming a Baptist by profession was not marked by any such sudden emotional experience as is often expressed in the word "conversion." It was a process in the development of his spiritual life which arrived with the conviction that by taking this public stand and enlisting for service with an organized force in the Kingdom of God he was doing his duty toward God, that he could accomplish more for his own inner life and for the righteousness which would exalt others. No influence beyond his own conclusion from prolonged study of the New Testament affected his choice of a church.

Touching his attitude and sentiment regarding religion,—after his death I found in a note-book which he used when in Virginia in the year 1883, the following extract from the correspondence of a great lawyer prominent in the history of that State, William Wirt. I give it here, because it reflects something of his own religious opinions. If it had not, he would not have transcribed the quotation on any other matter, from various sources of his reading, which I recognize as harmonizing with his own sentiments. "I do not think that enthusiasm constitutes religion, or that Heaven is pleased with the smoke of the passions any more than with the smoke of rams or bulls. There is a calm, steady, enlightened religion of the rational soul, as firm as it is temperate, which I believe is the religion of Heaven. Its raptures are those of the mind, not of the passions; its ecstasies are akin to those of David."

That his assumption of church membership was early followed by that active discharge of the more public religious duties in the community which marked his later years, is illustrated by the circumstance that, on the 10th of December, 1853, he was one of fourteen citizens of Halifax who met and organized the Halifax Young Men's Christian Association, modelled on the London plan which was originated in 1844.

It was in this period of his life that eager, as always, to promote the public interests of Halifax and of the Province, he connected himself with the work of the Halifax Horticultural Society and of Industrial Exhibitions. As a member of that Society he gave of his means and time to the work of reclaiming the waste portion of the Halifax Common, now transformed into the beautiful Public Gardens for which Halifax is famed. It had been a mere bog in which the water was oozing up in every direction.

From this feature of its natural condition, and in imitation of the famous London pleasure resort of that name, it was called "Spring Gardens." The project of the Society, or Company, was to make a pleasant place of resort, with the hope at the same time that by its horticultural products and through musical and other entertainments the property would be self-sustaining and perhaps yield a small profit for further improvement. The boggy land was drained, and to a large extent filled in with new soil, fruit and ornamental trees and shrubbery were planted, and under the care of James Hutton and another experienced gardener named Irons, who preceded him, much was done to beautify the place. Croquet lawns and an archery ground were laid out, military bands played once or twice a week, and other efforts were made to attract the public. In this the Society succeeded; but as an investment the project could not pay its way. Early in the seventies the public-spirited proprietors surrendered their lease of the land and freely gave up their improvements, with their shares in the Company, to the city. Thus they laid the foundation for the Halifax Public Gardens.

When the first of the world's great Industrial Exhibitions was promoted at London, under the presidency and active guidance of Prince Albert, my father was associated with his old friend, the Reverend Alexander Forrester, D.D., of educational fame, as a commissioner of that undertaking, for this Province. In 1850 and 1851, he worked with great energy and considerable expenditure of time in arranging for, assembling and transporting the exhibit made by Nova Scotia. In testimony of these services he received the Prince Albert Medal, with a certificate of the award signed by the Prince Consort.

The medal bears, in low relief, the bust of the Prince, with the superscription: "H.R.H. Prince Albert, President of the Royal Commission." On the reverse is inscribed: "For services, Exhibition of the Works of Industry of all Nations, 1851." The certificate reads:

" PRINCE ALBERT MEDAL.

" Exhibition of the Works of Industry of all Nations, 1851.

" I hereby certify that Her Majesty's Commissioners have awarded a Medal to D. Parker, for the services he rendered to the Exhibition.

" Sgd. ALBERT,
" President of the Royal Commission.

" Exhibition, Hyde Park, London, 15th October, 1851."

When, in 1852, in consequence of a lecture delivered by Dr. Forrester before the Halifax Mechanics' Institute, it was first proposed that an Industrial Exhibition for Nova Scotia should be held at Halifax, it was natural that its promoters should seek the services of those who had been commissioners of the London Exhibition. Accordingly, Dr. Forrester became the chairman of the Executive Committee of Commissioners, and my father the vice-chairman.

The official report of this Executive Committee of the first Provincial Exhibition, which was formally opened by the Lieutenant-Governor, Sir Gaspard Le Marchant, on October 4th, 1854, and continued the nine following days, in the Province Building and the squares at either end, is of much interest.

"The Executive Committee directed their first attention to the enlightenment of the public mind relative to the advantages likely to accrue to the Province at large from such an undertaking." In the course of this preliminary work, in January, 1852, there appeared in *The Provincial* magazine (volume 1, number 1) conducted by his friends, the Misses Katzman and Mr. and Mrs. George E. Morton, an article by the Vice-Chairman, entitled, "Industrial Exhibitions Necessary as a Progressive Element for the Advancement of Nova Scotia." This article is presented in full, a little further on, as an example of the writer's literary style and of his force in advocating a cause to which his energies were devoted. A second article from his pen, to the same purpose, entitled, "A Few Words about our Exhibition," is found in the February number of *The Provincial* for 1853.

Says the report, in speaking of the opening day: "The morning was ushered in by the bells of the various churches in the city ringing 'a loud and merry peal,' and a salute of twenty-one guns fired on the Grand Parade by the Volunteer Artillery, under command of Major James Cogswell." At noon, an immense procession formed on the Parade, marched through the principal streets, and proceeding to Government House to receive the Lieutenant-Governor, conducted him to the Exhibition, where he was received by a military Guard of Honor. It is a little difficult to picture my father parading the streets of Halifax with the Commissioners, preceded by the Axe Fire Company and followed by the band of the 76th Regiment. Among the Societies in this procession we find the African Abolition Society and the African Friendly Society, composed of gentlemen of color. The whole was led by the band of the 72nd Highland Regiment, whose pipers, and another band, were also in the line.

The total number of exhibitors was 1,260, and the total number of articles received for exhibition was 3,010. Two immense exhibition tents which covered the ground at either end of the

Province Building cost £460. The funds were raised by popular subscription, supplemented by a Legislative grant. Among the prize winners the following names are of interest to our family. Samuel G. Black (5 prizes for sheep, 1 for woolen fleeces, and another for mangolds); Charles H. M. Black (1 for honey in the comb, another for a bee-hive); Mrs. W. L. Black (1 for best wax flowers); and James McKay, "gardener to Hon. W. A. Black" (a number of prizes for various vegetables). Francis R. Parker, of Shubenacadie, who has figured in this narrative, appears as a judge of sheep.

It is to be feared that, as compared with the evening entertainment features now presented at our Provincial Exhibitions, those provided and appreciated by our fathers would be deemed queer, and quite inexplicable, by most moderns. They belong to the days of Mechanics' Institutes, and a popular taste for intellectual culture. *Tempora mutantur, et nos mutamur in illis.* Note a contrast here, and choose between the old and the new.

"With a view to rendering the exhibition still more attractive and instructive," says the report, "provision was made by the committee for the intellectual entertainment of visitors. Several evenings were appropriated for this object." There were lectures and addresses on the following subjects: "The religious principle viewed as an element of National prosperity," by the Rev. James Robertson, A.M., Rector of Wilmot, "a subject well adapted to impart a healthful vigor to the whole course," the report comments. "The Benefits of Industrial Exhibitions," by Dr. Cramp, of Acadia College. "The Minerals of Nova Scotia," by J. W. Dawson, Esq., of Pictou (afterwards Sir William Dawson, Principal of McGill University). "The Horticultural and Agricultural Capabilities of Nova Scotia," by the Hon. Provincial Secretary, and the Hon. H. Bell. "Application of Science to Agriculture," by Rev. Mr. Robertson. "Rural Economy," by Hon. Joseph Howe, who also at a "Festival" or banquet, on another evening, read a poem entitled "Our Fathers," prepared by him for the occasion. "The Coal Fields of Nova Scotia," by J. W. Dawson, Esq. "Chemical Affinity" ("accompanied by a series of successful and beautiful experiments"), by James D. B. Fraser, Esq., of Pictou. One evening was given up to a public discussion, free to all, of the following subjects: 1. "Should orchards be encouraged in Nova Scotia, and what is necessary to be done with a view to their improvement?" 2. "Should the growth of the turnip be extended, and what is the best mode of treatment?" 3. "What is necessary to be done in order to lessen the amount of manual labour in the Province?"

Yet, with all this serious order of things, lighter form of

entertainment were not unprovided for, as we learn from the report:

“ Besides the opportunities afforded for literary improvement already noticed, the committee took every available means of securing innocent amusement and recreation for persons visiting the exhibition. Among these may be enumerated a handsome display of fireworks, which came off under the direction of T. A. Parsons, of Boston, Massachusetts, at the Governor’s Field” “ A regatta, conducted with much spirit, took place on the same day, under the patronage of their Excellencies the Lieutenant-Governor, the Naval Commander-in-Chief, and the General Commanding.”

My father’s enthusiastic interest in this exhibition, the services he rendered in its behalf, and the historical interest attaching to first things, will be thought sufficient reasons, I hope, for the extended notice given the event in these pages.

The first article in *The Provincial*, promised at a previous page, here follows:

INDUSTRIAL EXHIBITIONS.

NECESSARY AS A PROGRESSIVE ELEMENT, FOR THE ADVANCEMENT OF NOVA SCOTIA.

The Great Industrial Exhibition of all Nations has closed its doors. The Crystal Palace has emptied itself of the thousands of human beings who for months took shelter within its transparent walls. The wealth of the sunny South, of the frozen North, of ancient Europe, and young America, so long warehoused in glass, has been transferred to more substantial tenements of wood and masonry. The “ Mountain of Light ” no longer there collects, and again reflects, with dazzling brilliancy the rays which emanate from that great source of light and life, the mightiest diamond of the firmament above us—no longer enchained, does it play with the sun by day, and the stars by night. In its adventurous career, yet another change has taken place. Now, as “ the brightest gem in England’s Crown,” it adorns the brow of England’s much loved Queen.

The Commissioners have all but terminated their Herculean labors; nought now remains but dome and walls, where but a few short months before all within was beauty, life, enchantment, a scene of fairyland—variety has been supplanted, sameness reigns! Yet these bare walls stand forth a monument of England’s greatness, an index of her vast resources. An English mind originated, English minds and capital as if by magic erected her

Crystal Palace, a structure as vast in its proportions as was the object which gave it birth. Well may England be proud of her Paxtons and Hendersons, her engineers, her architects, and contractors, for they constitute much of her present glory, power and influence.

The exhibition is past and gone! Not so its memory and effects. When the sun in its diurnal course shall cease to illumine the home of the Anglo-Saxon, then and then only, will this great triumph of peace, science and skill of the 19th century, be blotted from the world's history. Its results have been, and will be, too grand and momentous not to be handed down to posterity. When the names and sanginary victories of men like Wellington and Nelson shall have faded from the memory of man, or be only dimly impressed there, the World's Fair of 1851, and its effects, will still be vivid and indelibly engraven on the tablets of his mind. Centuries hence it will be discussed as the greatest fact of the present age.

The events so recently enacted in connexion with this great display, might well be designated a "Congress of Peace," for in England's Capital working on the same platform, side by side, stood men opposed to and hating each other (in their own domains) with a bitter hatred. The Russian and the Turk and Austrian and Hungarian, with other most discordant material, on British ground laid aside the gall and wormwood of his nature. The past was forgotten in the present—evil passions and influences were absorbed by, and sunk deep in, the vortex of a virtuous Maelstrom. The watchwords of Republicans, "Unitè, Egalitè, Fraternitè," seemed for a time to have an actual yet bloodless existence in monarchical England. The plague, invasion by foreign Socialists, and all the prophesied evils of the timid, that were to be the concomitants of this great event, vanished into empty air. All went smoothly, successfully on, because, a kindly Providence seeing that the work was for good and not for evil, smiled on it, and in wisdom directed that it should be thus.

On this great and unique occasion, the land we live in, Nova Scotia, was an interested party. Let us briefly glance at her contribution, and at the position she there assumed, and from it learn wisdom, and how to act, should we ever again be called on to take part in a similar display.

Scarce a twelvemonth has elapsed, since crowds of people, old and young, rich and poor in a steady stream, for three consecutive days took their course across the Parade to gain admission to the Museum of the Halifax Mechanics' Institute, for the purpose of viewing the contribution in question. Some were satisfied, more apparently delighted, while others again spoke of the meagre appearance of the show, and with dissatisfaction in their looks

shrugged their idle shoulders at the thought of the contrast so shortly to be made between Nova Scotia and the world at large. The exhibition, although perhaps creditable to the Province as a first effort, fell far short of what it should have been, or what it would have been, had the sympathies of the people been enlisted in the undertaking; or had they been aroused to exertion and combined action, by a proper conception of the advantages that a vigorous and noble effort on their part would have effected for their native or their adopted land. Like the foolish virgins of Scripture, the people of Nova Scotia slumbered, while the inhabitants of other countries, with their lamps trimmed, labored and put forth their best efforts to excel, and to render services the most valuable to the land that claimed them. Science and the arts have thanked them, the enlightened men of the present age do homage to the people who by mental toil and manual labor have thus added to the general store of human knowledge.

The entire contribution was gratuitously transmitted to England, by a whole-hearted and generous son of Nova Scotia,* and although arranged to the best advantage, was insignificant when contrasted with other departments. Comparatively few, of the many thousands who entered that great emporium of the wealth, industry, and science of civilized nations, stood to examine and admire our country's productions. Why was this? We reply: because, Nova Scotians were not awake to their own interests. Here was a glorious opportunity proffered them, for informing the world that their country was civilized; that she had a climate other than Siberian; that her natural resources were abundant, were endless; that within her territories and her waters were contained those great and essential elements, which being properly developed and directed, must lead to wealth and greatness; that she lacked only in three things, science, capital and labor! We again ask, why was advantage not taken of this almost golden opportunity? The response is—Bluenose wrapt his robe (the manufacture of another country) around him, and said "It will require an effort. If the world wants to know what Nova Scotia is made of, let the world come and find out!"

How fallacious the doctrine; what folly is embraced in this brief reply! Yet as to character, how much truth. 'Tis this lack of energy, this want of mental and physical exertion, that retards our progress, that keeps Nova Scotia becalmed and anchored while other countries and other people are being wafted onwards, with all sail set, o'er the sea of prosperity. We observe

* The Hon. Samuel Cunard, who forwarded the articles per steamer, freight free, thereby saving what would have been a Provincial charge of £150.

them "hull down" in advance of us—but to follow, "to raise the wind" and weigh anchor, would require—an effort!—'tis easier to remain "in statu quo."*

These remarks explain the cause of our Provincial deficiency on the occasion to which we have reference:

Out of the 250 or 300,000 inhabitants said to be contained in Nova Scotia, not more than ten or twelve individuals beyond the limits of the city came to the assistance of the Committee appointed by the Lieutenant-Governor. Without this aid, small though it was, the efforts of the Halifax Board would have been abortive, and our Province would have been entirely unrepresented at the "World's Fair."

It may be said that Nova Scotia did well, when contrasted with New Brunswick, from whence nothing was forwarded. The fact of New Brunswick having been asleep when it should have been at work, cannot be pleaded as an excuse for our lethargy. The example of a man who does no good in life, cannot consistently be followed by his neighbor. Instead of restricting his efforts (as it but too frequently does) it should, on the contrary, prompt him to increased exertion. In the case in point, New Brunswick speedily discovered her error, and forthwith neutralized it, by applying a proper and most efficient remedy, the same that we shall presently prescribe for Nova Scotia.

Pass the borders of New Brunswick and enter Canada,—see what *her* population effected.

The Canadians viewed the thing in its proper light, saw its importance, *made an effort* and succeeded, beyond the expectations of the most sanguine. They opened their purses, contributed their money. The masses moved; the man of science, the merchant, and the artisan went to work. There was energetic and combined action, resulting in the best and greatest display of her industrial resources that Canada ever witnessed. These crossed the Atlantic under the charge of a special agent, who tastefully fitted up his department, and displayed to the utmost advantage the wares of this country. Canada absorbed, almost undivided, the interest of the thousands who were anxiously examining the productions of the North American Colonies.

The Canadian as he viewed the daily crowd of men from almost every nation of the earth, scanning and admiring the contribution of his country, inwardly ejaculated, "Canada, I'm proud of you!" While doubtless hundreds of intending emigrants, who

* The above strictures are only applicable to Nova Scotians taken collectively. Individually, more especially when removed from the contagious region and home influence, he is another person—a man, in every sense of the word, and one, too, perfectly capable of competing with his fellow man in any country, sphere, or business.

visited the exhibition, and were undecided as to the course they should pursue. finally concluded, after scrutinizing her products, her science and her skill, and contrasting these with those of other Colonies, that thither they would embark their capital and themselves—that Canada should be their future home.

Would that Nova Scotia had by a similar effort attracted the attention of the world. She had the materials, human, natural and artificial. To demonstrate this fact, would have cost her an effort,—she dozed while the opportunity passed.

'Tis said, that an opportunity lost cannot be regained. The saying is here verified, but while mourning over the deficiencies, the losses of the past, hope points with a cheerful countenance to the future.

Every disease has its remedy. Nova Scotia, although partially paralyzed, may yet be made to move with activity. All that she wants is strong stimulus, which will act on her population, moving her mental, and through it, her physical material: not in the accustomed "jog trot" fashion of old, but with rapid strides, quick jumps,—a stimulus that shall cause energy to supplant lethargy; motion, paralysis.

It is not to be expected that any one agent in itself should prove a perfect Panacea, and remove a disease so formidable and of such long duration as that to which allusion is here made; but we would suggest, as a *partial remedy*, a stimulus that will pervade the whole Provincial organism, and cannot fail in the end to prove largely beneficial to all her varied interests.

We have reference to Periodical Industrial Exhibitions, commencing in the Capital, and moving in regular order through every county in the Province. Not on a paltry, diminutive scale, but comprehensive, the result of thought, labor, and much preparation embracing and representing every interest, every production, whether natural or artificial, which the Province and its human talent can be made to yield.

We fancy we hear some of our countrymen say "It's all very well to talk, but the thing cannot be done, *it would require much effort*, we are too young and altogether unprepared for such a work." Our answer to such a man, would be, if you will not aid in the attempt, don't thwart, but move aside and give place to those who have the energy and disposition to advance the general welfare and interests of the land.

Can the thing be accomplished? We say yea! Do you, reader, say the same! We know you do! Let the rich man and the poor, the professional man and the mechanic, in town and country, in village and hamlet, cry *in earnest*, and in unison—it can be done, and it shall be done,—and the thing is accomplished.

The first attempt will be good, and the second better, the

third and subsequent ones, aided by the experience of the past, will be a credit to the Province; and when again Great Britain or any other country extends to us a similar invitation to that of 1850, Nova Scotia will stand forth, fill her department, and assume that position which Nature, when endowing her, intended that she should occupy. Nova Scotians will *then* have performed their duty, and given to their country a world-wide and an enviable notoriety.

What good will accrue to us, as a people, by a series of these Exhibitions? Innumerable and incalculable advantages will result, as must be apparent to every thinking mind, from such undertakings. To a few of these let us briefly turn our attention: 1st. They will be a direct means of demonstrating to ourselves the real intrinsic value of our Province. We daily hear its resources spoken of in glowing language: "The Resources of Nova Scotia," is a familiar phrase in every man's mouth. Yet how few there are, who have a just conception of their nature, extent or worth. Vague and indefinite ideas, founded on no practical knowledge, have possession of men's minds in relation to this matter. Let us then demonstrate, first, to the people, the masses of Nova Scotia, and afterwards, when an opportunity offers, to the world at large, what our Province is actually made of, what its real resources are. Do this effectually, and ere long emigration from our shores will be heard of only as a past event. The ebb will have ceased, the flood tide will have commenced. Then, the stream will be turned once more into its proper channel, the interior of the country will be settled, the back woods will ring to the stroke of the emigrant's axe, while all, both within and without, will be vigour—life—advancement.

2nd. What a stimulus it will be to the producing and mechanical portion of our community. The plough, the anvil, and the loom, will all be worked by hands, and directed by minds anxious to excel. There will be a generous competition, that great incentive to human action. Nova Scotians will first compete in this race with each other, then with their neighboring Colonists; and in the end, they will be schooled and prepared to enter the lists with the "wide world."

Already have our iron, steel, and fur, in the first grand contest of nations carried off the highest prize.*

* Extract from a letter addressed to the writer by a gentleman in London: "They have awarded Mr. Archibald two prizes of the first class, which speaks volumes for the excellence of your products. Indeed, it may be taken as a fact beyond dispute, that the iron and steel of Nova Scotia is second to none that the world can produce. These samples are the very first of your manufacture, and yet they stand successful with the like productions from countries boasting a reputation of centuries. The only country that can pretend to compete with Nova Scotia for steel

Let this fact nerve our minds and arms for future action, let us move onward, in the right direction, and when another such opportunity is offered us, our "first class" prizes will not be doled out by twos and threes, but be scattered wide, by the dozen, through different sections of the land.

3rd. Being made familiar with the actual natural wealth of our country, and having new life and vigor infused into our palsied system, men's minds will be directed to the development of these resources; to rendering them practically available, for the advancement of their own pecuniary interests. These exhibitions will thus tend to produce manufactories, a lamentable deficiency in our land. Those now in existence will be improved and extended, while others, not yet born, will annually spring up and flourish, not "like the flowers of the field," but permanently, exerting an influence widespread and expansive, and not to be appreciated by us in our present depressed and infantile state. Another result, as certain to follow the contemplated movement, may be briefly alluded to.

It will open up new markets for our productions, from unexpected quarters. A practical example or two will best illustrate this position. A naturalist of Nova Scotia* put up three small cases of insects, with his accustomed taste and skill, which were forwarded to the London Exhibition. These, as well as several cases of stuffed birds, sent by the same gentleman, at once attracted the attention of parties interested in the study of Natural History. The insects were purchased from the agent at a large advance over the Nova Scotia price. Since then, orders have been received from England for a number of cases at the same highly remunerative prices. At the recent New Brunswick Exhibition, many articles were disposed of at the manufacturers' charges, previous to their removal from the building, and doubtless new and extensive orders originated from the display in question.

The great seedsmen of Edinburgh† fitted up a large case containing all the seeds, roots, etc., indigenous to Great Britain,

and from Sweden and there fuel has become so scarce that the quantity is yearly diminishing. There is abundance of every element in your province to supply the world, and when properly developed, to make your little country one of the most prosperous under the sun. There is a medal awarded to the Nova Scotia committee for a choice collection of skins. Mr. Robinson, I believe, was the contributor. While the quality of your iron cannot be surpassed by any yet discovered, it is said that the same remark applies to your fur and skins. Mr. Robinson's collection in London was superior to that of the Hudson's Bay Company, Russia, or any there exhibited."

* Mr. A. Downs, Junior.

† Messrs. Lawson & Sons.

valued at £150 stg. and sent it to "the World's Show." It had not been long there before the firm received orders for similar cases from the Emperor of Russia, the King of Prussia, and other crowned heads of Europe. No doubt, that single package, there exposed to the gaze of the world, will be the means of putting thousands of pounds into the pockets of these enterprising men. Hundreds of parallel instances might be quoted in connexion with the history of the World's Fair for 1851.

To treat this subject here, in all its beneficial relations, would be impossible. We will only further refer the reader to the effects of such exhibitions as illustrated in the experience of the United States, where nearly every city, town and village of importance, has its "annual show," as it is there called. Ask the American citizen his opinion of such displays, and he will tell you that they have exerted, and still continue to exert, a wonderful influence for good—that they infuse vigor, a spirit of enterprise and emulation into the minds of all classes—that they act as powerful levers to elevate morally, socially and intellectually, the people of the Union. How could it be otherwise? What these exhibitions have done for the United States, they will do for Nova Scotia, if her sons and daughters *will it*.

Were the pros and cons equal, which is most assuredly not the case, the mere additional circulation of money should be an inducement, and turn the scale in favor of such exhibitions, in these times of depression and langour. In England, immense sums were expended by travellers alone, who were drawn thither by the great sight of the age—the departed exhibition. Every class benefited by it; even the remote corners of the empire felt in this, if in no other way, its beneficial effects. The same remarks are applicable in a minor degree, to New Brunswick and her recent show. The late Railway Jubilee was, it is estimated, a clear gain to the city of Boston of \$100,000, that amount, over and above the expenditure, having been left behind by travellers and guests.

HOW ARE THESE EXHIBITIONS TO BE ORIGINATED, AND WHAT BODY WILL CONSTITUTE THE MOVING POWER?

In St. John, N.B., the Mechanics' Institute took the initiative. The same thing has been recommended here*; and as there is

* The Rev. Alex. Forrester in a most patriotic and powerful address recently delivered before the Halifax Mechanics' Institute, took this ground but at the same time recommended that large additions should be made from without the Institute, and that every interest in the province should be represented in this central board or moving power. Mr. Forrester has been the first person in Nova Scotia to propound publicly the necessity of these institutions. May his call be responded to.

much to be said in favor of the suggestion, we trust it will be adopted. Let then, a board of commissioners be organized, consisting of some of the leading men of the Mechanics' Institute, one or two members of Government, members of the Legislature, and of the Agricultural Society. These, with representatives from the various professions and trades in the Province, might constitute "a Central Board." They should be men of influence who have the best interests and welfare of the Province at heart, and who would not hesitate to labor in a cause of such importance. Under their directions in each county, local boards could be organized consisting of the most intelligent, scientific and practical men of the different districts. With the addition of one or two travelling agents, who by their acquirements and knowledge would be capable of delivering lectures, and exciting an interest among the people, the above would constitute the working machinery, the lever that would raise the mass.

WHERE ARE THE FUNDS TO COME FROM?

The money requisite to efficiently carry on the work, would be considerable, but it would not all be required at the offset. There are three sources from whence it could be derived: 1st, from private contributions. A love of country, or patriotism, would, we trust, induce the more wealthy to give their pounds, the middling classes their shillings, and the poor man his pence. 2nd, from the Provincial chest. The principle has been conceded here, as in the other colonies, that for great and important works, calculated to benefit the whole people, the government or legislature may make liberal advances from the public treasury. And what object more important, I would ask, than the one under consideration? It is difficult to name it! For such contributions or advances, both the private individual and the Province would receive in return *more* than compound interest—if not directly, certainly indirectly. Sooner or later, they would be the recipients of a ten-fold reward. *Lastly*, the fees for admission would probably be large. The money thus obtained on the first two days, at the recent show in New Brunswick, more than paid for every expenditure, the erection of a Miniature Crystal Palace 60 feet by 120, included. While, to ascend from small things to great, the London Exhibition at its close left in the hands of its executive a surplus fund of some £200,000 or £300,000, stg.

With facts like these before us, on the score of money we should not hesitate; the pecuniary difficulty will have no existence.

FROM WHENCE WILL COME THE PEOPLE TO VIEW OUR PRODUCTIONS, AND TO FURNISH THIS REVENUE, ASSUMING THAT THE THING IS SUCCESSFULLY COMPLETED?

From every section of the Province. If we enlist the sympathies of the masses, obtain their assistance, and the results of their labor, will they be content to hear of the exhibition only through the press? Certainly not. They will by hundreds come to the Capital, or elsewhere, to view the work of their own hands. Again, if these industrial displays are established on an extensive scale, strangers will come from afar. The other Colonies, and doubtless the United States, will furnish large parties, if proper arrangements for conveying them hither be made. Cheap pleasure excursions originating in St. John, induced hundreds to visit the late show there, from Nova Scotia, Canada, Boston, Portland and other parts of the United States. This ingress of strangers, while it will extend to other countries a knowledge of our resources and capabilities, will act as a stimulus to those more immediately interested. We will be aware that the eyes of North America are fixed on us, which fact will prompt us to increased exertion.

Nova Scotians! shall these exhibitions be attempted? Argument, example, everything speaks loudly in their favor; let us cast aside our lethargy, make but an effort, a vigorous effort, and a Provincial Industrial Exhibition for 1852 will be attempted and concluded with honor to ourselves and our country. Let the Government and its head, the Bench and the Bar, and all these occupying high places in the land, step forward and say "We will aid in the undertaking, not with a feeble voice, but with all our strength, with our influence, our interest, and if required, with our money." Then will be seen the farmer and the naturalist, the carpenter and the smith, in short, representatives from every trade and profession in the Province, joining in the chorus of "a long pull and a strong pull, and a pull all together." Periodical Industrial Exhibitions will not be viewed through the mists of the dim future, their present advantages will be felt, they will be fixed and established facts in our Colonial History. These, with other elements of progress, which are attainable and within our means, being once adopted and developed, adversity will retreat, prosperity will be the victor. The happiness induced by success, will displace those feelings of envy, discord and disappointment which are engendered by a want of it. Nova Scotia will be progressively elevated—and "Bluenose" her son, while contemplating the change effected in his condition, will once more fold his robe, *now of home manufacture*, around him, survey the work of his hand, and express his grateful acknowledgments to that all-wise Providence, which prompted him in the hour of necessity *to make an effort* to redeem his country from obscurity and depression.

To return to domestic affairs. It was in the spring or summer of 1853 that the purchase of the Dartmouth cottage property was made and the cottage built. This was designed to be a summer residence for the child, Johnston, with his nurse, and a place of retreat for himself, when work would permit. The Misses Katzman, to whom reference has been made, occupied the cottage, in its early history, for the greater part of the year. James W. Johnston, junior, was then living on the place adjoining, afterwards purchased by F. M. Passow, when "Sunnyside," bounding the cottage lot on the south, became the home of Mr. Johnston. James W. Johnston, senior, then lived at "Mount Amelia," on the hill above. The cottage property comprised that part of the "Beechwood" homestead which lies between the Eastern Passage road and the Old Ferry road. The cottage itself formed that part of the present house (except the attic story) between the northern wall and the southern line of the lower main hall, and consisted of two stories, and a basement for the kitchen department. It had entrances east and west, with a verandah on the west side reached by two opposing flights of stairs meeting on a platform in advance, and of the same height as the present verandah. The front drawing-room in the present house was the drawing-room of the cottage, the rear one was its dining-room, from the east window of which steps led to a lawn. The present sitting-room was the main bedroom of the cottage, with a bay window, breast high, overlooking the harbor. The north-east bedroom in its rear was the nursery. A stable, afterwards removed to its present position and enlarged by the addition of a coachman's house, stood at right angles to the cottage, extending from about the position of the extreme south-west corner of the new house, westerly. Among the trees on the bank behind, then more numerous, was a large play-house for children, covered on roof and sides with spruce tree trunks, in the style of a log cabin. Beyond this, where now are the upper sidewalk and retaining wall, the ground, thickly wooded, sloped naturally to the line of the property from the street, which was then lower, and there was a board fence in the hollow, following the course of the present retaining wall as its base runs.

On August 26th, 1854, the marriage of my father and mother was celebrated, at "Belle-Vue." A family party was then made up for a tour in Canada and the United States. Beside the bride and groom it consisted of the bride's sister Elizabeth and her husband, L. A. Wilmot (afterwards Judge of the Supreme Court of New Brunswick, and Lieutenant-Governor of that Province), the bride's sister Emma, then unmarried, her sister Celia, her brother Martin, and her niece Jane, afterwards the wife of Captain Samuel Adams, of the 60th Rifles. The route and places visited were as follows: By the Cunard ship "Europa," with 200 English

passengers aboard, to Boston; thence to Albany, N.Y.; thence to Niagara Falls; thence across the lake to Toronto; thence by boat to Kingston, Ont; thence by boat for Montreal, but, finding themselves on a steamer overcrowded with troops among whom cholera broke out on board, the party disembarked at Prescott and crossed over to Ogdensburg in the State of New York; thence, next day to Montreal; thence by rail, and by boat down Lake Champlain, to New York; thence to Philadelphia, back to Boston, by rail, and home again by a Cunard steamer, in time for the detail preparatory work of the Provincial Exhibition, with which the bridegroom was connected, as we have seen, and which was an event not to be missed.

At my mother's marriage her father's wedding gift was the stone house at the south-west corner of Argyle and Prince Streets, overlooking St. Paul's Church Square, with the land appurtenant. The property extended on Argyle Street southerly to the Burmeister house, a granite building, and had a stable at the south-eastern corner. Thence it extended through to Grafton Street, where there was a rear entrance into a large lot on which stood a second stable and a detached house for a coachman. South of the residence was the garden. The wooden annex in the rear of the house, fronting on Prince Street, was afterwards built by my father for offices and a medical dispensary. A transverse lobby, with doors on either side containing glass panels, separated this building from the house. I well remember that this lobby formed an amphitheatre in which the trusty Charles, butler and indispensable doer of many things, was wont to match his black-and-tan, Jessie, against as many sewer rats as could be provided at a time by a band of lively but not over-industrious medical students, who would indulge my infant taste by holding me up to witness these combats through those glass doors. The original office and consulting-room was at the north-east corner of the house, on the first floor. This house was built by Dr. William J. Almon, the father of my father's old preceptor and grandfather of the Senator of the same name. This first of the Doctors Almon, the progenitor of five generations of Halifax doctors bearing the name, came to Halifax with the British forces on the evacuation of Boston, in 1776, and died in England in 1817. The house was built soon after the close of the Revolutionary War. It was afterwards the residence of the builder's son, Hon. Mather Byles Almon, from whom it was purchased in 1854. The house and its location, now so altered in their use and character, were then considered most desirable for residence, and that part of Argyle Street was almost wholly occupied for residential property. Opposite this new home, to which my parents returned after their tour in Canada and the United States, was the historical Bulkeley House, then the home

of the Cogswell family. Hon. Hezekiah H. Cogswell died there in 1854. Dr. Charles Tupper, my father's lifelong friend, resided a few doors south of that. The neighbors immediately south, on the other side, were the Burmeisters; and beyond them, at the southern corner of the block, was the handsome residence of the Uniackes, a large wooden building, originally of three stories, with a parapet all around the roof, ornamented with large urns. It was built by Hon. Richard John Uniacke, for many years Attorney-General, whose son Richard John, junior, fought the last duel in Halifax, in 1819, when he killed Mr. Bowie, of the firm of Bowie & De Blois. Another son, Andrew, was the occupant at the time now referred to, and as late as 1872. Doctors Garvie and Hattie were near neighbors on the block of Argyle Street opposite St. Paul's Church. On the next block northward stood the old home of the Blacks, my mother's grandfather and father. She was born there, and there she spent her first twelve years, until her father, in April, 1846, purchased "Belle-Vue" from the estate of Benjamin Etter, who was my mother's maternal grandfather. The southern extension of the Moir bakery now covers the site of the old home.

The summer months were spent by the family at the Dartmouth cottage. There my father spent such hours as he could snatch from his time-devouring labors. Worn out by work, at times he would seek this haven for a night of unbroken sleep, an experience which had become too unfamiliar. The ferry ceased to run at eleven, and the telephone was far in the future yet. But a night off duty was rare, only permissible when it was taken to avoid night calls to new cases, and when there was no expectation of nocturnal visits in those that were pending.

The years of unremitting toil as a general practitioner in both branches of his profession were broken now and then by what might be called flying visits to New York, Boston or elsewhere, where rest was found in brief change of scene and the changed work of investigating some discovery in medicine or some advance in surgery, news of which had reached him; and he never returned without acquiring fresh knowledge by which his patients might benefit. He was progressive, always enquiring, ever learning, an insatiable student and investigator. He believed that, in his profession, not to advance was to go back. With a large library, which he always supplemented by taking in many current medical magazines, he was not satisfied with reading only. He must see things for himself in surgery; and any new operation, once seen, he could come home and perform. In this manner he kept continuously abreast of the advances being made in his always progressive vocation. By this method, too, he formed friendships, valuable and sympathetic, with eminent men in the United States

and Canada, called together by common interest to witness or discuss the newest things in surgery and medical discovery. Such men became his correspondents and would keep him informed so that he might make timely visits to American cities. Agnew, Sands, Draper and Delafield, of New York, and many older men of professional eminence there and in other American cities, such as Professor Willard Parker and Dr. Buck, of New York, but whose names cannot all be recalled, appreciated his worth and were among his admirers, and some of them sought his aid in consultation when opportunity offered during his visits. I was once with him in New York when the most distinguished surgeon of that time in the city drove him over to Brooklyn to assist in an operation. "What do you get for that, Sands?" asked my father, on their way back. "A thousand dollars," was the answer. "I do that for fifty," said the Nova Scotia surgeon. "Come on; move to New York," was the laconic reply of the more fortunate New Yorker. Some of these professional brethren of the Republic were accustomed to visit him at his home. In the same spirit, and for the same purpose, he would cross the Atlantic, but more rarely; and he never failed, by personal correspondence with men of the highest standing in Edinburgh and London, to keep himself "up-to-date" and well informed as to all advances being made in the old country as well as in the new. As evidencing the reputation he established abroad, both before and after the transition in practice of 1873, and the esteem in which he was held by the front rank men of the profession with world-wide reputations, many of these in Great Britain and in the United States, and, it may be added, all the eminent men of Canada, were accustomed to send him copies of their medical and surgical pamphlets, reports of cases, and periodical writings,—very often accompanied by expressions of affectionate regard. Of these, many volumes might now be made, for he was accustomed to preserve them for reference.

Such was his practice at Argyle Street, until he relinquished general practice in 1871, that it was not uncommon for him to have a day's visiting list of from forty to fifty names, and his rounds began often at six or seven o'clock in the morning. It was his habit to "get a bite," as he would say, where he happened to call about the hours for meals, and many days he never tasted food at home. If he chanced to be where the "bite" was not to be had, he went hungry. He belonged distinctively to that old school of family physician—"a guide, philosopher and friend" as well as medical man—and was so generally beloved that no more welcome guest, though uninvited, was ever greeted in the homes of his patients, from the stateliest mansion of authority or wealth to the cottage of the lowliest poor. And they were all alike to him.

After a day's work upon such a round of visits as would keep

him out frequently until nearly bed-time, and would include perhaps several surgical operations, there would come the dreaded summons of the night-bell beside his bed, perhaps several of these in succession. Conscientious in the highest degree, and cherishing the ethics of the profession in this as in all other aspects, he would never refuse these calls save when his own real illness barred the door. But sometimes when, sunk deep in the slumber of utter physical and mental exhaustion at the close of a long day's weary round, even the close-clattering bell could not avail to break the seal of nature on his senses, his watchful wife, refusing to arouse him, made bold to deny nocturnal importunity, upon what she thought sufficient ground, and to send away the caller to some neighboring physician. My mother's relation of her husband's labors in those years of general practice make one marvel that his life was not cut short by a quarter of a century. Indomitable power of the will, and the ability to catch a few moments of dozing sleep here and there throughout the day, may, in part, explain why it was not so, for his physical constitution in youth, as we have seen, was not considered robust.

A number of medical students read in the Prince Street offices, received instruction and witnessed operations. But the old-time custom of paying £100 to the preceptor had then become more honored (?) in the breach than in the observance. A pharmacist, who also acted as book-keeper, was employed, and all medicines were compounded on the premises. I recall that the late Dr. Venables and Mr. Charles H. Hepworth both occupied this position.

In the forties and fifties my father rode on horseback a great deal in making his professional rounds, and he was an excellent horseman. At Argyle Street he kept three horses, using them for a day each in turn. Reference to his earlier modes of travel is made in his Address of 1895, before alluded to. An illustrative incident or two may not be amiss here.

Arrived home one evening about eight o'clock, fatigued by a hard day's work, he found an urgent message from a doctor in Windsor, asking him to operate there next day. There was then no railway, and the coach leaving the following morning could not get him there before evening. There was nothing for it but to start at once, for he knew that to be effective the operation must be performed in the morning, and as early as possible. A hasty meal, and he was again in the saddle. It was winter, and a heavy, driving snow-storm came on when he had ridden about half-way. Fortunately his well-proved horse was familiar with the Windsor road, and to him the rider, when in doubt, would commit the reins; yet the snow-drifts grew so deep that where there were no fences for guidance the road could not be kept, was lost and found again

many times. At a point where the road passed through a thick wood, in a darkness which shut out even sight of his horse's head, the struggle against nature's demand could no longer be maintained, and the rider fell asleep. The knowing, trusty horse knew it, and evidently reasoned that it would be safer for his master, swaying in the saddle, and very much more comfortable for himself, if he should "turn in" too, for what remained of such a night. At daybreak the rider awoke with a start to find himself lying forward on the drooped neck of the horse, supported by his saddle-bags, and the animal, apparently asleep, standing in the wood under the sheltering branches of a spruce tree. It was still snowing heavily. The horse had turned into a wood-road, and had shown sagacity and great care in approaching, as well as selecting sleeping quarters. Had he taken to cover over rough ground, which lay all about, or not proceeded very cautiously, his sleeping master must inevitably have been thrown, and perhaps injured, where he might have lain long before being discovered. Many long and lonely rides by day and night had established a perfect understanding of each other, and a mutual affection. That favorite horse was one of the truest friends his proud owner ever had. With much difficulty, because of the now badly blocked road, and by taking short cuts through wood and field, my father reached his destination in the forenoon of that day. The operation was done at once, and it was marked by an incident which he used to say was unique in his experience. The patient, an old man and wealthy, was instantly relieved from great pain by the operation and was thoroughly appreciative. "What's your fee, doctor?" said he, as the surgeon was packing his instruments. "Fifty dollars, Mr. S." Turning to his son and pointing to a drawer in his desk, the old man said: "Give him a hundred!" And the surgeon thought the travel, if not the operation, was worth it. The closing hour of that night saw him back in Halifax, on the same horse. Rides of that distance, through any weather, were not unusual for him.

On another occasion, going to Pictou or its vicinity, to operate, he took, as he often did, his own light carriage, doing the first stage or two with one of his own horses and trusting for changes to the stables at the post houses on the coach route. There was need for the utmost haste, for a human life was in the balance. At one road house there was no horse to be had but a heavy, vicious and dangerous stallion which had recently attacked and injured a man. The innkeeper refused at first to hire him on this account, but yielded to the imperious demand of the doctor, who "must" have him. On a lonely piece of road the horse became refractory, backing and rearing in an ugly manner, which threatened to upset the

carriage. His driver leaped out and was about to take him by the head, when the brute reared and struck at him with his forefeet. The impatient horseman's fighting blood was roused. Evading several blows, he ran in and gripped the reins with both hands, close to the curb bit. But he did not reckon on the consequence. The furious horse reared on his hind feet to his full height again and again, now swinging his clinging enemy in the air while he tried to beat him down with his fore-hoofs; now plunging to the earth in attempts to trample him underfoot, and all the while trying for a hold with his teeth upon the arms which held him. But the determined adversary held grimly on. There was nothing else for him to do. To release that grip meant probable death. For many minutes, that seemed like hours to the clinging man, this awful struggle went on. Bruised and battered by the animal's forelegs, dizzy with the shock and nervous tension of the unequal combat, his strength was failing, when a wagon containing three or four men appeared on the scene, and by them the horse was sufficiently subdued to effect my father's release from his perilous situation. But his own native resolution was not subdued; for when his timely rescuers had righted his carriage and helped him repair damages to the harness, he set out to conquer that stallion,—and conquer him he did, running him at his utmost speed to the next post, keeping him at it with a heavy whip playing like a flail, and there delivering him for return to his owner,—a trembling, dripping and thoroughly cowed horse.

It appears by the first annual report of the Halifax Visiting Dispensary Society, which was instituted in 1855, that Dr. William J. Almon and my father were the consulting surgeons for that year.

The Medical Society of Halifax, formed in 1844, was the pioneer organization of its kind in the Province. Previous to 1854 it had been agitating the matter of improved medical legislation to repress the increasing number of persons coming into the Province, "thoroughly versed in all the vile arts of the quack;" but repeated attempts to obtain such legislation had failed. "In 1854, a committee of this Society, appointed for the purpose, reported as follows: 'With regard to the improper treatment of bills presented of late years to the Legislature, your committee are of opinion that the only alternative now left by which an effectual resistance may be offered to the unjust procedure of the committees of Assembly appointed to investigate the petitions of medical men is a union of the profession throughout the Province. To effect such union your committee suggest that the Medical Society of Halifax should become a Provincial association and its title altered accordingly; and, further, that the practitioners throughout the Province be invited by a circular to become members of the association.'

“ On motion of Dr. Parker, it was resolved, ‘ That it is expedient for the members of the profession in this Province to organize themselves forthwith into an association for scientific and professional purposes for their mutual protection, and that every regularly qualified practitioner in Nova Scotia be invited to join the association.’ In 1854 the association was organized and the Hon. W. Gregor elected President, the country members having heartily endorsed the scheme. A memorial was drawn up for presentation to the legislature, and the Act of 1856 was introduced by the late Dr. Webster, of Kentville.”

The foregoing quotation is from a Presidential address on Nova Scotia medical legislation, delivered before the Nova Scotia Medical Society by Dr. D. A. Campbell in 1889.

This second step in medical legislation, from the imperfect Act of 1828, established a Registration system, and was a distinct advance, in other respects, for the protection of the public and the profession.

To the exigencies of the contest by which this Act of 1856 was wrung from a reluctant Legislature, the Nova Scotia Medical Society, originated on the motion of my father, owed its birth.

In 1857 he was elected President of the Society.

When the Provincial Hospital for the Insane, at Mount Hope, was organized by the Government in 1858, he was appointed by the Governor-in-Council to the original Commission of nine which managed it, and was elected its first chairman. This office he filled for some years.

Most of the public positions he filled in charitable, educational, business and other organizations during his career are noted in the paper on *Daniel McNeill and his descendants*. There were others, but it seems unnecessary to particularize further as to any of them here. The services which he rendered in some of them will be testified to by the encomiums of colleagues and others recorded in the following pages; and where there is no such record we may safely say, *Ex uno disce omnes*.

The year 1857 was marked by his first visit to Great Britain since he had left the Old Country as a new-fledged doctor. He was called there by the serious illness of his brother Fred at an English port where he had arrived from Leghorn in the barque “Walton,” which he commanded. My father went by the Cunard Line from Halifax direct to Liverpool about the first of August, and returned by the same route in October. Mr. J. W. Johnston, then Attorney-General, and Mr. A. G. Archibald were at this time in England on their mission to effect that arrangement with the British Government, the creditors of the Duke of York, and the General Mining Association in regard to the ungranted mines and minerals of Nova Scotia by which these were restored to the Gov-

ernment of the Province after having been long alienated by virtue of the lease to the Duke by his brother, George IV., and having fallen ultimately into the hands of the General Mining Association, subject to rights which the Duke of York had reserved to himself. Mr. Johnston had gone over in June, taking two of his daughters with him. My father met them in Edinburgh, after establishing his brother, comfortably convalescent, in Liverpool. Thence he returned to Liverpool to see Fred off for Halifax, and accompanied the Misses Johnston to London, where their father had preceded them. There he met Mr. Johnston, Mr. Archibald (afterwards Sir Adams), and Sir Samuel Cunard, the founder of the steamship line, who was rendering valuable assistance to the two Commissioners in their business of the mines; and he himself took some part, informally, in their deliberations. Thence he returned with the Misses Johnston to Scotland to show them a little more of the country, and to renew for a few days more the delightful and profitable intercourse with his old friend and preceptor, Professor Simpson, of which the following letter speaks. He has been heretofore referred to as Sir James Y. Simpson, but he did not receive his baronetcy until 1866.

My father, writing from 113 Duke Street, Liverpool, September 25th, 1857, to my mother, says:

“It is now 11 o'clock at night, and I have just made up my mind to remain for the next steamer. Dr. Davies arrived from Birmingham this evening, and as Fred is so much better he will be able to go out by himself, or rather the Johnstons and Davies will take every care of him, probably quite as good care as I would do were I with him. Now that I have actually concluded to remain, I feel quite dejected at being separated from you for a fortnight more, but I may never be here again, and as I have been so much tied by my desire not to be long away from Fred I have hardly been able to accomplish anything beyond getting him here and spending a few days, most profitably in a professional point of view, with Professor Simpson, who has been kind to me to an extreme degree, more like a brother than anything else. He invited me to take my traps to his house and make it my home while in Edinburgh. He drove me round to see his patients, great and small, and introduced me as 'Dr. Parker from America,' and in such a way as to make them fancy I was a *somebody*, instead of an unknown provincial practitioner. He so arranged it that I should see several important cases, operations, etc., and took me with him to the Bridge of Allan and other places where he was visiting patients. He asked me to accompany him to Torquay, to-day, in Devonshire, to which place he was asked to go by telegraph, but thinking then (yesterday morning) that I should be at sea to-morrow, I reluctantly declined. He made me promise to

go back and stay with him if anything turned up to prevent me from leaving. To be thus singled out for such marked attentions when he was daily surrounded by dozens of medical men from all parts of the world, is indeed an honor. He wishes to propose my name as a Fellow of the Royal College of Physicians, which would be a high honorary distinction, but as the initiatory fee is £50 stg. I do not feel able just now, at the rate the money goes, to spare it. So I thanked him most kindly and said I would communicate with him about it. He arranged a delightful morning for me, when, accompanied by Mrs. Simpson, we went to see and hear Dr. Livingstone, the African traveller, at a public breakfast given him in Edinburgh. Mrs. M., he thinks, will get well, or very nearly so. Poor Mrs. B., he thinks, will never be able to rejoin her husband." (These were Halifax ladies.) "When I go back to Edinburgh with the girls I will find her out, if possible. I cannot tell you how delighted I was with your letter, my own dear wife. I received it in Edinburgh last Monday when I joined Mr. Johnston and Agnes there. To hear that you and your dear infant were well made me feel grateful to God for His many blessings and mercies to us both since we parted. May He spare us to meet once more in our dear and happy home, for the comforts of which I long. Tell my dear boy that Papa was equally pleased with his little and short letter. Indeed, both yours and his have been perused over and over again. . . . P.S.—Poor E. T. has left this world at last. Well, he, I believe, was well prepared to meet his God in judgment. What a trying occasion for his poor bereaved wife—a husband dead, an infant born, events occurring within a few hours of each other. I wish my poor friend A., now in Eternity, had thought as long and as deeply on the subject of his soul's salvation as T., but God is a gracious and a merciful God, and we will hope that he was pardoned and forgiven. Ask Dr. Tupper to look after Fred. I would write him, but have not time. I only made up my mind to stay, to-night. It is now two o'clock on Saturday morning, and since writing you, my own dear wife, I have written Dr. Almon and Lady Le Marchant, and as I was travelling by railroad until one o'clock last night I feel rather used up and must go to bed.

"Saturday morning.

"The girls leave with me for London at quarter-past four o'clock to-day. I think we will proceed almost immediately to Scotland, as there is much there for them to see, and I flatter myself I am a good guide for that part of the world. . . . We are just off for the steamer. Send the accompanying letters also; a parcel for Gossip in the instrument box. In great haste, my dear, dear wife, your affectionate husband,
D.P."

Letters, in part or in full, find place in this narrative not only for the information concerning their writer's life which they afford, but because he always put a great deal of himself into his correspondence. To understand any man whose life is worth a record, to know his mind, his habits of thought, and try to form an estimate of his character, there can be nothing more helpful than his unstudied correspondence with those to whom his heart was open. "For as he thinketh in his heart, so is he."

I have therefore devoted much space to specimens of my father's spontaneous correspondence with those nearest and dearest to him; for the most part, letters hastily thrown off in the scant leisure of travel. "Out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh." Happy is it that though death could lay its hand upon the mouth that was wont to speak such things as these letters tell—the reminiscences and incidents of travel, thoughts arising out of what he saw abroad, and fond expressions of domestic love, yet these written words of his are preserved to us. In their perusal, with their many habitual forms of expression, the well-remembered mannerisms, or way of putting things, we may almost hear "the sound of a voice that is still."

As an example of this revelation of character by casual letters, the seemingly unimportant references to two deceased friends, T. and A., in the preceding letter, reveal the spiritually-minded man my father had become at the age of thirty-five; thus even these hastily penned "post-script" remarks become valuable to an understanding of what manner of man he was then. In all his correspondence one detects the note of that spiritual undertone which formed the basis for the harmony of a beautiful life.

To understand the pleasurable privileges extended in 1857 at 52 Queen Street, Edinburgh (a house monumental and even sacred in the traditions of the profession), to the Nova Scotia doctor who, as the great Simpson's clinical clerk and favored friend, in the decade previous, had exalted and revered him for a model and the Hero-Doctor, a glance at what Simpson now was, and what went his former pupil out for to see will be worth our while. To understand my father's personal and professional ideals and the working out of them in his life it is really necessary to read the biography of Simpson. In reading it I have been led to understand how great was the influence of Simpson's life, his work and character, upon my father's; how, unconsciously, no doubt, the reverent pupil formed himself upon his model, and seemingly absorbed much of the very spirit of his master.

About this time a medical officer of the Indian Army wrote thus to the *Bombay Telegraph and Courier*:—

"Decidedly the most wonderful man of his age—I mean of the age in which he lives—is Simpson of Edinburgh. In him are realized John Bell's four ideals of the perfect Esculapius—the brain of an Apollo, the

eye of an eagle, the heart of a lion, and the hand of a lady. Nothing baffles his intellect; nothing escapes his penetrating glance; he sticks at nothing, and he bungles nothing. If his practice be worth a rupee per annum, it is worth £10,000—twice as much as Dr Hamilton ever realized, and nearly twice the amount of the late Abercrombie's practice. From all parts, not of Britain only, but of Europe, do ladies rush to see, consult, and fee the man. He has spread joy through many a rich man's house by enabling his wife to present him with a living child, a feat which none but Simpson ever dared to enable her to do. To watch of a morning with his poor patients (them only of course was I permitted to see) is a treat. In comes a woman with a fibrous tumour, which fifty other practitioners have called by fifty other names. One minute suffices for his diagnosis; another sees her in a state of insensibility, and in less than a third, two long needles are thrust inches deep into the tumour, and a galvanic battery is at work, discussing it. 'Leave her alone quietly,' says Simpson, 'she'll take care of herself—no fear.' One up, another down, is the order of the day. What other men would speculate as to the propriety of for hours, Simpson does in a minute or two. He is bold, but not reckless; ever ready, but never harsh. He is prepared for every contingency, and meets it on the instant. Everything seems to prosper in his hands. As to ether and chloroform, they seem like invisible intelligences, doomed to obey his bidding—familiar who do his work because they must never venture to produce effects one iota greater or less than he desires. While other men measure out the liquids, fumble about and make a fuss, Simpson in what an Irishman would call the most promiscuous manner possible, does the job in a minute or two. He is, indeed, a wonderful man."

When the Queen, whose physician for Scotland he had been for some time, conferred the Baronetcy, the London *Lancet* said: "The conferring of this distinction must give, we think, universal satisfaction. Sir James Y. Simpson is distinguished as an obstetric practitioner, as a physiologist, as an operator, and as a pathologist of great research and originality. His reputation is European, and the honor is fully deserved. Sir James has long been foremost in his department of practice, and his name is associated with the discovery of that invaluable boon to suffering humanity—chloroform. This alone would entitle him to the honor he has received."

The special department of practice here referred to was gynecology and obstetrics—the subjects which he taught in the University.

A biographer of this grand old man relates that a few days before his death, in 1870, he said to some visiting friends: "I have not lived so near to Christ as I desired to do. I have had a busy life, but have not given so much time to eternal things as I should have sought. Yet I know it is not my merit I am to trust to for eternal life. Christ is all." Then he added, with a sigh, "I have not got far on in the divine life." A friend said, "We are complete in Him." "Yes, that's it," he replied with a smile. "The hymn expresses my thoughts:

'Just as I am, without one plea,
But that Thy blood was shed for me.'

I so like that hymn."

Does not this sound exceedingly like the religious conversation and correspondence of another grand old man, who became the Nestor of Nova Scotia Medicine!

An episode, notable and pathetic, in the history of Nova Scotia missionary enterprise is connected with this period of my father's life. I refer to the sending forth by the Presbyterian Church of the Lower Provinces, as missionaries to the South Seas, of the heroic brothers, George Nicol Gordon and his brother James, and their tragic deaths, by which these men became immortalized among the world's missionary heroes as two of "the Martyrs of Eromanga." In 1852, and for a few years afterwards, George was a Halifax city missionary and a student of Theology in the Free Church College on Gerrish Street. Campbell, who gives the story of the Gordons in his History of Nova Scotia, says: "In 1853, Mr. Gordon, whose system had been predisposed to disease from hard study and the tainted atmosphere which he breathed in his labors among the poor, was attacked with typhoid fever. He remained long in a critical condition, but had the good fortune to be attended by the Honorable Dr. Parker, under whose care he recovered. He was confined to his bed for seven weeks, expecting a formidable account for professional services, but upon application for the account, received it *receipted*. The medical faculty require to be well paid by those who can afford it, for as a body they devote more time, which is money, to charitable purposes than almost any other professional class."

As part of his preparation for his foreign missionary work, George Gordon entered my father's office as a student and received from him such special medical and surgical instruction as would be adapted to the needs of a medical missionary, though rudimentary. From this association of teacher and pupil there sprang up a deep attachment between them. George sailed for Eromanga in 1856. In May 1861, he and his wife were murdered by the savages among whom they labored. John Williams, an English missionary whose work they went to take up, had been likewise murdered. The brother, James D. Gordon, when the news of George's death reached home, was studying for the ministry in the Free Church College under Doctors King, Smith and McKnight, with the purpose of joining his brother, and, like him, was doing special work, under my father's tuition, in elementary Medicine and Surgery. Undaunted by the painful tidings of his brother's fate, he did not swerve from his determination, but sailed for Eromanga in 1863. There, in 1872, he likewise perished at the hands of the savage islanders. This devoted young man, like his brother, was much beloved by him who, for their work's sake, had freely given of his knowledge

and his time and strength toward their preparation for service.

The pathos in the story of the Gordons is enhanced by the circumstances that James, on the eve of his departure from Halifax, published the fascinating Memoir of his brother and his brother's wife, entitled "The Last Martyrs of Eromanga." In the end, he himself suffered as *the last* martyr. In his book he thus refers to George's illness and my father's services upon the occasion to which the historian Campbell alludes, in the quotation given above.

"At one stage of the disease life was for a time trembling in the balance. But through the skill of Dr. Parker, whose assiduous attentions he received during six or seven weeks, he was restored to wonted health. He arose from his bed a healthy, strong, in short, a new man. Becoming convalescent, he returned home, and afterwards requested his physician's bill, which he supposed could not be less than £10. It was sent, but receipted. The only eulogium we pass upon this disinterested act of generosity—which is but one out of many—is merely to mention the fact. Where known, the mention of Dr. Parker's name is his panegyric."

To "The Last Martyrs of Eromanga" my father contributed this letter, which I incorporate here as an example of his more serious style of writing:

"HALIFAX, April 6th, 1863.

"MY DEAR SIR,—

"In accordance with your request I have much pleasure in communicating to you some facts and reminiscences relative to your deceased brother, my friend and former student, the Rev. G. N. Gordon.

"My acquaintance with him commenced in the Spring of 1853, when I was called upon to attend him professionally through a very serious and protracted illness. His health had been impaired by close mental application, and a daily attendance on several classes at College throughout the session. Besides which, I have reason to believe that much of the time usually taken by students for exercise and recreation, was spent in visiting the spiritually destitute of our city and its environs. From these combined causes his system was depressed, and fitted for the reception of disease, which attacked him in the form of typhoid fever. So tenacious was its grasp of his weakened frame, that he was confined to his bed and the house for seven weeks; and for many days his life was in imminent danger. But, finally, it pleased the Great Physician gradually to restore him to health and usefulness.

"God's dealings with those who love and serve Him are fre-

quently, to the finite mind, most marvellous. Here was one of His faithful followers laid low, and placed on the verge of the grave; yet raised up again by His strong arm to labor for a brief period in His Vineyard, and then to die a martyr's death far from the home of his childhood, and youth, and relatives, and friends to whom he was endeared.

"He lived to originate the Halifax City Mission, and to labor, I am aware from personal knowledge, as few men know how to labor, among the poor, the distressed, and the profligate, as its first missionary. He has passed away, but this child of his affection and prayers still lives, and is fostered and cared for by Him who has called the laborer home.

"My next meeting with Mr. Gordon after we had parted as physician and patient—if my memory serves me—was *in his closet*. Having had occasion to visit the house in which he lodged, and not being aware that he resided there, I was, by mistake, shown into the room which he occupied. He was on his knees, at mid-day, absorbed in prayer, no doubt carrying to a throne of grace the subject of missions, and especially that one for which he was then, or very shortly afterward, earnestly and successfully laboring.

"Having subsequently offered himself to the Presbyterian Church of this Province, as a Foreign Missionary, and being accepted, he desired to acquire some knowledge of medicine before leaving a Christian for a heathen land, and consequently sought admission to my office as a student. He was thus occupied, when not absent from the city—if I mistake not—from the closing months of 1853, until the period of his departure from Nova Scotia. Being well aware of the advantages likely to accrue to the mission by being skilled in the healing art, he assiduously devoted his spare hours to professional study. It was evident, however, from the beginning to the end of his attendance that the *salvation of the souls of men*, was the primary object and moving principle of his life. No opportunity was lost of preaching Christ, or of giving a word of admonition to those with whom he came in contact. Being 'instant in season and out of season,' he thus, indirectly, by his continued faithfulness, admonished me of my own shortcomings in these important particulars. The title—*The Earnest Man*—given to the Burman missionary, Judson, might appropriately be repeated and applied to Gordon of Eromanga. No one could have known my deceased friend without esteeming him for his many estimable qualities.

"His memory still lives fresh in the hearts of those who were familiar with his character and life, as also with many of those who profited by his spiritual advice and scriptural teachings. 'He being dead yet speaketh.'

"Ever yours truly,

"D. McN. PARKER."

CHAPTER V.

THE AMERICAN TOUR OF 1861.

"*Qui mores hominum multorum vidit.*"
—*Horace, "Ars Poetica."*

In the first months of 1861 nature was threatening to exact some penalty for the disregard of natural laws in a mode of life which crowded two or three normal days' labor into one, ignored anything like regularity in hours for taking nourishment and sleep, and over-crowded an always active mind with more of effort and anxious responsibilities than ought to be borne by any one man. He began to suffer from a tendency to vertigo, derangement of digestion, a nervous exhaustion and an inability to sleep. In a word, he was upon the brink of physical collapse. Such a catastrophe was avoided and healthful vigor restored to body and mind by a brief southern tour, taken at that season of the year when most people hardly feel like resenting Tom Moore's lines about "chill Nova Scotia's unpromising strand."

My father had long cherished the hope that some day he might visit the home land of his grandfather McNeill, find out some of his mother's cousins there, and make her and himself known to them. An old friend of his boyhood who has been named at an early page of this story, Mr. William J. Stairs, agreed to accompany him, on a similar quest for recreation and for kinsmen too,—for he had relatives in Georgia. Both were keenly interested in the extraordinary state of public affairs then prevalent in the United States, and anxious to study for themselves something of that tense strain of the political situation which, as it turned out, they were to see snap the bond of the country's constitution, and blaze into civil war before their very eyes. Mr. Stairs took with him his son, the late John F. Stairs, then a lad of about fourteen years. They sailed from Halifax to Boston on March 23rd, in the Cunard steamer "Canada," arrived from England, and returned in the month of May.

The story of this tour, or rather my father's part in it, is related in the following series of letters, which are presented as fully as possible. They are good examples of his qualities as a letter writer. When abroad, it was his habit to inform himself well concerning what he saw, and of all matters of human interest, political, industrial, social and religious, in the communities which

he visited. He had the enquiring mind, eager to enlarge his knowledge of men and things. What he learned, it seemed to be a labor of love to impart in his home correspondence for the benefit of his wife, children and others. To this end he took infinite pains. More directly, too, do his letters disclose that deep, tender affection for those at home, and home itself, which was so characteristic of him.

REVERE HOUSE, BOSTON,

11 p.m., Monday, March 25th, 1861.

My Dearest Wife:

I arrived here on Sunday night about midnight, but did not land until 8 a.m. this morning. . . . I took some dinner near Sambro, but before the lighthouse was fairly past I was in my cabin on the broad of my back. I could not pay Miss Archibald any attention on the passage. Indeed, I left the ship without saying good-bye to her, but to-night received a note from her asking me to take charge of her to New York, which I shall do with much pleasure, especially as we have determined to go on by the early train to-morrow, the one by which she wishes to go. . . . Thank God for bringing me thus safely on. I am better in health, partook of a hearty dinner, and have just topped off with an oyster supper preparatory to going to bed. To-day we visited Ben Gray, some of Stairs' mercantile friends, Mrs. King, a sister of old Mr. Stairs at Roxbury, the Pryors at Cambridge, Mrs. Charles Boggs and husband, the latter a son of Sam Boggs, who married, as you are aware, Mary Keiffe, an old servant of Mrs. Stairs, and when at their boarding-house saw also William Fairbanks' son, who was in partnership with a young Greenwood, in Charman's Buildings. . . . The greatest sight seen here was Rarey's horse-taming. We went by Mr. Laurie's advice to hear and see, and were delighted and much instructed. It was one of the greatest treats I ever had. I would not have missed it for anything. Thousands were present, and he most thoroughly tamed two or three wild and vicious animals, making them like fed lambs. He had on the stage, following him about like a dog, the celebrated horse "Cruiser," from England, as tame as any lady's lap-dog. I have telegraphed to Frank to meet us to-morrow afternoon at the Fifth Avenue Hotel, New York. We will only spend a day or two there before pushing on south. I sincerely trust our dear children are well. I miss their prattle and the pleasant smile and cooing of the dear babe. I shall expect to hear all about them from you in a day or two. I am in hopes the dear little fellow will escape whooping-cough. Tell Johnston and Mary Ann that Papa does not forget to pray for them that they may be good, obedient children. I hope all at Belle Vue, the Mount, the

Binneys, at the cottages in Dartmouth, the Tuppers, the Nuttings, etc., are well. Love to all. Stairs and his boy Johnnie are delightful travelling companions. God bless and preserve you, my dear wife.

Ever your afft. husband,

D. McN. PARKER.

5TH AVENUE HOTEL, NEW YORK,
March 27th, 1861.

My Dear Wife:

Although the mail does not close for a week by the steamer, I will drop you a few lines from the great city, and finish the letter in Philadelphia. I wrote you from Boston by Mr. Seeton, who leaves to-morrow and will, I hope, be in Halifax Saturday night. I hurriedly narrated passing events up to Monday night, and now resume the subject. We left Boston by the 8.30 a.m. train and with Miss Archibald, and Mr. Samuel Story, formerly of Halifax, journeyed on over a rough, undulating and apparently barren country until 5 p.m., when New York was reached. Archibald met his daughter at the depot, and relieved us of our charge, whom we have not seen since, but hope to have that pleasure to-morrow. Mr. A. has been very kind indeed, has given us all the protective documents necessary to carry us safely through the South, with the Consular Seal attached, so we hope to return uncropped, uncottoned and untarred. He has besides given me a letter of introduction to his friend Mr. Bunck, the British Consul at Charleston, S.C., the gentleman who a few years since was on a visit to Sir George Seymour at Admiralty House, and the same person who was so highly complimented by Lord John Russell in Parliament the other day for his firm and judicious conduct during the recent Southern difficulties.

On our way down from Boston I had a long talk with Story, relative to many Halifax people who have gone to the bad. He knows them all, and being in good circumstances, with a salary of £1,000 per annum, has (as I am aware from other sources) been kind to many of them in distress. . . . How true is the saying, my dearest wife, that one half the world does not know how the other half live, or what that unfortunate half has to endure, and how grateful we should be to God that He has so bountifully provided for the temporal wants of ourselves and of our dear friends. Truly "the lines have fallen to us in pleasant places." . . . I telegraphed from Boston to Frank to meet us at our hotel, and found him on hand looking fat as a seal and in good spirits. He dined with us and then walked down to our old and familiar residence, the "St. Nicholas," into which we walked,

looked round and rested, for the sake of Auld Lang Syne. Then we took Stairs into Taylor's to show him the grandeur of the place. You will recollect the saloon well. We all took dinner there when passing on to Boston from Philadelphia.

The Fifth Avenue Hotel is immense, gorgeous and comfortable. It is a marble structure, far surpassing any hotel in the world for size, comfort and luxury. There are now only 600 guests, times being dreadfully dull in consequence of the Southern difficulties. Its capacity is 1,000. The apartments occupied by the Prince of Wales are finely situated and very elegant. Fortunately, Stairs and myself have apartments without going up even a single pair of stairs. Had we been unfortunate enough to have rooms allotted to us high up, we would have been carried up and let down by a vertical railway, and thus the fatigue that you and I had to undergo at the St. Nicholas would have been avoided. It is one of the oddest things in the world to see the old women in hoops stowed away in the carriage and hoisted up and down like so many packages of goods, or baggage.

I have been to-day engaged in looking round as much as the incessant rain will allow, and transacting what business I had on hand. To-morrow I must call and see Mrs. and Miss Archibald, and return the visits of the Medical fraternity, who have kindly called on me. Several of the great guns, and among them Professor Parker, the great surgeon of the city, left their cards to-day in my absence.

The dull day, and not feeling quite so brisk as I could wish, make me long for the home circle and the prattling of the dear bairns, with the cooing of the "Wee'un." When at home, and at work morning, noon and night, I was too busy to think very much of them, but now that I have leisure I miss them dreadfully. . . . Mr. Le Meissurier, of the Commissariat, who came on from Halifax with us, has just called up from the St. Nicholas, where he stays, to tell us that an English gentleman who came out in the "Canada," called Dacres, had died a few minutes before at that hotel, most suddenly, from apoplexy. He was alone in a strange land. I recollect hearing him say, just as we were passing Boston Light, that he would give a hundred guineas if instead of going into Boston, we were entering Southampton harbor. Poor fellow, his case illustrates the truth, "in the midst of life we are in death." He was a fine, strong, handsome man, about forty-five years of age.

Staying at the Fifth Avenue Hotel just now are Sir Dominick Daly, and his son who married Kenny's daughter. . . . Sir Dominick is here on business, and his son will probably go down to Halifax by the steamer which takes this letter.

PHILADELPHIA, Saturday.—Before leaving New York I called to see Mrs. and the Misses Archibald, having on Thursday received an invitation to spend the evening there. We did not accept it because we wanted to be free and both of us were fatigued. Mrs. Archibald and the daughter who came on in the "Canada" with us were out. We, however, saw the other two girls and Mr. A., and when we return we have promised to call again and see my old patient, who is now enjoying excellent health, I mean Mrs. A., who when in Halifax was constantly in the doctor's hands. I was to have left for this city yesterday at 10 a.m., but the Medical men and Surgeons of the hospitals sent me word that there was to be a great operation at the New York Hospital at half-past one o'clock by Dr. Buck, and I was prevailed upon to remain until 3 p.m., and saw the operation, which was hurried so as to let me catch the train. It was on a boy of twelve years of age, and if he lived two hours after I left I should be surprised. Dr. Buck did not finish the operation for fear he should die on the table. Such, dear wife, is life among the Surgeons now, in great cities—death at almost every step they take in these great hospitals. We reached here at 8 p.m., and are staying at the Continental Hotel, built and occupied for the first time last year. The Prince of Wales had apartments in it. It is owned by Paran Stevens of the Revere House, also the proprietor of the Fifth Avenue Hotel of New York. I am now going to Gerard College, Claremont Waterworks and other places visited by us some six years ago, and shall call and see your cousin James and the Rev. Mr. Smith, the Baptist minister who remained a night with us on his way to the Holy Land three years ago.

SATURDAY EVENING—We, this morning, called on Mr. John Stairs, who is here in partnership with his brother-in-law, Mr. Kennedy, in the fish business. He is doing well. He is a son of Captain Stairs, long since dead. After this we went over the same ground as you and I with the Wilmots and the girls, visited in 1854, with the exception of the Laurel Hill cemetery up the Schuylkill River. . . . After dinner I had a long search for your cousin James, but could not find him. He has recently failed, and only yesterday moved out of the house to which Charles' letter was addressed. A neighbor living next door and keeping a small shop, appeared to take an interest in him and volunteered to hunt him up, and send him to the Continental; and he kept his promise, for James has just left me. After I came up to my room to retire for the night, his name was announced, and he walked in. Poor fellow, he looks careworn and thin, and if one is to judge from appearances and apparel, his finances must be low. He says his partner has deceived and cheated him, and he fears that the money his mother put into

the business will go. . . . Altogether, his business matters are in a sad condition. . . . Mrs. Darst, his sister, is keeping a better class boarding-house. I have promised to call and see her. James is staying at present with his mother, while his wife is at her father's in this city, and his children are scattered about. In passing Chestnut Street to-day, whom should I pounce upon but your cousin Fanny Matthewson and her husband. They have been South for his health, which is much impaired, and in about three weeks they will return to Montreal. She tells me that he fears he will not be able to continue to live in Canada. . . . After my fruitless search for James Black, I went and hunted up the residence of Rev. James Hyatt Smith, who appears to be a well known man of mark here. He was out, but I saw his wife. We go to hear him preach in the morning, and have made up our minds to attend "Quaker's Meeting" in the afternoon, as we are in a land and city of Quakers.

In Boston we left nearly a foot of snow on the ground, and brought it on with us nearly to New York, where we said good-bye to it gladly. The weather is now delightful in Philadelphia. . . . What a change from Nova Scotia! It really appears selfish that I should be so situated while my better half is freezing in cold and inhospitable Nova Scotia.

MONDAY MORNING, 7 a.m. I went to Mr. J. Hyatt Smith's meeting-house yesterday morning, visited the Sunday-school, and just before the service commenced the pastor came forward from the midst of the children and asked if I was the person who left the card for him the night previous. I said I was. "Well," says he, "My wife was so confused when you spoke to her about meeting me abroad, as she was engaged packing up for moving into another house, that she forgot to tell you I had never been abroad." He added, "The Mr. Smith you are in search of is a Smith of another loaf, and his name is J. Wheaton Smith." You can imagine how annoyed I was at being led into such a wild-goose chase. I apologized for leaving, and told him I was most anxious to see the Wheaton loaf, and, unless I took that opportunity, would miss him altogether. So I got into a cab with Stairs and Johnnie, and reached the other house, two miles distant, in time to examine the basement arrangements for Sabbath-school and prayer-meeting, before the service commenced. The church is large, 450 members, and the congregation rich. Mr. Smith was in the pulpit for the first time for four weeks, having been laid up at home with a mild attack of smallpox. The arrangements of the interior correspond with the exterior appearance of the building. It is beautifully neat, and a large church. Pulpit arrangements just like ours at Granville Street, and a magnificent organ and

splendid singing. The pastor looked pale, but he preached, although weak in body, a beautiful sermon from the text, "What shall I do to obtain everlasting life," etc. It went to my heart, was powerful, touching, and eloquent. Some beautiful, practical sentiments pervaded the discourse, and I felt several times that it was hard work to keep from weeping. He wields a power that goes home to the emotional part of man. At its close I stepped up to him. He knew my face but not my name. When I told him who I was he was delighted to see me, wanted to take me to his house, where he said he had three or four spare rooms and a horse and carriage at my disposal; and he added in his quiet Yankee style, "I will put you through Philadelphia thoroughly and in good shape." I declined his offer, however, telling him that Stairs and I were going South this morning. Dined at two p.m., then went to Mrs. Darst's, saw her, her mother, little boy, and James with one of his little children. Spent an hour there. They appear comfortable. . . . Mrs. D. looks as she did when in Halifax. The old lady I never saw before. . . . Mrs. Taylor looks old, but not so much so as I expected to see her. Foster married her niece, as you are aware.

There being no service in the afternoon, in the principal places of worship, I remained at home until 7 p.m. and then went to Quaker's meeting. It was indeed a Quaker's meeting. No prayer, no praise, no Christ,—except a few observations from a person belonging to another sect. This large building was one of the Hickite sect, very large here. The orthodox Quaker believes in Christ's divinity. The Hickites do not, and look upon Him only as being a good man. Hence no allusion to Him by the only Quaker who spoke. It took the Spirit an immense time to move him, and when he rose he sang his words to a kind of tune familiar to all their speakers. They all sing rather than speak. It was dead—the dry bones of the valley remained dry. It was an hour lost to me and all present. I felt inclined often to rise and speak or pray with them, and, as I afterwards learned, might have spoken. Prayer in public is not known to them. It was really laughable to hear the old, tall, dried-up Quaker singing out an exhortation: "Be livelier, friends, be stirred up," etc. They were pretty much the same as you are when I try to wake you up in the mornings. It would take an earthquake to stir them up and make them "lively." One Quaker in Philadelphia has been known to run "lively," and that was when the spirit stirred up a fire in his neighborhood, but he stopped before he got half a block on his way. Yet I am a descendant of these same people. I fear that they would look upon me as a fast descendant.

Matthewson and his wife are going fifty or sixty miles south

with us this morning. Mr. M. has asked the Rev. Dr. Jenkins, Mary Lawson's old friend, of Montreal, now resident here, to take us through the United States Mint this morning, after which we are away. . . . My health is now very good, except an occasional fullness of the head. I am able to eat, drink, and sleep, the latter not so well as I could wish. On the whole, I am thankful to add I am much better than I was when I left, and can now undergo a good deal of physical exertion without feeling it, or having my breathing affected. I want to get South and remain a while in one locality. Relaxation is everything. I must try and work less if it pleases God to return me to my own dear home again. I miss you all very much—how much I cannot tell you. I am most anxious for letters, but as yet cannot get them. Frank will send them on to our hotel in Savannah as soon as they reach him, and we will not hear from you before Saturday, perhaps not then. The change in hotel life since you and I were here together is somewhat marked in one particular. You will recollect how much wine was drunk at dinner in those days. Now it is the exception rather than the rule. Very few take it. Cold water is the rage. I would like to drink bitter ale, but it is so awfully expensive I cannot indulge. Just fancy ale 4s. a bottle, and it is the cheapest drink one can get. Chewing tobacco is not so fashionable either as it was in our day, although every provision is made for it, and right under my nose in my room where I now write is a large spittoon inviting me.

The political question of the day is not much talked of by strangers—everything is in doubt. What the future is to reveal is no more known by the residents than ourselves. If you ask a man about it, if he is a Democrat he will at once say that the question is settled and the Secession is past and gone, never to be redeemed, or at all events it will be years before the seceding States return. While a Republican would tell you that the South must be whipped into obedience and brought back with a chain around its neck. Of course these are the extreme views, and we have no opportunity of learning much that is accurate, from speaking to a few persons in the hotels. My own impression, however, is that the South is irretrievably gone, and that they are at this moment, and will be forever, two distinct nations, and it is much better for all that it should be so. When in the South, or Slave States, as I shall be in a few hours, I shall be able to look at the question from another point of view, and study the "divine institution," as the clergymen there call it, practically.

I must now close this long epistle, my dear wife. Tell the dear children that Papa constantly prays to God that they may be good and obedient and preserved in life until we are permitted to meet again. I hope Johnston is a good boy. Give them all

kisses from Papa. I long to hear the babe. I only wish I could have the little fellow in my solitary bed for an hour every morning. God bless and preserve you, my dear wife.

Ever your afft. husband,

D. McN. PARKER.

WASHINGTON, Apr. 3, 1861.

My Dear Wife:

By the steamer which leaves Boston to-day you will get a long epistle, giving you a hurried outline of our movements up to the morning of the 1st inst. After breakfast Mr. Matthewson, with his friend, Rev. Dr. Jenkins, formerly a Methodist minister in Montreal, but now a Presbyterian, accompanied us to the U. S. Mint, which we saw in all its departments and arrangements. Copper, silver and gold were being manufactured into coin from the raw material by thousands of dollars, by machinery the most beautiful and perfect that I have ever seen in operation. The mechanical part in its highest and most important departments is conducted by men, while the less skilled and easier performed part of the work is accomplished by a whole herd of women and girls, all receiving at least a dollar a day. I wish that you and your sisters had been taken through it when we were all here together. . . . We then visited Dr. Jenkins' church, where we saw the most complete arrangement for lectures, prayer-meeting, Sabbath-school and Bible-class that one could well conceive. . . .

We, in company with Matthewson and his wife, left for the South in a mid-day train. They accompanied us only as far as New Ash, in the State of Delaware, where Mr. M. has a cousin married to a wealthy man, and they were going down to pay them a hurried visit. Shortly after they left us, we crossed the border of Maryland, and entered the first slave State. At 4 p.m. we reached Baltimore and dined, after which necessary operation we took a walk, although it was dull and rainy. Baltimore is a city of two hundred or two hundred and fifty thousand inhabitants, and is well arranged, has fine, substantial public and private buildings; but what is to be its most attractive feature shortly is a most magnificent park situated about two miles from the centre of the city. This, ever since the country has been settled, belonged, until quite recently, to a family called Rogers, and by them was sold to the city. The trees are almost as old as the hills, and some of them immense. Stairs and I tried to surround one in a tender embrace, both of us encircling its delicate waist with our arms together, but we failed by a long distance to make our hands meet, and this was a common size. This park is about five hundred acres in extent, and the roads for carriages that are now being

made will be, I daresay, twenty miles in extent. . . . It will be one of the finest and most interesting places in all America. We walked in it for a couple of hours, and then returned to the city by a horse railway (with which Baltimore, Philadelphia, New York and Boston are now completely intersected) and then mounted to the top of a beautiful monument erected to Washington by the State of Maryland. It is of white marble, one hundred and eighty feet in height, which we gained with lamps in our hands, after mounting a spiral stone stairway by a dark passage containing between two hundred and three hundred steps. It made my breath short and my head dizzy before I reached the summit. The view was beautiful, commanding, as it did, the whole city and country for miles around, and far out into the Delaware Bay.

The Peabody Institute, a white marble building, to cost when completed one million dollars, was the last object of interest seen in Baltimore. It is intended for a Public Library and Lecture-room, a kind of scientific institution for the benefit of the people of Baltimore. Peabody is a Liverpool, England, merchant, but has large business relations with the place of his early days, Baltimore, and has from his immense fortune set aside this sum for this benevolent and judicious object. It will take some time to complete the structure, but the work is going rapidly on. The public buildings of all the States we have passed through are fine, even magnificent, built of freestone, granite and marble, but they all pale and sink into insignificance when contrasted with those of Washington, which we have yet to see in their interior. We walked around and about them yesterday afternoon and evening, and view them internally in detail to-day. What strikes a stranger in this country, especially one who has travelled in England, is the ease with which all kinds and descriptions of persons can obtain access to all the public buildings and departments of the country. They belong to "the sovereign people," and certainly the people take advantage of their opportunities in this respect. Just fancy for a moment all the grounds in and around Buckingham Palace, or to descend from great things to small, around the Government House in Halifax, being open at all hours to the men, women and children, and the whole Union, as well as to strangers. Stairs and I walked round the White House yesterday. Our national unobtrusiveness kept us from entering the grounds, yet there were men, women and children on the walks, romping over the grass and even taking liberties with the trees, a thing I would not permit even on my estate of "Beechwood," rough and uncultivated though it is. Such, however, is the genius of the people, and the freedom and openness of their institutions.

The hotels, as we go south, gradually fade and become less elegant, the class of loungers at the doors and offices becomes more rough and ungentlemanly in appearance, and there is just now a look of suspicion, and a desire expressed in their looks to know all about you, who you are and what your business is, that you do not observe in the Northern States. The hotels are immense in size, and the same system is adopted as in the North, in reference to general management. We generally get rooms adjoining, and for the most part sit and read and write in our bedrooms, as the noise and apparent inquisitiveness in the gentlemen's sitting-rooms are far from agreeable to quiet old fogies like your husband and his travelling companion. Besides, were we to write downstairs in their midst, the probability is that we should have a dark, long-bearded Southerner looking over our shoulders to see whether or not we were correspondents of Northern newspapers. Last night, to avoid the noise and society of the gents below, we ventured into the ladies' drawing-room and, it being a free country, made ourselves at home; when who should walk in but my old friend Kellogg, the temperance lecturer, who in days gone by so often visited Halifax with good results to many poor unfortunate drunkards. . . . He did not know me, but I knew him, and walked up to the man and said: "How do you do, Mr. Kellogg?" "How do you do, sir," he replied, "I cannot call you by name." I then told him who I was, and you never saw a man more pleased. Nothing would do but we must start off at once for a mile's walk, although it was bed-time, to see his wife and have a chat about Halifax and Halifax people. . . . Kellogg has turned his temperance to political effect. About seven years ago he moved out west to Michigan, and they have now sent him for two terms from that State to Congress as their representative. Congress is not now in session. I am sorry for it, as we should have heard their great guns fire in these days of excitement and warring words. They closed their sitting two weeks ago. Kellogg is only remaining here, as he says, turning out the Democrats and putting in their Republican successors for his State.

It is almost impossible for us to glean anything definite as to the future of this portion of the continent, politically speaking. In fact, we find it judicious to say little ourselves, and when we do converse with men of both sides, we arrive at the conclusion that we know as much about their difficulties and their future as they do themselves. Every man speaks as he feels, and his conclusions are based on his political feelings. With their press it is the same. The Government, as far as I can learn, is undecided and wavering in its policy. The two Confederacies, as they now stand, remind me of two schoolboys who are urged on to fight by their companions. "One's afraid and t'other daresn't"; or like two dogs

in the street, pretty well matched as to size, they growl, show their teeth, and in this hostile attitude, each eyeing the other, they back away to a respectful distance, and then, with their tails between their legs, give each other leg-bail—both delighted to get out of the scrape without fighting. Well, I think that is pretty much the state of things here. It is pretty certain that the old Union cannot continue, and that the seceding States will not return.

You cannot tell how thankful I am that I belong to a monarchical government, and can call the free institutions of old England mine. Here there is no freedom. Rome, in its worst days, never coerced freedom of thought and expression as does that part of creation in which we now travel. But I must stop politics for the present and go sight-seeing, as Stairs is waiting for me. I only hope when I get your letters at Savannah, that they and the accompanying newspapers will bring me cheering news of home politics and of a dissolution.

4 o'clock p.m.—Well, my dear Fanny, “we’ve gone and went and done it”—that is, the sights. Our legs are weary and our brains muddled with the mixture of everything that is grand, massive, and elegant in the structures we have this day seen. While their political institutions are shaking and crumbling, the marble, the granite and freestone structures that they have reared are of a character to stand hundreds of years. They have been erected and internally constructed, not for the United States as they now are, but for the United States centuries hence. The progressive growth of a mighty nation was considered as the architect planned them. But alas for the plans of man and of nations! He and they may propose, but God disposes; and it is not unlikely that the United States of America ere long may have to move their seat of government further north, while those great and magnificent structures may fall into the possession of a Southern people unworthy of them. To give you even the faintest idea of these public buildings, either in the general or in detail, would require a volume. They remind one of the palmy days of Greece and Rome, both as regards their extent, appearance and style of architecture. The Capitol alone covers with its massive masonry between five and six acres of ground. . . . Nothing in the world can compare with this building of white marble, at least nothing in England, or anything I have seen or read of; and all foreigners go away with this same impression. The White House is large, and also of white marble. We only saw three or four rooms in it. As the President was engaged and could not spare the time to-day to come out and shake hands with the sovereign people, we missed seeing him. However, he is not much to look at, if one may judge from his portraits, and I daresay his present feelings will make his physiognomy look still less attractive

than when in the first days of his presidential glories his phiz was taken by the thousands.

The Treasury, the Patent Office, and the Smithsonian Institution have all been viewed and examined, very briefly, of course, as also the magnificent Post Office. It would take a week to examine the Patent Office alone—I might almost add a month, if I were of a mechanical turn; but I think I could do it up, as the Yankees say, satisfactorily in one week. I have yet to visit the Washington Asylum for the Insane, which is the model, architecturally, not medically, of our own at Dartmouth. I expect to meet Miss Dix there. It is three miles out of the city, and after dinner I shall drive there. To-morrow we start for Richmond, Virginia, sailing down the Potomac River thirty miles or more in a steamer, taking in our route Mount Vernon and the tomb of Washington. We shall only be able to get a passing view of the Mount, his place of residence and death, as we must hurry on to the South and get out of it again before the weather gets too warm. To-day the sun has been warm and the air delicious. Here the grass is all green, the foliage coming out, and many trees and plants are in blossom. What a change from our cold, damp spring in Nova Scotia! Would that you and the dear children were all here to enjoy it with me! It would add a thousand-fold to the pleasure of my journey and sight-seeing. After passing through Richmond and spending a day there, we go on to Wilmington, North Carolina, from thence to Charleston, S.C., and finally bring up at Savannah, Ga., about the first of the week, from which place you will, God willing, hear from me again. . . . My health, thank God, is as well as usual. I suffer but little with my head, and sleep well, although the frequent changes in my sleeping apartments do not tend to aid me in this particular. . . . I hope Tupper and Charles may drop me a line.

Ever, my dearest wife, your affectionate husband,

D. McN. PARKER.

SPOTSWOOD HOTEL, RICHMOND, VA.,
April 5th, 1861.

My Dearest Wife:

Here I am in "old Virginny," very comfortably situated at a very comfortable Lotel, with the weather comparatively mild and pleasant, the foliage, and vegetation generally, developing itself more and more each day. The peach and cherry trees are all in blossom, and this adds to the natural beauty of the country as we pass along, at the rate of twenty-five miles per hour, getting a passing but pleasing view and idea of the physical geography of the country. Before going further I must tell you what I neg-

lected to state in my last letter relative to Washington, geographically and politically considered. Virginia and Maryland, but mainly the latter, in order to get the seat of the general government located pretty well south in a slave district, set apart ten square miles and presented this block of land to the United States for general States purposes. Subsequently, Virginia, in consequence of excessive taxation, and no direct advantages accruing to that State, petitioned Congress to give her back her contribution, south of the Potomac River, which request was acceded to. So that the District of Columbia, as this block of land is called, is now situated in the very heart of the slave State, Maryland. Here all the public buildings belonging to the United States government are situated, and when an American speaks of Washington he embraces under the word the District of Columbia. . . . The inhabitants of this District have no votes, and no voice in the general affairs of their nation. The only votes they give are for the municipal offices, such as our mayor and aldermen, and they are only taxed for municipal or city purposes. The nation, out of the general revenues of the country, has built all these magnificent structures referred to in my last letter. The people of Washington have not paid a penny towards them, while as an offset for their disfranchisement they have received all the benefits that such an immense expenditure of millions of dollars in their midst would necessarily bring. Each State in the Union has laws of its own, harmonizing, of course, except at the present juncture, and on the slave question, with the general laws of the Union. This District of Columbia, then, is governed by the laws of the State of Maryland, with which the laws of the municipal corporation or city must harmonize. Now, Maryland being a slave State, slavery can exist in Washington or the District of Columbia, and does to a large extent, although Maryland, as a whole, does not contain, I believe, more than 84,000 slaves, in fact has the smallest amount of human property of any of the slave States. The geographical position of Washington, in the very heart of one slave State, and bounded on the south by another, Virginia, is likely to be, under the existing state of political affairs, a very grave question. The people of Maryland and Virginia, I think, have pretty well concluded to join the Southern Confederacy, and as a gentleman of this city, highly educated and influential, told me yesterday, the South must and will have Washington as their seat of government. At the same time, he stated that they wanted it only after paying their fair proportion of the expenditure and the money the structures now used by the general government cost. This is one of the gravest and most knotty points they have to settle; and to use the words of my friend, it is not improbable that this one question may involve the country in war and bloodshed. The North, of course, will not care to yield up the

millions upon millions that they have expended from that section of the Union for these great public works, without a struggle,—works that they have always looked upon as the pride of their country and as indicative of their country's greatness and power, leaving out of the question their magnificence and grandeur as works of art.

Before passing to my journey from Washington to this place I will just inform you that in this capital (Richmond) at present the Legislature is in session, and there is also in session what is termed a State Convention, composed of men from all sections of the State. They are now debating the momentous question of the day. The general feeling of the State, from all I can learn, is in favor of secession, still being, for the most part, conservative in their views. They do not wish to act hastily or to give other sections of the country the idea that they are acting without due deliberation. A few weeks ago the city was entirely for Union, but a very significant fact occurred the day before yesterday which conveys an idea of the change that is taking place throughout the State. A Secession and a Union man ran for the office of Mayor of the city. The former beat his opponent by over 1,200 majority. This revulsion of feeling has taken place within a few weeks. The United States Government were prevented from removing guns that they had contracted for with an iron foundry company in Richmond, and the Legislature purchased them from the contractors for State purposes. Besides, Virginia is now refitting at its own expense military positions formerly occupied by United States troops; and within a gunshot from where I am writing they are fitting up an armory and a large foundry for the manufacture of cannon and small arms,—which localities are garrisoned by Virginia militia. The State is evidently preparing for war, and unless President Lincoln disavows the Republican principles on which he was elected, and the laws on the statute book of many of his Northern States are modified, Virginia will be out of the Union. This he cannot do, and the North will not permit it, if Lincoln was so disposed. So I take it for granted from the signs of the times that "old Virginny" will secede, not in a hurry, but in the end with certainty, and, she being the keystone of the arch, as she moves, so will Maryland, Kentucky, and Tennessee and North Carolina. These being added to those States now composing the Southern Confederacy, will make such a powerful nation that the North will be helpless to regain them by conquest. I find a large number of the Democratic party of the Northern States entirely sympathize with the South. Their business was largely with Southern men, their pockets have been touched, and they feel, and express themselves in the strongest terms, in favor of the Southern movement and in hostility to Lincoln. The very general Demo-

cratic feeling in the North renders Lincoln's administration powerless to reconquer by arms the seceding States. My impression is, it will be better for both parties, the country, other countries, and for humanity that a peaceful resignation of the Southern States should be made by the North, and I only hope and pray that this may be the finale of the matter.

You must excuse me, my dear wife, for writing and boring you so much at length about United States politics, but I know your father and others will like to hear from the seat of war what is going on in these troublous and eventful times.

Stairs, Johnnie and I started from Washington yesterday, April 4, at 6 a.m., embarked on board a large steamer, and sailed down the Potomac River 50 miles to Aquia Creek, where we took the train for Richmond. The Potomac is a beautiful, broad river, with fine bold scenery on both its shores. . . . We saw, as we passed along, Washington's house and tomb at Mount Vernon. It would have been pleasant could we have landed for half an hour or more. Our journey terminated for the day at this place between 2 and 3 o'clock. When paying my fare on board the steamer I heard one of the passengers say he was from North Carolina. I asked him if he knew anything of Fayetteville (where my grandfather McNeill came from). He said he did not, but that there was a gentleman on board from the very place, and he introduced me to him. I find that the McNeills at Fayetteville and in its neighborhood are as thick as blueberries, and, as he expressed it, "they are all fine, responsible people." I learned from him how I was to reach the place, and to-morrow morning we start for Raleigh, the capital of the State, and then travel 60 miles through the country by stage coach to Fayetteville, from which place we take steamer down a river to Wilmington, and thence go south to Charleston and Savannah. This will, of course, delay our progress to the most southern part of our journey, but we are pretty certain to reach Savannah during next week, when we hope to receive the much-thought-of and longed-for letters from home.

Immediately after dining we sauntered out yesterday to look at the place and the lions. The Capitol, or place where the Legislature meets, is old and unworthy of remark. One of the senators, or Lords, who had bolted his dinner and returned to the Senate room before his colleagues, was stretched out on a sofa asleep, with his boots off, his heels in the air, his head shaggy and uncombed,—altogether the most perfect parody on "otium cum dignitate," as the Latin has it, that I have ever witnessed. Just fancy the old gentleman, the Hon. W. A. Black, M.L.C., stretched off in that style!

The centre of attraction for both ladies and gentlemen appeared

to be the Mechanics' Institute, where the State Convention already referred to was in session. Thither we bent our steps and heard a few short, spicy speeches from some very old and some very young men. The Lincoln government appeared to be the target and the Union got heavy blows. One old grey-headed man, apparently a Union man, went into it strong. I lost the sense, owing to the noise, but could hear such expressions as "the gates of hell" and "the husband of the devil" coming from the old fellow's lips. I came away impressed with the belief that they wanted leading minds to direct them, and dignity of demeanor and language, to carry weight and influence with their deliberations. Our Legislature, bad as it is (don't wound the feelings of Mr. Johnston and Tupper by repeating in their presence the foregoing words), would impress a stranger, especially an Englishman, most favorably, when contrasted with the deliberative body under consideration.

In front of the Capitol is a beautiful monument erected to Washington, Jefferson, Patrick Henry and other great men who took part in the eventful struggle of 1776, men of this State. You will recollect reading in the *Christian Messenger*, a few weeks since, the soul-stirring defence of three Baptist ministers who were on trial here years ago, made by this same Patrick Henry. They were imprisoned and tried "for preaching the gospel of Jesus Christ." Henry's statue is indicative of just such a man, and his broad, high forehead and striking features would at once point him out as a man, not massive in body alone, but in mind—a man with a great and good soul.

Richmond is beautifully situated on hill and dale, with streams of water running through it, and is largely engaged in manufacturing flour, tobacco, iron, cloth, etc., etc. We went through a flour mill which manufactures about 1,400 barrels of flour a day; that is, takes in the wheat, grinds it, barrels it and has it all ready before night to ship; and there are many such mills, all driven by water power from the James River. An immense quantity of tobacco is grown and manufactured in this State. In one of the London docks there are warehouses covering thirteen acres used for tobacco alone, and the greater part of this is derived from the ports of this State and other United States ports which ship the weed of Virginia. Iron and coal exist in inexhaustible quantity in the mountain districts, and altogether it is one of the richest States in the Union, both in what we would term natural resources and in human beings held as property. The slaves of Virginia amount to about 500,000.

RALEIGH, N.C., April 6th, '61.—We have advanced thus far, having left Richmond at 3 p.m. yesterday and remained all night at a station in the pine forest in this State, near the Roanoke River, called Weldon. We reached Weldon about nine o'clock, and after

dark were constantly reminded of a picture in the *London Illustrated News*—of a black boy with a pine torch stopping the train. You will see it in that paper of some date about February. I was very much amused at one little fellow stopping the train with this bright, glaring flame, the torch being as large as himself, and no place visible. All he wanted to send south was two bags of small live pigs, tied up, kicking and squealing as they joined us. Whenever these torches appear on the line the train must stop, for they frequently appear to warn of danger. We wandered about Weldon, the banks of the Roanoke, and under the tall pine trees, talking to “niggers,” as they are here designated, about rattlesnakes, fishing, planting, etc., and in this way passed two or three hours pleasantly until the arrival of the Northern train, which we joined, and left again at this place. Raleigh is a small place, the capital of North Carolina. It has a fine Capitol, or building corresponding to our Province Building, an asylum for the insane, and an institution for the deaf, dumb, and blind, combined under one roof. As we walked through the latter this afternoon I unexpectedly pitched upon a document containing my name, viz., the report of the Deaf and Dumb Institution at Halifax. Mr. Hutton had forwarded it to Mr. Palmer, the principal of this Institution. This, of course, was a kind of bond of friendship, and we became communicative. He is a Baptist, and nothing would do but we must go and examine a beautiful church structure erected here by our denomination, and only recently opened. We were much pleased with its internal beauty and arrangement.

. . . The basement of this chapel is not only for Sunday-school teaching, but in the afternoon it is used as a place of worship for the black Baptists. The everlasting Divine Institution extends even into the house of God. There, as in the outer world, the white man is separated from his darker brother. In Heaven, however, the skin will not by its color draw a line of demarkation between brethren in Christ. All denominations err alike in this particular. I find this tender ground to touch on, even with my brethren in the Church, with whom I am in the habit of speaking pretty plainly on all subjects. But here it is well to be guarded. So I merely glean facts, for information's sake, draw my own conclusions, keep up an everlasting thinking and say but little. I find here, as in Virginia, the popular voice is for secession. Nearly every man we meet broaches the subject to us, as Englishmen, and talks freely. Within the last two days we have conversed with many men, on railways, by the wayside, and at hotels, and not one declared himself for “The Black Republic.” Even as I write, one of the natives is haranguing Stairs on the advantages of secession and the duty of North Carolina in the present crisis. A few days

since some young men here hoisted the Secession Flag, and, being armed with revolvers, surrounded the staff on which it proudly floated, to defend it if it should be attacked. None dare come boldly up from the front, but from a hidden spot a rifle was fired at the flag. The Union man was hunted out from his hiding-place and ran for his life, escaping a dozen shots which were fired at him as he bolted. The crowd saved him. The men who in the capital of North Carolina thus hoisted the rebellious flag were gentlemen, as our informant stated. They kept it flying for an hour and a half after sunset, and then in force walked down to the "Palace" at the foot of the street, where the Governor of the State resides, and with the flag in their hands gave three hearty cheers for his Excellency.

It is strange how one pitches upon friend's friends when far away from home. Just as I had written our names in the hotel book, a gentleman who was examining the book asked if we were from Halifax. We replied in the affirmative, when he asked if we knew Mr. Mulholland and Dr. Donald. I told him I knew them both, and the latter intimately. We were at once on friendly terms, and our new acquaintance, Mr. Agnew, from Belfast, Ireland, many years since, but now a resident of this State and an out-and-out believer in the Divine Institution and Secession, has been most kind and attentive.

Sunday Afternoon.—Early this morning we went to the Baptist Sabbath-school, expecting to see a large collection of children, but the day being a little wet only a few boys came out. The pastor was absent and there was no service. We attended service in the Presbyterian church, but there was only a handful of people out. I thought we of Granville St. church were afraid of storms unnecessarily, but the church-going people of Raleigh are still more "fair-weather Christians" than those of Halifax. It was only a Scotch mist, yet they called it a rain-storm and the parson prayed for those that had been detained at home by the "inclement weather." I wish they could see and feel a snow or rain storm in Nova Scotia in March! It has been altogether a dull day for me. At the Southern hotels there are no rooms for gentlemen who leave their wives at home, and one is compelled to sit in the common sitting-room, where are collected all kinds of men from the city, as well as the guests of the house, and they are talking of nothing but politics and "niggers." To get rid of this, Stairs and I took our umbrellas after a one-o'clock dinner and walked out into the country; and had it not been raining we would have had a pleasant afternoon of it. We struck the pine forest, and taking a path which was before us, followed it for some distance. We did not meet with any snakes except a dead one, which some son of Eve had killed a short time before.

A traveller who loves his home and his own fireside misses those dear to him more on the Sabbath than on any other day; at least, it is so with me, and I would give much just to pop in on you in your quiet, cozy little room upstairs, and take my usual lounge on the sofa, chatting with you and the older bairns, and bearding the poor dear baby. With God's blessing I will in three weeks or a little more be able thus to amuse myself in my very happy home.

Stairs is an exceedingly well-informed man, well read in history and on general topics, and altogether a most agreeable companion. His son is a very nice and, at times, a very amusing boy. It is very evident he has been well brought up. I do not know how I would have got on without them. It would have been terribly dull work to travel all this distance without a companion. I feel now as well as usual, can take exercise freely without fatigue, and my head gives me but little trouble. How grateful to God I should be for His goodness to me, dear wife. I very well know that had I remained at work in Nova Scotia at this trying and inclement season, I should have completely broken down in health. God's goodness to me in furnishing me with the means to seek health abroad should always be remembered with thankfulness. How many professional men are there whose health breaks down under their incessant labors, and who die for want of such relaxation, not being able to afford the expense of going abroad!

In our walk we passed the house of the Baptist minister, Rev. Mr. Skinner, and there saw verbenas growing in the open air. This gentleman is, in a pecuniary point of view, a lucky Baptist parson, for he is worth £25,000, has a large and elegant establishment, and his "nigger fixin's" are the neatest and most comfortable I have seen as yet—that is, the houses for his niggers. All proprietors of slaves have the residences of the latter near them, generally in small houses in the rear and on one or both sides of their own residences.

There is a Judge Alden, of Vermont, staying here for the health of his daughter. He is an abolitionist and Unionist. While chatting before the fire last night, he said he had come to the same conclusion on the secession question that I have, viz., that ere very long Virginia, Tennessee, Maryland and Kentucky would join the South. Personal observation, in mingling with the crowd as we are doing, has fixed this belief unwillingly upon him. He further added that he, for one, would like the Northern States and his own Vermont to go back to England and her free constitution and government. This gentleman is at present a judge of the Supreme Court, and when a man in his position speaks out in this style, you may depend there are many others

who think as he does on this matter. The judge is a friend of Carteret Hill's, having frequently met him in Boston.

Monday morning, April 8.—You will recollect a Mr. Greenwood's panorama of Bunyan's "Pilgrim's Progress" which was exhibited in Halifax a year or two ago. He, his wife and son are staying here just now, and last night, learning that we were from Halifax, he came and introduced himself to us. I recollect his face very well. . . . He asked me if I knew Judge Wilmot, of Fredericton. I told him he was my brother-in-law, and he then stated that he had been trying to immortalize the judge and his gardens, having just delivered a lecture to the Fayetteville people in the Baptist church there, which lecture was largely taken up with Wilmot, his gardens and Chinese lamps, and the two happy occasions when he was permitted there to take part in fêtes given to the Sabbath-school children of Fredericton. He wished to be remembered to the judge and also wanted Allan to know that he was making him known to the Southerners—so that should he come South at any time he will not be likely to be tarred and feathered. . . . I am going with Mr. Palmer to the Asylum for the Insane, having had a most interesting morning with the blind and the deaf and dumb. I leave at 5 o'clock p.m. for Fayetteville.

Ever, dearest wife, with love and kisses to the children, Yours,
D. P.

FAYETTEVILLE, N.C.,
Wednesday, April 10th, 1861.

My Dear Wife:

I left Raleigh shortly after mailing my letter there for you, in the mail coach for this place, in a rain-storm. Stairs and Johnnie remained there until yesterday, and then took a train for Wilmington. Of all the roads I ever travelled, that between Raleigh and this place is the worst. Several times we got our wheels into a deep rut, and the other three inside passengers and a "nigger" on the box, with your husband, would all have to huddle together on the opposite side, and hold on, to keep the coach from toppling over. A lady passenger with us was terribly frightened, as the same driver upset the coach with her in it, in the night, when, a short time before, she was going up to Raleigh. But the last fifteen miles were terrible. In this State some years ago a number of speculators built a plank road on this as on many of the roads, which was a kind of toll road. It proved bad stock, and when the first planks were out or got displaced, for want of dividends they were not renewed, and you can readily imagine the jumping and pitching there would be under such circumstances. A young lady sat opposite me. Some-

times our heads went upward to the roof, sometimes fore and aft, as sailors say, and we found ourselves almost butting, like sheep and goats. For a youngster it would have been grand sport, but for a staid old fellow like myself, half asleep, it was rather unpleasant. So I just pulled my fur cap well down over my eyes, to protect my forehead from the concussion, should it come, and in this way, with feet braced, stood prepared for the repeated shocks. At length daylight came, and with it Fayetteville in the distance, and the long pine forest was left behind. At half-past six a.m. I was deposited at my hotel—rather sore, sleepy and tired. As soon as breakfast was over I commenced an attack on the clan McNeill, but met with nothing but disappointment until about 11 o'clock. Every person I went to turned out to be the wrong man, and many from whom I might have obtained information relative to Captain McNeill's relations were absent on a railway-extension excursion (the opening ceremonies of a new railway). Parson McNeill, Sheriff McNeill, and the President of one of the banks, from whom I expected much, were thus engaged and could not be reached. At length the old inhabitants were thought of. Col. McRae being one of them, I went to him, and he referred me to one David Torrance, an old Scotchman who lived about a mile out of town, who was born some time after the flood and has a reputation of remembering everything that had occurred since that unhappy occasion. I found the old gentleman at home and broached the subject by saying that I was in search of the descendants of a Loyalist officer called McNeill who was a native of North Carolina, but who had settled in Nova Scotia at the close of the war. He looked at me for a moment and promptly replied: "You are a descendant, then, of Dan'l McNeill who came on here on a visit from Nova Scotia in 1809." He then commenced like a 40-horsepower steam engine, beginning with Archie Ban and Janet Ban (Ban meaning, in Scotch, fair or light-complexioned), by which soubriquet Capt. McNeill's parents were known—and he ran on (there was no such thing as stopping him) and gave me the names and the descendants of all my great-uncles, brought them down to the small fry, and I did not know but that he was going into the future, to name generations yet to be born—and there being a partially colored lady present, *his daughter*, I flushed, and boldly came to the charge by saying, with my notebook in hand: "Now sir, to become practical and get at the pith of this matter, give me the names of Daniel McNeill's nearest living relations." He looked posed when he viewed the pencil and book, but at length gave me the names of three or four of my grandfather's nephews and nieces, and informed me that they all lived at McNeill's Ferry, twenty-five miles from this place. Ascertaining that I had been in Edinburgh and knew something of Scotland,

he was about to take up the history of that country from the time the dove of the Ark lighted on Ben Lomond or Ben Nevis, as these intensely Scottish men will almost affirm, when I took up my hat, and with hurried and heartfelt thanks to the old man for the information, soon gave him a parting look at my coat-tails round the corner. In an hour more I was behind a splendid two-horse team, with a nigger driver, on my way to Col. McNeill's, as he is called in these parts. On the road, when about fourteen miles from here, I saw a very old white lady standing at her door, so I pulled up to ask her the nearest way to a plantation owned by the widow of a first cousin of my mother. She told me, and I was about to drive on, when the old lady, guessing I was a stranger, from my appearance and speech, asked me several questions and gleaned from me that I was a descendant of Captain McNeill's. "Oh dear, oh dear—Dan'l McNeill, Dan'l McNeill!" I feared she would go off—or would take on—after the style of my friend Davy Torrance, so I gave the word to go on. The old lady stopped me, and what question do you suppose she asked me? She only wanted to know if I was married! I told her I was, and that I was the happy father of an increasing family, when she said: "I didn't know but what you were going a-courting, for there are some fine gals down there, mighty rich, and Miss McKay is a great belle. They are all very clever people, and though I'm now poor and they are mighty rich, they treat me very sociable like." In this style she was going on when I left her abruptly, feeling rather flattered that a man of thirty-nine should be taken for a boy going a-courting. I afterwards learned that in my grandfather's day she had been in good circumstances and he knew her very well as a neighbor. About the spot where I sat talking to the old woman, sixty years ago resided my grandfather's brother John—"Cunning John," as he was always called, and although long since dead he is still remembered and spoken of by this soubriquet, in consequence of the active part he played in these parts during the Revolutionary War. He was a leading Loyalist and effectually carried the war into the enemy's camp, and could never be conquered or taken. The enemy named him Cunning John, and old Davy Torrance, when he began to name over my great-grandfather's children, headed the list by saying: "There was Cunning John, he," etc., etc.

I pulled up at the Colonel's, Archibald S. McNeill, son of Neill McNeill, my grandfather's brother, and ascertained that our cousin Archie was attending a funeral at some neighboring plantation. I then asked if there were any young ladies in the house, or if there was a Mrs. McNeill to be found. The dark portress replied: "Young Missus away. Missus is to home." "Tell her I want to see her," said I. So in a few minutes a young-looking

lady of thirty-four or thirty-five walked in. I introduced myself as a relative from Nova Scotia by the name of Parker. She said she knew the Colonel had relatives "out there," but neither he nor she knew their names before. She was very cordial, sent half a dozen niggers after half a dozen more to go for the foreman to see that my horses and servant were attended to, told me her history and everything she knew of the McNeills, which was not much beyond those who were settled near their own estate. She said she was the Colonel's second wife. Her first husband, a lawyer, died and left her with two children. The Colonel, she said, fell in love with the children and married the mother. Her son and daughter, with a daughter of McNeill's, were away in a distant part of the State at school. We chatted away for an hour, when I walked out to find the foreman and get all the information I could relative to their mode of managing a large plantation in North Carolina. As I walked past the small houses of the slaves, any quantity of small niggers came out and followed me like so many little dogs, and piloted me to where the foreman was engaged with a working gang. I heard the people calling him Mr. Parker, so I introduced myself to him as his brother by Adam, our common father, and we soon fraternized, but not before I told him I was a relative of the Colonel's. I daresay he took me for one of those "tarnal 'bolishionists" and nigger stealers, a conductor of the underground railroad, or something of the sort. So much for having a Blue-nose countenance. The ice soon melted when he found out where I was located and that his little niggers were safe. I then put him through a pretty strict examination on agriculture as practised down here. At length I came to the item of stock, when I was informed that they had seventy head of niggers, over one hundred head of pigs, more than one hundred head of cattle, eight or ten mules and about as many "hosses." It is a common thing here to speak of negroes in this way, especially among the blacks themselves. The "free nigger" that drove me, when I asked how many slaves the Colonel had, told me he guessed "between sixty and eighty head." I also learned that our friend McNeill had three plantations, on one of which he, the overseer, had already planted this year three hundred acres in Indian corn, besides other things. The field hands were then engaged in preparing ground for cotton. Eight or ten ploughs were running in close pursuit of each other through the sandy soil of one large field. The soil being light and sandy, one mule or one horse could almost run away with the little bits of ploughs they used for cotton culture. On this gentleman's plantation, besides corn and cotton, they grow largely wheat, oats, sweet and common potatoes, rice and all kinds of fruit such as we meet with in northern latitudes. You see large apple orchards. Pears, plums, and

peach groves are abundant. In short, there is nothing that I know of that will not grow in North Carolina. After pumping my namesake almost dry and finding out that he knew a thing or two about managing a plantation, and especially niggers, I returned to the house and waited for McNeill to come home. At length he came in, and I commenced the attack as agreed on by his better half and myself. "Well, Colonel, who am I?" "Don't know." "My name is Parker." "Never had the pleasure of seeing you before." "I am your cousin." "Indeed!" His open countenance became more open; he smiled and said he was puzzled. Then I told him all about our relationship. He recollected my grandfather very well, although he was very young when my grandfather finally left North Carolina, and says that the impression left on his mind by the appearance of the man has never been removed. His recollections of him are, that he was slight, rather tall, with great energy and fluency of speech—a man for action and much beloved. In proof of his being a favorite I find that the name of Daniel McNeill is borne by any number of his relatives and friends; and one of his grand-nephews, a son of the late Dr. McKay, to whom I was introduced, is called Daniel McNeill McKay. He, Colonel McNeill, was delighted to see me. hoped that I had come to spend a long time with them, and with true Southern hospitality made me welcome. I at once felt as if I had known the man all my life. He is a well-educated and most intelligent man of about fifty-five years of age, well known throughout this part of North Carolina. When I told the proprietor of the Fayetteville hotel where I put up that I had got hold of the right McNeill at last, he said: "Wal, sir, the Colonel is a mighty fine man, a fust-rate man. I've only one fault to find with him—he is a Tory." The name Tory still sticks to the old Loyalists and their descendants, especially to the descendants of those who bore arms against the Americans in the Revolutionary struggle. Of the sons of my great-grandfather all took a most active part on behalf of the king and mother country but one, who was at the time sheriff of the county and did not live near enough to his father to be much under his influence, else, as the Colonel observed, he too would have been a Tory. As it was he remained neutral, and became the receptacle of all the valuable documents, deeds, mortgages, etc., of this part of the country, for both sides; and when peace was declared he was mainly instrumental in saving the property of his loyal relatives and friends from confiscation. The intermarriage of the McNeills with families who took the opposite side of the question also materially aided in bringing about this satisfactory result. To show you how attached the relatives of my grandfather were to him, and how they respect his memory—the Colonel has now in his possession a military

coat, or rather jacket, which the old gentleman wore during the struggle and in which he was probably twice wounded. It was handed down to the Colonel, I presume, by his father. Nothing would do but that I must try it on. I found it tight in the arms and too narrow across the chest, so that I presume he must have been in early life rather slight. Nothing would induce the Colonel to give it up. They are all fond of military relics, and my grandfather appears to have been greatly beloved. His brother Hector, also in the king's service, a major, I think, a very brave, daring man and a great thorn in the sides of his rebel countrymen, does not appear to have been so great a favorite. The Colonel mentioned to me one scene especially where this Hector, then a junior officer, after his seniors had been slain, led his men on to victory in such a way that all the old people here talk of him and his conduct yet, and I have several times been asked if I was Hector's grandson or descendant. His children and descendants were out of my track and I did not see them. One of them, Dr. Wm. M. McNeill, lives on a plantation only a few miles from the Colonel's.

I arrived at McNeill's Ferry Tuesday afternoon, and after an early breakfast next morning the Colonel took me in his carriage across Cape Fear River to see his only sister, Mrs. Dr. Turner. The crossing was rather exciting as the river was much swollen by the recent rain, but the colored ferrymen, who are his slaves, managed the broad barge admirably, and we at length landed safely on the other side. The horses stood as quietly in the barge as if they had been in their stables, while the men labored against the rapid current, making as much noise as they possibly could. In fact it is the hardest thing in the world for them to do any kind of work in silence. They talk about the mercurial Irishman. I'll pit a Southern nigger against the son of the sod any day, for mercurialism. We found Dr. Turner, his wife, daughter, daughter-in-law and son-in-law (Mr. and Mrs. Spears) awaiting our arrival, as a messenger had been dispatched to tell them to be on hand to receive their Nova Scotia cousin. They also were pleased to see me and wanted me to remain and go over the country with them to see the rest of the clan. The next plantation belongs to the estate of the late Dr. McKay, or rather to his son Daniel McNeill McKay, and the "mightily rich belle," who live here with their stepmother, Cousin Bell, as the Colonel calls her. Dr. McKay's first wife was Mary McNeill, my mother's cousin, and his second wife, "Cousin Bell," was her sister. The Doctor married her not long before his death—the second sister. She is now eighty-six years of age, and she and her nephew and niece, or, I may also add, step-children, live here together happily. Cousin Bell, or Mrs. McKay, and her sister Mary, the first

Mrs. McKay, were the children of my grandfather's only sister Margaret.

We returned to dinner at the Colonel's, and after inviting them all to visit us in Nova Scotia, I harnessed up and drove back to Fayetteville. The Colonel says we must not be surprised if unexpectedly some fine morning Halifax is startled by the sight of a regiment of McNeills marching up its streets to our house, and when the startled citizens ask what is the matter, they will be told it is only the clan McNeill of North Carolina down on a visit to their Nova Scotia cousins. I have told him we will hire the officers' barracks to accommodate the regiment when it arrives.

The drive to McNeill's Ferry is through a pine forest of great beauty and value. It is the species of pine which yields all the turpentine or resin for which this State is famous, and I made myself familiar with the whole process of obtaining and manufacturing these articles of commerce, from tapping the tree until the product is landed in Wilmington for exportation. On McNeill's property the timber alone is worth a number of fortunes. Magnificent pines, oak, ash and all kinds of trees used here are there in abundance, and on that part of his plantation where his cornmill is situated, he has a fine sawmill in active operation, preparing timber for the Wilmington market. This he sends down the Cape Fear River in immense rafts, with a party of slaves who have been long engaged in the business and are thorough raftsmen. The distance to Wilmington is about 150 miles. It is an interesting sight to see these long rafts floating rapidly down stream with a cheerful fire of pine knots placed on a little heap of earth in the centre. The men with their tents, and cheerful, happy faces, are singing as they pass along, making one almost envious of their happy vocation.

ON BOARD STEAMER *North Carolina* ON THE CAPE FEAR RIVER, THURSDAY, APRIL 11TH, 1861.—I found Fayetteville rather hot and excited last night in consequence of warlike reports from Charleston. North Carolina is gradually progressing towards secession. It is openly avowed, and public secession meetings are now being held by its leaders in various parts of the State. Secession flags are flying from private houses, and the young men are openly walking the streets with Secession ribbons flying from the sides of their hats, and rosettes attached thereto as badges, indicating in the most open way their opinions. My relatives, the McNeills, etc., as well as a very large proportion of the men of property in this part of the State are conservative in their views, and wish to hang on to the old flag, but the Colonel says if the North fires a single gun, or attempts to coerce the South in any way, although elected as a Union man to represent his country at a contemplated convention of the State, he and every man

holding his views will at once coalesce with the opposite party, and join the State to the Southern Confederacy. And such a course as would produce this result as regards North Carolina will have the same result on the other border States, Virginia, Maryland, Kentucky, and Tennessee. At Fayetteville there is the largest arsenal in the Southern States. The United States have there now more than 100,000 stand of fire-arms (rifles, etc.), besides heavy artillery, gunpowder, shot and shell in great abundance. North Carolina says to the President and his Government: "You shall not take a single gun from this arsenal. It belongs to our State, and we intend to keep these arms and munitions of war to meet any emergency that may arrive." And the Northern government is so weak that it cannot take a bold, aggressive position. The United States government paid millions of money for this arsenal and what it contains, and now one of the weakest States in the Union sets that government at defiance and tells it "We intend to keep what you have paid for and placed in that arsenal." Verily the glory hath departed from the Stars and Stripes. A few months ago they were strong to all appearance, and perhaps as regards foreign nations, were a year since practically so. But to quell internal commotion and rebellion the United States government is as helpless as a child, and the veriest brat she has and calls a State doubles up its fist and hits its mother in the face, tumbles the old lady helplessly over, and there she lies, weak and enfeebled, knowing not which way to turn or what to do to ward off similar blows from other quarters. A large standing army and an efficient navy, if the officers had been true to their flag, would have crushed out the rebellion and secession in the beginning. But not having such elements at her command (as dear old England has) she is weakened and undermined in her own estimation and in the eyes of the universal world. Her prestige is gone, perhaps forever, and with it the glory of the Republican form of government.

I am now gliding down the river at the rate of eight miles an hour. The water is shallow and muddy and the breadth of the stream is not greater than from our corner to Uniacke's corner. The foliage of the sycamore, elm, oak, cedar, etc., is just being well developed. The day is delightful and warm, there is a nice breeze blowing up the river. The turns in the stream are sharp and at no part can we see further ahead than a quarter of a mile. There are no snags as in the Mississippi, and the only things to be avoided are the dead logs which float lazily down the stream. Altogether, the scene, the day, and all nature are delightful, and I only wish you were my companion—and it would be enjoyed tenfold. But, dear Fanny, now that I have discovered the clan McNeill and know their stamp, their hospitality, and have received

invitations to return with my Northern wife as early as possible and pay them a longer visit, it is not improbable, if God spares our lives a little longer, that you shall enjoy the same scenes. We shall enjoy it together. Should all go well, I have figured out a delightful excursion for some future day, that is, after visiting the clan McNeill, to go south to Memphis, Tennessee, sail up the Mississippi and Ohio Rivers, the Cumberland River also, visit the vast cave of Kentucky, Cincinnati and other western cities, and return home by the way of Quebec, the River St. Lawrence and Pictou. I look forward to this excursion, which will take six weeks, with great pleasure, but "the best-laid plans o' mice and men gang aft a'glec." And as we do not know what God has in store for us in the future, it will not do to think too much of it, but if God wills we shall accomplish it.

The steamer in which I am now sailing and writing draws but little water, has her paddle-wheel in the stern, her furnace on the very bow. This latter arrangement is for the purpose of lighting up the track in dark nights, as they then open up the door of the furnace and the turpentine pine-wood, with which they feed the fire, makes a tremendous blaze. The river far ahead and on both sides is made as light as day. We embarked at 6 o'clock a.m. and have a load of turpentine, resin, and cotton for Wilmington, which place we hope to reach at 9 o'clock to-night. I took a good breakfast on board. Everything is neat and clean, and as we shall arrive too late for the Southern train, I purpose to sleep on board instead of going to a hotel, and then take the early train for Charleston. Whenever we want more wood we just stop at one of the many piles on the bank of the river, take on board as much as we need, and there being no person on hand to receive the money, the captain hangs a ticket on the pile, signed by himself, stating how much he has walked off with, and then in a few minutes we are away again. This ticket is sent to the agent's office either in Fayetteville or Wilmington, and the owner of the wood is paid—not a bad system, but the men on shore must have great confidence in the honesty of the captain. As a general thing, I think the men of the South are an honorable, honest people; but the hot weather, especially in these times, makes their blood hot, and they become excitable and hot-headed.

Since I entered Southern ground I have felt perfectly safe, have been treated with respect and attention, and altogether feel more comfortable than I did when further North, as regards safety. Altogether, I have enjoyed my visit thus far; and having now a fair share of health and strength, am able to rough it, should this become necessary. I think that from our appearance we are generally taken for Englishmen, and as citizens of that country and her dependencies we may expect more kindly treatment and consideration than if we were from the North. I have written you

very long letters, and always so hurriedly that I fear you will hardly be able to make them out. I am generally obliged to write in the common sitting-room of the hotels, not having any fires in the various bedrooms I have occupied, and amidst the noise of politics and general conversation. Consequently I cannot think as I would like, as I drive over the ground headlong, so that the talking of my neighbors may not distract my attention. In this way, I daresay, I often forget incidents that would amuse and interest you. I wish you would keep all my letters, as I have not made memoranda of many things I may subsequently wish to refer to as refreshers to my memory, and I may, at some future time, wish to make such reference. Much that I have written about the McNeills will not be of interest to you, but my mother will take in every word of it, and I know it will afford her the utmost pleasure thus to learn something of her far-off relatives. I will, therefore, thank you, dear Fanny, to copy that part of the letter referring to the clan McNeill and send it to her as early as convenient.

You must not think that, from the shaky and irregular appearance of the writing in this letter, I have been drinking. The fact is, the vibration of the boat is so great at times that I cannot, without great difficulty, keep the pen at work without making scrawls, like a man of ninety years of age. I rather think the loungers at the hotels, as well as the passengers of this boat, seeing my pen going so rapidly and so often, have come to the conclusion that "that there fellow" is the special correspondent of some English newspaper, and that I am travelling about like one of those gentlemen, prying into everything and picking up everything at this exciting time in connection with the present difficulties, that will tickle the palates and inform the readers of the paper which patronizes me, all about the peculiar institution, Uncle Sam and his country. One gentleman rather significantly observed to me since I came on board here, that the English seldom wrote fairly about America, and especially about the South. Dickens I think he would hang and quarter for his caricatures of their national peculiarities. He acknowledged that there was one man, a barrister of Edinburgh named McKay, who had done his subjects, the country and its people, justice, and only one. I fear if my "jottings by the way" were to meet his eye he would have a little tar and cotton ready for me on my return to North Carolina. Although I think I have used them fairly and from proper points of observation, my risible faculties are not unfrequently excited by their peculiarities, and as I am only outlining my journey, I will have much left to tell you on my return. My only fear, however, is that I shall never get the time to tell you all I have not put on paper, or if time is obtained, that my memory will fail before the leisure comes.

CHARLESTON, S. C., FRIDAY MORNING, APRIL 12.

I little expected to reach this place until late to-night, but our Cape Fear River captain, being urged on by myself and others, packed the furnaces well with turpentine pine, and we landed at Wilmington, N. C., about a quarter to eight last night. I at once crossed the river to its southern side in a boat, and was in time to get on the Charleston train, and consequently saved myself a night among the Wilmington bugs. Wilmington is a dirty place and abounds in these animals. You can get plenty to eat, but a clean bed is out of the question. Stairs wanted to remain there a second night but was afraid of the consequences, so he and his son spent Wednesday night on the Southern train. I could not get a bed, but the car in which I travelled half the night had a rest for the head like those you see attached to the shaving chairs in a barber shop. On this I slept a good deal. When we arrived at Florence on the borders of South Carolina we met a custom house officer of the new Confederacy, who examined the luggage. He saw "Nova Scotia" on mine, and I presume thought I did not look like a Yankee abolitionist, so he let me pass without opening up my trunk and chattels.

Friday night. As we neared the city about half past seven o'clock, we heard the booming of heavy artillery, and in a few minutes the wind brought the smell of gunpowder down upon us. We, of course, knew that the reports we had heard for a week before about an attack on Major Anderson and Fort Sumter were being verified. The train brought to the city volunteers of all kinds who chatted pleasantly over the future as it had reference to themselves, and spoke lightly of death. I hope, poor fellows, they may not unexpectedly have to meet the King of Terrors. We, that is Stairs, Johnnie and myself, met, as previously arranged, at the Mills House, and we found also Mr. Duncan of Savannah, a cousin of Mr. Stairs, here. He came up last night to see the ball open. The firing has been heavy and continuous all day, shaking our hotel, and we have been on board a government steamer a large part of the time, from which we could better witness the shot and shell practice. The greatest excitement prevails. Nearly everyone in the city has father, son, or brother engaged on some of the island forts, and, of course, all seem affected and anxious. But all, even ladies, are anxious that the existing state of things should be terminated, even at the sacrifice of human blood. Ten thousand troops are in and about the city—rather raw material as yet, but I daresay eventually they will make good practice with light and heavy guns. Indeed, some first rate practice in shelling Sumter was made from one of the batteries. Major Anderson's force is weak—under one hundred men, but there are three men-of-war in sight of the town,

trying to reinforce and provision the fort. I think they will hardly succeed, unless the darkness of night favors them. We cannot tell what effect the day's work has had on Fort Sumter, as it is a mile away from the nearest opposing fort, and, of course, there has been no communication with it. Many shells exploded in it, and it is not improbable that Anderson's numbers to-night are less than in the morning. All the shops are closed, and the whole city was out, men, women, children and niggers, to see the game of ball, as they call it here.

This work of to-day, I think, will settle the question as to the border slave States. They will now doubtless fall in with the Southern Confederacy. Indeed, Virginia and North Carolina have sent their volunteers to this place in large numbers already. To-day, the mail and railway communication from this city were stopped by order of the government, and we found ourselves prisoners, not of war, exactly, but almost as bad. Knowing that you would naturally feel anxious about us as soon as you heard war was declared and going on in this locality, I telegraphed to Frank to write you and say how we were situated. The wording of the telegram had to be inspected and modified, as the government would not allow a word to be sent over the wires relating to the passing events. To-night I learned that the mail communication north is re-opened, so I shall close my letter and trust it to the Post Office authorities, hoping that it may reach you in safety, although I fear it is too late to go by the Boston steamer next Wednesday. We are off at eight o'clock in the morning for Savannah. Since eight o'clock this evening there has been no firing. It will commence again at daylight I suppose. I have missed seeing Mr. Brunck, the Consul. When I called he was out, and when he returned I was viewing the fight. Love and kisses to the children, and remember me most kindly to all the rest. God bless you, dear wife.

Ever your afft. husband,

D. McN. PARKER.

MILLS HOUSE, CHARLESTON, S. C.,

April 15, 1861, Monday, 7 a.m.

Dearest Fanny:

Here I am still—at the present moment I am in my bedroom four or five stories up, having just finished packing preparatory to leaving for Savannah, Ga., by the 8.30 train, where I hope to meet the long-hoped-for letters from home. I wrote you a lengthy letter, the last part of it from this place, and despatched it on Saturday morning. Whether you will receive it or not I cannot say, as everything connected with the post office

and railway communications has been disarranged in consequence of the declaration and commencement of war between the Southern and Northern Confederacies. Now we are informed at the office of this hotel that matters are being straightened up, and that both letters and persons can leave without difficulty for the North and South. I closed my letter to you just before going to bed last Friday night, and stated that the cannonading of Fort Sumter had ceased. I was mistaken, for just as I had blown out the candle, the heavy booming sound of artillery was distinctly heard, and it continued all night. The reason we could not hear it, as in the early part of the evening, was in consequence of the wind shifting. It now blew directly off the land. At early day all the city was in great excitement, the bustle, noise and confusion were very great. The Stars and Stripes were still floating proudly over Sumter, and Anderson was still blazing away at all the land forts. The excitement continued until about eleven o'clock, when it became more intense in consequence of the vast columns of smoke arising from Fort Sumter. Of course all was surmise as to its origin. Some said they were heating up their furnaces preparatory to firing hot shot; others, that Anderson had fired the casemates, wooden buildings, and gun carriages so as to destroy all he could before giving up the Fort. It was soon very evident to me that a large surface within the ramparts was being destroyed by fire, and the volume of flame began to rise over the high stone walls, making it appear to all that the defending force must soon be burned and smoked out. Their fire slackened and soon ceased, that is, from the guns within the fort, but no white flag appearing, the batteries on Fort Moultrie continued with others to play away on the burning fort. At this time a shot or shell from Moultrie struck the flagstaff, a very high one, in the centre of Sumter, and carried away the Stars and Stripes. A smaller one was raised in its stead, which could only be occasionally seen through the clouds of smoke. A small boat, at this juncture, put off from Fort Morris with one of General Beauregard's aides-de-camp on board, who hoisted a white flag, made from his shirt sleeve, on the point of his sword. When he reached the fort no person could see him for the smoke, and he crawled up through one of the embrasures, and at length, after many difficulties, came in contact with the commander, to whom he suggested the propriety of running up a white flag. This Anderson at first declined to do, but seeing his case hopeless, up went. I daresay a shirt tail—at least something white, and this, as soon as discovered, caused the forts to cease firing. You cannot imagine the excitement when it was discovered that the white flag was on the ramparts. Old men, women and children all felt and looked as if the Northern Yankee was for ever used

up and done for. Such shaking of hands and congratulations "as I never did see." Every person at once began to discuss the propriety of hanging Major Anderson—a *la Lynch*—for firing the fort, and for holding it when he knew there was no earthly chance of success. Some of the older men shook their heads, but the young soldiers (volunteers) vowed death was his due and he must go up, on the suspension principle. I could not say a word in the poor fellow's behalf for having only done his duty. One or two suggestions of this kind coming from me made these hot-headed boys look at me very comically—so I shut up.

At length the report reached the city that the fort had been fired by hot shot and shell from the mainland, and this appeared to throw oil on the troubled waters. But still they wanted to see a Captain Doubleday—a rank Republican officer of Sumter's garrison—despatched summarily. This poor fellow's name was in everybody's mouth, and if he had landed I don't know what would have become of him. The final surrender of the fort did not take place until yesterday, Sunday, when all the arrangements being made, in the afternoon Anderson was allowed to embark his men and accoutrements, with their baggage, on board a small steamer. The men went on board the American fleet in the offing, as I understand, while Anderson was permitted to take the steamer to New York. He declined embarking himself on board any of the frigates, being excessively annoyed that their officers did not attempt boldly to run in and reinforce him with men, arms and provisions. They had on board 1,500 to 2,000 soldiers and artillerymen, and they were six ships in all, plainly visible from where I viewed the bombardment. Yet there they remained during all the engagement, without attempting to run the gauntlet either by day or by night. It is true they might have been sunk, but under the circumstances, I feel certain that British officers would have made the attempt. Old Lord Dundonald would have gone in with a fishing smack if he could have got nothing better. I was very kindly treated by the Surgeon-General of the Southern army, who kept me booked up on all that was going on. When he went off to the fort with the General to take possession, one of the United States soldiers told him that if Major Anderson would have allowed them the Sumter artillerymen would gladly have turned their guns on the ships of war. "The cowardly scoundrels"—as he designated them. He was an Irishman. What is very surprising, connected with the bombardment, is the fact that not a single man was killed on either side. The guns were playing continuously for thirty-six hours, and there were many narrow escapes, yet a horse was the only thing killed. General Beauregard, until recently, has been serving as a captain under Major Anderson, and having

a great respect for him, as a soldier and man of honor, he gave the Major leave to salute the United States flag ere he left the fort. This request had been made, I believe, by Anderson. In the afternoon of Sunday this ceremony took place, and in firing the salute, some cartridges were ignited, killing, accidentally, one man on the spot, and wounding five more, two of whom have since died. The Southern men looked upon the bloodless engagement at Fort Sumter and its successful issue, as a mark of direct interference on their behalf by Providence. As I walked into a Baptist church yesterday afternoon, I was informed of the accident above referred to, by a good brother Baptist, who looked upon it as a mark of Divine anger upon the "Black Republican Government" of the North, as Lincoln's government is here designated. All classes and denominations, ministers as well as lay members of churches, are unanimous for war. I went with Mr. Mure, a Scotch merchant of this place, and the agent of the *Roseneath* and other ships of Kidston's of Glasgow, a friend of Stairs, to a Presbyterian church, and there heard an old man on the verge of the grave, the Rev. Dr. Forrest, preach a thanksgiving sermon for the victory and its bloodless results. He spoke of the cause as a just and righteous one, and feelingly alluded to the many mothers and fathers, whose sons had taken their lives in their hands to defend their country's rights and honor. He, the reverend Doctor, had a son engaged in one of the forts.

The possession of this fort is a great matter. It is placed in the very centre of the entrance to the harbor of Charleston, just as George's Island is situated in reference to the harbor of Halifax. It cost millions of money and years of labor to complete it, as the foundation had to be made with stone thrown into deep water. You can imagine the expense of the undertaking when I tell you that within the walls of Sumter there is a surface of over three acres of ground. The Yankees looked upon it as their Gibraltar—but they do not know what a Gibraltar is. One of the forts opposed to it they called Moultrie, and on its site the first successful blow against the British, in the South, was struck in the War of Independence of 1776—rather a singular coincidence—and this fort was the most formidable opponent of Sumter on this occasion.

The streets of Charleston present a most singular appearance just now—full of troops, armed horsemen, and almost every man with a revolver or two hung by his side. The unanimity of feeling pervading all classes is a singular feature of this struggle. All the States now out of the Union are firmly united. One thing strikes even a common observer. All the soldiers are men having a stake in the country, most of them men of property, owning both real estate and slaves. Gentlemen of wealth are

in the ranks, doing common soldiers' duty. In some instances they have their slaves with them to perform the more menial duties, but these they generally do themselves. No slaves are allowed to carry arms, although I am informed that they occasionally ask to be allowed to enter the ranks as soldiers.

The North is impressed with the belief that the slaves will rise and aid them, while they will in this way intimidate the South and to some extent cripple them. In this impression I think they are decidedly wrong. All the men of the South to whom I speak place the utmost reliance on the fidelity of the blacks and dread no evil from this source. McNeill told me that he would not hesitate to arm his slaves and those in his neighborhood and oppose them to the Northern men, while he felt the utmost confidence in leaving them as he expected to do, in case war began. In fact every Southerner looks upon the slave as a means of strength, inasmuch as the masters and men of property can fight and act as soldiers while the agricultural interests of the country are being attended to, and their families protected, by the very slaves from whom the North expect material strength. Even should the slaves have the disposition to rise, it would not, I think, result in anything very serious, as they are timid, entirely unaccustomed to the use of firearms, and it would take an immense time to organize them, situated as they now are, scattered over such an extent of country. The want of education and mental training would unfit them for the higher branches of the art of war. Altogether, from personal observation, I think that in the war just initiated, the old United States will have to trust entirely to Northern men and that the slave element will not strengthen them, but their opponents.

Yesterday afternoon we heard an address to the Sabbath school children of the First Baptist Church of Charleston. This old church is situated in the midst of a burying ground, and the graves are surrounded by roses in bloom, and all kinds of beautiful shrubbery. Stairs, Johnnie and I spent an hour most pleasantly in the place, listening to the children singing before the service commenced. The old black people love to congregate about these gravestones and talk over by-gone days. One old woman was weeping over the graves of her mistress, master and their children, to whom she must have been tenderly attached. The graves contained the remains of the former pastor of the church, his wife and sons, and this poor old woman had been their property. It was a touching incident, and demonstrated the fact that some at least of the slave proprietors had hearts and feelings. The sermon having commenced, or rather the preliminary service, we were disturbed by the roar of artillery which announced the final evacuation of Fort Sumter and the

permanent raising of the flag of the new confederacy. But few of any sex or age were present at church. All Charleston appeared to be sailing on the harbor, viewing the scene of the late conflict, or looking at it from almost every point of view afforded by the city. Sunday appeared like one great gala day. All was rejoicing and mirth, without drunkenness or disorderly conduct. Indeed, the most perfect order was preserved, notwithstanding the excitement.

SAVANNAH, GA., Wednesday morning, April 17.—We started from Charleston with a heavy human freight, the train being filled to overflowing with Georgians who had been up to look at the fight or view the conquered fort. Many of them were carrying home, to hand down to their descendants, cannon balls, pieces of broken and exploded shells, in short anything and everything that would serve as a memento of "the great and glorious commencement of a glorious war." As we passed along, every tree appeared to have a horse or horse and carriage beneath its shade held by a black man or boy, while its owner rushed frantically to the stopping-places to hear the news, get a newspaper, or some small piece of shot or shell to carry through the woods to his home, to exhibit to his excited family and neighbors. Women, too, were in the throng, as anxious as the men, perhaps more so, as very likely many mothers came to hear what had befallen their sons in "the great battle." For the sound of the artillery and mortars reached even as far as forty miles from the scene of conflict, and all supposed much human blood had been shed. You can judge of their surprise when they were told that no person was hurt in the fight, and only a horse killed.

The country between Charleston and Savannah for a hundred miles, is low, wet and unhealthy. From the appearance of the dismal swamp, the moss-clad trees and the rank, deep vegetation of this section of country, I can easily imagine that even snakes and wild animals would gladly give it a wide berth. Every man and boy in the country being seized with a military and fire-eating spirit, and all being armed with revolvers and bowie knives, we had to submit to a constant din and noise of their small arms. The poor helpless trees and telegraph posts had their feelings hurt, "considerable I guess," as they were penetrated by the bullets from revolvers discharged at them from the windows of our passing train. I rather think these youngsters will be cooled down ere long if the sad realities of war are brought practically to their attention. The unoffending trees and posts will then be apt to escape. The heat in travelling through the low, swampy region had been extreme, and not being very well when I left, I became seasick—as violently so as if I had been on the Atlantic; so that on my arrival at the Pulaski Hotel

I had to go to bed for some hours. The next morning, however, I was as well as usual. When in North Carolina it was rather cool. Indeed, before reaching Charleston, we had only one warm day, and that was at Philadelphia. The thermometer ranged from 45 to 55. After leaving Fayetteville, it grew warmer, and the climate here at present, especially since a violent rainstorm on Monday night, has been delightful. We found our letters at the hotel, and as you can readily conceive, were delighted to get them and hear from our dear ones at home. I only received one from you, sent by packet, dated March 29th. Stairs, however, had one from his wife of April 2nd, saying she had seen you the day before, and that you were all well. I presume the early arrival of the English boat took you all by surprise, and you were not prepared to mail a second letter. Frank will have a large pile on hand when we reach New York, as I hope to do in about ten days. We have read with much interest the six newspapers forwarded through Frank, and would be glad of more of the same sort. Poor Charlie Campbell, as I expected, is gone back to his mountain home to fight another Gaelic warfare with his late Christian friends and ministers of Victoria. I wish him well through his difficulty, and back again in the House. I wish Charles or Tupper had written; however, I hope to get letters from them on my arrival at New York.

Stairs having relations and commercial correspondents in this city, we have been most kindly received and have had much attention paid us. We dine out to-day. I took tea with a Mr. Johnston, a grandson of Andrew Johnston, last night, and to-morrow expect to dine with one of the leading merchants of the South and the president of the great bank of the place.

As soon as I recovered from my temporary illness I set about looking up the Clan Johnston, and had no difficulty in finding them and their connections. Stair's cousin, Mr. Duncan, has two sons and one daughter. This daughter is married to a Mr. Johnston, a relative of our Mr. Johnston. He is the son of James, who was the grandson of Andrew Johnston, who was born in 1735 and died sixty-six years after, in 1801, leaving a large number of children. It is his descendants that I have been brought in contact with. The story is too long to commence with. I have given the matter two or three hard hours' writing. I got hold of an old Bible of the date of 1757, and another of more recent date, and have got the family tree in my pocket, commencing with the birth of one James Johnston, born in 1686—the father of Lewis Johnston, the ancestor of the Nova Scotia Johnstons. Mr. Molyneux, the British Consul here, is married to George Houston Johnston's sister (the gentleman at whose house I was last night). He has a son in England in the 7th

Dragoon Guards. This Mr. Molyneux has a brother married to a Miss Mitchell, formerly of Halifax, daughter of Admiral Mitchell, who married a Uniacke. George Houston Johnston's grandfather was Sir George Houston, Bart., the son of Sir Patrick Houston, Bart., President of the Council of Georgia when it was a British colony. His successor in office was Lewis Johnston, the great-grandfather, or grandfather (I cannot now look and see) of our Mr. Johnston. I learned that many of the old documents, deeds, etc., have the name spelt with an *e*, but all the family here for fifty years past have dropped the *e*, and spell it as Mr. J. does. The family connection have two or three places called Annandale, after their ancient Scottish home. I do not know that I shall be able to visit the island of Shiddenay. It is about nine or ten miles away from this place, has several plantations on it, only one of which belongs to the family. Tell Mr. Johnston that I fear the chances of his becoming a cotton planter on Shiddenay are but small.

Savannah is a very large place commercially, although it has but 30,000 inhabitants. It exports immense quantities of cotton, island cotton, rice, corn, pitch-pine, timber, etc. We strolled along its wharves yesterday and boarded a Yarmouth vessel belonging to Moses & Co. of that place. There are several New Brunswick vessels in port, loading with pine timber, and the lumber used in shipbuilding at St. John. The public squares are small and numerous, the streets broad and lined with evergreen trees, principally water-oak. It has a fine park. A large parade is spread over a considerable surface of black, sandy land. The city has two principal monuments, one a very fine work of art erected after the visit of Lafayette in 1821, to Pulaski, the Pole, who fell at the siege of Savannah in July, 1779—also another to General Greene, the general who defeated Lord Cornwallis and other British generals in the Southern struggles of the Revolutionary War. George Houston Johnston married a Miss Turner, General Greene's granddaughter. Altogether, at this season of the year, with the foliage fully out, the roses and other flowers in bloom, Savannah is a most delightful place to sojourn in for a few days.

The war spirit is as firm and as general as it is in South Carolina. Old men and young are deeply bitten by it. Old Mr. Duncan has two sons (one a surgeon) in the army of Georgia, his son-in-law, Mr. Johnston, is in a dragoon regiment, while the old gentleman himself is a member of the crack artillery corps of Savannah. Young Mr. Johnston took me to the Planters' Bank, where his uncle George was to be found as one of its officers. On the president's table (Mr. Roberts is his name) was placed a Maynard's rifle with which he had been practising at a target, the better to fit him for the work of bringing down the "Black Repub-

lican Yankees," and I put in my pocket the piece of card at which he had been firing, to show your father, Mr. Binney, and other bank men how presidents of banks down here amuse themselves, and what crack shots they are. Mr. Duncan exhibited to me with great delight his Minie rifle, which cost him \$270—a splendid instrument of destruction. This state of things—what we see and what we hear—gives us a pretty correct estimate of the kind of men and mettle the Northern Yankee will have to meet on his journey down South.

I hear that Virginia and North Carolina are on the eve of coming out and joining the South, with which they warmly sympathize. A few days will determine the point with them, and this junction will necessarily involve the further secession of four more border slave States, which, with the seven now united in the Southern Confederacy, will present such a formidable array as will, I have no doubt, cause Lincoln and his government to pause and consider well what they have to meet, and eventually to acknowledge the new nation as among the things accomplished and in existence. Then, an amicable arrangement may be made as to the property taken possession of by the Southern States, as a matter of business, bloodshed may be prevented, and the world will be saved the pain of witnessing a long and bloody war of brethren of the Anglo-Saxon race. They will never again coalesce as one nation. They are now and forever two distinct peoples, distinct in feeling, interests, education, and everything that essentially binds nations and people together. The South to-day is and will be for very many years to come, more friendly and more disposed to co-operate commercially, and in every other way, with her old enemy England, notwithstanding the strong anti-slavery feeling and tendencies of the latter country, than with the Northern States of the late Union.

I remarked in a former letter how often one tumbles on the friends of friends. I have had another interesting illustration of the fact. Just as I was on the eve of leaving the Mills House to join the Southern train at Charleston, a casual acquaintance came up to me and told me that a Dr. Curtis wanted to see me. I was introduced to him by my new friend. He, Curtis, told me that he had noticed my name on the hotel book as from Halifax, and having been there years ago he wished to know something about some friends there and in the adjoining country. I asked him who were known to him there. He replied, the Crawleys of Cape Breton. I told him I knew them well, and expected to visit Dr. Crawley at Spartanburgh, S.C., in a few days. He said he had left him only two or three days before, and that the Crawleys were living in his house. I then found out that he was Dr. Curtis (D.C.L.), a co-principal with Crawley in a large female Institu-

tion at Limestone Springs, a place owned by him. The history of this man is singular. He, with his father, Dr. Curtis (D.D.), of London, on their way to Canada were wrecked on the coast of Newfoundland, and found their way to Sydney, C.B. Captain Crawley took them in and kept them all winter. They afterwards came to Charleston, S.C. Dr. Curtis, Sr., became pastor of a Baptist church in that city. Afterwards, father and son bought this large property of Limestone Springs, a watering-place, and commenced a ladies' seminary, which has at present about one hundred and eighty Southern young ladies being educated within its walls. His father was burned to death on board a steamer going north from Norfolk to Baltimore two years since, and it became necessary for the young man to supply his place. He at once thought of his old friend Dr. Edmund Crawley as just the man for the position, and offered him the situation; and he adds that Crawley is now happily and comfortably situated at Limestone Springs. Dr. Curtis told me that his deceased father was at one time the editor of the *Metropolitan Encyclopedia*, in conjunction with the celebrated Coleridge, and while occupying that position gave the present Archbishop of Canterbury, while a young man and poor, the first guinea he ever earned—for some article he undertook for their *Encyclopedia*. Dr. Curtis was going South to look after an estate in Georgia. I believe he is rich, is very well known here by every person, and at present, although a Baptist minister, is a member of a Convention of South Carolina, to which office he was elected at the beginning of the present troubles. I hope to see the Crawleys the last of this week. I cannot accept Mr. Greene's invitation to dine with him to-morrow, as I leave, if God wills, about 2 p.m. of that day for Crawley's residence, far back in South Carolina—two hundred or two hundred and fifty miles from Charleston. In the meantime Stairs and Johnnie go to see one of their relatives, and we meet again on Monday at Charleston, S.C., and then commence our homeward journey.

You perhaps may hear from me once more before we leave. Say to my mother that I had overcome all the difficulties which surrounded the Clan McNeill, before getting her letter. Give my best love and regards to all in Halifax and Dartmouth. May God bless you, my own dear wife, and our dear ones, and permit us again to meet on earth—is the prayer of

Your afft. husband,

D. McN. PARKER.

LIMESTONE SPRINGS,
SPARTANBURGH DISTRICT, S.C.
April 20th, 1861.

My dearest Fanny:

I wrote you from Savannah on Wednesday last, the 17th inst., and mailed my letter just as I was on my way to dine with our friend Mr. Duncan. We had a very pleasant and a very good dinner. The party consisted of his two sons, now engaged in the Southern army, his son-in-law, Mr. Johnston, who, with his wife and two children, live with the old gentleman,—and our own Nova Scotia party of three. Mrs. Johnston, Mr. Duncan's daughter, is the housekeeper, her mother having been many years dead. She has two dear children, a boy and an infant of the age of our dear little fellow. She and her elder brother were brought in as dessert, and made me think more of my own little ones than, under such circumstances, I would otherwise have done. I nursed the little girl for some time, and she was as good as our dear little babe. The boy, although only three years of age, was being drilled as a soldier by all hands, and really marched, halted and went through the various evolutions and gun exercises with wonderful accuracy for a mere child. Thus early do they commence down South "to teach the young idea to shoot." We had for dinner salad, green peas, strawberries and other delicacies, the very rudiments of which are frozen up as yet in cold Nova Scotia. Tell the old gentleman not to let his mouth water at the thoughts of such early luxuries. After dinner Stairs said he was sorry we had refused to dine with our friend the bank president the next day—to have some more of them. But we had refused his invitation and it was then too late. We met him, however, at the station just as we were leaving, and told him that we half regretted having refused him, when the old gentleman almost coerced us back to pot-luck, peas and strawberries.

We all left Savannah Thursday at half-past two p.m., and Stairs accompanied me to Beaufort, fifty miles on the Charleston road, where he and his son remained to visit Mrs. Smith, formerly a Miss Duncan, married to a rich planter. She is the niece of Mr. Duncan of Savannah, the daughter of a Kirk clergyman, recently deceased in Scotland, who was a cousin of Stairs' mother, and a brother of Mr. Duncan of Savannah. Our arrangement is to be in Charleston on Monday night next, the 22nd inst., and to start the next morning for the North.

I arrived in Charleston just in time to take the night train for Columbia, the capital of this State, which place we reached about 5 a.m. yesterday morning. I was too much hurried to take tea in Charleston, and when I found at this early hour a breakfast spread under the station-house roof—without ends or sides—although it

was "like all outdoors," I took coffee and a light meal, which had to suffice me until I reached here at nine o'clock last night. The station is a mile from Columbia City, and I preferred remaining by the train for the two hours rather than go to a city hotel only to leave it in haste again. It would have amused you to see me under this railway roof engaged in my ablutions and toilet. I saw some soldiers washing their hands and faces, and water being good and refreshing in any form, after such a journey, I stripped off my coat, rolled up my sleeves, and went at it just as if I had been in my dressing-room. A nigger man poured the water in my hands, and a colored lady stood by with a quantity of towels "to dry Mar'sr with." The people stared and doubtless thought I was some eccentric Englishman. However, I enjoyed the wash, and then unlocked my carpet bag and with comb and brush in hand improved my personal appearance not a little. Then, Britisher-like, I was soon deep in the pages of a Columbian morning paper.

At Jonesville, twenty miles or thereabouts from Spartanburgh, I left the train and hired a wagon to drive through to this place. We left about 5 o'clock, but not until I had tried hard to get something to eat, without effect. The innkeeper had gone off to the war, the hotel was shut up, and his wife was sick. So I had to eat and digest my thoughts, over one of the roughest and most hilly roads in creation. The post-boy, whose horse I drove, had gone to Jonesville on a saddle. The man who kept horses for hire at this place, like everybody else, had joined the army and was away, suffering and bleeding, patriot-like, for his country and his niggers. So I had either to mount up behind the post-boy and lash my luggage to my back, or hire a buggy. After great exertions we found a man who owned a vehicle and who was not "away at the war," and he, for a consideration, let the boy have it. The wagon was old, dirty and shaky, the harness ditto, the horse ditto. The boy and I got him harnessed (the 'oss), then we set ourselves to work to grease the wheels. After a time we got the luggage lashed on, some behind, some before. In this way an hour or more went quickly by, and we were late in starting. Everything about the concern looked ancient. The wagon, 'oss and harness looked as if they had seen service in the first war, the Revolution of 1776. The post-boy looked like an old boy. In short, the only thing young about the whole concern was your husband. The driver was a shoemaker, who guessed it would take about six hours to land me at Limestone. I guessed I would try it on a little harder. The evening was cold, and the old boy had left his coat and gloves at Limestone, and he beginning to feel chilly, as a medical man I began to advise him how dangerous colds were, and strongly urged him to keep his hands warm in his pockets, or rolled up in my

railway wrapper. He guessed the latter was best. I got the reins into my hands by this suggestion, cut a stick by the wayside, and, you may depend, worked my passage—hard—to this place. The shoemaker's faculties appeared benumbed, his eyes closed, and you can imagine his surprise when he found himself landed in Limestone two hours earlier than he had "called on." He guessed he would, after this, drive a buggy instead of going on horseback, as the old horse appeared to like it, and somehow to get over the road "kinder quicker." When I asked him how much was to pay, he said the charge was three dollars, but he guessed he'd take fifty cents off, because I had driven him instead of his driving me.

All the active, young men and middle-aged, are away playing the soldier. The old men, in many instances those of three-score years and ten, are doing the same. The niggers, all along the country, are working the plantations, while the women, children and useless "critters" of whites only are left behind. In every district the old men are enrolled as volunteers—in the "silver-gray companies," not so much for purposes of war, but to have an organized body of men with arms, in case difficulties from without or within should arise—that is, should stray abolitionists come along, after the manner of John Brown of Harper's Ferry notoriety, instigating the slaves to rise and throw off their allegiance.

After I had washed the dust off and taken a hearty dinner, tea and supper all in one, I left the Curtis Hotel, where I put up, and about ten o'clock walked over to Dr. Crawley's. They were just going to bed when I knocked. The Doctor was called to speak to me at the door, did not know me or my voice, asked me in the dark to walk into his study, where a light was struck. "Take a chair, sir," he said. I could hardly keep my countenance. He began to look me over, scrutinizing my features closely, and at last said, "Is it—yes, it is—is it possible that I see before me Dr. Parker?" I told him I was the man. He went to call his wife, but did not tell her what he wanted. She came in, and quick as thought said, "It is Dr. Parker," and gave me such a greeting, and with it a good Nova Scotia kiss. Don't be jealous, old woman! It is the first I have had since we parted, and is likely to be the last until we meet again. Well, we sat down and chatted away for an hour, when I left and came back to my hotel. I have had a good night's sleep, a good breakfast, and presently shall step over to spend the day with the Crawleys in their immense establishment. It looks like a great barracks for soldiers, from where I write, and is full of young ladies—about a hundred and fifty in number.

SATURDAY EVENING.—I have visited the institution, and find it very extensive. All the higher branches are taught in it, including Latin and Greek. In all there are about fourteen teachers,

exclusive of housekeeper and others not specially engaged in the educational department. All the teachers dine with the pupils. Dr. and Mrs. Crawley, their family and myself sat at the head of one table, Dr. Curtis's family at the head of another, and the male and female teachers occupied their various positions among the regiment of girls. It was a very interesting sight. Everything was quiet and orderly, where, so many female tongues being present, one would naturally expect the contrary. In the evening at eight o'clock the prayer bell rang and we all joined the school. Dr. Crawley gave out a hymn. The two head teachers of music (men) set the tune, one at a piano, and the other led the one hundred and fifty voices. It was a delightful sight. Then Dr. Crawley read, with his deep, full voice, so familiar to my ears, a chapter in the New Testament, and prayed. Then, in the regular order of their seats, the girls all passed before the Doctor and, shaking hands with him, said good-night.

After this we went to Dr. Crawley's house, where we found the mail waiting, and the girls most anxious for their letters and papers. All of them are deeply interested in the struggle now going on. They have fathers and brothers away from home bearing arms, ready for the strife whenever it may occur. Dr. Crawley says, when the news of the bombardment of Sumter reached them, and it was not known what the result would be—the supposition being that very many lives would be lost—it was a most painful and distressing sight to see the whole school, or nearly so, in tears and distress. This, however, soon changed to joy and laughter, when they learned that the South had been successful and no lives had been sacrificed.

The main building of the school is two hundred and seventy feet long, four stories high and has every convenience. It was built, years ago, for a hotel, and Dr. Curtis purchased it for this school. I am taking home an engraving of the building and grounds for Mrs. Dr. Johnston, when you and the friends will be able to see it. Drs. Curtis and Crawley have two neat, large houses detached from the great building, facing each other, and in the square are other small houses for male teachers and their families, as also for servants. In short, the large square occupied by these school buildings is quite a little village in itself. This school possesses one great advantage—it is away from railroads, cities and such nuisances to schools. Parents, relatives and young men about town cannot be calling upon the girls and interfering with their studies. Without even teachers, the scholars can walk along the roads, through the paths in the woods, in short, anywhere, without the slightest fear of being molested. Their world is the school, and to those engaged in it, during the regular term there is no outer world. It

is just as if such a school village had been planted twenty miles back in the woods in the rear of Sam's farm at Windsor. Their mail and commissariat arrangements are most complete, and, although out of the world and difficult of access, every day brings them, through the post, letters and newspapers. Dr. Crawley gave me a very pleasant drive a few miles out of the village, and we ascended a small mountain from which a fine, commanding view can be obtained. On the top of this mount, as everywhere else, a high liberty pole was erected, and a torn palmetto flag waved in the breeze. . . . One of the male teachers acts as tutor to Curtis's and Crawley's boys, in addition to performing some special duty in the school. This tutor, being a member of a volunteer company at Charleston which has been lately drafted into the regular Southern army, is ordered away, and the Crawleys are consequently in distress, fearing that they shall have great difficulty, under existing circumstances, in supplying his place.

The news of a bloody combat at Baltimore has just reached us. I fear there is trouble of no light kind ahead of these two contending sections of the old United States.

CHARLESTON, S.C., April 23rd, 1861.—I have to resume the thread of my discourse, and take up and finish Limestone Springs. On Sunday morning I attended meeting in the chapel of the institution. Dr. Crawley preached ably, touchingly, and, while striking high at the understanding, reached the emotional part of our natures. Old associations were revived. Granville Street and days and years gone by were before me. Would that some of his old hearers could have listened to his lofty thought and been melted by the softer touches interspersed throughout his discourse. They may never hear him more. I may never again have that pleasure. Very likely we have said the last farewell on earth, and God grant that in Heaven we may be reunited, in a closer and higher brotherhood with Christ as our Elder Brother and great High Priest. The singing, as you may imagine, was splendid. Altogether the occasion was one long to be remembered, and its like is not, in all probability, to be witnessed by me again.

I was obliged to take the train from Spartanburgh at six o'clock a.m. the following morning, and to effect this had to say good-bye to the Crawleys at two o'clock on Sunday afternoon, and perform my first Sunday journey since leaving Boston. I drove over this distance, twenty miles, in time to get my tea and attend Methodist meeting at seven o'clock. The preacher had selected, I daresay, an appropriate subject for the locality, and he handled it with a good deal of ability, but I had rather he had chosen another, as far as I was concerned. His sermon was on the sin and impropriety of cheating in business, making great bargains, selling short measure and weight, taking advantage of the necessities of the

poor in purchasing real estate, cotton, corn, etc. The fellow spoke out right home, charged his hearers with these offences, and then walked them right up to the Judgment Seat on the last day, and pictured there these stock-jobbing, cotton-purchasing tricks,—which must have rather startled the guilty. How long he would have gone on in this strain I know not, but the first curfew bell rang, calling the niggers in, and their tramp on the stairs brought forth his “Lastly.” . . .

When driving across the country on Sunday afternoon I heard some marvellous stories, from blacks and whites, about a balloon that had landed on Saturday between Spartanburgh and Limestone. The whole neighborhood was excited, thinking that Abe Lincoln had adopted this mode of spying out the nakedness of the land and sending abolitionists to originate an insurrection among the niggers. At Spartanburgh it was all the talk, and in the morning there was nothing else mentioned on the train. But before I go any further I must say that this same Spartanburgh, a town of about 2,000 inhabitants, is one of the prettiest spots in the world. It has a brand-new, band-box appearance, and as you pass through its streets you see large, fine houses placed well back in the midst of the original forest trees. It is spread over a broad surface of gently undulating ground and has a most unique and pleasing appearance. Its inhabitants were away at the war, and one of my brethren, a Baptist minister whom I had hoped to hear, had followed suit. He is the chaplain of the Spartanburgh regiment, and had marched with it to preach, pray, and fight the Yankees.

Now for the balloon. I started for Charleston at six a.m., and when at Union, a few miles away from Spartanburgh, fell in with the aerial machine and its proprietor. At the station he was surrounded by a crowd, all gleaning what they could from the heights above. It turned out that I was in luck, and that the gentleman who had come down from the heavens was the celebrated Professor Lowe, of aeronautic notoriety, who has been preparing for the last two years for his transatlantic voyage. I took my seat by his side and had one of the most pleasant and instructive chats that I have ever had in my life. He started from Cincinnati at four o'clock a.m., intending to go to Washington, but when crossing the Alleghany and Blue Mountains—covered with snow—the cold region altered the current of air to a southerly course, and he had to come to earth near Limestone Springs. When seen, the balloon caused a perfect panic, both among whites and blacks. The darkies cleared like mad, and the whites armed themselves for a combat, with the devil or Lincoln, they did not know which. At one o'clock p.m. he had travelled 1,200 miles at a speed of 125 miles an hour, the greatest distance ever accomplished in that space of time. He came to earth then, but was obliged to rise

again, as the people all fled or showed hostile intentions, and he descended two hours later near the railway track in the Union district. Here the men failed him, but a woman came forward and seized the rope he had thrown out—fancying, I imagine, that she had his Satanic majesty fairly by the tail. When he got out of his basket he was arrested. One old woman shook her fist at him and said, "Now do we know that you are old Abe Lincoln's son!" He assured them that his intentions were purely scientific and pacific, but they had him carried to Union village to imprison him, when, being a Freemason, and meeting among the crowd with some of the officers of that fraternity, he very fortunately escaped being lynched. He gave me a Cincinnati newspaper of Saturday morning, the 20th inst., which I shall always keep as a memento of my interview with him, and also to remind me of the fact that this was the first newspaper that had ever travelled 125 miles an hour or had come to earth from a height of over four miles. This was the elevation he had reached when crossing the mountain ridges. He gave me an accurate description and showed me diagrams of the balloon he intends crossing the Atlantic with in May or June next. It is so large that he can only fill it with gas at one place on this continent—Philadelphia. Its capacity is 750,000 cubic feet, its depth 135 feet, diameter 100 feet, and it will carry 23 tons weight. Beside the place in which he and his companions will live for the thirty to thirty-six hours' ride to Europe, it will have connected with it a metallic lifeboat. This boat is of sufficient capacity to carry twenty-three men and provisions, but he will have with him only six men. The capacity of the balloon which he carried on his basket-car was 40,000 cubic feet. While on this, his forty-seventh voyage, the thermometer was at and below zero for some time, and his supply of water was soon converted into ice, which melted again under the heat of South Carolina when he reached the earth. I told him I hoped to have the pleasure of seeing him descend at Halifax some time soon. He took my address, and will probably come down some fine afternoon in our children's playground. Should he arrive there before my return, do not let the natives fire at him while in the air, as they did in Carolina, and entertain him hospitably. This adventurous man is only twenty-nine years of age, with pleasing features and gentlemanly address, tall and fine-looking. Poor fellow, he came to earth at a bad time and in a dangerous neighborhood. It is very lucky he did not swing on a tree as a spy. I am writing on board a steamer, and must give it up.

SMYRNA, DELAWARE STATE, Tuesday, April 25, 1861.—I commenced writing on board a Chesapeake Bay steamer this morning, but the vibration was so great that I was obliged to give it up. Before retiring for the night I will add a few lines. After parting

from my friend Mr. Lowe, from the cloudy region above, I kept on my journey and reached Charleston at 10.30 p.m., where I found Stairs awaiting my arrival. The hotel people advised us to follow in the footsteps of a number of Northern travellers and return by the way of the Mississippi and Cincinnati, to avoid difficulties in Virginia and Maryland, where the seat of war is likely to be located. Indeed, it was assumed in Charleston that the two armies would come in contact yesterday or to-day in the neighborhood of Washington, and that it would be dangerous, if not impossible, to pass, as the railway bridges had all been destroyed in that neighborhood and the connecting steamers as well. We thought it best to consult the British Consul, and he also advised the same course. But as that would have kept us at least two or three weeks longer away from home in weather too hot to be comfortable, we concluded we would run the gauntlet and try our luck. We knew very well that, although disposed to act as savages towards each other, both North and South would act as Christians towards foreigners. I am delighted that we came on this way, as we have now passed through all the difficulties and are in a fair way of being with you again in a few days. The trains have all been loaded with Southern soldiers for the last three weeks, and now that we are near Northern territory I learned that those coming South are filled with the opposing forces—both sides converging upon Washington.

We left Charleston at 2.30 p.m. on Tuesday, and travelled constantly with the Southern troops until 6 p.m. yesterday, when we reached Norfolk, Virginia, and there were fortunate enough to catch a steamer bound for Baltimore. We saw the wreck and ruins of the celebrated navy yard at Norfolk, as we steamed down the bay, also the frigate "United States" anchored near this yard, this being the only vessel that the Virginians got possession of. Nine other ships of war were burned a few nights ago—or rather, six were sunk and three burned—by the United States troops and sailors ere they retired from the navy yard. One more frigate was burned on the stocks, and they succeeded in carrying out the frigate "Cumberland," after throwing over some of her guns, and we passed her at Fort Monroe, Old Point Comfort, four or five miles lower down the bay. The Virginians had rendered this step necessary by sinking ships across the navigable passage of the river, and they hoped to gain possession of the whole fleet. They would have done so in a day or two but for this procedure on the part of Commodore McCauley. The United States Government in this way has lost two of the finest ships of its navy, and eight others that could have been rendered available for active warfare. The steamer in which we sailed was brought to at Fort Monroe to be searched by United States officers, but we had no difficulty, and

after a substantial tea I retired to rest and had a most delightful sleep of six hours, awaking about sunrise to view the beauties of Chesapeake Bay. About seven o'clock we passed Fort McHenry and reached Baltimore. The difficulty now was how to go further. Fortunately a small steamer had a permit from the commanding officer at the United States fort—McHenry—to pass down stream for that day. We jumped on board her and ran along the coast and Chester River for sixty miles to Chester, in Maryland. There we disembarked and hired a wagon for ourselves and an express wagon for our luggage. We reached this place about half-past seven p.m. this evening, after a drive of nearly thirty miles through a pleasant agricultural part of Maryland. Here we are safe from strife and difficulty. The railroads have not been torn up nor the bridges destroyed beyond this, so we hope, God willing, to leave by the seven a.m. train to-morrow for Philadelphia.

Maryland will secede in a few days. Delaware, the small State in which we now are, is troubled and knows not what to do. She, too, when all the border slave States have retired, will, I dare say, cut herself adrift and join the new Confederacy. Matters are in an awful state in this country. Nothing but the interference of God's strong but peaceful arm can stay this bloodshed and ruin. We have been living for the last three or four weeks in the midst of all the emblems of war. Excitement such as you cannot conceive of has surrounded us. Soldiers of all classes, with their muskets, revolvers and bowie-knives, have been our companions, at the hotels, in the street and on the railways, and you cannot tell how pleasant it is to be located, if only for a single night, in a country village, away from such signs of war and where men are dressed in ordinary garb.

NEW YORK, Saturday night, April 27.—After starting from Smyrna with a trainload of Southern fugitives, we reached Philadelphia about eleven a.m.. There we saw Northern excitement, bayonets bristling, raw and ragged recruits drilling, and all the paraphernalia of war. But the city being larger than those in the South, this warlike sight was diluted by a larger amount of civilian life. "Death and destruction to the Southerner!" is the watchword here, and Brother Jonathan has got his Northern blood up like the men of the South. But, unlike the men of the South, the blood they have provided for spilling is mostly Irish and German. It is true there is a larger sprinkling of the Yankee blood in the volunteers than has been seen in any of their conflicts since the Revolutionary War of 1776, but the blood that will principally flow on this occasion, unless I am vastly mistaken, will be hired, and of European origin. There are Irish, German and French regiments, and I deeply regret to say that the English of New York are forming a company to oppose the South. The Southern

army is composed of real Southerners, men having a stake in the country. In one regiment of volunteers there are two privates who are worth together three millions of dollars. The North are laboring under the impression that they will speedily overrun the South and conquer them; but I tell them they will never be able to accomplish it if they live to be as old as Methusaleh.

In Philadelphia, opposite the Continental, is the Gerard House, unoccupied as a hotel. There are employed there now 300 cutters and an immense number of women with sewing-machines, making up military clothing and necessaries. The women here, as in the South, are similarly employed. In fact, men, women and children are all either on one side or the other, and all employed. The women as usual are working their tongues in unison. While Stairs was attending to some business in Philadelphia, Johnnie and I went out to Laurel Hill cemetery by train and returned by steamer down the Schuylkill River—the same route that we all took in 1854. It is not seen now to so great advantage as then, as the foliage is not fully out, but it is extended more—by the hand of death.

We left by the 6.30 p.m. train and arrived here at 11 p.m., being anxious to hear from home. We telegraphed from Philadelphia to Frank to have our letters at the Fifth Avenue Hotel awaiting us, and as soon as the office was reached they were in our hands and opened. I was delighted, dearest wife, to hear from you, and am very grateful to God to learn that you and our dear ones are well, or comparatively so. . . . Death has been in your midst, dear Fanny. Many changes have taken place since I left you. We should be grateful to God that we are as well as we are and that we have not to mourn the loss of those near and dear to us. . . . Give Mary Ann and Mr. Binney my love, and say to her that her "Pest" has been long enough away to permit her to get quite well. I generally find my patients improve rapidly after I leave home, and find them well on my return. I was surprised to meet Martyr Nutting here to-day. I went in to Tom Whitman's office and found him sitting there quite at home. . . . He goes to Halifax by this steamer. I am sorry our dear little boy is troubled with his teeth. I trust God will spare him to us. He is very dear to me, and I would not like to part with him, although I know if God took him it would be for his good. You do not mention whether or not Johnston has been a good and obedient boy during my absence. I sincerely trust to hear that he has. Tell him with Papa's kindest love that I often think of and pray for him, that he may be kept in the right way. Dear little Mary Ann must be kissed for Papa; and tell them all I hope to be able to do it soon myself. Joseph Northup is here with his wife and sister at this hotel. He tells me you were all anxious about us when you

learned that we were at the seat of war. Stairs telegraphed yesterday and told them to let you know that I was safe and well in Philadelphia. Mr. Archibald was glad to see us back in New York. He felt uneasy about us, knowing our locality and the difficulty that there would be in getting North. He says he telegraphed to Kinnear four days ago that we were safe at Charleston, Mr. Brunck, the Consul, having told him of our whereabouts and welfare. He felt the more anxious because he has been cut off from all communications with Lord Lyons at Washington for ten days, and only yesterday could get a messenger through. Two of Lord Lyons' special messengers were turned back by the United States authorities, and his Lordship has been cut off from all communication with the British government for that period. Archibald detained the "Persia" twenty-four hours at New York, and then had to let her go without his despatches. We were very fortunate to get off so cheaply. Many of the Northern fugitives had to pay as high as eighty or one hundred dollars to be conveyed only twenty or thirty miles. One man told Archibald that it cost him one hundred dollars for that distance alone. He reached here yesterday, and had a hurried, dangerous and expensive journey. Thank God it is now all over and we are out of the way of actual war.

I observe from your letter that you had received only mine of the 8th inst., dated at Raleigh, N.C. I have written two or three since that date, from Charleston and Savannah, which I hope have not gone astray, as they contain a kind of journal of my movements, sayings and doings. . . . I shall stay a day or two each in Boston, Portland and St. John, after leaving here. I am now very well, having got a good night's sleep, and being rested after so much hurried and night travel. We thought it best, as the weather is cold in Nova Scotia, not to return by the steamer, but to go via Portland and St. John. This will detain us a week or ten days later. I am very much obliged for the newspapers, but as yet I have only had time to glance at them. I learn enough to make me feel anxious about the political doings of the next month. I am strongly in hope that we shall carry King's and Victoria. . . . I am much obliged to Tupper for his two letters and shall write him on Monday morning. . . . Ask Charles or Dr. Tupper to attend to my resignation as chairman of the Executive Committee of the Club, if they have not already done it. I have made up my mind that it will be necessary for me to work less than ever I have done; and what work I do will have to be professional. I have suffered long with my head, and, worked as I am, to continue slaving myself will be more than injudicious. . . . Frank is recovering from a slight attack of rheumatism. He is at his office again after an absence of three or

four days. I may perhaps be able to write you a few lines from Portland.

MONDAY, April 29.—I shall not leave here, dear Fanny, until to-morrow night. I have written Tupper, and by getting his letter you will be able to learn what a queer Sunday I spent, and how unprofitably the evening service fell upon our ears. Little Jack said, when we came out, "Well! I don't think that sermon Mr. Beecher's will convert anyone." If I were Henry Ward Beecher I would not like to be shaved by a Southern barber. . . .

I feel pretty well. Say to the dear children that Papa hopes soon to be able to kiss them all. I have not time to write to Johnston, as Stairs is waiting for me to go out with him. Love to all. God bless you, dearest wife.

Ever your afft. husband,

D. McN. PARKER.

NOTES ON THE LETTERS OF 1861.

In the Boston letter, Mr. Laurie is probably a brother of General Laurie. "Tupper" is the doctor (Sir Charles). Ben Gray is the Halifax lawyer, B. G. Gray. "The Pryors" are Dr. John Pryor and family. He was Principal of Horton Academy, in my father's time, was now pastor of the old Cambridge Baptist Church, and shortly afterwards became pastor of the Granville Street Church, Halifax. Fairbanks and Greenwood were scions of well known Halifax families.

Mr. Archibald of the New York letters was then, and for many years afterwards, British Consul at New York. For his services there he was afterwards knighted. He was a member of the family of Nova Scotia Archibalds. Samuel Story was a Halifax man who had removed to New York, and was apparently much given to relieving the necessities of Haligonians stranded or gone to the bad in that city. It is too early in the history of some Halifax families to reveal what he told on the journey from Boston to New York, and a portion of the letter in which he figures is therefore omitted. My uncle, Francis G. Parker, was then in business in New York, and will be recognized as the "Frank" of these letters. Sir Dominick Daly was the father of Sir Malachi Daly, and the son referred to in the first New York letter is doubtless the latter.

My mother's cousin "James," of Philadelphia, was James Black, son of Samuel, who was the youngest son of Reverend William Black. Samuel's widow married a Methodist minister named Taylor who died about 1860. She died in Philadelphia in 1873. Mrs. Darst was Rebecca Black, her only daughter, and

a widow, who removed to Philadelphia with her mother and died there in 1867.

Miss Dix, mentioned in the Washington letter, was the celebrated Dorothea Dix whose efforts on behalf of the insane revolutionized the system of their treatment and stimulated public sentiment, everywhere, for the amelioration of their lot. My father had met her before. She was one of America's greatest women, and her biography should be read by everyone.

In regard to the Charleston letter of April 15th, it is worthy of remark that Daniel McNeill's grandson, bearing his name, should witness Fort Moultrie in action for the first time since the Revolutionary War, when he himself, on the first occasion when hostile shot were ever fired from that fort, took part in the assault upon it.

With further reference to this Charleston letter, my father has told me that when Major Anderson came ashore from Fort Sumter as a prisoner of war, he was conducted along the sidewalk past the Mills house, from the steps of which he (my father) obtained a close inspection of this man who has since figured among the military heroes of the United States as a history maker.

"The Clan Johnston," at Savannah, is a playful designation of the family of J. W. Johnson, Sr., whose descent is noted in the paper on Daniel McNeill and his descendants.

Dr. Crawley, visited at Limestone Springs, South Carolina, was Dr. Edmund A. Crawley, formerly pastor of the Granville Street Church, afterwards President of Acadia College, and who returned to that College as professor in 1866.

"Tom Whitman," found in New York on the return trip, was one of the Annapolis Whitmans.

The "unprofitable evening service" on Sunday, April 28th (which, by the way, was my father's thirty-ninth birthday), mentioned in the last of these letters, was at the Tabernacle in Brooklyn, where the mountebank preacher and savage abolitionist Henry Ward Beecher conducted his performances, and was one of "the lions" of the day to be seen and heard by travellers. That evening he preached a farewell sermon (?) to a New York regiment which was going to the front. The "sermon" was a brutal, blood-thirsty, blasphemous tirade against the Confederacy, in which the spirit of the evil one himself would appear to have usurped the pulpit. At its close, when the orator, by playing upon every string of the worst human passions, had worked the thousands of his audience into a sufficient degree of frenzy, he dramatically announced that a collection would be taken up, to the glory of God, for the purchase of army revolvers to add to the equipment of the troops about to go forth, in the strength of the Lord, upon His service. My father had stood the sermon pretty well, taking

it as a curious exhibition of the spirit of the times in the North; "but," said he in relating the incident, "this was too much for Stairs and me. We buttoned up our pockets and marched out." Certain pockets had buttons in those days. It is safe to assert that this was the only church collection he ever evaded.

When travelling, he was accustomed to jot down on paper facts, statistics and other notes of anything which impressed him as noteworthy, for future reference, and also brief memoranda of observations or comment. He was never without a pocket note-book, at home or abroad. It was part of his dress, almost, like the pocket stethoscope and instrument case. For the most part, it had a professional use, but from the hundreds of these little books which he left might be gathered extracts from his reading, thoughts, facts, figures, heads of his own public addresses, secular and religious, and notes of travel,—all strikingly reflective of himself. Unfortunately, however, his style of note-making was so terse and elliptical that any attempt to edit them would not be judicious. No mind but his own could fill out the structure from the outlined sketches, as he left them. Yet, as an illustration of his method, and because of the unusual subject-matter, I venture to reproduce some notes and observations touching upon one or more aspects of slavery as he saw it in his Southern tour of 1861.

"Sabbath School instruction in Northern and Southern States. The Nursery of the Church. Arrangements in basements of all the churches for this object—For Bible Classes and Infant schools—maps, figures, stories in prints, illustrated.

"Airy rooms—divisions—used for negro service in the afternoon. Hours early—9 a.m. . . . System of instruction—both North and South the same as ours. . . . Legal enactments against educating the blacks. To my mind one of the worst features of slavery and in direct opposition to Christ's command—go preach, etc., etc. *Search* the Scriptures, etc.

"The missionary may be sent *abroad*—he cannot teach the colored child or man (unless he breaks the law of some of the States) to read God's precious Word *at home*—for obvious reasons—they are orally instructed—and *religious* men (I use the term advisedly) on the Sabbath, on their estates where there is no church near, collect their slaves and families together and read and expound God's word to them—as in Mr. Smith's case at Beaufort. As a people the blacks are not anxious for education—at least if they yearned for it as a people they could in secret obtain it, but not publicly. Some of them are very apt to learn. Mr. Smith's lad instructed in three days by another—lying down on the grass—observed by his master with a spy glass, and when

they noticed that they were objects of attention, moved their position—but in three days when the stranger left, the slave could read.

“ No Sabbath school instruction for them as a class. At Raleigh my Baptist friend told me that the different denominations united for this purpose and had a union school—but a significant fact is to be observed—*it fell through*. Religious men touch this matter of direct Scriptural teaching, to this class, *tenderly*. I occasionally broached the subject in delicate and suggestive language—but found always that the ground was *boggy*. We generally, I may say invariably got stuck fast, could not advance, but retreated and branched off by some other track—Dr. Curtis’ son teaching a class on Sunday. Blacks, mostly Baptists and Methodists.

“ Their privileges. Cannot give testimony in courts of justice against white men. To strike a white man would be almost death. ‘ Can a nigger swear agin a white man in your country ? ’—said by a freeman (to me).

“ *Curfew Bell* in Charleston—Savannah—and Spartanburg—In latter place left the church, Methodist, at first curfew.

“ Police force always large. In Savannah 100 men—of whom twenty are horsemen. Slaves cannot carry firearms and know not how to use them.

“ This system dwarfs their intellect and unfits them for intellectual or physical organization. Hence not so dangerous or dreaded by their masters as if they were educated.

“ Are not allowed to drink. Heavy fines imposed on those who sell liquor—consequently are a temperate class—good, and almost the only good about the system, except that they are *well fed*.

“ Their diet—Hours of work small—Make money and often purchase themselves, and I presume being considered thus as property and talked of as such—a man may be said correctly *to own himself*.

“ McNeills—Timber gang leave work on Wednesday. Their tasks—not heavy. 350 hands cotton picking the average.

“ Their privileges—Cow, pig, hens, rice, potatoes, doctors.

“ Happy in the evening with their music and their games.

“ Imitative qualities—Their wood cries, like a railroad whistle—on rafts between Cape Fear and Fayetteville.

“ Like children—lose their clothes.

“ Respectful and quiet and orderly.

“ Affectionate, as in the First Baptist chapel, at the tombstone in Charleston—touching scene.

“ Their freedom is not to be brought about suddenly, but by gradual legislation. Education an essential element, and of this a large part should be religious instruction to fit them morally and

intellectually for their change of position and status. Northern men who know the South and have studied the question concur in this opinion. Violent abolitionists, who only think and speak of freedom and the chains, would have them suddenly uplifted. It would be ruinous to them, morally and spiritually.

“The free negro—who evidently wished them free as air—said (to me) ‘Lord, Mar’sr, they all starve.’”

“If conquered and brought back into the Union they will still retain slavery within its present bounds and limits, doubtless looking eventually to future relief and final but gradual emancipation from the present thralldom.”

My impression is that these notes were designed as the outline for some public address to be given after his return home.

CHAPTER VI.

1861 to 1871.

"The kindly-earnest, brave, foreseeing man,
Sagacious, patient, dreading praise, not blame."

—James Russell Lowell.

In the closing letter of the series in the chapter just concluded, the writer said: "I have made up my mind that it will be necessary for me to work less than ever I have done, and what work I do will have to be professional. I have suffered long with my head, and, worked as I am, to continue slaving myself will be more than injudicious."

Though he did not adhere to this self-imposed prescription for his case, he did follow a resolution he made to break away more frequently for recreation, and from this time his "runs," as he called his brief trips in the various Provinces and the Eastern States, became more frequent. One favorite and healthful diversion was a drive of a week or two with my mother through some favorable section of Nova Scotia, using his own horse and carriage. A place frequently resorted to in New Brunswick was Fredericton, to visit the Wilmots and enjoy the delights of the St. John river and "Evelyn Grove." He took more time, too, for combining recreation with professional profit in attending meetings of various medical societies, both in the upper and lower provinces.

His outing for 1862 was in company with an old friend and patient, Mr. Robert Morrow, of Halifax, who was travelling for health's sake. They sailed from Halifax on September 10th, in a Greek steamship bound up the St. Lawrence. The letters which follow will tell of this tour, and other things.

RIVER ST. LAWRENCE,

NEAR THE ISLAND OF BIC,

SEPTEMBER 13TH, 1862.

SATURDAY, 6 P.M.

MY DEAREST FANNY,—

We have arrived thus far on our voyage with nothing to alloy its pleasure. After parting from you and waving adieu to the children at the cottage I took a cup of coffee at breakfast by way of an introduction to the table. The passage to the Gut of Canso was delightful. We entered its narrow part at 8.30 o'clock on

Thursday morning and had a delightful sail through its beautiful and varied scenery (which Capt. Ewing says closely resembles the Bosphorus); passed outside of Prince Edward Island, not far from the shore, near to but not in sight of the Magdalen Islands, and then shaped our course for Gaspé, the nearest Canadian land. Since making this point we have passed the dreaded island of Anticosti—but not to see it—and have had the Labrador coast on our starboard side nearly all day while running within four miles of the Canadian land, examining as we pass them, with our glasses, the numerous villages, churches and fishermen's houses which skirt the shore, while rising, amphitheatre-like, in the rear is a range of mountains very elevated, so much so at one point as to measure 3,973 feet above the level of the water it overlooks. Altogether the scenery is bold and picturesque, made up as it is of so many elements of interest. Until last night the sea and gulf have been as placid as the first lake at Dartmouth on a fine day. We had then heavy squalls with thunder and lightning for an hour, after which it settled down and became calm or comparatively so, but I was *disturbed in the stomach* while dressing, and could not appear at breakfast, but made up for the omission at 12 and 3 when the luncheon and dinner bells rang. Yesterday the wind came from the Canadian land hot and almost oppressive. In the evening it was like a West Indian night and we paced the deck until 11 o'clock—thinly clad—viewing the sheet lightning far away on the Labrador coast. To-day the wind comes over the high lands of Labrador from the icy regions beyond, so cold and chilly that we have all taken to our greatcoats, and I am writing by a cosy bright fire which burns, home-like, in a large and familiar-looking grate, making us all look and feel happy and comfortable. Our captain, Ewing by name, is a very gentlemanly man, and a good and watchful sailor, always at his post. His first officer is also a fine sailor-like man, well educated, who has been for years with this captain in the Australian and Mediterranean trade. He knew the Coxworthys out in Australia and was asking after them. The second officer is a Mr. Parrot, a nephew of Mr. Bourinot, of Sydney. He knows the Marshalls well. These two officers, with the chief engineer, dine in the cabin with us. The only cabin passengers besides Morrow and myself are Mr. Mellidew, an Edinburgh medical student, and his young brother, a lad about thirteen years of age,—the sons of the charterer of the ship, who are taking advantage of this good opportunity to see something of America. Their father is a London merchant, and one of his clerks, a Mr. Jacobson—^s Dane—is on board also as supercargo. You have now a list and some idea of our companions of the past four days. The ship is a splendid vessel of nearly 1,000 tons and about 400 horse-power. She is owned by a

Greek merchant in London, and is named the "Mavrocordatos" after a friend of the owner, who delights in this lengthy handle—and who, until recently, was minister of finance to King Otho, of Greece. This, then, is the explanation of the mystery that hung round the unusual name of the ship in which you saw your husband embark. We have amused ourselves principally with eating and drinking, any amount of deck exercise, quoits—using Indian rubber quoits instead of iron, watching the ship's company at their work—occasionally splitting our sides with laughter when Jack is in chase of the pigs—five of which are on board, of small size and with short bristles and most of them without tails. Every now and then they are turned out from their coops for air and exercise and then the whole ship's company set to work to catch them when their health has been thus improved. Such a row and such fun! *We big children* enjoy it almost as much as Johnston and Mary Ann or Willie would. Besides this the crew and a fore passenger give us nightly concerts with the flute and other instruments. Then I have always my books to fall back upon, or if not my own, those of somebody else. I have read Wilkie Collins' "Dead Secret," Longfellow's "Evangeline" and am now at "Hiawatha." These latter bear reading over and over again. "British India" I shall be next at. Tell Mary Ann and dear little Willie that we have brought any quantity of little birds from Nova Scotia and Prince Edward Island. They came on board exhausted and became so tame that they ran all about our feet as unconcerned as if they had been reared in a house. One or two came into the cabin while we were at meals. Young Ross Mellidew, urged on by Morrow and myself, put some salt on the tail of one and then seized the bird amid shouts of laughter. This is the first prize of the kind that I have ever seen taken in this way. I can well recollect when I was not so successful as I chased the sparrows and robins from field to field wasting salt to no purpose. We are just off Father Point, the first station for pilots, and the mate is carrying up powder to fire a cannon to bring one on board. I hope he will bring us some late American news—as we are *languishing* for it, not having seen a telegram or paper now for three days or more. If we learn that "Washington is safe"—in the hands of the Southerners, and Baltimore also, none on board will weep for the calamity that has befallen "the greatest nation and the best government on the face of the earth." George Francis Train, of English Tram railway notoriety, and the great stump orator for the Union in England, came out to Halifax in this ship and left her for the United States as soon as she reached port. I should think they had pretty high times on board during his stay, from what I can learn. He is an ultra and a most violent Yankee, and all on board beside were John

Bulls and a trifle "secesh" in their opinions. Long after midnight the arguments and noise went on—but now the sound of such oral warfare is hushed—we are "all one brother" and cannot so much as get up an argument. Morrow has improved greatly. He eats *all the time*, walks the deck from morning till night, and sleeps like a top. Tell his wife that he is as jolly as a lord—indeed I think I may say the same of both of us. As regards sleep I am making up for lost time and now make a business of it—there is no *retail* about it as there was in Halifax. I do the thing *wholesale*. Our guns and rockets were answered by rockets and three lights from the lighthouse at Father Point, but all the pilots are away. This is the terminal point of the telegraph line on the St. Lawrence, and Mr. Jacobson has telegraphed to his agents in Montreal to announce our approach. The telegraph operator intercepts ships and steamers here by a boat and announces their arrival promptly so that parties in England interested in the shipping of this great river may get the earliest intelligence of the arrivals outward.

QUEBEC, Monday, September 15th. After leaving Father Point I turned in, and on going on deck at 8 o'clock on Sunday morning found our ga'ant ship in charge of a French pilot, who had been brought on board by our guns and rockets when off the Island of Bic, 150 miles below Quebec. Our sail up the St. Lawrence was delightful. All yesterday was fine, and as far as the eye could reach, both up and down the river—especially on the south side—there was to be seen one continuous line of beautifully white villages and towns, with churches of immense size studding the whole coast every here and there. The *stream* of houses occupies the low lands near the margins of the river, while stretching far back up the sides of the hills and mountains are the cultivated farms all regularly laid out and divided into narrow strips as the manner of the French is—while far away in the distance are the mountainous scenery and woodland, adding additional beauty by giving a bold and picturesque background. I had not the most remote idea that the population of the St. Lawrence was anything like as great as it is. I should think that from Bic to Quebec (inclusive) it must amount to nearly our whole population. We passed by and between numerous islands. Gros Island, thirty miles below Quebec, on which the quarantine establishment of the St. Lawrence is located, and Orleans Island, thirty miles in length and densely populated, stretch along the river and are beautiful objects. At 9 o'clock last evening we cast anchor below the port, remained on board all night and disembarked at 6 o'clock this morning, the "Mavrocordatos" proceeding onwards to Montreal. We have taken up our quarters at Russel's hotel where we are very comfortable.

After breakfast I went to the post office for letters—found none—but hope that one may arrive by to-night's mail from you—and also some Halifax papers, which, if not already sent, ask Mr. Venables to mail for me as I shall presently direct. I then went to the military hospital to see Dr. Crerar of the 60th Rifles, who was greatly surprised and very glad to see me. He showed me all around the Citadel, from which there is a magnificent view of the river, the city and the surrounding country, as also of the Plains of Abraham, where Wolfe and Montcalm met and fell in battle just as victory crowned the English arms. Monuments to both have been erected and are objects of great interest to all visitors. I called at the Governor-General's and saw Lord and Lady Mulgrave, Lady Laura and Katey. They were all pleased to see me, and roared when I told them of the coachman and the 'osses. Lord Mulgrave said they wished to telegraph to me to join them at Shediac and come on with them in the Canadian yacht—"but they diddle." Of course I took the measure of the compliment. They all leave here this afternoon for Montreal and Niagara. The delegates have all sloped for Montreal, Niagara and Boston. The newspapers will give you the result of their deliberations. I imagine they have spent some money and accomplished nothing. Would that it were otherwise for the good of the country. I hope your father is better. Tell him to take care of his feet and his stomach and caution Emma to keep the *goodies* in the background. Give them all my love. Tell M. A. Binny to be *cautious* until my return, and then if she wishes to have a *blow out* I will be on hand to correct the after-consequences. Remember me most kindly to Mrs. Katzman and Anna and all the neighbors. I hope Johnston is a good and obedient boy, learning his lessons thoroughly and keeping himself neat and tidy. Give him a great deal of love from his papa and say all kinds of loving things to Mary Ann and Willie. Poor little "Small Potatoes" is yet too young and innocent to appreciate affectionate messages. I shall leave here for Montreal, Kingston and Niagara in two or three days and you may look for us in the next Boston steamer unless we should change our minds, of which you will be duly apprised. Ever, dearest Fanny,

Your affectionate husband,

D. MCN. PARKER.

P.S.—The steamer has ceased to run on the pleasure trips to the river Saguenay so I shall miss seeing its beautiful scenery. It would have taken us three days to accomplish the thing. So this will be something in store for you, my dear wife, at some future day—when we will visit it together. I very much wish you were my travelling companion now. I often think of you and our dear

ones and pray that God will spare our lives to meet again, and that we may, by His grace, be enabled to bring up those entrusted to our care for a time in the fear and love of Him who died for them and for us. Say to Mr. Johnston that I shall see Minnie. I very much regret not having seen him before leaving. I did not know that he had returned until the afternoon preceding my departure. I wish you would open all letters—and tell Venables to reply in accordance with circumstances to those that he can attend to. We have no news from the contending armies that can be relied on. The general impression here is that the Northern army is disorganized and demoralized by repeated defeats and bad handling, and that they (the soldiers and officers) are growing restive and hard to manage and keep in check. I hope your letter will bring me cheering news from Foster. Write to him, dear Fanny, and call his attention to the one thing needful, the salvation of his soul. A word in season now while God is afflicting his body may prove of incalculable benefit to his never dying spirit. I long to hear all about your movements—what you are doing, how the children are getting on,—in short, all that a loving wife can write and tell a loving husband. What of Dr. Pryor's sermon on Sunday, and the attendance? Who has charge of my Bible class? Please call and see Mr. Selden relative to it. I came away in such a hurry that I could not make provision for it. I hope he has done so. It should be looked after by some competent person every Lord's day, so that the scholars may not stray away and become careless. The "Arabia" leaves Boston, Wednesday, October 1st, and we will, God willing, be with you on her. As soon as this reaches you write to me immediately at the "Clifton House, Niagara, Canada." Tell Johnston to enclose me a letter and tell me all about his success in reference to the half dollar prize—as also how he is getting on with his fun and frolics. The dinner bell has just rung. So farewell, dearest wife.

D. P.

Call and see Mrs. Morrow as soon as you can and tell her all about our run, as Morrow's head will not stand writing very well as yet, and she will wish to hear all about him.

QUEBEC, Wednesday, September 17th, 1862.

MY DEAR WIFE,—

Ere taking our departure from this city, which we do to-day at 4 o'clock p.m., by steamer "Columbia" for Montreal, I will occupy a few minutes by giving you a few of my jottings by the way. Yesterday we unexpectedly found Tremain Twining's name on the hotel books and soon announced ourselves to him.

Morrow has a friend here, J. J. W., formerly a merchant of Halifax, but now in business here. He has been very kind in showing us the lions, and *in this way* has discharged a bill which he left on my books when taking his departure from Nova Scotia. I have also met Dr. Miles of the Artillery, and yesterday paid a very pleasant visit to my old patients the Peters', who were in Halifax living in Brunswick Street during the construction of the new barracks. They came near eating me up, and the old mother, a French-Canadian woman, almost embraced me. They have a very lively recollection of the kindness of the Halifax people, and take every opportunity of reciprocating. You will remember Mrs. Simon Peters, who was a passenger with us when we came on to Canada after our marriage. After closing my last letter, under W.'s guidance we embarked in a carriage to inspect more closely the Plains of Abraham and the heights up which Wolfe carried his army ere engaging Montcalm. The inscription on his small and unimposing monument briefly but eloquently tells the result as far as that brave man is concerned. It reads: "Here fell Wolfe, September 13th, 1759." They might have added the word "*victorious*"—but soldiers generally like brevity, *unless they belong to the neighboring Union*, and this monument having been erected by soldiers to his memory on the very spot where he fell, tells the tale of a nation's loss in as few words as possible. From this we drove to Spencer's Wood, the beautiful seat of the former Governors of Lower Canada. The residence was destroyed some years since by fire and a large and commodious building is only now being placed on the site of the old one. It is a brick structure and the Peters' have the contract. The drives through the grounds are extensive and English park-like. We next visited the cemetery, which has natural beauties, and these are aided by art, but it cannot be named in comparison with those of Boston, New York, and Philadelphia, all of which you have seen. On our way there we came across quite a large encampment of gypsies. We got out of the carriage and went to inspect their cold and dreary-looking houses or camps, and to converse with them. As much as I have travelled through England and Scotland I never before fell in with any of the tribe. Their tents are merely bent sticks covered with blankets and closely resemble the covering of our ice carts. They are about six or eight feet long by six in width, closed at one end and open at the other, not nearly so warm or comfortable either for summer or winter as our Indian camps. Their fires are all outside their camps, on stones. They had any quantity of children, some of them perhaps stolen from more comfortable English homes. This encampment has but recently arrived here from Devonshire, England. They say they live by trading in horses, but I presume the

hen-roosts, gardens and potato fields suffer—as they are looked upon on the other side of the Atlantic as notorious thieves, and it is not probable that this propensity has been left behind in the Old Country. I noticed by the morning paper I brought away with me from Halifax that an encampment of five or six had reached *Halifax*. Look out for dear little Willie that he is not stolen! Our drive back was along the beautiful valley of the St. Charles River, on which not many years ago the vessel that Jacques Cartier arrived at Quebec in was discovered, so report says, buried fifteen feet below the surface by alluvial deposit. She has probably remained there at rest since 1535. Quebec more closely resembles Edinburgh than any other place I have seen, and, were it not for the near proximity of the river, the bold and high rock on which the castle and fortifications stand might readily be taken for that of Edina the fair. It is a walled town entered by numerous gates, at each of which a military guard is stationed. The suburbs are extensive, but on the whole, the city has a dilapidated appearance, and, architecturally speaking, is not to be compared with Halifax. One is struck by the vast size of the churches (Roman Catholic). These are not only large, but numerous to an extent that one could hardly anticipate, having a knowledge of the population. On Tuesday afternoon we visited the Lunatic Asylum, an extensive structure, not modern in its appearance or appliances, but sufficiently large to hold between 400 and 500 patients. We were kindly received, and shown through all the building. We then visited the celebrated fall of Montmorency,—small in breadth when compared to Niagara, but 100 feet greater in height. The scenery there is majestic and the fall would be a perfect wonder to one who had not already visited the leviathan Niagara. Its waters are made use of to drive the machinery of saw mills and manufactories. Close to the fall is the residence of the late Duke of Kent, a beautiful building owned by a Mr. Hall, who also possesses the Falls and much land on either side of the river up as far as what is termed the “Natural Steps,” a most romantic spot and a perfect curiosity in its way. The Prince of Wales was most interested in this spot, the more so, as it once was the abode of his grandfather. Over these Falls, right on their brink, was erected a few years ago a suspension bridge, which one morning fell with two or three people and a horse and wagon on it. Of course eternity was speedily present to the unhappy victims, and nothing was ever heard of them after. A remarkable story is told of the escape of a gentleman and his horse and wagon, through the instinct of the animal. Nothing on earth could force the animal over, although accustomed to the crossing. The man had his feet on the bridge, and was tugging and thrashing the poor horse, when in an instant the anchors of the opposite side

gave way and he was miraculously saved by the backing of his horse. The race to the mills and a minor fall are also objects of interest, and have connected with them some harrowing tales of death to the venturesome. The drive out and back to Quebec was about seven or eight miles in length each way (16 in all) and it was through one continuous village of "habitants" or French settlers. Every here and there could be seen one of the immense chapels, just referred to, while small roadside chapels and crosses more conveniently placed for the passers-by and market people, who are devotionally inclined, attract the sight. Here in early morn and late at night these simple farmers bend the knee to crosses and saints—and call it worshipping God, while their beads are counted and their patron saint invoked, rather than the one true God.

This morning (Wednesday) we sallied forth to visit the large Marine Hospital, and were much gratified by the visit and the attention shown us. The visit was profitable in a professional point of view.

MONTREAL, THURSDAY, SEPTEMBER 18TH.

We sailed in the "Columbia" at 4 p.m., and had a delightful sail through magnificent and varied scenery for eighty miles, when I retired for the night, and awoke to find myself here. I slept soundly and well. The boat was full of passengers, and among the deck people, we discovered a number of gypsies bound higher up the St. Lawrence. We are at the St. Lawrence Hall. Here we found Edmund Twining, and Tremain Twining follows us up by to-night's boat. We were disappointed at not receiving letters before leaving Quebec, but I forgot to tell you to direct them by "Express mail via St. John and Portland." Had they been thus addressed we would have received them before leaving.

. After breakfast we sallied forth and the first person we tumbled over was Mr. Ferrier, who very kindly offered us every attention and has been acting as our guide to the Exchange, the Victoria bridge and the water works—all objects of interest and profitable to an observer in many ways. You will recollect the Bridge. When last here with you, Wilmot and the gentlemen of our party were all down in the bottom of the St. Lawrence in the coffer-dams, seeing the foundation laid. Now, as a special favor granted to Mr. Ferrier, we have been shown the minutix of the superstructure. It is a magnificent work—the masterpiece of scientific engineering. I bought at the bridge a lithograph of the structure as it appears, both in winter and summer, so that we may be reminded in after years, if we are spared to grow old and *gray*, that I was at the bottom of the great and rapid St. Lawrence—even below its natural bed, and after-

wards walked over its surface, suspended on iron. We shall leave here in two or three days for Ottawa city, viewing, as we ascend the river of that name, the fine scenery of its bank; thence we will go by boat and train to Kingston to see Minnie, and from there to Niagara—after which we will go to Boston direct, and take the next boat, two weeks from yesterday—at least these are our present plans, and unless they are providentially interrupted, will be carried out. As we shall be moving about so constantly I would like you to address all letters and papers to me at the Revere House, Boston, and I trust I shall have a *feast* on my arrival in that city. I need tell you nothing of this city. It has not altered materially in appearance since you were here—but has in extent. About 500 stone or brick buildings have been erected annually ever since the date of our visit, and this year its population is 101,000 (one hundred and one thousand) an increase of over 20,000 since 1854. This afternoon I go with Mr. Muir, a son-in-law of Dr. Cramp, to visit a new and elegant Baptist chapel that is to be opened here in two weeks from this time, also the vast and beautiful English Cathedral, which I am told is the finest building of the kind on this continent. I have not seen any newspapers (of Halifax) since leaving, and this afternoon must go to the Exchange and have a read of the latest dates there. I am rather *down*, because Lee and Jackson are not inside instead of outside Washington and Baltimore. I fear my Confederate friends have got rather the worst of it, notwithstanding their success at Harper's Ferry. Better luck the next time, I hope. Would that the war would come to an end and peace once more reign throughout our continent. What evils, privations, horrors and everything that one's mind can conjure up attend the battlefield and the country through which contending armies pass and meet in strife. God grant that our happy little Province may always be exempt from such direful evils and distress.

I long to learn something of you and the dear children. I was dreaming of you all last night, and often do so. May God grant that we may all meet again at home in health and strength. . . .

I hope your father is himself again and that he will avoid *all* the exciting causes of such attacks; but whether careful or careless, I daresay he will occasionally have slight "twinges" of the enemy in his understanding. Morrow still suffers a little with his head, but is much improved since leaving—in strength, appetite and obtaining rest at night. Poor fellow, I trust that he will be eventually quite restored to fill the useful position in our Province which he must occupy from his talents and tastes if life and strength are continued to him. What of poor Foster? I long to hear from him or of him. When you write, please give my love to him and all at Walton. Col. Ben is to be stationed at Quebec

I hear. Mr. Duncan is on the small island opposite Montreal and in the centre of the river. It must be a delightful spot to reside on in summer.

And now, my dearest wife, farewell. You will probably hear from me again ere my return—probably from Niagara or Kingston. With kindest regards to all at the cottage, Kate's, the Mount, Belle Vue, the Binneys, etc., etc. Ever your affectionate husband.

D. MCN. PARKER.

P.S.—Address “Dr. Parker, to arrive at The Revere House, Boston.” Tell Tupper if you see him to write me. I have seen the names of the Hamiltons on the Quebec hotel book, but have not met them. The L's . . . are apparently travelling with them. Tell little Willie papa will soon be at home again. Say to Johnston that I should enjoy a nice little note from him very much. Kiss dear Mary Ann and Laura McNeill for Papa. May God preserve and protect you, dear wife. I must hasten to mail this hurriedly written scrawl.

Recollect:—“By Express mail via St. John & Portland.” Put this on the top of the envelope and pay the postage, which will be something extra. D. P.

KINGSTON, C. W.,

SEPTEMBER 23RD, 1862,

TUESDAY, 2 P.M.

MY DEAREST WIFE,—

You will remember our stopping at the wharf of this city just ere we commenced running through the Thousand Islands, one morning at break of day, when from our little stateroom window we got a peep at the nearest building and I stepped out on the pier merely that I might say I had been in Kingston. Well, at that time I hardly ever expected to see it again, but after an interval of eight years I find myself addressing a letter to my dear companion of that voyage, from the *interior* of the same city. I forgot to mention in my last that I had met James Mitchell, who kindly invited me to accept the hospitalities of his house, which I was unable to do, Robt. Willis, Duncan McDonald (formerly railway contractor in Nova Scotia, whose family I attended in Halifax at John Butler's, Bedford), and strange to say, Francis R. Parker and daughter, of Shubenacadie, who are staying out of Montreal with Judge Monk. How he came to know the Judge I cannot imagine, and did not ask. On the day we were out at the Hostermans', at the wedding, you will recollect that we went through the Iron Rolling Works—but did not see the metal passing through all its varied changes until it comes out in sheets.

Well, in Montreal, I have seen the operation on a grand and extensive scale. Ferrier took us to a work of this kind in which he had been interested, where we saw nails of all kinds, from a carpet tack to a railroad spike, being turned out by the ton, while the great sheets were rolled off by the quantity, large enough to satisfy the most needy and ambitious hardware man. These operations were being performed by men "stripped to the buff" with only their trousers on, while streams of water ran off them in perspiration.

I called upon my old friend, the Principal of McGill University, Dr. Dawson, who was pleased to see me and pressed me to stay with him all the day and evening in order that we might discuss subjects in Natural Science in which we both take an interest. The library and museum of the College were inspected, and both are very valuable, well arranged and costly. I was specially interested in a large collection of Indian relics which he has recently discovered at the site of the Indian village of Hochelaga, where Jacques Cartier, in 1535, first met the Indians of this neighborhood. The history of that remarkable man and his times tells us much of this celebrated spot, but for a century or more its exact position has been unknown to man. Dr. Dawson was the first to point out (last year) the spot so long searched for and longed after by North American antiquarians. The city in extending its streets and laying water pipes had occasion to dig down to a depth of fifteen feet, when the laborers were surprised to find a quantity of bones of animals. Dr. Dawson at once visited the place, commenced explorations, and found a vast quantity of the remains of a large village, such as the bones of all the animals of the country used as food, pipes, pottery, the places where their cooking had been done, Indian corn prepared for cooking, etc., etc. The site of this ancient and extinct village or Indian town is just under half a mile or more below the spot where we sat when we ascended the summit of the mountain—about two-thirds down the slope and near to the upper residences. Dawson also kindly gave me a note of introduction to Sir Wm. E. Logan, the great Provincial geologist of Canada, and we had an interesting inspection of the best geological museum in the world. The museum of the Natural History Society, of Canada, was also thrown open to us, through the same influence, so that altogether I may say that we had a feast of science on the last day of our stay in Montreal,—which we wound up in the evening by asking Capt. Ewing, Mr. Jacobson and the first officer of the "Mavrocordatos" to dine with us at our hotel, the St. Lawrence Hall. Tremain and Edmund Twining who were staying at the hotel joined our table at dessert, so altogether we had a pleasant little party, which

broke up early, at 8½ p.m. I drank cold water, which did not agree with the tobacco smoke of my six smoking friends, as all the next day it made me feel sickish. On Saturday morning at 6½ o'clock, we left for Lachine, a village just above the rapids of that name on the other side of the Island of Montreal, when we embarked on a steamer for Ottawa. To avoid the rapids on a portion of the river we had to leave the boat and cross by railroad over a distance of 12 miles to Grenville where another steamer was waiting for us. We reached the capital of Canada (that is to be) about 7 o'clock in the evening. The river scenery is beautiful in many places. Every here and there the river expands into small lakes, as at the Lake of the Two Mountains, which gives expanse and variety to the scene as we rapidly glide up stream against the current at a rate of fifteen miles an hour. At the first village we crossed the old boundary between Upper and Lower Canada, and at Ottawa City, formerly called Bytown, the river formed the boundary. We passed immense rafts on the way, under tow of steam tugs, some of which had several small houses on them and were manned by between 30 and 50 lumbermen. All these rafts had run the rapids of the river by what are called the timber slides. The Ottawa river furnishes now by far the greater part of the timber shipped from Canada at Montreal and Quebec. As we neared the city the scenery became altered from low to elevated and deeply indented river banks, most beautiful and picturesque at the place where the Capital stands. These high and very steep banks are wooded from summit to base by dense groves of beautiful cedar. The first part of our trip we had Robert Duport as a fellow-passenger, and at one of the lumbering villages on the way, were joined by Mr. Menzies of the Bank of B. N. America. He is the young man who is to marry one of the Miss Cochrans. He was particular in his enquiries after Mr. and Mrs. Binney and your father. On the following day we walked out to see the two celebrated falls and rapids, which indeed could be observed from my bedroom windows, but as they were near we inspected them more closely. Both are grand and well worth a visit. They are called the Rideau and Chaudiere falls and rapids, and here it was that the Prince of Wales ran the rapids on a timber slide, which we could not do, the day being the Sabbath. Along the banks and far back from the Ottawa on tributary streams are the finest and largest sawmills of Canada, driven of course by water-power. In the lower Provinces we have no idea of the magnitude of the lumber business of this great country—and the deals and lumber that we have seen piled up awaiting sale would astonish you. Just opposite our hotel was

the great Parliamentary Square on which the most extensive and magnificent buildings for this purpose that I have ever seen out of Washington and London are in course of construction. Their extent you may conceive of when I tell you that by a calculation made in one of the local newspapers by its editor, the three steam engines required to heat the buildings by steam will consume annually *seventeen thousand cords of wood*. The City of Ottawa is just like a large village spreading itself over a large extent of country; its population is only sixteen thousand. Morrow and I went to a small Baptist church (just being erected) in the morning. The Sunday School was going on in the vestry when we entered, and the sermon was preached by a clever young man, in the same place. I went to the same place in the evening and heard the same man. The Hamiltons and L's. . . . were before us here also. Morrow and I occupied the same apartments as Mary Ann and Mrs. John used when there. I notice that William is rather proud of the Black blood that runs in his veins—as everywhere I meet with his name on the hotel books, it is “W. Black Hamilton,” the William being sunk in the more *distingué* name of Black. It was great fun for Morrow and me to listen to the hotel-keeper's account of the affection that exists between Mr. and Mrs. L. He said he never saw a couple more affectionate, although they were far from being coupled as to age,—and the word was perpetually “Geordie dear”; “Yes, Freddie dear!” The hotel man was Yorkshire all over, and the best part of the joke was to hear it from his Yorkshire lips with all the brogue. On Monday morning we took the train and arrived at Prescott, where our party left the *cholera steamer* and crossed over to Ogdensburg in 1854. Here we had to remain from 9.30 a.m. to 1.30 p.m. before the arrival of the Grand Trunk train for this place, which was reached at 4 o'clock in the afternoon. The drive was through a sandy and consequently dusty soil, the country thinly inhabited. After dining I drove over to Col. Ingall's to make enquiries relative to Minnie's abode. They were very glad to see me and pressed me to dine with them a second time. Ingall sent his servant out to ascertain whether Agnes was at the Revd. Mr. Rodgers' or at Waterloo, a country village four miles out of Kingston close to the cemetery, where Minnie has lately taken lodgings. The reply was, that she was at Mrs. Greenwood's, where they formerly lodged. On driving there I found her with the Rynds, who have temporarily gone into these lodgings. Agnes, having heard from her father that I was on my way, fully expected me. We then went on to their lodgings out of town. . . . It was quite dark when I reached her lodgings, and Agnes not finding her (Minnie) in the house, well

knew where she was to be found. So she went to the cemetery to bring her home and to announce my arrival. After breakfast I visited the military hospital, by the request of Dr. Alden, who was stationed some time in Halifax, and there met Ewing. At 10 o'clock I drove out to Waterloo again and found Minnie more composed and inclined to talk about her health and future prospects. I think she has pretty well made up her mind to leave this in two or three weeks, first for Newport, Rhode Island, and then later in the season for Prince Edward Island. . . . Col. and Mrs. Ingall have done everything they could for her and are never tired of extending to her acts of sympathy and friendship. I called on Dr. Yates, the civil practitioner who was called to see Wilkieson in his last hours, but he was absent and I failed to see him. His family live in summer about four miles out of Kingston, and he had probably gone there. I went to the cemetery to see the spot where Wilkieson's remains are placed. It is a beautiful spot and the headstone is in the form of a cross of white marble, with appropriate inscription and surrounded by an iron railing.

I leave by the Ontario boat for Toronto at six this evening to visit the great Industrial Exhibition of Canada being held there just now. On Thursday, if God wills, we shall go to Niagara either by boat or train, according as the lake is tranquil or the contrary. I have a very vivid recollection of our last crossing Ontario from Niagara and the sail down to this place—formerly the Capital of Upper Canada. The day is beautiful and the lake calm, and we hope to have as pleasant a run up to Toronto as you and I had from thence in 1854. . . . I long to hear from you and all at Halifax. We were obliged to leave Montreal before your letters had arrived, a great disappointment, but on reaching Niagara I hope to get them, as Tremain Twining said he would forward them there from the St. Lawrence Hall whence they would arrive from Quebec. I long again to hear the prattle of the children and to be at home in the enjoyment of all those blessings which God has so abundantly given me and which constitute what one may truthfully say in my case, a happy home. I'm homesick and would be off to-morrow if I could reach Halifax any earlier for the early departure. Morrow's health still improves. He has just written to his wife. Kind love to all at Belle Vue, the Cottage, Mount, Kate's, the Binneys, Nuttings, &c., &c. And now, dearest wife, with much love for yourself and kisses to Johnston (if he will accept them now that he has got into jacket and trousers), Mary Ann, Willie and Laura,

I remain ever your afft. husband,

D. McN. PARKER.

NOTES ON THE LETTERS OF 1862.

First letter: Mr. Venables (afterwards the doctor) was then bookkeeper and dispensing clerk at the office.

The story of "the coachman and the 'osses" concerns one of the *nouveaux riches* then climbing in Halifax society.

The peculiar word used by the Earl of Mulgrave illustrates a difficulty in pronouncing his "n's" which his Lordship had. He had just preceded my father from Halifax, on a visit to Viscount Monck, who was then Governor-General of Canada. Lord Mulgrave succeeded Sir Gaspard LeMarchant as Lieutenant-Governor of Nova Scotia in 1858.

"The delegates" were the representatives of the Provinces who were discussing Union at Quebec and who in the next month evolved the Quebec Scheme of Confederation.

Second letter: Edmund and Tremaine Twining were well known Halifax business men.

Mr. Ferrier was a resident of Montreal.

"Minnie" was Mr. J. W. Johnston's daughter, the widow of Major Wilkieson (I think of the 16th Regiment) who had recently died at Kingston, which was then a garrison town. She and her sister Agnes are referred to in the next letter.

Dr. Cramp was the President of Acadia College.

"The Hamiltons" were cousins of my mother.

Third letter: Francis R. Parker appears in the Parker genealogy at an early page of this narrative.

Dr. Dawson became afterwards Sir William Dawson, the well known author in the field of science, more particularly in geology.

Late in the summer of 1863, there was an excursion in Prince Edward Island and New Brunswick, with visits by the way at Amherst and Moncton, where he was called in consultation. Letters from Moncton are chiefly of a domestic character. At Charlottetown he visited William A. Johnston, son of the Attorney-General of Nova Scotia, who was then practising law there. In a letter to my mother, written there, August 27th, 1863, occurs this domestic item, which will, no doubt, interest certain of the grandchildren. "Tell Willie, dear boy, that Papa is very sorry Mama had to *spank* him for running into the hall, but that Papa is very glad Mama had the firmness to do it. Spare the rod and spoil the child." This incident has faded from the memory of the party most interested, who was then in his third year. The writer adds: "Tell dear Johnston to let me hear from him." In the same letter there occurs this characteristic touch, in referring to the case of a former patient whose case had now become desperate. "Poor S! It would be better for him to be

consulting 'the Great Physician' than 'the Pathy.' When God calls may he be ready to go. Medicine for the soul is what is often wanted to produce mental and physical comfort."

The concluding letter of the series written on this tour is as follows:

" 9.30 P.M., WOODSTOCK, N.B.,
" Wednesday night,
" September 3rd, 1863.

" Here I am once more in a place where I can get a room to write in, being comfortably stowed away for the night at the Blanchard House. After closing my letter at Fredericton on Monday morning I took the box seat outside the Woodstock coach and after a lovely drive through beautiful scenery (river and highland) reached this place at 6.30 p.m. I enjoyed the drive more than I would have done the sail by steamer up the river, as by the latter mode of conveyance one could get very little idea of the country beyond the banks of the stream, whereas from the coach road one sees all the river scenery as well as that for miles beyond. It is a beautiful country, not merely to look upon, but in an agricultural sense, and is becoming thickly populated. When I left Fredericton I had not concluded as to where my steps would next be directed. I wanted to see the Grand Falls, and at the same time I wanted to cross the Bay of Fundy on Thursday (to-morrow) to Digby, as I was feeling homesick and desirous once more of seeing all the inmates of the little cottage by the Dartmouth Cove. However, as I was within seventy-five miles of the Falls and might never have the opportunity of visiting them again, I concluded at last to go on. There being no day coach I was obliged to travel all Monday night. We started at 8 p.m. from Blanchard's hotel. I was the only passenger for forty miles. The road was good but very hilly and extremely narrow, with numerous bridges, the approaches to which were generally at the bottom of very steep hills. I had not been long in the wagon (an open one) before I made the discovery that the coachman was unfit for the post, as he could not keep awake five minutes at a time, so I had to spend the live long night (and a cold one it was for the season) watching him and arousing him in time to apply the brakes to avoid being tossed over the bridges. I wanted him to let me drive, but he would not. Fortunately the horses were very steady, although in high condition and very fast. Indeed the horses here on all the coach lines are far superior in flesh, condition and speed to any on the coach lines of Nova Scotia. I was very thankful when at 6 o'clock a.m. we arrived at Newcom's Inn (kept by a

Cornwallis man), Tobique. I got myself well warmed by a comfortable barroom fire and took my breakfast with a wild, rough party of lumbermen. There was one very tall, gentlemanly, well-dressed person of the party whose features looked familiar, but for the life of me I could not recollect where I had met him. He looked at me as if he had some knowledge of me. As he sat next me at the table I got into conversation with him and a reference to Nova Scotia caused him to state that he was a native of that Province. I then asked his name and he told me that it was Alexander Eaton and that Cornwallis was his former home. "What!" said I, "Is it Sandy Eaton?" "Yes." "Well I'm Dan Parker." Such a shaking of hands then took place "as you never did see." He was a favorite school companion of mine at Horton, and although I have often enquired about him I had never been able to hear anything of his whereabouts since we parted in 1837. Many's the lark we have had together. He kindly jumped into the coach and drove over to the Grand Falls with me. We "fought our battles o'er again." He showed me all the lions of the Falls—introduced me to Sheriff Beckwith—a cousin of Mayhew Beckwith's, of Cornwallis, who married a Greenwood, a relation of the Stayners and Greenwoods of Halifax. This made my visit to the great waterfall of New Brunswick doubly pleasant. After spending seven or eight hours together we parted—very likely never to meet again. I was amply paid for the trouble and fatigue of getting to the Falls by the grand, bold scenery around this district. The fall itself is broad, the water descending now seventy feet. When the river is full the vertical measure is decreased while its breadth is largely increased, and, of course, the quantity of water thus escaping is much greater. Just below the Falls I witnessed a great timber jam and a large number of men engaged in the very dangerous work of starting it. Not long ago a man thus engaged there was killed and others narrowly escaped. "The jam" was so great that the logs were forced down in the water by the superincumbent pressure to the distance of forty or fifty feet. The men had been working at it two weeks and it will be two weeks more before they get it all released. Just below the falls there is a long and very handsome suspension bridge. About six years ago it fell, killing some persons that were on it. The new structure is more secure. Leaving this locality I crossed the country close to the American boundary, passing over the Aroostook River and district, about which there was nearly a war between England and the United States some years since. The question was long called "the disputed boundary" and was settled by Lord Ashburton, England's Commissioner, giving up England's or rather New Brunswick's rights to the Yankees, and with the settlement a large

number of New Brunswickers, much to their annoyance and chagrin, by a stroke of Ashburton's pen were converted in a moment into citizens of the United States. They thus left New Brunswick and entered the State of Maine. At the mouth of the Tobique River I stopped at a large Indian village, and after viewing their chapel, farms, burial grounds, and visiting the interior of some of their houses, I engaged one to take me up the Tobique River for a few miles to see the bold, magnificent scenery of that noted river. The stream and rapids were difficult to ascend for two miles, but the practised eye and strong arm of my Indian worked our frail bark canoe through the difficulties by the aid of paddle and pole. I returned at dark and engaged another Indian to carry me to the inn, and to be there at six o'clock to carry me in his canoe to Woodstock, a distance of over fifty miles. These Indians are all of the Melicite tribe and speak a different language from our Micmacs. They are for the most part temperate and make good livings by farming, fishing and hunting. Many of them have horses, oxen and cows and live most comfortably. Punctual to the appointed hour my new Indian came. We breakfasted early and got enough bread and meat for dinner by the way and then started down stream. Had the wind not been ahead and strong, the voyage would have been made in five hours. At it was we were eleven hours in accomplishing it. It was a delightful day. The rapid stream, the beautiful and at times solitary and magnificent scenery, coupled with the, to me, novel mode of conveyance, a frail bark *ship* that one could not stand up in on such a river, and my aboriginal "captain and all hands"—made the journey of fifty miles one of the most pleasant that I have ever taken. It was easy work for me but hard for the skipper, as he had at times great difficulty in keeping the ship's head to the wind. In crossing one of the rapids we shipped a small sea which wet me some and I had to strip off my coat and dry my shirt in the sun and wind. This was soon accomplished and nothing else occurred to render the voyage unpleasant. About noon we stopped by a rapid stream, hauled up our canoe, and dined, washing down the dry bread and meat with delicious water—both drinking out of the same tin pint—"all one brother." I was able to read a good deal in the canoe, stretch myself out in my railway wrapper at the bottom of the frail bark, and I slept some time. This change of position from semi-erect to the horizontal is a great relief and makes this mode of travelling much more pleasant than coaching. At the hotel I met Mr. Troop and his sister from Bridgetown. We took tea and had a walk together, and thus another pleasant hour has been spent by meeting Nova Scotians abroad. They came up from St. Andrew's by the rail-

road. A 7 o'clock in the morning I start in a coach for the same railroad, and will be in St. Andrew's or St. Stephen's to-morrow night. I shall either catch the steamer at Eastport, bound from Boston to St. John, or else reach the latter city by coach on Saturday, and if I can get a boat or schooner going over to Weymouth or Digby on Saturday I shall not wait for the steamer to cross to Digby on Monday morning. After visiting Mr. Payson I shall, I hope, reach home towards the end of next week. I fear I shall hardly hear from you again, but although I may not have any letters to answer, it is a great pleasure for me to sit down and talk to my dearest wife on paper about what I have seen and done, in a way that I can seldom get time to do when at home. My dear children I long to see as much as my wife. May God protect and care for you all during my absence. Kiss them all for papa. Tell Johnston and Mary Ann that I shall expect to hear they have been good children during my absence.

"Good night, dearest Fanny, and farewell until we meet again, as it is not likely that I shall be able to write again so that a letter would reach you much before I return to my own dear home. Love to all.

"Yours ever,

"D. McN. PARKER."

In this letter, writing of his return, he says: "If I can get a boat or schooner going over to Weymouth or Digby on Saturday I shall not wait for the steamer to cross to Digby on Monday morning." I remember his telling me that on one occasion, "to economize time" (a frequent expression of his), he crossed the Bay of Fundy from New Brunswick in a little schooner which he chanced on, and that, in a fog, she went ashore some distance from the entrance to Digby Gut; but all hands got to land with nothing worse than a wetting and he made his way as best he could to Digby. I cannot connect this experience with the excursion of 1863, and it may have occurred at an earlier time.

Mr. Payson, of Weymouth, mentioned in this letter, was the husband of my father's half-aunt, Augusta Parker.

His attendance upon the gatherings of the Medical Society of Nova Scotia was assiduous, and his contributions to its discussions were frequent, though in the busy life he led he found little time for the preparation of many formal papers or essays.

We shall see, hereafter, how concerned he was for the maintenance of Vital Statistics. He first moved in this matter at a meeting of this Society held on February 2nd, 1864, when an essay was read showing the necessity for a proper registration of births, deaths and marriages. The record of the meeting states: "Some remarks were made upon the importance of

registration, when Dr. Parker moved that a committee be appointed to take what steps they might deem necessary to bring the subject under the notice of the Legislature and to further the object in view. Seconded by Dr. Black, and passed."

The speech at the opening of the Legislature in that year, by Sir Hastings Doyle, announced a Bill on the subject which passed in due course, Dr. Charles Tupper being then Provincial Secretary.

At Confederation (July 1st, 1867), the Dominion Government took over the management of the Nova Scotia Statistical Office, so established; but, owing to conflicting opinions of a constitutional nature, ceased to provide for its maintenance in 1877, and it was then abolished.

In the Legislative Council my father agitated for the re-establishment of a Provincial Bureau, time and time again, but the Government was hostile to its restoration, and it was not until after his death that this Province again received the benefit of such an institution.

Amid all his varied activities, we find that he did not exclude the service of his country, in a military sense. At what time he joined the Provincial Militia, I do not know, but for some years he was surgeon in a regiment—probably the 2nd Halifax, of which regiment my mother's father had been Colonel in his earlier years. The buttons of the scarlet tunic and the shako which he wore bear simply the words: "Nova Scotia Militia." In the sixties I have seen him ride to muster or parade on the big horse "Tom," and right soldierly he looked. From the fact that he was mounted it may be inferred that he was staff surgeon to a brigade at that time. When "the Fenian scare" occurred in 1866, and I watched a long train of carts, laden with powder, shot and shell for the forts and batteries, pass from the citadel round the corner of the old Argyle Street house, I saw my father, in uniform, mount and ride away to duty with the militia who garrisoned the city while the regulars took post along the shore. For that militia duty, I believe, many have clamorously obtained *medals* of some sort in after years, at the taxpayer's cost. But it was all in "the day's work" with this surgeon, and I do not think he ever heard of the medals.

On the first day of April, 1866, a partnership with Dr. Andrew J. Cowie was formed, under the firm name of "Parker and Cowie," the business being conducted at the Prince Street offices. The reason of this, so far as the senior partner was concerned, is recited in the articles of partnership to be that he was "feeling the need of relaxation, and desirous, in consequence of impaired health and other circumstances, of decreasing his professional labor." In accordance with this there was a stipulation: "Dr. Parker will give as much of his time and attention to the busi-

ness as is consistent with the circumstances above stated—this matter, however, being left to his own discretion, but it is understood and hereby agreed that he shall be relieved of midwifery and night practice except in such cases as he may select and choose to attend.” The following clause of the articles is indicative of the extent of practice which my father then had, and which came to the firm afterwards. “A competent person to fill the position of bookkeeper, cashier and dispenser, shall always be employed by the firm, to take charge of the books, cash, accounts, dispensing, and collecting monies, whose salary shall be paid by the business.” As already stated, my father had previously employed such an assistant, after his removal to Argyle Street.

The custom of taking into the offices and instructing students still continued. That the partnership was harmonious and lucrative is attested by its continuance until my father relinquished general practice.

This business arrangement made possible a plan of removing altogether to Dartmouth to reside and converting the summer cottage there into a permanent home. In 1867 the building of the present house was begun, using the cottage as a nucleus; the stable was removed to its present site and enlarged, the field below the house was cleared, the grounds laid off as they now appear, and the property with the frontage on the shore was acquired. In the spring of 1868 the new house was occupied, and it became my father's home for the nearly forty years of life that he was yet to enjoy. The principal features of the house are its spacious, high and airy apartments, designed by himself for health's sake. Often did he attribute the prolongation of his life to that home amid the sheltering beeches, beside the waters of the Cove, and congratulate himself for his good fortune in being able to live out of town, in finding a situation so healthful for his young family, and where he could practise for himself the principles of his gospel of fresh air, sunshine, and a life that was closer to nature.

Soon after the removal to Dartmouth, Dr. Cowie occupied the Argyle Street house.

It may be said here, in passing, that the subject of this Memoir was not of the stamp of practitioner to seek membership in foreign societies and thereby attach more of the alphabet to his name than the symbols of his Edinburgh degree and license. But I am reminded, at this stage, that the attention of the Gynecological Society of Boston, Mass., of which Dr. Horatio R. Storer and Dr. Winslow Lewis were leading members, having been attracted by something written by my father in the department to which the Society was devoted, he was elected an honorary member of that body in October, 1870. In this branch of

his profession he was specially proficient, owing, possibly, in some degree to the training and influence under which he came as a clinical clerk to Sir James Y. Simpson who specialized in gynecology.

Dr. John Stewart kindly furnishes the following notes from the minutes of the Medical Society of Nova Scotia for the years 1869, 1870 and 1871.

"1869, July 20. Meeting in Windsor. Dr. Parker was appointed on the Committee of Arrangements with Dr. W. J. Almon and Dr. E. Jennings. One of the principal subjects discussed was the newly founded medical school in Halifax.

"1870. Meeting in Halifax. Dr. Parker was present and took an active part in this meeting.

"1871. A special meeting was called in August, 1871, and among other things, the Society expunged from its roll of members the name of Dr. D.y who had not only refused to return to Dr. Parker certain money lent to him when studying medicine, but had published in the Halifax papers offensive remarks about Dr. Parker. Also, next day, August 30th, it was resolved to present an address to Dr. Parker at a medical supper, he being about to leave the city for Edinburgh. for two years."

The year 1871 brought the resolve to abandon general practice, to pursue further study at Edinburgh, and upon his return, to practice only as a consultant. Johnston, who had been preparing for his medical course at Edinburgh with work in chemistry and botany at Dalhousie College and reading in the office, was now ready, and it was planned that the entire family should go over for two years. The Argyle Street property, with the good will of the practice, was now sold to Dr. Cowie, and after twenty-six years of successful labor, my father found himself cut adrift from his profession, that he might be free to commence the study of it afresh and get more thoroughly to the front of the advance which medicine and surgery had accomplished by this time.

The family crossed from Halifax to Liverpool in August, and remained in Birkenhead, in lodgings near my uncle John A. Black's home, until my father could follow. He was that year President of the Canadian Medical Association, and had to preside at its annual meeting, held at Quebec in the Laval University on September 13th and 14th. He was the second president in the history of that Society. Dr. Charles Tupper was the first.

On September 4th, shortly before his departure for Quebec, his professional confrères (pursuant to the resolution of the Medical Society of Nova Scotia above noted) testified their esteem by entertaining him at a supper and presenting an address. The following account of this testimonial was furnished the city press by Dr. Gordon:

DR. PARKER.

On Monday evening the medical men of the city entertained the Hon. Dr. Parker at the Waverley Hotel. Thirty-two members sat down to an excellent supper at 9.30. Dr. Black occupied the Chair, and Dr. Almon the Vice-Chair. After the royal toast, 'the Queen,' was responded to, the Chairman introduced the toast of the evening 'Our Guest.' He said that he had been associated with Dr. Parker for many years, and their intercourse had always been pleasant. Dr. Parker had identified himself with the Charitable Institutions of this city, and in the earlier days, when the poor were not provided for so well as now, he was ready to attend to them as freely as to the rich, irrespective of fee or reward. For over twenty-five years he had been in the habit, in dangerous cases, of consulting Dr. Parker, and he had always found him actuated by a nice sense of etiquette and willing to lend himself to carry the case to a successful termination.

He saw that the Dominion Medical Association had chosen him for President, and he had no doubt that Dr. Parker would make for himself a European reputation.

After the toast was heartily responded to, the Chairman called upon the Secretary to read the following address:

To the HON. DANIEL McNEILL PARKER, M.D.,
Member of Legislative Council,
Province of Nova Scotia.

Dear Sir:—

We, the members of the Medical Profession of Halifax and of the Province of Nova Scotia, aware that you are about to leave our city and Province for Edinburgh, cannot allow you to go from our midst without unitedly expressing the feelings of regard which, as a body, and as members of the same profession, we entertain towards you.

An earnest and diligent student at college, for the twenty-six years you have resided amongst us, you have not failed to keep pace with the medical literature of the time, nor deservedly to secure and enjoy a large share of public confidence and esteem.

In our professional intercourse your conduct has been marked with a spirit of courtesy and fairness, whilst your extended culture, matured experience, and sound judgment, have always entitled your opinions to weight and respect.

For many years an active member in the Provincial and County Medical Societies, you have spared neither time nor expense in furthering the public interests of the profession in this Province.

We feel that the Dominion Medical Association of Canada, in unanimously electing you as their President, chose a worthy

representative, and not only paid a well-merited tribute to an upright man, but also through you conferred an honor upon the Medical Society of Nova Scotia.

In leaving Halifax your absence will be deeply felt by a large number of our citizens, and you carry with you the warmest interest of many personal friends.

Trusting you may join your estimable lady and family in safety, after a speedy and prosperous voyage, and that you may derive all the pleasure and profit you anticipate from your visit to the modern Athens; looking forward with pleasure to your return.

We subscribe ourselves,

Yours faithfully,

Sgd. R. S. CAMPBELL, M.D.	WILLIAM J. ALMON.
W. B. SLAYTER, M.D.	JAMES R. DEWOLF.
W. N. WICKWIRE.	CHAS. J. GOSSIP, M.D.
J. SOMERS.	ARTHUR MOREN, M.D.
A. H. WOODILL.	A. HATTIE.
EDWIN CLAY.	A. P. REID.
W. J. LEWIS.	CHAS. D. RIGBY.
EDWD. FARRELL.	RORT. W. MCKEAGNEY.
ROBERT MCFATRIDGE.	J. F. BLACK.
STEPHEN DODGE.	JAS. PITTS, M.B.
THOMAS WALSH.	JAMES VENABLES.
VAL. M. McMASTER.	D. A. FRASER.
(78th Highlanders).	ANDREW J. COWIE.
DR. BURGESS.	E. D. ROACH.
R. S. BLACK.	

H. A. GORDON.

Secretary.

Halifax, 4th Sept., 1871.

“ Dr. Parker said:

“ I can only reply in feeble language to the address presented to me. For the past few days there has been thrust upon me the additional duty of executor to a departed friend. What shall I say to my friends who have sprung a mine upon me? The address calls forth feelings I cannot express; many friends have signed it who have exhibited their kindly feelings on my behalf. The address has been written with too flattering a pen. Even my vanity will hardly permit me to think I am entitled to it.

“ I go from Halifax to seek relaxation and to seek improvement in my Alma Mater of former days, and hope when I return I may be of more use to my professional brethren and my patients, should I have any.

“ My emotions to-night are like those of a parent who receives

his first-born. This address is my first-born. I never received one before.

“In parting from you, gentlemen, I will remember with gratitude this evening. I could not on paper express my feelings. I can only say I feel grateful in my heart for the kindness you have exhibited.”

“The Army and Navy’ was given by Dr. Almon and replied to by Drs. McMaster and Lewis.

“Dr. Clay gave ‘Our Guests.’ Replied to by Dr. Roach and Dr. McMaster.

“Dr. Parker, after giving ‘The Officers of N. S. Medical Society,’ with the name of Dr. Black as President, said: ‘Under Dr. Black, the past meeting was the most profitable I remember. I enjoyed the papers then read, and hope that at the next meeting they may be still more profitable. In the Halifax County Society, I would advise the younger members to go on with the meetings and reading of papers, for by so doing you will improve yourselves and do good to the public. I fell into a grave error in the early part of my life, led into it by a large practice. It is a misfortune for a young man to have a large practice at first, for it prevents the scientific pursuit of our profession. As an M.L.C. I may say, had I my life to live over I would never take such an active part in politics as I have done. I believe it is the duty of every professional man to take part in the public matters of the day; but there is great danger of being too much engrossed by them.’

“He then concluded by proposing the health of Drs. Black and Almon.

“Several other toasts were proposed and responded to, amongst which was one to Dr. Gossip, as the only survivor of those who rendered their aid to the cholera patients of the ‘England.’

“Dr. DeWolf spoke feelingly of Rev. Dr. McIsaac, who won the esteem of the whole community at that time, and concluded his remarks by requesting the company to drink in silence ‘Absent Friends, and the Memory of Departed Professional Brethren.’

“After drinking a bumper to the Committee and singing ‘God Save the Queen,’ the company broke up shortly before twelve o’clock, having enjoyed a very pleasant evening.

“H. A. GORDON,
“Secretary.”

Of the thirty doctors who gathered at the board that evening in the old “Waverley,” now part of the Halifax Infirmary, there are, I think, but six survivors.

I am indebted to Dr. Charles Elliott, of Toronto, the General Secretary of the Canadian Medical Association (one of my father’s old students), for the following notes from the minutes of the

Association showing my father's participation in its work up to the time when he became its President, and also for a copy of his presidential address delivered at Quebec on September 13th, 1871, upon the occasion of the fourth annual meeting. Dr. Elliott says:

"Dr. Parker was present at the organization meeting in Quebec City, the 9th of October, 1867; was appointed on the Registration and Credential Committee of that meeting, the first Committee appointed; also on the 10th of October appointed a member on Special Committee on Preliminary Education; elected to Committee on General Education, which was also to look into the system of granting licenses (the first movement towards Dominion Registration). The first annual meeting of the Canadian Medical Association was held at Montreal on the 2nd, 3rd and 4th of September, 1868. Dr. Parker does not appear to have been present at that meeting, but was elected Vice-president for Nova Scotia. The second annual meeting was held in Toronto, on the 8th and 9th of September, 1869. He was present at that meeting and was appointed a member of the Nominating Committee, and again appointed on the Registration Committee. The third annual meeting was held in Ottawa on September 14th and 15th, 1870. Dr. Parker was present at that meeting, was a member of the Nominating Committee, and was also appointed a member of the Committee on Ethics, of which he was chairman. He was elected to the Presidency at the Ottawa meeting, and served for 1870-1 in that capacity."

PRESIDENTIAL ADDRESS; CANADIAN MEDICAL ASSOCIATION.

MESSRS. VICE-PRESIDENTS, AND GENTLEMEN:

You did me the honor at the close of our last session at Ottawa to elect me to fill, for the ensuing year, the high position of President of the Canadian Medical Association. My present desire is, not to remind you of the reasons I then used why a different course should have been adopted and a different selection made; but finding myself the occupant of the situation, to discharge, to the best of my humble ability, the responsible duties connected therewith.

For three consecutive years our friend Doctor Tupper most ably and satisfactorily filled "the Chair," and, calling to his aid the experience of a long Parliamentary training, by firmness and impartiality has well conducted our Association through all the dangers and difficulties of early existence.

With the knowledge and promptness of a skilful pilot he has guided us safely through, and beyond, the reefs and breakers which here and there met us on the way, and to-day we find our-

selves anchored, I hope, in smooth water and in good holding ground. Unaided, this progress could not have been made; but thanks to the spirit which has pervaded our annual gatherings—a spirit of courtesy and kindness, blended with an independence of speech and action, and the fixed determination on the part of those who constitute the Association to heartily co-operate with their President in overcoming all obstacles—this infant, born in the fair city of Quebec in 1867, has returned to it, well developed, and likely soon to reach the full stature of manhood; eventually, I trust, to accomplish, in no limited degree, one of the principal objects for which man should live on earth—good to his fellow-men.

I shall endeavor not to occupy too much of your time with my address, for we have important work to do, and but a very limited time to overtake it in. A brief reference to the past and a few thoughts and suggestions as to our future must suffice; and these latter will be, strictly speaking, less of a professional than of a general character, such as would seem naturally to suggest themselves at this stage of our development.

To the invitation of the Quebec Medical Society, in 1867, to come hither and organize a Medical Association, a prompt and very general response was given by all the Provinces of the then new-born Dominion; and, whatever good has resulted, or may in the future follow our labors, we must ever remember that the medical men of Quebec were foremost, and took the initiative in this matter, which was intended to give, and has given, organized life and an enlarged sphere of action to the profession in British North America.

The names of the Colonial statesmen who have labored, and successfully labored, to unite the different British Provinces in America, from the Atlantic to the Pacific, will be recorded in the language of commendation by the future historian of our country, and, when, in years to come, the medical history of our land is written, when the places that now know us shall know us no more, the names of several prominent professional men of this hospitable, fine old city will be handed down to posterity as the originators of an organization which will ere then, I trust, have become a great and vigorous Medical Confederation and have accomplished important results for our profession and the public of our country.

We have lived three years as an Association, and have now entered upon our fourth; and the question very naturally suggests itself, What have we accomplished in the course of those years? I reply that our past, if not noted for any striking or remarkable events, has not been devoid of effort, of labor and results. It has been a past largely occupied in preparation for future usefulness.

The too brief time allotted for our annual conventions was, in 1867 and 1868, almost entirely consumed in the preliminary arrangements connected with organization, framing and adopting a constitution.

During the two succeeding sessions, Medical Ethics, Preliminary and Professional Education, and the consideration of a comprehensive Medical Act for the whole Dominion of Canada, which will be submitted to you again to-day, for final action, have largely occupied our attention and time.

The scientific department of the Association has not been neglected. In addition to the more general matters, above referred to, we have been gratified, and instructed, by listening to several very valuable papers on medical and surgical subjects, and I sincerely hope that this, one of the most important objects of our organization, will be a prominent feature of the work of this present and succeeding sessions. Last year, at Ottawa, various Committees were appointed, and some of these had entrusted to their charge important professional and scientific subjects, on which I trust they will be prepared to report at the proper time.

The experience of the past has taught us the lesson, that it requires time and patient effort even to properly organize such an institution as this. We have also learned that to mature such a measure as the Medical Bill which was before us last year requires not only time and careful thought, but, having the general interests of our organization in view, also the occasional yielding of individual opinion, when that opinion is opposed to the views of a majority of the members of the Association. When we remember, then, that the time actually occupied in performing all the work above referred to has been only eight days, that is to say, two days for each annual session, the wonder is that so much has been accomplished. So much for the past.

The important work of our immediate future is the discussion of the Act first referred to, which was submitted to us at Ottawa by Dr. Howard, chairman of the Committee to whom was referred the responsible and arduous duty of framing the measure.

Those of you who were then present will recollect that a prolonged discussion of its main features took place, and that certain of its clauses were modified by amendments, which the Association directed a new committee, under the same chairman, to embody in the Act, prior to its general distribution among the members of the profession. This duty has been performed; and the Secretary has scattered broadcast over the land the Bill of 1870, with these Ottawa amendments appended, and to-day, I take it for granted, every member of the profession in the United Provinces, as well the absent as the present, is familiar with its principles and details.

I look upon this measure in the main as well adapted to the

condition and circumstances of the country, valuable alike to the profession and the public, and immediately desirable.

It is not to be expected that, in dealing with a matter of such moment, perfect unanimity will prevail. Men's minds are differently constituted, and in the discussion of a measure of magnitude and importance like this all cannot see eye to eye. Indeed, such a condition of things here would, to my mind, be undesirable, as it would suggest the probability of but little attention or matured thought having been given to the subjects embraced within the provisions of the bill. By free discussion, and a public statement of our individual views, truth and sound principles will be evolved, and both the professional and the public interests will thereby be subserved.

I trust, gentlemen, that in finally dealing with this bill, during the present session, sectional and personal interests will here find no resting-place, and that, whatever may be our differences of opinion in relation to some of the clauses, we will all be actuated by an ardent desire to obtain for British America an advanced and comprehensive measure adapted to the present and future wants of the country—a measure that we, and those who are to follow us, in after years can look upon and speak of with pride and satisfaction.

The time cannot be afforded, and if it could it would be out of place, for me to discuss at length, from the Chair, the various subjects embraced in the contemplated Act, but I trust you will bear with me while I briefly refer to a few of its leading features. *And first let me say, not for the information of members of the Association, for you are already familiar with the fact, but, for the benefit of those who are beyond and without our circle, if any such are present, that we are taking the initiative and striving to obtain this, our "Reform Bill," not from selfish motives—not with the idea of advancing our own personal and pecuniary interests, but from an ardent desire to elevate the profession and to expand its sphere of usefulness—to better qualify and educationally equip its members for dealing with human health and human life.*

In this connection, I may add, as a noteworthy fact, that all medical reforms, properly so called, have emanated from the profession, and have not been forced upon us from without. In this particular we are always in advance of public sentiment.

Considering the motives and reasons which have prompted us to take action in the matter now under discussion, we can go to the different Legislatures of our country, not as humble suppliants, asking for that which is to be of advantage only to ourselves, but we can approach them from higher ground and demand this

measure of reform,—and I might also add, of necessity,—as a right, in the interests of the public and of humanity.

The bill we are about to seek from our Legislatures will, if it becomes operative, not only give to the country a more highly qualified Profession, but, by referring to its forty-seventh clause, you will perceive that it will furnish the Governments—and that without cost to their revenues—with a responsible body of advisers, in short, with an advisory council, to whom, with confidence, they can appeal for guidance on sanitary subjects, and “all matters pertaining to the public health,” and thus provide, at the expense of the medical profession, a substitute for a Bureau of Public Health. While the Central Council will occupy this position in relation to the General Government, it would seem desirable that Branch Councils—or, if the Association should see fit to call them by another name, and designate them Executive Committees—should perform the same responsible functions in the several Provinces of the Dominion.

It strikes me that the retention of this feature of the Bill, as a part of its working machinery, will tend to popularize the measure, and facilitate its passage through the several Local Legislatures.

On all matters connected with quarantine, public hygiene, the construction of general and special hospitals, and subjects of a cognate character, these advisory bodies would be of essential service to the Local as well as to the General Governments.

Always readily accessible, and surrounded, as they would be, by official responsibility, their public utterances would be well matured and authoritative.

In finally dealing with this measure, and fitting it for legislative criticism and action, I trust the principles embodied therein, as regards the composition of the Council and the examining body, will be adhered to. It is a wise provision to entrust the responsibility of working this Act in equitable proportions to men from the schools, who are already charged with the important duty of moulding into shape and giving educational form to those who, in after years, shall fill our places,—a duty which with propriety and justice I can say they faithfully and ably perform,—and, to members of the general profession, who will bring to the work before them practical knowledge, energy and business capacity.

Referring to the clause which defines the composition of the Board of Examiners, I may say that we have given a proportion to the educational institutions none too large.

Selecting two-thirds from the schools and one-third from the outside profession, we will be able without difficulty to obtain a Board, composed of men “of approved skill in the several subjects on which they are to examine.” Give us a uniform standard of

preliminary and medical education, registration, a sound licensing system, a General Council such as our bill provides, and an Examining Board, selected as above indicated, and the corner stones and main pillars of a great work will have been securely laid, on which a superstructure may be built, adapted to the present as well as to the future necessities of a rapidly growing country and an ever-increasing medical profession.

Provision—and, under all the circumstances, a wise provision—has been made in our Act for the registration of every member of the medical profession—without reference to doctrine or modes of practice—who, at the time of its becoming law, may be possessed of a license to practise in any of the Provinces of the Dominion. I say it is a wise provision, for, whatever our individual feelings and opinions may be, it is expedient, looking to the passing of the measure by the General Parliament, and its subsequent adoption by the Legislatures of the several Provinces, that this feature should not be modified.

I speak with confidence when I say that any attempt at retrospective legislation in this matter would do more than jeopardize our Bill,—it would destroy it.

It is to be borne in mind that very many of those whom we are wont to designate irregular practitioners are to-day qualified by law to practice medicine; but their legal recognition does not by any means involve the idea of professional recognition, in the ordinary acceptance of the term.

This subject was discussed at some length at our last meeting, and the question was then settled. I refer to it to-day because there are here present a large number of members who were not at Ottawa, and it is, of course, competent for any of these gentlemen to again open up the subject; but, having it thus placed before them, I should hope that they, considering the very important interests involved in the passage of the Act through the several Legislatures of the Dominion, would, at the close of such discussion, leave it “in statu quo.”

NEW SCHOOLS.

There is a growing tendency in almost all young countries to multiply medical schools—often to the serious prejudice of the educational and general status of the profession—and I regret to say that British America is not an exception to this rule.

I am fully convinced that this is an evil, and that, instead of diffusing our strength by unduly increasing their number, it would be in the interests of the profession and the public rather to concentrate our forces, and to enlarge and expand those now in active and healthy operation, and thus make them still more efficient.

The twenty-ninth clause of our Bill, and the proposed amendments thereto, are both in accord with the opinion to which I have just given utterance, as indeed was the general sentiment of the Association, as expressed at its last meeting at Ottawa.

I will not touch upon the more minute details of the contemplated Act, but having thus briefly referred to a few of its fundamental principles, and assuming its adoption here during this session, I will, before leaving the subject, just say, that it behooves every member of this Association to exert all his Parliamentary influence, so that a successful issue may be there obtained. It will be necessary for us to watch the measure with jealous care, as it is being dealt with by the several Legislatures of the country, lest it should be so marred as to render it inoperative.

Time, thought, co-operative effort, and money have all been expended in maturing and advancing it thus far, and it would be a great misfortune to the profession, and the country, if it should miscarry in the Houses of those who should be its friends.

Let us assume that the Bill has become the law of the land, then the question arises, will the profession be prepared to give the necessary time, and to make the necessary sacrifices to ensure its success? It is well that at this early period we should think of this matter. Obtaining the Act in the desired shape, or as it shall pass from our hands, will accomplish but little, either for the profession or the people, unless the members of this Association, having put their hand to the plough, determine not to look back, but, on the contrary, by continued and persevering effort, to conquer success. It is possible that ere we meet again the Act may have passed the General and some of the Local Legislatures, hence the necessity of being early prepared to efficiently work the entire machinery of the law. I believe its future success will altogether depend on the men who shall be selected for the first and few succeeding years of its existence, to organize the institution, and conduct its business.

Medical men as a body are self-sacrificing—to an extent that the general public little know and little appreciate. The object in question will call forth, and draw largely upon, this characteristic element of our professional nature; for men the most experienced, the most successful, the most largely and lucratively engaged in professional practice, will be those who should put their shoulders to the wheel, and force the machine successfully ahead. Sacrifice of time, comfort and money will have to be made in the interests of the profession we love, and for the public good.

In making the early selections (especially) to fill the offices contemplated by this Act, our motto should be, “the right men in the right place.” Sectional and personal desires, feelings, and friendships should all be held in abeyance, and the success of our

undertaking should be the prominent idea in every man's mind. Matured men of sound judgment must be at the helm, and compose the Executive; otherwise, "The College of Physicians and Surgeons of the Dominion of Canada," from which much will be expected, will fail to perform its mission; will lamentably disappoint its friends, and, while bringing discredit on us as a body, will give "aid and comfort" to our enemies. Patriotism, applicable alike to the profession and to the country of our choice and our affections, plainly indicates the course we should pursue in relation to this important matter.

An additional incentive to harmonious and energetic action in order to obtain, and successfully work, an advanced educational and general measure such as that now under consideration, exists in the knowledge of the fact that at this moment the eyes of the profession of Great Britain and the United States are directed towards Canada, watching with anxiety and interest our every movement.

In the mother country they have already dealt with the subject, and, in reference to time, are in advance of us; but in the adjoining republic they are only now taking the preliminary steps to accomplish the object.

At the meeting of the American Medical Association, held in 1870, a motion was introduced providing for "a uniform standard of the medical education throughout the union." Unanimity was not obtained. The more advanced East, if I am correctly informed, favored the measure—the more recent Western country adopting it unwillingly. Earl Grey's political utterance, given many years since to our Provincial public, that "a young country must be content to have its work cheaply and somewhat roughly done," exhibited sectional hostility to the progressive resolution in question. However, it cannot, in the nature of things, be very long ere the strong and vigorous common sense of the Great Republic will display itself by successfully grappling with this important professional and public question, and, unless I am greatly mistaken, the action about to be taken by this Association, if successful, will largely influence our neighbors in the matter. Success in Canada is to me very suggestive of early success in the United States.

FUTURE WORK AND FUTURE DUTY OF THE CANADIAN MEDICAL ASSOCIATION.

Without wishing in any way to dictate what should or what should not constitute our future duties, I trust you will permit me to offer a few thoughts on this subject.

The routine work of the Association is already defined by our Constitution and By-laws, provision has also been made for a

large amount of practical and scientific work connected with professional subjects.

To Standing and other Committees we have entrusted all matters pertaining to medical education, medical literature, climatology, epidemic diseases, and Canadian medical necrology; but, if this Association confines its labors and its efforts to the subjects already indicated, it will fall far short of accomplishing all that should and will be expected of it. There are matters of general or national, as well as professional, importance in which it should be deeply interested, and among these I would name that of Vital Statistics, intimately connected as this subject is with the Science of Medicine. Its relations to the State are equally important; and, to a young country anxious for and seeking after population from abroad, its bearing upon the national question of emigration can readily be appreciated by an audience such as I have to-day the honor of addressing. We may talk and write from day to day and year to year about the vast extent of our Dominion; we may tell the densely populated countries of Europe of our fertile soil; that we possess millions of acres which "only require to be tickled with the plough and the harrow to make them laugh for thirty or forty consecutive years in harvests" the most abundant; we may talk and write of our vast natural resources, of our forests, our fisheries, our coal fields, our gold, iron, copper and other mineral resources, until our tongue grow weary, and our pens fail us, but it will do but little in accomplishing the desired end, unless we can at the same time prove, by well digested and reliable statistics, that our country is healthy, that epidemic diseases but seldom prevail to any extent, and that our climate is favorable to longevity. When we can, with facts and figures under our hand, say to the inhabitant of the British Isles, the Frenchman, the German and the Swede, that his chances of living in health and comfort for three score years and ten, or even a century, are as great, or greater, in the Dominion of Canada than in other competing lands, we will have touched a chord that will vibrate and produce the desired results. Such information will influence all classes, but especially the better class of agriculturists, mechanics and laborers; in short, the very people we desire to draw to our country, whose pockets, on landing, are not found empty.

It is in the power of the Medical Profession of Canada, both in their associated capacity and as individuals, to assist the Government in perfecting a system of returns relating to the vital statistics of the Dominion, which if coupled with satisfactory reports on its climatology and diseases, and widely disseminated by active and efficient agents among the nations of Europe, whose surplus populations are seeking homes in other and newer countries,

must have an important bearing on the matter of emigration; and in this way we will be performing a valuable work, both for ourselves and our country.

INEBRIATE INSTITUTIONS.

I have already suggested that "hospitalism," or, in other words, the construction, arrangements, and management of general and special hospitals—erected at the public expense—would very properly be a matter on which the Executive of this Association could give advice, as occasion might arise, to the several Governments of the country.

I will now, in a few words, call your attention to a subject of great and increasing importance, somewhat allied to this, in the hope that you will all become interested in it, and not only give it your sympathy but your active support.

I refer to the provision of inebriate institutions for the treatment and reformation of habitual drunkards. You need not be uneasy, gentlemen; I am not going to take advantage of my position here to-day to inflict on you a temperance lecture, but I feel it incumbent on me to avail myself of the occasion to direct your attention to this want, so generally felt throughout the land.

Quebec is the only city of the Dominion in which such an institution exists. It is, I believe, a recent and private institution, and I have no doubt has already accomplished much good.

The Province of Quebec—and to her honor be it spoken—is the only portion of Canada that has legislated on the subject under consideration. In 1870 its Legislature passed a measure entitled, "An Act to provide for the interdiction and cure of habitual drunkards," which, to my mind, almost perfectly meets the varied circumstances and necessities of the case, providing, as it does, for the necessary coercive restraint and curative treatment of the inebriate, and at the same time, relief alike to society and to the friends who are afflicted with their presence. The Act in question embodies, in the main, the views I have long entertained on this subject, and which twenty years ago were given to the public of Nova Scotia.

In the Central Parliament of our common country, the bishops of several dioceses have, within the past two or three years, petitioned and earnestly urged that prompt legislative action should be taken on the subject. In Nova Scotia, nearly all the denominations have, in like manner, approached the local Legislature, with the same object in view.

Heretofore, the medical profession as a body have not given this matter the attention it deserves, and, except in a few isolated cases, there has been no co-operation, on our part, with those who

fill the ministerial office, who, to their credit be it said, have striven, almost single-handed, to obtain from our Governments the legislation and pecuniary aid necessary to accomplish the object.

Shall we, in the future, let our hands hang listlessly by our sides, while others are striving to accomplish that which will save from utter ruin and misery vast numbers of our fellow-men? I shall hope not!

Ample State provision has been made throughout our country for the restraint and treatment of those who are mentally diseased. Hospitals for the insane, vast institutions, almost perfect in their arrangements and systems of management, are to be found in all the principal provinces of British America. These have proved blessings to our land, and have opened wide their doors for the reception of all who have been thus afflicted by Providence. The public revenues of the country erect the structures, and bountifully support them. But when Governments and politicians are appealed to, and urged to take action in the matter of providing for the restraint of those who are suffering from this State disease (habitual drunkenness), they not infrequently shirk responsibility, and quiet their consciences by suggesting to the applicants that it is not a work for Governments, but one that should be dealt with by philanthropists and moral reformers.

To this false position I take entire exception, and to-day would say to those who sit in high places in our Legislatures and Governments, who control and disburse the revenues derived from that which creates this disease (amounting in the Dominion of Canada to about four millions of dollars annually), you should no longer neglect or trifle with issues so important.

If the traffic in alcohol is legalized, as we know it to be, and millions of revenue flow year by year into our treasury therefrom, surely the public sentiment of the country will sustain its parliamentary representatives in making the necessary, and even the most advanced, provision for the curative treatment of the unhappy victims of the traffic in question.

The safety of society, the comfort and happiness of innumerable families, the prevention of disease—a matter specially pertaining to our profession; the relief of our overburdened hospitals, poor-houses, and insane asylums, all call loudly for speedy and effective effort to be put forth, in order that this heretofore neglected question shall be neglected no longer. Gentlemen, the medical profession is familiar with this social evil as no other class of men can possibly be. We meet it every hour, in every city, town, and village of our country. We daily see its effects on the individual; we know its baneful and deteriorating results on their posterity. To us the people look in matters of this kind

for information and guidance, so that they may be stimulated into properly directed action. Hence, I feel that it is incumbent on us, as individuals, and as a Medical Association, to aid those who are already at work; to bring all the pressure in our power to bear on our several Governments and Legislatures, in order that they may take early and decided action in the matter.

Ere passing from this subject, I may add that no legislation will adequately meet the difficulties of the case, which fails to make provision for the compulsory restraint and treatment of the habitual drunkard, in these institutions; which fails to provide a competent tribunal to decide who are and who are not fit subjects for admission thereto, and also, to take charge of their remaining and unsquandered property.

Gentlemen, we have a duty to perform in this matter. Shall we, bearing in mind the responsibilities which attach to us, as medical men and citizens, give it a helping hand?

If such is your mind, let me say, the passing hour is the one in which action should be taken.

THE SECTS AND THE SEXES.

On these subjects it may be expected that I should say a few words. When I first attended the meetings of this Association I learned that here, in old Canada, the term "Sects" was applied to irregular practitioners, who hold and practise exclusive doctrines. Dr. Storer, the talented delegate from the American Medical Association—whose able and eloquent address before this Association last year will be fresh in the memories of those present who had the pleasure of hearing it—designated these men "guerillas," from the fact, I suppose, that he considered them unreliable and dangerous members of society. Well, gentlemen, I don't fancy guerillas, and shall in the future, as in the past, keep them at a respectable distance—leave them alone. Our Bill deals with them in this spirit. Their legal rights are not infringed. Those of them who are now recognized by law as medical practitioners will continue to enjoy their privileges as heretofore, but, in the future—should our contemplated Act become law—the public will, to some extent, be protected, inasmuch as these irregular practitioners must, ere they can practise medicine under any form, be educated men—"guerillas," if you will.

Now, leaving the "Sects," let me for a moment refer to "the Sexes," or more properly, the female sex, in their new relations to the profession of Medicine.

In days gone by, a disciple of Lindley Murray, if called upon to give the gender of a Doctor of Medicine, would very properly

have replied—masculine; but, in modern times—in this progressive and fast age—he would have either to coin a term, or reply, like the Irishman, “it depends on whether it is a he or a she,” but one thing he might with great propriety add, “the occupation is certainly masculine.”

In France, Russia, Switzerland, Sweden, the neighboring Union, and even in conservative Scotland, the Medical Schools have opened their doors to the female sex, and, in some instances, they, in competitive examinations, have proved themselves to be strong-minded women.

The subject is not yet practically before us, but come I presume it will, and that at no distant day; and, gentlemen, when the appeal is made to you, to the Medical Profession of Canada, to receive within your fold the enterprising pioneers, from those whom we have been wont to term the weaker sex, will your response be yea or nay?

I cannot say that I admire the taste which would prompt young females to take the scalpel in hand in the anatomical department, and there, as in the lecture room, to work side by side with medical students of the sterner sex, scrutinizing subjects to them heretofore hidden, and hearing discussed matters the most delicate, that in all social intercourse between the sexes would, in days gone by, have been sacredly avoided and forbidden. But, gentlemen, belonging as I do to the Old School, my views in relation to such things may, in these progressive days, be considered erroneous, antiquated, or fossiliferous.

This is “a future-looking age,” and that which some of us may look upon as an undesirable innovation, may possibly be a step in the right direction,—tending, eventually, to draw man back to the primitive conditions of Eden, when perfect innocence prevailed; but, accustomed as we are to the condition of things subsequent to the Fall, I am constrained to say that the habiliments of that fall—the fig-leaf and the fur—still have their charms for me. But, gentlemen, notwithstanding the natural feelings which are suggested by these modern innovations on the usage of centuries, I can hardly advise opposition to the movement, when the occasion for discussing it arises.

These future Doctresses, unlike the Sects—with whom I have grouped them—will seek admission to our fold by the regular door, and through legitimate channels; hence the propriety of courteously entertaining and calmly viewing the position when their proposals are submitted.

I may not be here to take part in the discussion when this subject is before the Association, but my views may be given, in advance, in the words of one of Dickens' celebrated characters, who was wont to express himself affirmatively on important

occasions by saying, "Barkis is willin'." My counsel to you then, gentlemen, when this question demands your attention, when this matrimonial alliance is actually sought, is to say, in the language of Barkis, "We are willin'," and to surrender at discretion.

PROFESSIONAL POLITICIANS.

There is another matter intimately connected with the interests of our profession, to which, in as few words as possible, I should like to call your attention. I refer to the growing tendency among medical men of this young country, who are already general practitioners, that is to say, physicians, surgeons, and accoucheurs, to become also practitioners in politics. I am the more inclined to refer to this subject in consequence of an observation made last year, in discussion, by a member of this Association, to the effect that, in one of the Provinces of the Dominion, one-third of its Parliamentary representatives were members of the medical profession; and, he added, if in view of the interests of our craft it were necessary, that number could readily be increased to one-half. I am one of those who believe that every citizen, especially educated and thinking men, should never fail to exercise the full rights of citizenship; that they should not hold themselves aloof and stand idly by while great and important political events are transpiring—and, in our day, these come thick and fast upon us; on the contrary, I think it is the duty of the profession calmly and firmly to assist in moulding and elevating public opinion, and in rightly directing it on all the greater questions of the day, relating to our country's advancement. I believe that the medical man who, for personal and pecuniary reasons, fails to independently exercise his franchise, is neglecting an important duty as a citizen, and doing an injustice to his manhood and his profession; and this remark is the more applicable in the case of a young country, where in the nature of things, tone and direction to public sentiment must be largely given by members of the learned professions. But, on the other hand, I feel that a widespread desire—especially among our younger men who are not yet in a position of pecuniary independence—to seek constituencies, and parliamentary places, will, in general, prove personally injurious, and at the same time, militate against the interests of the profession. Although I have never represented a constituency, yet I have had some practical knowledge of political life, and from one of its public positions have viewed the whole arena, and on this subject feel that I can speak with some degree of authority; and the conclusion at which I have arrived is that we cannot at the same time efficiently serve two masters—the Medical Profession and Politics. To be faithful to both, of neces-

sity involves such a tax on time, and such a wear and tear of mental energies, that few men can satisfactorily fill the two positions, without suffering "in mind, body, and estate."

Do not misunderstand me, gentlemen; I do not for a moment entertain the idea that medical men should not be legislators, or that they are not sometimes well qualified for the position,—the teachings of experience, and of colonial history, would oppose such a view. There are important public questions coming constantly before legislative bodies, on which, from their training and practical knowledge, medical men are better qualified to express opinions than the majority of those who usually compose these deliberative assemblies. But this I do say, that to flood our legislative halls with physicians and surgeons, and to make their complexion and atmosphere largely medical, would be doing no good to the country, while it would be inflicting a grievous injury on a scientific profession.

Perhaps I will be excused for adding that this growing tendency towards public or political life has as yet resulted in making but very few medical statesmen, while I feel assured it has spoiled a good many doctors.

Speaking from experience, I can say that it is an easy matter to enter and become entangled in the political net, but it is much more difficult to withdraw therefrom, and to extricate yourself from the position, however desirous you may be to do so.

Gentlemen, I trust I may be excused for referring to this subject, but, having been elected to fill the important post of father to the Association for the present year, I have exercised a parent's privilege, by giving you the result of personal observation, and the advice suggested thereby, on a matter very intimately connected, I think, with the interests of the medical profession of the Dominion of Canada.

COMPULSORY VACCINATION.

The subject of compulsory vaccination should early occupy the attention of this Association. It is unnecessary, even had I the time, addressing, as I am, a professional audience, that I should dwell at length on this matter, and support the suggestion by argument, by facts, and by figures, which are already familiar to you, but more especially to those of your number who have studied the vital statistics of Great Britain and other European countries. When I say that this subject should early occupy the attention of the Association, I mean that it should be our duty, without unnecessary delay, to urge it on the Government and Legislature of the country as a matter of national moment, and one that should be promptly dealt with; more especially as,

in these days, the importation of smallpox to this continent by steamships engaged in transporting emigrants from the larger cities of Europe is a thing of weekly occurrence.

Leaving politico-medical, or medico-political subjects, let me for a brief moment refer to one or two matters more purely medical, intimately connected with the growth and interests of this Association.

MEDICAL SOCIETIES.

It should be the duty of this institution to recommend and urge upon its members the desirableness of forming Medical Societies whenever and wherever the material can be found to effect this object. We cannot over-estimate their value to the profession and to the communities. They are, when organized on correct principles, and properly conducted, educational institutions of great practical value.

They stimulate men to work, to observe, and think, and to impart to the common storehouse of knowledge important facts, that would otherwise be lost to the profession, or would be long delayed in reaching that storehouse. They are capital schools for eliciting practical knowledge, developing latent talent, and bringing to the front men of ability, who, without such aids, would often remain in obscurity, unknown and unhonored.

In sparsely populated districts, where medical men but seldom congregate in numbers, and the advantages of social and professional intercourse cannot be had, as in cities, they will supply a want not otherwise to be obtained. To this institution they will be valuable co-workers, and the delegates who shall here represent them will, in general, both in speaking and voting, be giving expression to the views not of the individual only, but of the organization whence they come.

As an Association, we can only deal with this matter in a recommendatory spirit. It is a subject for sectional and individual effort, but I trust its importance will not be lost sight of, and that, ere we meet again, the medical societies, which are now comparatively few in number, may be increased in the Dominion of Canada ten-fold; and, through our increasingly valuable medical periodicals, be giving, systematically, to the whole profession, the result of their labors.

FINANCE AND PUBLICATION OF PROFESSIONAL AND SCIENTIFIC PAPERS.

I wish to call attention to the report of the Publishing Committee, presented to the Association last year, on the subject of our finances. The Chairman of the Committee, Dr. F. W. Campbell, informed us that the valuable papers prepared with

much thought, and at no small expenditure of time, which had been read on previous sessions before the Association, remained unpublished for want of funds. Let me say, gentlemen, that I believe the usefulness, and the continued life, of our organization, is largely dependent on the cultivation of this its scientific and professional feature; and we cannot expect members to give their time and labor to this department if their papers, after being read, are to be thrown into waste paper baskets, or fyled away in the Secretary's office, unpublished. Dr. Campbell's suggestion in this connection was that membership should be looked upon as permanent, and that, whether present at our annual meetings or absent, the dues or subscriptions should be collected from all.

Dr. Canniff's notice of motion to alter the By-laws in relation to this matter, in accordance with this suggestion, comes regularly before us now, and will, I trust, be promptly passed, so that the financial difficulty to which I refer may no longer impede our scientific progress. I should have liked, had time permitted, to refer to the desirableness of sending some of our representative men, as delegates, to foreign Associations; and especially to that of the neighboring Union, which, on more than one occasion, has paid us the compliment of sending to our annual gatherings some of its ablest members.

We should reciprocate, and be well represented at their next meeting. I should also have liked to dwell for a few moments on the propriety of the whole profession of British America patriotically supporting, by their subscriptions and literary contributions, the medical press of the country, but time fails me.

Heretofore, our sessions have continued only two days. The time is altogether too limited to satisfactorily overtake the business, and I trust that on this occasion, and in the future, three entire days, at least, may be appropriated for the work of each meeting.

In closing these already too lengthy observations, I feel it my duty to say to the Association, and more especially to its Nominating Committee, who will to-morrow probably submit for approval the names of our officers for the ensuing year, that I believe it to be for the true interests of the institution, that the President and Vice-President should in the future not be re-appointed, but changed annually, and I would now advise the Association to seek new men from the leading minds in the profession, from those who occupy prominent positions as practitioners or teachers, who, in consequence of what they have achieved by their talents and energy in the Science of Medicine, are by the common consent of the profession, and the public, acknowledged as men worthy to fill the highest professional offices in the gift of the profession itself or of the public.

While other collateral subjects come legitimately within our sphere of action, and should have, as I have already stated, our earnest attention, let me say, gentlemen, that our primary object should be to make this structure, from top to bottom, from centre to circumference, in all its parts, a professional institution; and with this end in view, and ever in our minds, we should bend ourselves manfully to the work, striving with unity of purpose and a fixed determination to make the Medical Association of the Dominion of Canada one of the prominent and most useful institutions of the land; and, in accomplishing this, we will be largely assisted by annually placing at the head of the Association our ablest men, who are not engaged in other pursuits than medicine. In this connection, too, I would say to the junior men who have but for a brief period been engaged in the struggle, and are conquering success, and to those who are just commencing their professional career, on you will largely rest the labor and the responsibility of guiding its affairs, and making it in the future, I trust, a blessing to our profession and our country. We, who for long years have been upon the stage, and have taken an active part in organizing and bringing it thus far on its journey, must, in the nature of things, soon step aside, and give place, we earnestly hope, to abler and better men. We say to you to-day, young men, equip and prepare yourselves for these future responsibilities so that in after years the historian of your profession and our country may truthfully say of you, "They well performed their work."

Before he left Halifax for Quebec, my father had yielded to the solicitations of his old friend Mr. Stephen Selden, editor and proprietor of *The Christian Messenger*, to furnish that paper with some correspondence from Edinburgh. The journey to Quebec (as it was usually done before the Intercolonial Railway was built), the Atlantic voyage, and some account of things seen in Liverpool, are related in the first of a series of seven letters published in the *Messenger*, as follows. The letter omits mention of four of his fellow-passengers on the "Moravian,"—Taylor, Bagnall, Sadler and Winship, composing the Tyne, or Taylor-Winship crew, who were returning home after a series of victories in America. Sadler was the champion single-sculler of that day, who defeated Nova Scotia's greatest oarsman, George Brown, at Halifax. Being physically "used up," they consulted my father on the voyage, when he found them in much the same condition from overwork as was poor Renforth, the English oarsman, when he attempted his last race, on the Kennebecasis near St. John, and fell dead in his boat. Advised by my father, the crew cancelled pending English races and went out of commission for a time.

13 SALISBURY PLACE, NEWINGTON,
EDINBURGH, October 24th, 1871.

Dear Editor,—

In compliance with your request I propose to inflict on you and your readers some "jottings by the way," which, if not interesting, will at all events demonstrate to you the fact that although now surrounded in this old world by much that is attractive and absorbing, both to the eye and the mind, I have neither forgotten my promise nor those I have left behind me at home.

ST. JOHN TO PORTLAND—MORE BOATS REQUIRED.

As you are aware, I came to Britain by rather a circuitous route. My journey from Halifax to Quebec by a way very familiar to the travelling public of Nova Scotia need not be dwelt on at any length, as nothing of any moment occurred to distinguish it from oft-repeated excursions made in former years over the same ground. On board the International steamer which thrice a week bridges the intervening space between St. John and Portland there was a heterogeneous crowd of some four or five hundred travellers, not knowing what to do with themselves by day, and a large number of them finding it very difficult to know where to stow their bodies at night—the sleeping accommodation being insufficient for the number on board. In this connection let me advise those of your citizens who may be travelling between St. John and Portland, by these International steamers, during the crowded season, to procure a stateroom ticket from the Halifax agent, ere they leave, else a plank, with or without a pillow, will very likely be their lot during the night they are compelled to be at sea. Having taken this precaution, I was enabled to accommodate two unberthed gentlemen, in the upper story of my stateroom, and as I looked out upon the motley mass of recumbent figures, stowed away on the saloon floors for the night—almost as compactly as spoons in a sideboard—I could not but feel, that for that night, at all events, "the lines had fallen unto us in pleasant places."

Not unfrequently, by day, as I elbowed my way through the over-crowded saloons, and more frequently by night, the thought would suggest itself, "What would become of the hundreds of passengers on board should fire, collision, or other disaster befall the ship in which we were journeying, rendering it imperative on all hastily to desert her?"

To those who have thought of this matter, and examined the very inadequate means of transport—in the shape of boats—with which these vessels are provided, to meet a sudden emergency of the kind referred to, a feeling of gratitude to God is at once suggested, that these, otherwise well equipped and admirably

managed steamships, have, year after year, been preserved by Him, and that the thousands upon thousands of men, women and children who have taken passage by them have been safely landed at their places of destination.

With all the care and all the skill that human ingenuity and thought can devise, accidents of the most fearful nature are constantly occurring on the sea, and along our coasts, and thousands of men now actively engaged in the pursuits of life have been indebted for preservation, to the adequate and well ordered boat arrangements of the ships, which, in conveying them from port to port, were wrecked or lost at sea. I had thought that no passenger ship was permitted to leave a British port without sufficient boat accommodation being provided for every seaman and passenger on board—in case of accident—but I have been in error. At all events, the rule, as I understand it, of the English Board of Trade, does not appear to be applicable to the British North American Provinces—but I hope the day is not far distant when such a regulation will be there made imperative, and applicable alike to ships sailing under foreign and British flags.

THE NOVA SCOTIA LION.

It may not be amiss to mention that if the list of voyagers on this occasion contained no names known to fame, there was, at all events, one distinguished saloon passenger on board, and he a Nova Scotian—although not a member of the human family. I refer to a young lion, born a few days or weeks before in Halifax—the whelp of a circus lioness. He was cared for and nursed in the lap of a circus lady, and appeared comfortable and “happy under the circumstances.”

I neither saw nor heard anything of the natural mother, and came to the conclusion that this good lady was either returning the compliment for Romulus and Remus of old, or, that adopting the suggestion of Dickens in “*Dombey and Son*,” she was “doing something temporary with a teapot.”

The railway, after some unavoidable delay, deposited us at Point Levis early on Sunday morning, and as we steamed across the St. Lawrence to

QUEBEC,

a familiar object from the harbor of Halifax, the “*Royal Alfred*” bearing the flag of Admiral Fanshaw, met our view.

Accompanied by a fellow traveller, the Rev. D. O. Parker, of Liverpool, N.S., the only Baptist Chapel in Quebec was sought and found, and we spent a pleasant, and I trust a profitable day with the little band who worship there. In the evening Mr. Parker occupied the pulpit.

Quebec was crowded to excess, and every available bed occupied by visitors. The hotel accommodation at best is but limited, but on this occasion, in addition to a large number of tourists, the great Provincial Exhibition and Medical Association were being held in the city, and attracted strangers from a distance, who found no difficulty in obtaining food in abundance, but where to get comfortable bed-rooms was another matter. Close stowage, with some discomfort, had to be endured for a time by many who were unaccustomed to it.

ACROSS THE ATLANTIC.

At 9.30 o'clock on the morning of the 16th September the passengers for England by the screw steamship "Moravian," of whom I was one, were ferried by a steam tug alongside, and with their trunks and handboxes were hustled on board. At 10 o'clock the gun fired and we were off, with our prow directed seaward. The scenery for a long distance below Quebec, on both sides of the St. Lawrence, is beautiful. Cultivated and picturesque islands are numerous, and add variety to it. For very many miles below the city the shores of the river are thickly populated. The churches are large, and have their roofs and steeples covered with tin, which reflecting on a fine day the sun's rays gives them a most brilliant appearance. In Halifax, as indeed in all places situated in close proximity to the sea, tin is speedily acted upon chemically; and consequently cannot be used for roofing purposes, as on the Upper St. Lawrence and throughout Canada; where there is an immense consumption of the English manufactured article, which takes the place of slate and shingles. Far down the St. Lawrence lies the "Island of Bic," where pilots congregate in summer. Here they leave outward bound ships, and take charge of those on their way to Quebec and Montreal, amid fog and rain. At midnight we reached it and discharged our pilot and the quarantine medical officer, who took on shore our telegrams and letters, and mailed them at the island post office. The official just named awaits the arrival of the next inward bound Allan mail steamship, and accompanies her up the river for the purpose of carefully inspecting the immigrants and other passengers. If contagious disease is among them, he detains the vessel and all on board her at the large and well equipped Quarantine Island, thirty miles below Quebec. Such is the provision made by the Dominion Government for the protection of the inhabitants of the old Canadian Provinces against the importation of contagious diseases from other countries by way of the sea; and, before my return, I hope to learn that a well ordered and sufficiently capacious Quarantine establishment

has been completed on Lawlor's Island, in your harbor, and that the Health Officer of the port will be sustained when the necessity for it arises in making the quarantine of the port thoroughly protective.

The mail steamers from Quebec take the northern route—passing through the somewhat narrow Strait of Belle Isle, which divides the eastern coast of Labrador from the northwestern part of Newfoundland, making the voyage to Liverpool only about 180 miles longer than that from Halifax.

In and beyond this Strait almost throughout the year ice is met, and the temperature of the water being below that of the atmosphere, a kind of fog or mist often hangs about the locality, sometimes so dense as to obscure all objects, and making the navigation dangerous—especially during the darkness of night. We saw several icebergs in this neighborhood, grand and beautiful objects when observed from a distance, with the sun's rays playing upon their irregular crystalline surfaces, but greatly to be dreaded in a position like that of Belle Isle. Our courteous, experienced and ever-vigilant captain (Graham) was hardly off "the bridge" from the time we left Quebec until we were beyond the iceberg region.

If we (the passengers) went on deck at any hour of the night he could be seen in the path of duty—here a very narrow one, and only the breadth of the ship—pacing the familiar planks of the bridge, looking out for the floe-ice and icebergs—almost the only enemy to be here encountered, if the correct course can be kept; as other ships than those conveying the Canadian mails, are seldom met with on this part of the northern route—hence one of the dangers of the more frequented southern track—collision with other ships—is avoided.

Through a dense fog we were pursuing our course on the Tuesday night after our departure from Quebec at a greatly reduced speed, probably not more than four knots an hour, when suddenly the ship stopped. Some of the anxious passengers who were spending a sleepless night were speedily on deck, and there saw a huge iceberg not more than forty feet from the port side of the ship, while on the opposite bow was another large mass of ice. Under God, the great care and persevering vigilance of our captain, officers and outlook men saved us from a terrible calamity. "What a lucky escape!" was the general expression as the matter was discussed among the passengers; but there were some on board who could, with thankful hearts, say there was no luck in the matter, but that a kind and overruling Providence warded off the blow which would have speedily sent a magnificent ship to the bottom, and probably many lives into an unexpected eternity.

About the same locality, a very few years since, a fine steamship, the "Canadian," owned by the same company, and commanded by our captain, in just such a fog as then surrounded the "Moravian," about the dawn of day struck a mass of floating ice, and in twenty minutes was away at the bottom of the sea, while all of her three hundred passengers, save thirty, several of whom never reached the deck but were drowned below ere the ship went down, were saved in the boats by the admirable discipline and coolness of the officers and ship's company. A practical illustration of the benefits arising from having all sea-going passenger ships provided with the necessary boat accommodation to take off every human being on board, in case of a serious accident. Out of the ice region, with the open and broad Atlantic before us, and with comparatively little danger from other ships too closely crossing our path, our captain was to be found daily occupying his seat at table and adding by his cheery, gentlemanly manner to the pleasure and interest of the voyage.

With the exception of an adverse wind, which continued during the entire passage, and some rather troublesome cases of the disease which Mark Twain facetiously describes by placing the hand on the stomach and saying "Oh, my!" all went well both with ship and passengers until the night of Friday, the 22nd September, when I met for the first time in my life with death upon the ocean.

The case was peculiar and distressing. A young Scotchman, thirty-two years of age, engaged in mercantile pursuits in the city of Montreal, genial and intelligent, strong, active, and the very picture of robust health, left my side at the tea table about eight o'clock to accompany one of the lady passengers on deck. For a time they watched the phosphorescent appearance of the disturbed waters in the wake of the ship, and sang together some familiar songs, when suddenly he faltered in speech, and sank powerless to the deck. He was at once carried to his stateroom, and I was summoned by the surgeon of the ship to see him. Apoplexy had attacked him, and the hand of death was upon him. For a few minutes consciousness continued, and he made most painful efforts to say something to us—probably to send some parting message to those who were dear to him, but it was useless. Soon deep stupor supervened, and at five o'clock next morning, having been most faithfully watched and cared for by Dr. Wolff, the kind-hearted surgeon of the ship, and two or three Scotch and Canadian friends through the weary hours of the night, his spirit fled. Strange to say, at the very time he was seized, a large number of the passengers assembled in the smoking and card-room on deck were engaged in discussing this question—"Who is the finest-looking

man on board the ship?" and just as I opened the door to ask one of his intimate friends, who was ignorant of what had occurred, something concerning his former health and history, the unanimous decision of the party had been given in favor of Mr. Wilson, the man whose countenance was now distorted and tongue speechless, and whose admirably developed frame was paralyzed and helpless, and even then grappling with death. The shock produced by such an event on land would have been marked and distressing, but here, out upon the ocean, it can be more easily imagined than described. The effect was electrical and depressed every member and all classes of our little community. The card-table was at once deserted, and seriousness was upon every man's brow, and when the cabin passengers assembled the next morning at the breakfast table, and the seat of one of the most intelligent and cheerful men on board the ship was vacant, tears were seen coursing down the cheeks of some of the ladies, as they thought of what was in store for the bereaved mother and the betrothed of the deceased. And there was moisture in the eye of more than one strong man as they thus practically realized the truth of the sentiment, "In the midst of life we are in death," and that, "In an hour when ye think not the Son of man cometh."

Sailors have almost invariably a disinclination to be shut up in a ship with the dead, and their desire is to commit as soon after death as possible the remains to the deep, but in this instance the body was retained, for interment in the village near Glasgow where his parents and more intimate friends dwelt.

A rough coffin was prepared, and in the presence of the officers, many of the passengers and crew, all of whom were deeply impressed with the scene, the poor fellow's remains were laid in one of the covered lifeboats, suspended from the davits on the ship's quarter, and there kept until the Irish coast was reached, when they were landed at Moville for transportation to Glasgow from Londonderry.

The Episcopal clergyman who conducted the service and preached, the first Sunday morning after our departure from Quebec, was not able, in consequence of sea-sickness, to do so on the following Sunday morning, consequently the captain read the Church of England service—and performed the duty very well. In the evening, the sea being somewhat quieted, the church bell sounded fore and aft the ship for ten or fifteen minutes, reminding us of the Sabbath on land and our own homes, and the clergyman took his place and preached a sermon appropriate to the occasion, in which feeling allusion was made to the sad event which occupied all our minds, the death of our deceased travelling companion.

IRELAND IN SIGHT.

On Tuesday morning, the 26th ult., quite early, Tory Island light, on the north-eastern coast of Ireland, was sighted, and running close in shore along the coast and highlands of Donegal we reached Moville, on Lough Foyle, at midday, transferred a portion of our mails and several passengers to a steam tug, which conveyed them twelve or fifteen miles up the Lough to Londonderry—and then headed our ship for the Irish Channel.

Before leaving this beautiful bay several telegrams were despatched, announcing to our families and others interested in the ship our safe arrival in British waters. One was forwarded to the friends of the deceased passenger, telling them that he was no more, and that they must be prepared to inter his remains, *unseen*, on their arrival in Glasgow, the following morning. Once before, in 1857, I passed the Giant's Causeway in a Cunard ship, but at too great a distance to satisfactorily observe it. On this occasion, the day being fine and clear, we "hugged the shore," as sailors express it, and could with great distinctness recognize the columnar appearance of this peculiar geological formation. The entrance to its dark caves was apparent, with the boats of excursionists passing in and out of some of them, while, seated in calm majesty upon his throne of basaltic rock, the natural figure of the great Giant—the centre of attraction to all who visit this locality—was plainly visible. At night we met in the Channel, "right in our teeth," that which during the whole voyage we had been dreading, the equinoctial gale; but with a well-lighted coast, and a staunch and powerful steamer beneath our feet, the Mersey was reached without difficulty or danger at 9.30 o'clock, and on the landing-stage, as we were warped towards it, I recognized two members of my family, who announced to me the gratifying intelligence that all was well with them. Not being a smoker, and having neither cigars nor tobacco stowed away, my luggage was speedily passed by the customs officials, a hurried farewell was said to my agreeable fellow-voyagers and the officers of one of the finest and best equipped ships (in every particular) which crosses the ocean, and I found myself, after an absence of fourteen years, on British soil again, in the great commercial city of

LIVERPOOL.

Amid noise, bustle and apparent confusion, along streets densely populated with a moving, hurrying mass of human beings, I wended my way to the other side of the Mersey, to my temporary home in Birkenhead. The growth of Liverpool and Birkenhead during these fourteen years has been amazing, not only in the extent of surface covered by manufactories, houses, warehouses,

public and humane institutions, but in the extension of their massive and magnificent docks and floating landing-stages for the accommodation of their ever-increasing commerce. A rise and fall of tide in the Mersey of twenty feet, or more, enables the Dock Commissioners of these two great cities—under whose special charge these great institutions are constructed and worked—to utilize its margin and shores in the building of these vast wet, dry and graving docks, into which quiet and deep basins surrounded by vast walls of masonry all the ships of these ports go to discharge and take in cargo, as also for repairs and graving purposes. At and near high water the broad, strong gates (some worked by hydraulic power, others by complicated machinery so perfect that a single man can with the strength of his two arms swing them to and fro at pleasure, or as occasion may demand) open for the reception of fresh arrivals and to give exit to those whose capacious holds have been filled with freight from the more capacious warehouses which on all sides surround these docks.

Some hundreds of acres along the shores of the river have been thus converted into receptacles for ships of every size, from the leviathan steamer to the trim and beautifully modelled pilot boat, the appearance of which on the distant waters so delights the inward bound seaman and ocean traveller. The great number of these still-watered basins, large and small, the perfect systems of management, the beehive-like activity and order which pervade them, have all been to me a wonder and a study. The tide rises, the huge gateways of what is termed a dry or graving dock are opened; a ship enters; the tide recedes; the gates are again opened, and the water flows out from the basin, leaving the vessel, high and dry, resting on an even keel. The gates are a second time closed, so firmly and accurately that the pressure of water, even of the highest tide, does not affect them, and the work of repair or of graving goes on as if the ship were on the stocks or the dry land.

When all is completed, the waters of this great river, being made thus subservient to science and the will of man, are permitted again to enter and float the ship away from this workshop—the dry dock—to the wet dock, from whence she is speedily sent, laden with Britain's productions to other scenes and other lands.

The distance between the landing-stages of Liverpool and Birkenhead is about three-quarters of a mile. The ferry accommodation consists of three steamboats, each measuring something less than one hundred tons. One of the more recently constructed is steered by hydraulic power. Their engines are powerful, necessarily so, as the current in the river runs at the rate of four to six miles an hour. From each landing-stage one of these boats leaves every ten minutes. No horses or carriages are carried, but as a

general thing they are literally crowded with passengers, all paying one penny a trip who are not the possessors of commutation tickets. The captain of one of these boats informed me that it was no uncommon thing for the three to convey from fifty to seventy-five thousand passengers on a single day, while the number annually ferried across the Mersey by this single route amounts to several millions. Thus you will see that on these crowded or gala days more than double the population of Halifax and Dartmouth combined is conveyed from shore to shore by these three small steamers in the short space of twenty-four hours—for they run all night, charging, however, sixpence sterling for each passenger after twelve o'clock. I state these facts, on the above authority, for the purpose of conveying to you some idea of the growth and importance of Birkenhead and the small towns and villages in its immediate neighborhood, where a very large number of the commercial men of Liverpool reside. In short, these are to Liverpool what Brooklyn is to New York.

The ferry boats in question are not expensively fitted up. Two of them have ladies' cabins in which the seats are cushioned, but the third is so arranged that ladies and laborers have to occupy the same apartment, downstairs below the water line, as in the Dartmouth boats in days of yore. In everything but speed the ancient "Micomac," which has so long and so safely ferried us across Halifax harbor, will favorably compare with her, and I may add that her accommodation, although not quite so extensive, is more than equal, as regards comfort, to that furnished by the antiquated piece of naval architecture to which I refer. The captains, engineers and deck hands perform their work exposed to the weather, with nothing to protect them from rain, snow and heat; hence I concluded that whatever other sins the managers of the Dartmouth steamboat company may have to answer for, as humanitarians they are in advance of the Corporation of Birkenhead, who own and work the ferry in question.

In Halifax and Dartmouth a demand has been made and often repeated for larger boats and more elegant accommodation on the ferry which connects these two towns. This demand will doubtless ere long be responded to, but, looking at the matter in its relation to the population and the traffic to be accommodated, and from a Birkenhead and Liverpool standpoint, urgent as I have been on the matter for public as well as from personal reasons, I feel that I can hardly urge my fellow-proprietors to construct a floating palace for the work in question, before that "Longwharf"—which is to connect and make Halifax and Liverpool almost one city—is built, or to furnish palatial accommodation for one or two hundred thousand people before they are born and can enjoy it.

Since my last visit to the Old World the new Exchange of

Liverpool has been built, great both as regards its capacity and its architectural beauty. Here from eleven to twelve o'clock every day the mercantile community congregates, and here take place those great commercial and trade transactions between the business men of the city, amounting daily to hundreds of thousands of pounds (speaking within bounds) and often to millions. Here you see the cotton men—for this is the great cotton mart of the world, importing annually to its warehouses between two and three millions of bales—moving earnestly and quickly about, eyes and tongue alike talking cotton—with samples of the raw material in their hands and adhering to their coats, so that there is no mistaking them. Wholesale business, in all its departments, is here transacted, not for Liverpool alone, but for a large portion of England.

Just opposite is the Stockbrokers' Exchange, a fine building externally, and splendidly fitted up and arranged, so I am informed. It is always closed to the uninitiated, and none but members have the entrée.

The civic and public buildings and offices of every description are constructed on a grand scale, externally and internally. Nothing, however, gratified me more than my visit to Brown's Library and Museum.

In years gone by, a Liverpool merchant bearing that name bequeathed a large sum of money to erect and furnish a public library, free to all classes. The building is very large, and as an architectural structure is attractive, but to me its chief interest centres in that which was the donor's intention, viz., furnishing good healthy mental food to those who were without it and could not afford to obtain it—the masses. There during my visit I saw mingled with those who were very well dressed, very poor men, the laborer, men out at the elbows, some with "shocking bad hats," others with worn-out coats and shoes, quietly seated in a large and comfortable reading-room, intently engaged in perusing books and periodicals and evidently enjoying the occupation and the place. Hither the clerk and the skilled artizan, who have but an hour to reach their lodgings and partake of their midday meal, hasten, to select some work in which they are interested—out of the 52,000 volumes which are there collected and properly arranged—and spend a few minutes in devouring its contents. And when their time is up the book is handed back to the boy librarian at the counter, as they hie away to their stores or their workshops.

The library is well selected; the scholar, the man of literary tastes, the naturalist, the artist and the artizan can all here drink—in accordance with their varied tastes—at the fountain of knowledge, and that, too, without cost.

While I was there observing and watching the practical workings of the Institution, I suppose there were not less than 200 or 250 men and lads occupied in the large reading-room and in the smaller apartments where were stored the works in the higher departments of learning. Here, some were *studying*, while others were engaged in drawing and painting from works taken from the shelves of this great and liberal institution, works that they could not otherwise have obtained. In another portion of this same building is a large and well-filled museum, containing specimens and articles of the greatest interest, from all parts of the world, illustrating mechanical and natural science. The fine arts and antiquarian science are also well represented. In short, it is a museum such as I long to see in the capital of my native Province.

I was asked to step into the Aquarium that I might be introduced to a countryman—the friend who gave me the information being reticent as to the name of the party to whom he wished to introduce me. Suddenly I came in front of a large glass case containing a huge bull-frog, which was thus labeled, “Bull-Frogs from Nova Scotia—presented by Andrew Downs.” I presume the plural number was applicable when the presentation was made, but the singular should now be used, as but one remains. This leviathan did not apparently recognize me as a Nova Scotian, for he remained motionless as a statue during the interview, did not even croak, and as I intently watched him for some minutes he only winked once as if to let me know I was under observation. I was proud of my countryman, for he was the finest specimen of his species I had ever seen and was a centre of attraction to all who visited his department of the museum.

I was desirous of hearing the Rev. Stowel Brown preach again—having heard him once in 1857—but was disappointed, in consequence of his absence from Liverpool on the only Sunday I was there. So I very contentedly and profitably listened to a less distinguished Baptist minister in Birkenhead.

On the same day I attended a very interesting service at the Blue Coat School in Liverpool, an Episcopal institution, endowed only to a very limited extent, and maintained mainly by the donations and annual contributions of the charitable and the wealthy. Here are collected, fed, clothed and educated from 200 to 250 boys and 100 girls from five to fourteen years of age, all either orphans or fatherless, neatly dressed in blue clothes, and, I may add, looking, with their robust forms and rosy cheeks, both healthy and happy. When they have fully reached the period of fourteen years they leave the school, the boys being placed at trades and in stores, and the girls at service. Several prominently wealthy and distinguished men were here cared for and partially educated in early life. And I am glad to be able to add that in after life they

did not forget the fact, as the annals of the institution and their generous contributions amply testify. The boys of the Blue Coat School in London are never permitted to wear a hat or cap, and meet them where you will, while they are inmates of that institution, in hot, cold or wet weather, their heads are bare—because the founder of the school so willed it. Eels, they say, get used to skinning, and so I presume these boys get used to the barbarous regulation which compels them to run through the streets of London, in foul weather and fair, under “bare polls.” This generous old monomaniac with the “bee in his bonnet,” who had a whim to gratify, might have been hydropathically relieved of his mental disease or eccentricity if he had only been subjected for a brief period to this *bonnetless* practice. Cured by his own medicine! Happily no such regulation exists in connection with the Blue Coat School of Liverpool.

On the Sunday in question the doors of the institution were opened at a quarter to four o'clock p.m., and the crowd of visitors was first shown through the antiquated building in the centre of the city, where these children dwell. Everything was in admirable order, and the servant who accompanied myself and family stated as we passed through the kitchen, that here the general order of things is somewhat reversed, for the boys do the cooking, while the girls attend to other domestic matters about the establishment.

The object the managers have in view, in exhibiting the building on Sundays to visitors, is to interest them in this work of charity and love, so that they may contribute to its funds. An opportunity is given to each visitor to do so as they enter the door of the chapel, where several gentlemen stand with plates in their hands to gather in the silver and pence. The small chapel was uncomfortably *packed* with men, women and children. When all were provided with sitting or standing room the organist played a solemn march, and presently we heard a sound as of a regiment of soldiers advancing with slow and measured step, and then they came, two and two into the chapel and through the aisle, and with military precision filed into their respective places, their feet keeping time to the music, until all were in position, the boys in advance, the girls bringing up the rear of the procession.

The singing of these children was magnificent, but the unique part of the proceedings, and that which struck me most was that, instead of a clergyman, as I had fully expected, taking the service, a little boy of twelve or fourteen years stood up in the reading desk, gave out the hymns and anthems, read the collect, the chapters from the Old and New Testament for the day, and the few very appropriate prayers of this special service, with as much solemnity and effect as if he had been an octogenarian. A part of the service consisted of about thirty of the children stepping to the front with

the same military precision, and very distinctly replying without an error of a word to all the questions of the Church of England Catechism. After this, a concluding anthem was sung and the little chaplain of the day (the elder boys take the service, I believe, *in turn*) pronounced the benediction, and then, to an appropriate march from the organ, in the same military order they entered the chapel, they left it and took their places at the supper table, where the large congregation, as they passed through the room, saw them enjoying their bread, cheese and milk.

A more impressive service I never witnessed, and at its close I could not but feel thankful that in Christian England institutions of this character are many and *not* "far between."

ENGLAND STILL YOUTHFUL AND VIGOROUS.

In republican America (and, I regret to say, in British America occasionally, too,—from the lips and pens of a few who really know better) the idea is promulgated in private and through the press, by some wilfully and in enmity, and by others, I dare say, ignorantly, that old England is becoming exhausted, an effete country, and rapidly declining in the scale of nations. To the men who, being misinformed, really entertain such opinions, I would say, cross the Atlantic and *personally* see the British Isles. Visit the great metropolis of England with its more than three millions of inhabitants; see for yourselves the manufacturing and commercial centres; look at its agricultural and mineral wealth, its fisheries, its maritime strength and power, its ever-expanding railway, postal and telegraphic communications, its educational institutions (becoming annually more open and free), the constitutional and religious liberty and freedom of her people, and, having done this, I ask you to spend one short week in Liverpool, with your eyes wide open and your locomotive apparatus in active operation, that you may form correct impressions of this single seaport of the old Fatherland, and after having mentally measured her commerce and her commercial relations, and seen her manufactories, her steamships, her wooden and her iron walls, her railways and railway communications, her public and private buildings, and last, but not least, her noble charities, if you do not return to your homes convinced that you have been fostering error, your moral natures must be obtuse indeed, and your natural prejudice so great that even the strongest and most positive testimony, on England's side, can find no resting-place in minds so constituted.

In discussing the subject of England's true position among the nations, one should not and cannot keep in the background the great fact that above and beyond what she is *per se*—that is to

say, within the circumscribed limits of her own shores—far over the ocean, in all climes, great possessions are hers, and many of them populated largely by her own offspring whose commercial relations with the parent country are intimate, extensive and *annually increasing*, but the tie that binds them more firmly together than all others is that of affection, giving to this mother of many nations not only a material, but a moral strength, that no words can measure or convey. Again, an element of strength, *of real strength*, is possessed by Britain, which is not often placed in the balance when this subject is being considered, especially in its natural relations. With much that is wrong, and much that is sinful, clinging to her, she is still among the nations eminently a Christian nation desiring to be at peace with the world, from the best and highest of all motives. If this desire, practically carried out, has occasionally placed her in the eyes of others in an anomalous and apparently in a false position, and is by them viewed as an indication of impaired power, we may rest assured that the great Source of all strength and all power does not so look upon the matter—and in Him is her strength!

A rapid run by train of eight or nine hours, through and past many manufacturing towns and villages that have grown up within the past few years, through a country with varied scenery, at first level, cultivated and beautiful, then, as we advance north towards the borders of Scotland, still beautiful, but more rugged and mountainous, landed us three weeks ago in the capital of Scotland—my temporary home of former years, probably the most beautiful city in the world, and one that has great attractions for me. Here I am at school again.

With kind remembrances to those of your readers to whom I may be known,

I am, dear Editor,

Yours very truly,

D. McN. PARKER.

CHAPTER VII.

EDINBURGH, 1871-3.

"Every day that we spend without learning something is a day lost."
—*Beethoven.*

WITHIN a few days after arrival, a house, 13 Salisbury Place, at the corner of Minto Street, was rented and domestic arrangements were completed. The children were placed at schools, Johnston matriculated in Medicine at the University, and my father plunged at once, with the enthusiastic ardor of the true student and investigator, into the current of his work. He attended special lectures at the University and the Royal College of Surgeons, clinics at the Royal Infirmary and the hospitals, and investigated, practically, all that was new in surgery. He was known to many of the men of mark in Edinburgh, both of the Faculties and of those engaged only in private practice, and he was soon in touch with any others of his profession whom he wished to know. Old friendships with Professor A. R. Simpson (a nephew of Sir James), Professor Syme, Sir Robert Christison, Bart., Dr. Balfour, and others, were renewed. New ones with Dr. Thomas Grainger Stewart, Professor of Pathology, afterwards the Queen's Physician for Scotland and knighted, Professor Laycock, Dr. Gordon, and other front-rank men were formed. They afforded him every facility, took him about to see their most interesting or unusual cases, and the courtesy and consideration which had been extended to him by Sir James Y. Simpson in 1857 were multiplied by such of the medical and surgical fraternity as could in any way serve his purposes. He was asked by Dr. Stewart (who was not a surgeon) to operate once or twice on his patients, and did so—but would accept no fees. In vacation time the Professor of Pathology even loaned him the original manuscript of his University lectures, that he might get Pathology anew, up to date. A two-volume copy of these lectures, made by my mother, remains in the library. He seemed at once to win the esteem and even the love of these men. Dr. Thomas Keith, the famous operator of the day, was quick to appreciate his worth as surgeon and sought his assistance, while he informed him in the latest things in surgery, at his operating table. Dr. Keith was then distinguishing himself in the surgical world by performing

a new, daring and difficult operation in gynecology. My father was present at several of these. In an article on his various operations of this class, which was published by Dr. Keith in the *Edinburgh Medical Journal* for February, 1875, I find two references to my father, one of which I quote: "On the 15th December, 1872, I saw a young Canadian lady, in her twentieth year, with an ovarian tumor of rapid growth. She was sent by Dr. Campbell and Dr. Drake, of Montreal. . . . The fatigues of the voyage and the journey to town were well borne, but the drive from the railway to her lodgings brought on severe pain. Being then from home, I did not see her for a fortnight. During all this time the pain continued, and she was confined to bed. Dr. Parker, of Halifax, an old friend of the family, was fortunately in town. He took charge of her till my return, and continued to give me his kind assistance and counsel in the after management of an unusually anxious case." I omit other details. This and the other operations were highly successful, and saved lives which a few years before must have been lost. Dr. Keith's absence from home was due to a journey to Italy to operate, for which, as he told my father, he received a thousand guineas.

This operation, a great advance in surgery, was then acquired by my father, who subsequently performed it himself, and it is typical of his professional acquisitions during this period of research, when, as he used to say, he had come to Edinburgh to learn his profession over again. It is typical of his professional attitude and spirit, too, that when he came to relinquish work entirely, in 1895, he said that if he were to pursue it longer (granting that the span of life were long enough) he must needs learn his profession over again a third time, and take a very much longer period for it, so vast had become the acquirements of medicine and surgical science during the closing twenty years of his practice.

One of the subjects investigated in this period of special research was the new method of antiseptic surgery. Lister (afterwards Lord Lister) for several years had been carrying on experiments in this method, first at Glasgow and afterwards at Edinburgh, and the Listerian system, in its earlier developments, had come into full practice at Edinburgh in 1870. This new learning my father acquired at first hand, and introduced in his practice when he returned. He knew Lord Lister, and met him later several times in London when he was at the height of his fame.

The happy life in Edinburgh, for all, was clouded by the sudden illness which befell Johnston in December, 1871. The blow fell with stunning force upon the father, for he recognized that the malady could not but be fatal, sooner or later, and, moreover, it dashed his hope of having a son enter the profession while

he himself was yet in practice and who should become his successor.

It had been arranged that my mother's brother and sister, Martin and Celia, with their niece Mary A. Black, should come over in January for a short European tour, on which my father and mother were to join them. When they arrived, Johnston had rallied and was much improved, so that my father felt able to leave him in the care of Drs. Stewart and Gordon and go to Europe, more particularly as he would have opportunity to select some southerly place to which he could afterwards take Johnston, when his condition and the season would permit. My mother was to join the party, with Johnston, later, for this purpose, if he should be well enough to travel.

I find my father's passport, from the Lord Provost of Edinburgh, dated the 20th of January 1872, and vised by the Vice-Consul of France at Leith the same day. The party set out about the first of February, and after visiting Torquay and Dartmouth, in the south of England, with a view to Johnston's future location, crossed to Calais. In the event, the tour was shortened in consequence of unfavorable news of Johnston, who did not improve sufficiently to undergo travel, even to Torquay or Dartmouth. They returned about the middle of March. The itinerary was: Paris, Lyons, Marseilles, Cannes, Nice, Genoa, Pisa, Civita Vecchia, Naples, Pompeii, Herculaneum and Mount Vesuvius, Rome, Poligno, Florence, Bologna, Venice, Verona, Milan, Turin, Macon on the Rhone, Dijon, Paris, Boulogne,—and thence across Channel to Dover. From Turin they crossed the Alps by the Mont Cenis Tunnel which had been opened for travel only on the 17th of September, 1871, and was then considered one of the engineering wonders of the world.

Voluminous and painstaking notes of travel were taken by my father on this occasion. The things to see in Europe have been so long the same and have now become so familiar to us, that little account of this tour, from his note-book, will be attempted. Let it suffice to say that what he wrote is marked by a thoroughness of observation, a keen, appreciative and discriminating insight, and by a thoughtful, philosophical treatment in his comments upon his investigations. Yet, embarrassed and oppressed, as he was, by anxious solicitude for Johnston, as the letters to him disclose, this tour could not afford anything like the usual enjoyment which he was wont to find in this mode of recreation.

The unusual matters of interest in European travel at that time were the desolated condition of Paris, through the work of the Commune following the Franco-German war, the re-construction of the French nation under Thiers, and the new birth of the Italian people, nationally, together with the beginning of evangeli-

cal work in Rome, which followed upon the overthrow of the Papal States in September, 1870, and the entrance of King Victor Emmanuel II., the first king of United Italy, into Rome, in 1871.

Paris had surrendered to the Germans less than a year before my father visited it. The bloody civil war of the Commune which ensued in Paris had ceased only in the summer of 1871. The Empire had been washed out in blood. During the civil war it was impracticable for the Legislative Assembly, whose authority legally ceased with the ratification of the peace with Germany, to dissolve and appeal to the confused voice of the country. The pressing need was to restore tranquility by suppressing the Commune; and the Assembly, transcending its powers, by necessity, elected Thiers, a former minister of Louis Phillippe, the first President of a new Republic. His administration suppressed the Commune with much difficulty, and the Assembly (*Corps Legislatif*) at the time of my father's visit was engaged in secret deliberations looking to the payment of the German war indemnity of a thousand million dollars, and thus freeing French soil from the invaders, who were still occupying it to enforce payment.

At Paris the prostrate Vendome Column, the sacked public buildings, the bullet-marked wall before which the Archbishop of Paris and other noted men had been placed for execution by volleys of musketry, and all such other customary destructive work of Parisians in revolution were seen, together with ruined fortifications and many others of the scars upon the city, left by the ravages of war. From notes made at Paris and on the homeward way I extract the following passages, because they touch upon things outside the category of what visitors to Paris at ordinary times may see and tell; and further, because they reflect this especial visitor's personality in their comment upon things, and in the attention devoted to the "*Culte Evangelique*" there, as had been the case at Rome. It goes without saying that in these notes, just as at other places visited, all the great sights of Paris and its environs, and many other minor ones, are enumerated and described, even to details of the treasures of Art. But it is my aim to extract rather *my father himself* from these notes than any account of places of usual resort in Paris, or elsewhere.

" PARIS, Tuesday, March 5, 1872.

" Walked out in the morning to view the ruins of the Hotel de Ville, the Palais Royal, the Palace of Justice and other places. Magnificent structures all of them. The Tuileries was also destroyed. . . . The statuary at the entrance of the Tuileries gardens was injured by shot and shell. One winged horse had his stone tail shot off, and he was 'winged'—lost one of his wings—while the column on which he stood

was also struck and broken. All these were magnificent ruins. The Tuileries is being repaired, the Palace of Justice also, and La Gloire, on the site of the old Bastille, a small but high statue, gilt,—a man with one foot on a gilded ball on the summit, wings on his back, one foot drawn up and the hands extended as if in the attitude of running (Mercury?) The mane of the lion at the base had been penetrated by a ball, and there were many bullet marks on the lower part of the statue. Everywhere we noticed the signs of destruction—new and fine structures being raised and built where others had been destroyed by the Commune. Many localities are as they were left by the Commune. . . .

“*Notre Dame.* . . . Treasures shewn us. The apparel of state worn by the Emperor Napoleon I when he was crowned in 1804 by the Pope—also all the paraphernalia worn by the Pope himself on that occasion,—gold, gold, gold; velvet, velvet, etc., etc., ‘Magnifique. Grand.’ A part of the habiliments of office of the three archbishops who have been murdered during insurrections—all dust and blood-covered and perforated by bullets. We saw also the two vertebrae of the archbishop who was shot on the barricades in June, 1848, with an arrow marking the track of the bullet, and the bullet, on its end, which killed him; a piece of the ‘true cross’—and a number of other relics too numerous to mention . . .

“Thursday, March 7, 1872. *Louvre.* . . . Room of Charles Lebrun, greatly injured by shells, the frescoed roof very much injured. Two of the paintings pierced by balls or pieces of shells. . . .

“*Invalides. Tomb of Napoleon.* . . . Jerome Bonaparte window here broken and the letter N. with a crown on it was shot through. . . .

“Saw the site and the base of the magnificent triumphant Column Vendome, torn down by the Commune, in Place Vendome. Bronze basrelief on the base still observed. Drove to the Bourse,—heard the noise of the babel before entering it, a long way off. Steps and porch crowded with excited people. Went upstairs and looked down. The crowd was immense and the sight beyond description. Umbrellas and walking sticks had to be left outside, lest in their fury they should attack each other. . . . When I see now in the papers ‘the Bourse excited,’ I will be able to picture the scene—when ‘flat,’ I will know the row is only a moderate one. The Bank of France was next visited. . . . saw apartment after apartment filled with officers and clerks. Soldiers everywhere about it. It was being repaired after the attack of the Commune, and looked, outside, in a most dilapidated condition.

“*The New Church of the Madeleine.* . . . Outside

its main door the everlasting 'Egalité, Fraternité, Unité' painted or carved into the stone. Churches, national buildings of every kind, the prisons, and even the 'Père la Chaise' have these continually recurring words at the entrance gates. The cemetery, however, is the only place where they in reality convey the truth, and that will require a word of modification, or explanation; because the wicked will be punished, not alike—some will be beaten with many stripes, and some will not. While the saints will be all the children of God, and if children then heirs and joint heirs with Christ; yet some will be in Abraham's bosom, and some will be told to go up higher. No, even in Père la Chaise, to the outward eye, the words *égalité, fraternité* are not applicable, for the outward display in the work on the tombs of the rich and great is in sad contrast with that in the case of the poor and the narrow tombs merely marked by dark painted wood—often without a name. . . . The very men who write these words and parade them abroad, have sometimes not the *fraternal* feelings of humanity—as for instance those who took Archbishop Darboy out and shot him like a dog, as they had done before (with a previous archbishop) on the 24th June, 1848, and even once before that. As I viewed the blood-stained garments, the vertebrae and the bullet, I felt that if the Archbishopric of this Diocese were offered me, I should gracefully decline it, as I have no desire either to be shot or to be canonized. At the church door these words are a lie, for even there *égalité, fraternité, unité*, have no existence—as for instance in the Ecumenical Council, on the infallibility question, there was not unity, but division, which has resulted in the secession of Dollinger and others, and has also led to the discussion at Rome relative to Peter's never having been in that city, in which the ex-priests of the R. C. faith opposed three still existing priests. Equality certainly does not exist in the church, as the Pope lives in the Vatican with its 11,000 rooms and the Cardinals and Bishops live in palaces, while the Capuchins go begging from door to door daily, almost bare-footed, and one we saw living in a dark hermit's cell in the tunnel between Naples and Puzzioli; and these men go on their knees to the Pope and kiss his foot. And as regards fraternity, I fear there are as many divisions in the R. C. church as there are among other denominations.

“*Versailles*. . . . became the headquarters of the King of Prussia, 5th February, 1871, who was here proclaimed German Emperor, 18th February, 1871. National Assembly and the President, Thiers, sit and live here. Commenced their sessions there during the reign of the Commune at Paris in 1871. . . .

“Friday, March 8, 1872. By train for Versailles. Went on

to Vincennes. . . . Came back as far as Bel Air Central. . . . Arriving at Versailles 2.30—the train being an *omnibus* instead of an express. . . . The drive around the suburbs of Paris, however, quite repaid us and we saw the earthworks thrown up during the war and passed the scene of many a hard fought contest between the French and Germans, and afterwards the Commune. . . . Nothing but soldiers, where the Corps Legislatif is in session. Wooden huts were built on the broad streets near the Palace to accommodate the soldiers. We visited the magnificent church connected with the Palace now used as the chapel for the Corps Legislatif. We were not permitted to see the apartment in which the Assembly was convened, or to hear their discussions. . . . However, we saw President Thiers and had a good look at him on two or three occasions as we passed and re-passed him. He is an old, little man; in size and walk, as in general appearance, very like the late M. B. Almon. . . .

“Saturday, March 9th, 1872. Bois du Boulogne. . . . In coming and going we passed the magnificent Arch of Triumph of Napoleon, with its bas-reliefs and carvings of victories—some of them broken and destroyed by the recent war. . . . It is a place of great resort. Mary Ann and Judge Wilmot met the Emperor here on horse-back when they were in Paris in 1867, at the Exhibition. As we neared the Tuileries we saw very many places where balls and shells had struck the stonework and done great damage. It was gutted and destroyed by the great fire that raged within—set by the Commune. . . .

“Strange to say one sees everywhere on the old property of the State—that which belonged to France ere Napoleon was crowned Emperor—‘Propriété Republique Francaise’ and ‘Liberté, Egalité, Fraternité,’ and on that which was added after the second Empire ‘Propriété Nationale.’ It is strange that Napoleon III had not the courage to rub the paint brush over the former words. He left them as prophetic words to tell a subsequent historic tale, a ‘Republique’ under Thiers,—‘Liberté, Eglité, Fraternité, under the Commune. . . .

“Sunday, March 10th, 1872. Went at 11 a.m. to 19 Rue des bons Enfants—near Palais Royal, and then under the sign of Hotel de la Chancellerie D’Orleans I saw the words ‘Culte Evangelique.’ An old lady from a little shop, when I asked her for the ‘Chapelle Baptiste,’ led me up two pairs of stairs and introduced me to some women who led me through their dining or living room, and then through two bedrooms where young men were dressing, and from thence into the chapel, which is larger than most of the Protestant chapels or rooms I saw in Italy. The service was to be in French, and a young man informed

me that the Sabbath School would be in session at 2 o'clock in the afternoon; so I concluded to go in search of a place of worship where I could understand the service—and brought up at the Independent Church in 23 Rue Royale. I had some difficulty in finding it, but at length succeeded. It was on the ground floor. I noticed a sign over the next door, 'Bieres Anglaises. Vins Spiritueux,' and, putting the two words, 'Anglaises' and 'Spiritueux' together, it looked like the place—but I soon found my error. . . .

" . . . The chapel was just in the midst of the district ruined by shot, shell and fire of the Germans, or Commune, or both, and close to the Place Vendome and the stump of the Column. The carpenters' hammers, saws and planes were going all around us, and in addition, the 'vins' of the sign next door appeared to have produced their results on some of the neighbors, for there was much hallooing, quarreling, etc., etc., and one virago! Whether she was old or young I could not tell, but her tongue ran at a terrible rate, interfering with and drowning in part the voice of the minister. Very likely she was one of the ladies of the Commune who ran about, during their Parisian reign, with bottles of petroleum, camphene, etc., to fire the city. . . . I went to visit the Sunday School at 19 Rue des bons Enfants, but a mistake had been made by my informant and I got there too late. The regular afternoon service had commenced, in French, and I remained to listen, but not to understand. . . . Two of the tunes sung were familiar old Granville Street tunes, so that I could join in and sing the air with the congregation. . . . I told Mr. Lepoids (the pastor) who I was, and he warmly welcomed me. . . . They had a conference meeting of the church immediately after the congregation had dispersed, and he then introduced me to them, and sent, through me, the Christian salutation and blessing of the church to the Granville Street Baptist Church in Halifax, having first taken the vote and the unanimous consent of his church on the matter. All voted holding up the right hand and standing, and all looked right glad to see a Canadian, as I called myself. They wondered that I, a Canadian, could not speak French. It was a pleasant meeting for me and I rejoiced that I had found and been present at two 'Temples of Jesus Christ' on this, the Lord's day, in Paris, where 'belief in God' and His precious Word is faithfully proclaimed, notwithstanding the statement made by M. Brunet in the paragraph which I now quote from the *London Standard* of March 9th, 1872. It is a telegram dated: Versailles, March 8th, Evening. 'The Assembly rejected a proposal of M. Brunet for the erection of a Temple to Jesus Christ on the Trocadero, as an expression of belief in God, which M. Brunet declared to be neces-

sary for national regeneration. M. Brunet made a long speech on the necessity of religious belief, and was warmly applauded by the Right.' I was in Versailles on that day trying to get into the Chamber, and, if I had been successful, would probably have heard this remarkable and wonderfully suggestive speech. There are thousands upon thousands of Temples in France dedicated nominally to Christ, but actually to saints or to the Virgin, to fallible men or to Mary the mother of Jesus: Notre Dame, costing its millions of dollars and having its millions of treasures; the Holy Chapel almost covered, within and without, with gold fairly dazzling the eyes of beholders; the great Magdalene, and hundreds of other chapels and churches. Yet M. Brunet says there is necessity in Roman Catholic France, heretofore the strong right arm of the Pope, a country full of priests and Jesuits, to have a temple raised to Jesus Christ, as an expression of belief in God. It reminds one of Paul at Athens. 'His spirit was stirred in him when he saw the city wholly given to idolatry.' Apparently M. Brunet's spirit was stirred within him. M. Brunet evidently thinks of the French, as Paul thought of the Athenians, that they are 'too superstitious,' and he is desirous that they should erect a temple 'to the Unknown God,' that the nation might acknowledge and worship Him instead of saints, virgins and idols. What a commentary upon the religious condition of France, full of churches, every village being supplied with one, and the priests being so thick that you can hardly put your foot upon any part of French soil without stumbling over half a dozen of them. . . . But what I have seen as the work of the Commune makes me readily believe that God is scarcely worshipped throughout this vast city by the masses of its population. It needs more than gilded, magnificent works of stone, marble and bronze—it needs more than a temple 'to Jesus Christ' to regenerate this people. It needs the Gavassis, the Hyacinths and the Dollingers, and it needs even these men, these large-brained reformers to have greater light than they even now possess; it needs their hearts, as well as their understandings, to be consecrated and given to God. The temples that God requires here are the softened, subdued, Christ-like hearts. These should be, and, I trust, will be, in France as well as elsewhere the temples of the living God. Silver and gold, bronze and the painter's brush are powerless, but God's Holy Spirit can accomplish great things for France. He can renew and regenerate the nation and make it, as a whole, a temple indeed of the Living, the, at present, Unknown God. . . . I copied the inscription from the bronzed base of the Column Vendome. . . . Only a circular piece of stone of the depth of 2 or 2½ feet is left standing on the square pediment. The four eagles at

each corner of the pediment were untouched, and still remain. . . . The column was vast and high, decorated with emblems and scenes of war from top to bottom. The Communists with ropes and various appliances turned it over, and it was suddenly converted into a broken column. . . . The button-hole decorations are numerous everywhere. I would like to understand what they mean. . . . Monday, March 11th, *St. Cloud*: . . . As we passed along, a couple of miles of the earth and stonework defences thrown up by the Imperial Government to defend the city against the German met us on all sides. Great destruction of property, public and private, was noticed. Shells passed through the walls of stone houses, leaving their marks in the walls, and then bursting inside, scattered destruction on all sides. Hundreds of houses were thus knocked to pieces. Iron railings cut, broken and scattered as if they had been glass rods. A barracks for soldiers was left, riddled by shell. Bomb-proofs were every here and there passed. . . . Chateau Royal. This beautiful old building, so celebrated in the history of France, was made a ruin by the German artillery on the surrounding hills, which destroyed not only the Chateau and the barracks, but all the central part of the town (*St. Cloud*). . . .

“In the evening at 8 o'clock I started to find my Baptist brother M. Lepoids, the *pasteur* of the church I attended on Sunday. I drove two or three miles in a cab and then found him, in reality, in an upper chamber, with a prayer meeting and Bible-class going on. Several of those present, he informed me, were Roman Catholics seeking after the truth as it is in Christ. I could not understand what was said, but I felt wonderfully at home with my brethren in the Lord. When he told me he was sorry that I could not understand, I told him that I never more regretted in my life the undertaking of the erection of the Tower of Babel, because if it had not been for that I could have understood the whole service; but I told them I hoped to meet them all in Heaven, where there would be only one language—one tongue and one Nation. They appeared to be amused about the Tower of Babel, and when we parted we shook hands as old friends bound Heavenward. . . .” “His members, he told me were about 100, and he is getting along well with God's work. His wife is a teacher in the public schools and has charge of ninety-one scholars. Her voice is giving away with much speaking. Finding that I was a doctor, they asked me to prescribe, and I did. This sister was my only patient in France. I had one in Rome (Rev. Mr. Smith) and I hope that God will bless the means. I have been rather struck with the idea of the Baptists in France and Italy always meeting in upper chambers. The Episcopalians, Presbyterians and Independents all were on the

ground floor, and preaching, not to the natives and poor, but to the English and Americans, while the Baptists are, in these upper chambers, preaching to and teaching the poor. *Inter alia*, this rather leads to the conclusion that, both in Italy and in France, we, the Baptists, are the successors of the Apostles. We parted at 11 o'clock, or thereabouts, and if we never meet again on earth, I hope to meet the Lepoids in Heaven."

In the letters to Johnston which follow, the beginnings of the Protestant revival in Rome are touched upon in an interesting way. In these letters, the last ever addressed by father to son, are some things too sacred to be reproduced here. As in the case of matters purely domestic, or of a private nature, occurring in previous letters, these things are omitted. But the spiritual counsel found in the letter of February 25th, 1872, is such a typical illustration of the writer's religious faith, of the vital reality which his religion was to him, and of the earnest force with which he was accustomed to proclaim the Gospel, in its simplicity, to others in conversation, and in public discourse, as well as in his correspondence, that I feel under a sense of compulsion to give this particular letter in full.

"The evil that men do lives after them; the good is oft interred with their bones." In such a communication as this, may it not be that "he being dead yet speaketh" to those thus privileged to hear the voice? Who can tell but this simple, fervid message of salvation sent by the heart sore father from old Rome to his boy under the shadow of approaching death in another old-world city famed in religious history, coming again to others of that father's descendants, but now as a voice from "that bourne whence no traveller returns," may fall once more as seed upon receptive soil.

THE LAST LETTERS TO JOHNSTON.

HOTEL DE NICE, NICE,

Sunday, February 11th, 1872.

My Dear Son:

We arrived here from Marseilles last evening after a very pleasant railway journey through an Alpine country, the valleys of which were cultivated, and the side hills also wherever earth could be found. No cattle, sheep or horses, except those of the latter in use. All the land was cultivated for the vine, the olive and the orange, as well as other fruits, vegetables and cereals. During much of the distance we ran close along the shore of the Mediterranean Sea, which was placid and beautiful. The two most important places we called at were Toulon, the southern Brest, a great naval arsenal of France fortified in front and on

its heights very strongly, and Cannes, a most picturesque and beautiful place where wealthy people reside in winter. The late Lord Brougham lived there for years and owned a chateau, and Lord John Russell is now a resident of the place. We are very comfortably situated at the Hotel de Nice, as we have been indeed in all the hotels. . . . We arrived just in time for dinner, having been delayed, a few miles this side of Cannes, by the late terrible accident at Pont de Brague, where a large bridge had been washed away in consequence of the floods produced by the melting snow on the branches of the Maritime Alps which everywhere run along the coast. We drove about two miles in omnibuses and had our luggage trucked round to the next station in advance of this point. . . . I had a very good night's sleep, and went to hear the Rev. Burn Murdoch, the Free Church minister here, who gave us a very good, practical sermon, without any display of oratory, from 2nd Corinthians, 6: 14-18, and the first verse of the seventh chapter. The subject of the immoral theatrical exhibitions, the horse races and the gambling houses of Nice, all of which have been lately in full blast, occupied a good deal of his time, and I only hope good results will follow the faithful word of admonition addressed to his audience.

I assumed from not getting a telegram from mama at Marseilles, or thus far, that you must be improving, and with much anxiety to learn your real condition, I have, I trust, been thankful to God for His mercy to you. Of course, had you been worse mama would have telegraphed and I should have returned at once. It seems dreadfully long, my dear boy, to be without any intelligence from you, but I hope to have several letters on my arrival at Rome. One written immediately on the receipt of this will be sure to meet me there, at the "Hotel d'Allemagne," as before mentioned in my letter from Paris. I only wish now that I had asked your mama to write me here. We hope to be at Rome about next Saturday night. Before going to Rome, however, we will be at Pisa, say on Thursday next, and my address there will be "Hotel de Londres," where a telegram could reach me after the receipt of this letter, should there be any occasion for it. Our next stage is to Mentone, to-morrow evening. From thence there is a break in the railway communication until we arrive at Savona, a town some distance this side of Genoa. The intervening distance has to be performed by diligence, or coach, but we shall be repaid, we are told, for the fatigue by the great beauty of the scenery. It is here described as being the finest in Europe. Nice is beautiful for situation, but there is no regard paid to the Sabbath day. This is the Carnival season at Rome, and they are keeping it up here as well. All through the city, men, women and boys are rushing, on foot, on horse-

back or in carriages, disguised with every description of mask and dress, dancing and making all kinds of noises as they pass along the streets. The hurdy-gurdys are playing, monkeys are going through their performances on dogs' backs, etc. A small steam engine connected with a panorama is driving musical instruments. Carriages by hundreds are out with the inhabitants. In short, Sunday here, my first in France, is more gay than any other day in the week. How different from a Sabbath in Nova Scotia and in Edinburgh. . . .

10 o'clock p.m. We have just learned that the diligence has ceased to run from Mentone to Savona. We have consequently changed our minds, on the spur of the moment, and have concluded to take the steamer from this port to Genoa to-morrow morning at 9 o'clock, and, if all goes well, we shall be there in nine hours. This will put us into Rome one or two days earlier than we anticipated, but a letter will still reach us if mailed at once on the receipt of this. We cannot as yet say what day we shall be in Paris on our return, but shall write from Rome and tell mama, so that she may make her arrangements with Agnes Shuttleworth to meet us there at the Grand Hotel du Louvre; that is to say if you are well enough to be left at Torquay for a few days, or rather, at first, at Dartmouth.

I have been in communication with a gentleman here, a resident clergyman of the Independent body, who having broken down in health in London, is taking pupils and boarders. If it is desirable, he may be able by and by to accommodate you in his house. I have made all the necessary preliminary arrangements, and we will act in the matter as God may seem to direct us. Tell dear mama that I shall write her in a day or two from Genoa or Pisa. In the meantime, if the doctors think you are able to leave, and advise your removal in the course of a week or two, she had better make her arrangements accordingly. I am very anxious for her to see London and Paris before she goes out, and if all things seem to be so ordered, the opportunity will be a good one. . . .

Aunt Celia, Cousin M. A. and Uncle Martin send their love to you all. And now, my dear boy, farewell for a time. With a great deal of love to mama, yourself, Mary Ann, Willie, Laura and little Fauny, and kind remembrances to the doctors, Sarah and Charles,

I remain, my dear son,
Your affectionate father,
D. McN. PARKER.

Mr. J. Johnston Parker,
13 Salisbury Place, Edinburgh.

ROME, February 18th, 1872.

Sunday, Hotel d'Allemagne.

My Dear Son:

I wrote to mama last night, and having just returned from church will avail myself of a quiet few minutes to drop you a line while Uncle Martin, Aunt C. and M. A. are up on one of the seven hills of Rome taking a look down upon the great city of the Cæsars and the Popes, of ancient statuary and monuments. I was desirous of seeing Mr. Wall, the Baptist missionary, and attending service in his upper chamber this morning, but could not possibly hear a word of him. At the hotel they knew nothing of anything in the shape of a Baptist, unless it was the chapel or church of St. Jean de Baptista. I looked over all the cards with notices of Protestant places of worship, hanging up in the hotel, but found not a line concerning the immersers. So remembering that the way to find a thief was to set a thief after him, I carried the principle into effect in church hunting, and went to the place where those most closely allied in doctrine to the Baptists—the Free Church of Scotland—were to be found, and sure enough I hit the nail on the head; for one of the elders of the church, an Edinburgh Doctor of Medicine, Dr. Phillips, gave me the address, and volunteered the statement that Mr. Wall was doing a great deal of good in Rome. I intend going to hear him preach this evening. The four Protestant English and American Episcopal churches, Kirk of Scotland and Free Church are just without one of the great and ancient gates of Rome. The Popes of the past and present would not allow them to come within its holy walls with their heresies. But now, Mr. Wall has his upper chamber and preaching station, not only within the walls, but almost upon the Vatican itself. The sermon was an excellent one, from the clergyman of Cumray on the Clyde, who is filling the pulpit of the Rev. Dr. Lewis (just dead from diphtheria). It was on Heb. 12: 2—"Looking unto Jesus." It would have profited you, my dear son, to have heard the Word so simply and so ably put to this small congregation of 100 to 150 people. It was in beautiful contrast with what we saw yeste day as we visited St. Peter's, and were present at 4 o'clock vespers, at which service there were twenty-two priests engaged in singing Latin to one old Italian woman, I think a beggar. Gazing in through the bronzed gate or open door there was a handful of English and American people standing. We could not understand a word they said, or sang, but there were two beautiful voices, out of the twenty-two. We had previously seen in the Church of Santa Maria, *supra mænem*, over the site of the ancient Temple of Minerva, high mass performed, in which, amid much of form, of genuflexions, of march-

ing to and fro around the church in procession (a large procession it was, of Dominican monks carrying candles) the Eucharist, the sacred wafer, the real body of Christ as they say, was being marched around the church held up on a silk curtain by six or eight priests—all the priests singing and some of the kneeling audience. All bowed before the Eucharist except English and Americans, who stood and looked on at the ceremony as a piece of idol worship. We chanced to look in at the chapel by accident at the time, having been taken there by our guide to see the paintings, statuary, etc. I have a vast deal to see and to record, and but little time to do it in. I am anxious to push on as fast as possible, so as to be back to join you, and see exactly how you are doing. You cannot tell, my dear boy, how thankful I was to our good God to learn such good accounts of you from mama's letter. I have heretofore been travelling with a heavy heart, but shall go on my way now, more cheerful and contented. While I am anxious for you to leave for the South as soon as possible, I do not wish the slightest risk to be run, for I would rather mama would leave you in Edinburgh for a fortnight longer, if it can be done in safety, and join us in Paris, than to expose you to cold or injury. If she cannot possibly come now, I will take her in the summer by the Rhine to Paris, and to London. But I leave it all to the doctors and your mama to decide. God will direct and guide in the matter. I can get you in the house of a very nice man in Nice, who would look after your comfort, but I fear the discomforts of their houses and the excessive, debilitating heat of summer. Altogether, I think our first plan, that of Torquay, will be the best adapted for your restoration, and that must be the primary, the all-important consideration. You can talk the matter over with Drs. Stewart and Gordon. In three weeks, or four at most, I expect to see you, God willing. Tell mama I am very sorry to tax her with letter-writing for me, but the fact is, if I commence, I must write to a dozen, and at the close of each day I really feel exhausted by the exertion of walking and standing, and cannot spare a moment from my work. I want to learn all I can while absent. In fact I shall be obliged to do six months' work in one. . . . Give my love to mama, Mary Ann, Willie, Laura and dear little Fanny, and remember me to Charles and Sarah; and with much love to yourself,

I remain, dear boy,
Your affect. father,

D. McN. PARKER.

Mr. J. Johnston Parker,
13 Salisbury Place, Edinburgh:

ROME, ITALY, Sunday night,
February 25th, 1872.

My Dear Son:

I was much pleased to see your handwriting under date February 14th, and I perused your letter with interest, and gratitude to God for His goodness in restoring you thus far toward health. I pray to Him daily that the improvement may continue progressively until you are restored to your former state physically; and spiritually, to the joys of His great salvation.

Instead of thinking your statements in relation to your spiritual state "unsatisfactory," I look upon them as just the opposite. I thank God that He has put it into your heart to pray to Him for a renewed heart, and this, I feel assured, you are doing sincerely. And you may rest in faith upon Him who said of Paul: "behold he prayeth," and then received him as His adopted child and never after let go the hold He had of him, but through good report and evil report, through trials and persecutions—some of them quite near the spot where I am writing this—through temptations and hardships, preserved him as His faithful, loving follower to the end of life, and then took him to glory. Now, as regards "feeling," that is a matter you cannot control. It is God who gives us emotional feeling, or withholds it. He does not tell us to weep and cry and mourn continually over our sins. All He says is: "Believe on Me and ye shall be saved," and the real test of our belief, in His eyes, is the ceasing to do evil and learning to do well. If a man had jumped into the sea and saved your life, I have no doubt you would be grateful, but that gratitude, in a person of your temperament, would not be likely to take the demonstrative form. At the same time, if this individual asked you to do anything for him, in reason, I have no doubt you would gladly and promptly accede to his request. Now, Christ has done more than hazard His life to save yours. He has sacrificed that life for you, and all He asks in return is, that you should believe He has done it; that you should confess with your mouth that He is the Lord Jesus, the Son of God, and believe in your heart that God hath raised Him from the dead, and you *shall* be saved. He does not say: weep, mourn, be of a sorrowful heart, and go in sackcloth and ashes for your past sins and neglect of Him—but rather, believe and rejoice. Man never has and never can feel that contrition of soul for his sins that he should. But that is a matter for Christ to consider, and if He is contented to take and receive you *just as you are*, just take Him at His word and say: "I go, Lord, here I am *just as I am* ; accept and receive me," and the Father will receive and pardon you, and make you a son, and, if a son, an heir of God and a joint-heir with Christ.

But this is to be remembered, that having determined to accept the great salvation on the simple and easy terms offered in the Gospel, the old man must be put off and the new man must be put on; that is to say: wherein you have wittingly disobeyed and sinned against God in the past, you must sin no more, but must determine to relinquish those occupations, pleasures, companions and sins of every description which have heretofore led you astray and away from Him. It will be no acceptance of Him and His terms, if the sinner says, 'I will believe in the Lord Jesus that I may be saved,' and the next moment, in direct opposition to His Father's commandments, openly and wittingly breaks those commandments. After having determined to serve the Lord, the determination must be carried out, every hour, with watchfulness and care, trusting in the Lord for strength to resist temptation and trials; and He will most assuredly give you the strength to resist, and to continue to serve Him. And, this very obedience and trustfulness and prayerfulness having enabled you to conquer your trials and temptations, will beget, to a greater or less extent, the comfort, happiness, or even the joy, which in the beginning, even before you have made the consecration of yourself to Him and His cause, you are looking for. The determination and the consecration must first be made, *in faith*, and leave all the rest to God. All other things will be added, and your soul will be saved. It is useless to say "I would like to be a Christian," without resolving and acting. In every act of life that is attended with success, effort is demanded, and without effort *put forth and sustained*, men never succeed in anything. Just so is it in the business of the soul's salvation. Resolve! Act! and prayerfully commit the rest to Him who has made the promise that your soul, under such circumstances, shall be saved. "Now is the accepted time. This is the day of salvation."

I glean from your mother's letter that I am likely to find you in Edinburgh on my return. If you had the strength to move, and she would accompany you, there would be no necessity for this; but I shall learn in Paris whether I am to see you at Dartmouth or Torquay, or Edinburgh. I do not wish you to work at French or anything else just now. Recreation may be taken in this way, but nothing more.

Last Sunday evening I found out Mr. Wall's missionary meeting in Rome, and found the place of worship was like that of St. Paul in the long years that are past—"in his own hired house." It was crammed to overflowing by anxious listeners and Bible students, who a few months before were Romanists. I met there a minister and his three deacons from Bristol, England, who were taking the same tour we have been doing. Almost

the first question one of them asked me was: "Do you know Mrs. Joplin in Halifax?" I replied "Yes; and intimately," and then found out that they were friends of hers. Strange that I should have met them almost under the Vatican, where twelve months since the whole of us would have been arrested by Papal soldiers for taking part in a heretical meeting. But things are changed here now. On the 9th of this month a discussion took place between three Jesuit priests and three missionaries, in the Academy of the Tiber here, on the subject of the presence of Peter in Rome; the Protestants asserting that he never had been in the city at all; the priests saying he was here for a number of years and was crucified, head down, on the exact site of the great Cathedral which bears his name. The contest has excited great attention. The priests got terribly handled and worsted in the argument, especially by Gavatz. All the Protestants had been priests in former years. Our guide through Rome was full of it, and although nominally a Catholic, rejoiced at the defeat the Papal three had received. He would often repeat to me the words, "The Evangelists won it," as if the six had been contending in the old Roman races as athletes. To-day I went to Mr. Wall's service again, and, as on Sunday evening last, the service was in Italian, and, of course, could not be understood by me. But I enjoyed it exceedingly from the fact that I could plainly see the poor people who were present were drinking it all in as new and unheard-of truths. In Mr. Wall's rooms it was that Mr. Spurgeon preached, a couple of months since, and was interrupted by a Jesuit priest who went in with the crowd to hear him. I partook of the communion with the little band of baptized believers, and altogether had a pleasant morning. Present at it was the representative of the American Baptist Missionary Society. Rev. Mr. Cote, an Edinburgh surgeon's son, had been preaching here since November last. As soon as he knew I was from Nova Scotia he asked me if I knew Dr. Cramp, and when I told him I did, he said: "I have his Baptist History in my library." His father was a missionary at the Grand Ligne station, near Montreal, and has preached for us at Granville Street. He has just completed for the Baptist Missionary Society of the United States a complete history of all the baptisteries in Italy connected with the old Roman Catholic church, which will prove beyond dispute that they, as well as those in the Catacombs, were used for immersing the candidates. I spent three hours with him to-day, and a most interesting time we had. . . . He tells me that not long since he baptized forty on the Adriatic side of this Italian peninsula, at a town called Bari, and he has soon to go there again for the

same purpose. Mr. Wall has a Bible class of sixty men and women of all ages, once or twice a week, at his house, and I was present at his Sunday school this morning, also at a meeting of members after the Communion, to discuss doctrinal points, so that they may be armed for the contest with the enemy. Mr. Wall told me that there are one hundred names on his list of applicants for membership, but he has to be very careful as to whom he admits. Some think they should be baptized before they are taught the nature of the ordinance. One attempted to stab him the other night because he was dismissed for drunkenness; and Mr. Cote says he has been convoyed by soldiers to and from his preaching stations, to save him from the assassins' knives. But the result of the recent great victory in the St. Peter discussion has acted as a quietus to the Jesuits, and they are not so openly hostile now as they were a few weeks since.

Take care of yourself, and may God bless you, my dear boy.

Ever your afft. father,

D.P.

In the spring of 1872 the house on Salisbury Place was exchanged for No. 20 Mayfield Terrace, Newington, as more preferable for Johnston, the situation being open and airy, with the Queen's Park on one side and an unobstructed view of the Braid Hills at the rear; and a spacious garden was attached to the property. This was the home of the family for the remainder of the sojourn in Edinburgh.

But nothing availed to stay the rapid progress of Johnston's fatal malady, and he passed away on the first of July. His remains lie in the family burial lot of the late Sir Grainger Stewart at the beautiful Dean Cemetery. Upon his monument his father inscribed the words: "Shall not the Judge of all the earth do right?"—words which commemorate the faith of him concerning whom the Scriptures say he "believed God, and it was counted unto him for righteousness," words truly expressive of my father's child-like faith and his meek spirit of loyal, trustful surrender to the will of his Father in Heaven. He could not then understand, and like any mortal, had to grope his way in the darkness for a time, but he could cling and trust while seeing "as through a glass darkly." Now he knows and understands.

The remainder of that trying summer was spent in seclusion on the Clyde, at Dunoon, with occasional excursions among the Western Isles and Lochs, in the course of which his student quarters on the Isle of Bute were revisited, a call on old Halifax friends at Helensborough was made, and there was a trip through

the Trossachs which included Stirling and the sail down Lochs Katrine and Lomond. The diverting influences of the seven or eight weeks so spent were very beneficial to my father's harassed spirit, and he seemed to find further solace in his studies, too, which were not discontinued. Recreation without his books would soon grow wearisome. He returned to take up the burden of duty at Edinburgh refreshed in mind and body.

As an illustration of his activity of mind at this period (when he was engrossed in professional study) as well as of his public-spirited interest in the affairs of his country and his strength in political controversy with the pen, the following example will serve:

The London *Daily News* of September 21st, 1872, contained this editorial, which he answered in its columns with the letter that follows:

"The Canadian elections have resulted in a series of ministerial defeats so numerous and signal that nothing but a highly excited state of the public mind against the most eminent persons in the Colony can account for them.

"Sir John A. Macdonald, the Premier; Sir Francis Hincks, the Finance Minister; Mr. McDougall, the Minister of Public Works, and Sir George E. Cartier have been not only rejected, but rejected with ignominy, most of them by constituencies which they have represented for many years.

"In his letter which we printed yesterday, our correspondent at Toronto explains with great lucidity the reasons of the great change which has taken place in Colonial sentiment.

"The ministers have been presuming too much on their popularity, and taking too much upon them by encroaching on the rights of the people. The consolidation of the various provinces into one great Dominion has made the old leaders of Upper and Lower Canada greater men than they were before, and they have been too conscious of the change. They persuaded the last Parliament to authorize them to raise great loans and to leave the expenditure of the money to their uncontrolled judgment; and they decided upon the route of the Intercolonial Railway—which is to cost £4,000,000 sterling—without asking the sanction of Parliament. It was, however, their high-handed way of dealing with the project of the Canadian Pacific Railway which did them most harm at the poll. This great scheme, as passed by the last Parliament, included a Government subsidy of thirty million dollars in money, and fifty million acres of land, besides the holding of as many more acres by the Government as a reserve. The Government further obtained power to make a contract for the construction of the road, and charter a company to make it.

"This was going very far indeed, and we need not wonder that the Canadians saw danger in the extent to which their public men were mixed up so largely with gigantic financial and speculative undertakings. Our correspondent says that in the Parliament of 200 members, 25 were directly interested in the companies competing for the contract.

"The danger is one that besets all governments in undeveloped and progressive countries. It will be interesting to see what the new Parliament will do, and very interesting indeed if it should put a limit to these commitments of the taxpayers to great public works, of which the cost and the utility are alike immeasurable."

20 MAYFIELD TERRACE, EDINBURGH,
September 28th, 1872.

To the Editor of the *Daily News*:

Sir,—My attention has just been called to your editorial of the 21st inst. on the recent Canadian elections, and as it contains several statements which are at variance with facts, and as a whole is calculated to mislead, may I beg you to insert this communication in your next issue, in order that the mistakes, into which your Toronto correspondent has led you, may be corrected, and those of your readers who take an interest in the political and financial business of the Dominion may not continue to entertain erroneous impressions concerning the present position of several leading Canadian statesmen, as well as in relation to important public works, in which the British people have a deep and a very direct interest. The article in the *Daily News*, to which I refer, commences by stating that “the Canadian elections have resulted in a series of ministerial defeats, so numerous and signal that nothing but a highly excited state of the public mind against the most eminent persons in the Colony can account for them. Sir John A. Macdonald, the Premier, Sir Francis Hincks, the Finance Minister, Mr. McDougall, the Minister of Public Works, and Sir George E. Cartier, have been not only rejected but rejected with ignominy, most of them by constituencies which they have represented for many years.”

Doubtless you will be surprised to learn that Sir John A. Macdonald, the Premier, was not recently, and never has been rejected by the constituency of Kingston which he has represented, if I mistake not, ever since he has been in public life—now more than twenty years. He is to-day the representative in Parliament of Kingston, and the leader of the Government. Sir Francis Hincks, Finance Minister, it is true, lost his seat for the constituency he represented in the last house, but like a number of the leading statesmen of Great Britain, in modern times, whose temporary misfortune will be within your recollection—if rejected by one constituency, he was returned by another, and is to-day a member of Parliament and the Finance Minister of Canada. Sir Francis Hincks only sat in the last House for a part of its term, having been returned to Parliament to succeed Sir John Rose as Finance Minister when that gentleman retired from public life. For many years previously he (Sir Francis) had been absent from British America, employed by the British Government as Her Majesty's representative in several of her Colonial possessions.

Mr. McDougall, whom you designate “the Minister of Public

Works," once occupied that position, but for the past three or four years has not been a member of Government, and consequently could not during that time be "Minister of Public Works." He lost his seat, as did Sir George E. Cartier, and I feel assured you will find I am right when I state that Sir George, the Minister of Militia, is the only member of the Privy Council who has not been returned to Parliament, and should his health (which for some weeks past has been very seriously impaired) be equal to it, he will obtain a seat the moment he desires it. In passing, let me add that many of his ministerial colleagues were returned either by acclamation or by overwhelming majorities. While both in Ontario and Quebec the Government have lost several supporters, they have gained other seats from their opponents, but as far as these two Provinces are concerned their losses will not be compensated for by their gains. However, the great changes that have taken place in the Maritime Provinces of Nova Scotia and New Brunswick, in favor of the present Ministry, and of Union, will quite compensate for the losses they have sustained in the two Western Provinces, and will enable them to meet Parliament with a good working majority. In short, the position of Sir John A. Macdonald's Government would be analogous to that of Mr. Gladstone, should a dissolution of Parliament take place in this country and its ministry should find that they had sustained losses in England which were compensated for by gains in Scotland and Ireland. England is not the whole of Great Britain, neither is Ontario the whole of the Dominion of Canada.

Without saying so in direct terms, your editorial would lead your readers to conclude that Sir John A. Macdonald's Government had been defeated at the recent general election, and specific reasons are given for such defeat. Thus, you state: "Our correspondent at Toronto explains with great lucidity the reasons of the great change which has taken place in Colonial sentiment. The ministers have been presuming too much on their popularity and taking too much upon them by encroaching on the rights of the people," etc., etc. This, taken in connexion with the extract first quoted, does more than suggest losses and ministerial rejections "with ignominy"—it must lead the general public to the conclusion that the Government has fallen. My reply to this has been given already, in the statement above made, that the ministry in appealing to the people have been sustained, a majority of the constituencies, in all the provinces but one, having in this practical way expressed their satisfaction with their past acts, and their confidence in them for the future.

One of the specific charges brought against the Dominion Government is contained in the following sentence: "They per-

suaded the last Parliament to authorize them to raise great loans, and to leave the expenditure of the money to their uncontrolled judgment; and they decided upon the route of the Intercolonial Railway—which is to cost £4,000,000 sterling—without asking the sanction of Parliament.” This is a matter in which the British public have a very direct interest, inasmuch as the larger portion of the above amount has been, or will be, obtained on the guarantee of the Imperial Government, and any dereliction of duty or misappropriation of funds, thus obtained, would very naturally tend to impair British confidence in the Administration, Parliament, and country—hence it calls for a few words of explanation.

It is true that the last Parliament did authorize the Executive Government to raise a large loan for an important public work—the Intercolonial Railway—to enable Western Canada to reach, through British territory, the British seaboard, in the Maritime Provinces, at all seasons of the year. Hitherto the external commerce of Ontario and Quebec in winter has necessarily had to pass through a foreign country; and communication with the sister Provinces on the seaboard and with the Mother Country has been almost altogether through the United States. As soon as the Provinces were confederated, this difficulty was met. The Government was authorized to contract a loan, and having the confidence of the country, was permitted to disburse the money without first submitting detailed estimates for this special service to Parliament. Just as the British Government is permitted through its Admiralty Department to appropriate very large amounts in the construction of ships of war, or through the War Department to expend equally large sums in erecting fortifications and defensive works, a gross amount is asked for, and the details of expenditure are scrutinized, and discussed subsequently, or when the documents connected therewith are presented to Parliament, when, if misappropriations have been made the Government will be held accountable.

Now as regards the question of the route selected for this railroad, permit me to state that as far back as thirteen or fourteen years ago, a delegation from Canada, Nova Scotia and New Brunswick came to this country for the purpose of obtaining from the British Government a guarantee for the money required to construct this Intercolonial road. The then basis of arrangement between the different Provinces was, that a northern route should be accepted, for Imperial as well as other reasons, which I need not now discuss, further than to state that the British Government has never at any time entertained the question of any other than a northern route, which could be made available for military purposes. To have constructed a road running throughout the

greater part of its course in close proximity with the American frontier, would have been opposed to national interests, and in case of war with the United States it would have been entirely useless. My native Province—Nova Scotia—entered the Union, and I have no doubt that New Brunswick, through which country a very large portion of the line runs, did so too, with the understanding that the arrangement of 1858 should be adhered to and that the northern location should be adopted. Hence you will perceive that when the responsibility (constitutionally and properly pertaining to the Government) of deciding the question, devolved on them, they were nationally and morally bound to adhere to the original agreement. And I may add, that Mr. Mackenzie, the leader of the Opposition, concurred as to the desirability of finally selecting the North Shore line, and I believe quite a number of representatives who usually co-operated with him entertained at the time similar views.

You characterize the action taken by the Government in connexion with the Canadian Pacific Railway as "high handed," and assume that they were injured thereby at the poll. In legislation, as you are aware, it is very hard to please everybody, but in this immensely important matter, the Government appear to have pleased a very large proportion of the people's representatives in the last House, and a majority of the constituencies in that which will be convened in the early part of next year. That this work, which is to connect the Atlantic with the Pacific, Nova Scotia with British Columbia, and is destined to bring England more readily and quickly into communication with China, Japan, and other far-off lands, which in the future are to be large markets for her manufactured productions, should be constructed with the least possible delay, is a political necessity. Without it, British Columbia and Manitoba, abounding in mineral and agricultural wealth, would be useless members of our Canadian Confederation, and ere very long the more distant Province (placed as it is between California and Alaska, two portions of United States territory) and perhaps Manitoba, too, would drop into the ever-ready lap of our great neighbor.

To construct this great continental highway, without rendering available, for that purpose, the land through which it is to pass, is an undertaking far beyond the resources of the new-born Dominion, so, following the example of the United States, in which one Pacific road has been in operation for a few years, and another is now in course of construction, the Parliament of Canada concluded to subsidize a responsible joint stock company to the extent, if necessary, of thirty millions of dollars and fifty millions of acres of land, who would undertake to complete, equip and work the road. Thirty millions of dollars is a small sum of

money when contrasted with the value of the work it is to aid in completing, and it is an amount quite within the resources of the vigorous and financially healthy Dominion. Fifty millions of acres of land is an enormous quantity, even for an inhabitant of a vast continent like America to think of and talk about; but what is its value without means of access to it?—simply nil. Let, however, a company thus subsidized open up the country by a railroad, and carry thither emigrants from the densely populated countries of Europe, for their own pecuniary advantage, and they will enhance, an hundredfold, the value of the millions upon millions of acres remaining to the Dominion.

Referring to your remark in connection with land reserved by Government, along the line of the Pacific road—in alternate blocks—which is not to be sold under a rate to be agreed upon with the Company, permit me to suggest that this subsidy in land would be of no value to the Company as a means of realizing money for the completion of the road if it were not for such an arrangement; for who would pay two, three or four shillings an acre for the Company's land when they could procure it of the same quality in the very next block for nothing?

As regards your correspondent's remark, "That in the Parliament of two hundred members, twenty-five were directly interested in the companies competing for the contract," I am not in a position to dispute the statement, but let me ask what is there to object to should such be in reality the case? Are there not joint stock companies in Great Britain to-day, having business transactions with the British Government, in which members of Parliament are shareholders? I think a little enquiry in the proper quarters will elicit an affirmative reply to the question. And if such is the case, may I not further ask if either these members of Parliament, or the Government, would be compromised before the House of Commons, the Lords, or the country by such indirect business transactions. It is stated in the paragraph last quoted that there are companies (it is in the plural) competing for the contract to construct this railroad. If such is the case, and I believe it to be true, may we not hope that this competition will effect a saving to the Dominion, and that some considerable portion of the thirty millions of dollars, and fifty millions of acres of land—one or both—may by this means revert to the country? And if there should be members of Parliament in each of the competing organizations, should we not look upon it rather as a fortunate circumstance, as those in the one company will be jealously watching the proceedings of the others, while all will be narrowly scrutinizing the acts of the Government in connection with this vast undertaking. You are not to infer from what I have stated that Mr. Mackenzie, the able leader of the Opposition in the last House, was hostile to a

Canadian Pacific railroad. On the contrary, he and a large number of his influential and intelligent followers were in favor of it, but they differed from the majority on several of the prominent features of the Government bill.

In conclusion let me say that I have not seen your Toronto correspondent's letter, but I fear he has received his information on Canadian political topics from ill-informed or very prejudiced sources.

Apologizing for the length of this communication,

I am, Sir,

Your obedient servant,

D. McN. PARKER.

The Christmas recess of two weeks (1872-3) was passed by my father and family in London, where he was an excellent and entertaining guide, as he had proved himself in Scotland during various short excursions to places such as Stirling and the field of Bannockburn, Glasgow, Abbotsford; Dryburgh, Melrose and other abbeys, Hawthornden, various points on the east coast, and elsewhere in the interior. From the reminiscences of that London visit I recall his great pleasure in meeting and hearing Spurgeon and Dr. Landells, then the foremost representatives of his religious denomination in Britain.

He had hoped to obtain leave of absence from his legislative duties for a second session, that he might prolong his residence in Edinburgh until the ensuing summer or autumn, and find time to visit some of the English hospitals; but in this he was disappointed, his plans for more extended study abroad being defeated by political exigencies. He gladly would have forfeited his seat in the Legislative Council by remaining, or have resigned it; but he yielded to the clamor of political party associates, and in February, 1873, sailed from Liverpool for Halifax to take his seat, leaving the family to follow when the schools closed in the summer.

The letters written at Edinburgh for the *Christian Messenger* have already been referred to, and the first of them has been given place in the order of time. The remaining six now follow. They indicate his habits of thought, his thoroughness as an observer of men and things, his careful study of conditions, institutions and public questions as he met them when abroad, and they are examples of his style and method as a writer. Upon their own merits, and because of their informing character, it fairly may be claimed that these letters possess a general interest. At least for anyone who would learn what manner of man the writer was, their prolixity will hardly detract from their value.

For the *Christian Messenger*.

13 SALISBURY PLACE, NEWINGTON, EDINBURGH.

January 16th, 1872.

My Dear Editor,—

I was not a little shocked to see so large a portion of the *Christian Messenger* of November 16th occupied with my "Jottings by the Way," which I supposed would have been subdivided into parts and been given to your readers in two or three issues of your paper. Men of my profession have been charged before to-day, and I fear correctly, with overdosing their patients, and I must, in this instance, plead guilty to having fallen into a similar error, with this difference, however—the patients were yours, not mine, which adds to the gravity of the offence. In again addressing you I give you full liberty to break this present communication into as many parts as may suit your editorial convenience, for, like the last, I fear before I have done with the subject, which is to be Edinburgh, that it will have overgrown the somewhat circumscribed limits which in commencing I have prescribed for myself.

EDINBURGH.

The subject is vast, and I hardly know where to begin. Indeed, I feel very like the schoolboy who, when urged by anxious and waiting companions to practically exhibit to them how to make segments of a circle, by subdividing the maternal cake which lay, deeply frosted, before them, replied that he did not know where to commence, and if he were to follow the advice of his very disinterested and waiting friends he feared he might mar its beauty and entirely spoil the circle.

Well, I feel very much as if I should "spoil the circle" were I to attempt anything like a detailed description of Scotland's great capital. Indeed, I believe I might as well attempt to "square the circle" as to convey to your readers, in words, any just conception of its appearance—of its natural or artificial beauty; consequently I shall, with as much brevity as possible, refer only to one or two features in this connection, and then pass on to the consideration of some few of its many institutions.

ITS SITE.

To deal with the subject in the natural order of things, and in accordance with prescribed principles, it would be necessary, first, to recall the days when a few rude straw-thatched cottages (inhabited by a hardy, uncultivated race of people) occupied the ridge or rocky eminence between the Cowgate and Princes Street Garden, in immediate proximity to the Castle Rock; and from this primi-

tive beginning, much more than a thousand years ago, to trace its progress through the centuries, until "the Modern Athens" of our own day and generation is brought into view; but this is not required, from the fact that the children of these happy days get all these facts more correctly and graphically portrayed in the popular and standard histories of their free schools and home libraries than I could possibly give them in the columns of the *Messenger*.

But the geological and the true antiquarian Scot would not be satisfied with this as a starting-point; and with pride of heart and of nationality would direct attention to the fact that the Great Architect of the Universe specially laid the foundations of Edinburgh, and in such a way that not even the simplest son of Adam could have passed it by without recognizing the fact that the locality was born to be the site of a great city, when from deeply beneath the surface of the earth He elevated by volcanic action the massive rocks and some of the undulating hills on and around which most of it is built, leaving beautiful valleys just in those positions where they would most gratify the eyes of those who first beheld them, and eventually serve to add charming variety to the scene when hill and dale alike should be covered by the dwelling-places of their successors in subsequent ages. This beautifully irregular foundation, besides having its great central and defensive elevations, was, by the same creative power which called into existence "the site," surrounded on all sides with natural barriers and fortifications, as if to protect it from the assaults of enemies beyond and without—and I may add every hill and every valley for miles around has its traditional or written history of war and romance, of victory and defeat, all interwoven with the nation's history. On the north is the beautiful and broad Firth of Forth, with here and there an island rising out of its generally placid but sometimes terribly disturbed waters, which separates Edinburgh and Leith from the Fifeshire country.

On the east we have Salisbury Crags and Arthur's Seat, the latter rising, lion-like, 822 feet above the sea's level, a beautiful and bold object on which the eye may continually rest without growing weary, a perfect Gibraltar, which if fortified would command all the eastern and south-eastern approaches to the city. On the south and west the Blackford, the Braid and the Pentland Hills rise up as elevated and protective walls, undulating and picturesque to the eye, their natural beauty being enhanced by the rich cultivation of their northern and eastern slopes, on which herds and flocks quietly graze, giving additional variety to the scene.

On the western extremity of the elevated ridge (to which reference has already been made) commencing at Holyrood Palace and Abbey, and gradually ascending, stands famed Edinburgh Castle,

a bold, irregular, craggy rock, having an elevation above the level of the sea of some 440 or 450 feet. On three sides, north, west and south, it rises from the valley beneath almost perpendicularly, while it is easy of access from the east, by way of the High Street. Of itself, this stronghold of the centuries past has a history full of stirring, romantic interest, and the true Scot, as he looks with pride upon the magnificent mass of dark rock before him, has his heart moved and his blood warmed at the mere thought of the deeds of daring which have taken place within and around this, one of the great natural citadels of his country.

ITS PROGRESS.

So great has been the growth of the city in recent times to the south and west that the Castle now forms a magnificent central spot from which to view it as a whole. From its ramparts the eye rests upon symmetrical and beautiful structures of freestone, in the form of fine broad streets, crescents, squares, public buildings, charitable institutions, monuments and church structures—with numerous intervening and large gardens, where twenty-five years ago the plow and the harrow turned over the rich soil, that these broad acres, now thus beautified by the architect's skill, might bring forth their abundant harvests for the supply of the markets of Edinburgh.

Another stronghold in the central part of the city, at the eastern end of Princes Street (the great thoroughfare or "Broadway" of the new town) is Calton Hill, another vast rock, the elevation of which is only about 100 feet less than the Castle. Instead, however, of bristling cannon its summit is covered with monuments of men of national and worldwide reputation in war and letters, whose deeds of arms and brain, in the years that are past, are thus brought vividly before both natives and strangers as they wend their way along the beautiful walks which in recent times have been constructed on and around this lovely historic hill.

I have dwelt on these strong and natural points of defence which on all sides surround Edinburgh, not because I possess either military knowledge or tastes (although I have the honor of being a disbanded militia surgeon), but to direct your attention to a feature in connection with the capital which is not often referred to by newspaper correspondents, but which must be abundantly evident to all who visit the locality.

To the practical soldier these military points would be among the first things to suggest themselves. Paris, with such natural surroundings, and with a Firth of Forth to have given her access to the sea, would in all probability have kept Von Moltke and Bismarck outside her walls, and by means of such a continuation

of fortified heights would have saved France the national and military degradation to which that country has so recently had to submit.

The absence of such bold and elevated surroundings from London and the great commercial marts of England gives Edinburgh an advantage over these cities, both as regards the picturesque and in relation to the question of defence, which all the appliances that money and science can devise cannot compensate for; and inasmuch as the natural fortifications to which I am calling attention are to a great extent, like Gibraltar, of solid rock, the mining engineer of an enemy would be thereby foiled in his efforts to approach and undermine these natural citadels. The walk down the High Street and Canongate from the Castle to Holyrood Palace and Abbey brings before you the Edinburgh of centuries past, with her narrow streets, her narrower wynds and closes, her great, towering, dark and worn stone buildings, then the homes of Scotland's noblest and greatest families, but now the dwellings of the poorest of the poor. The hands of the Goths and Vandals of these progressive times are busy, razing these antiquarian structures to the ground, widening the streets, closes and wynds, and erecting modern buildings for the purposes of trade.

In this way have many historic buildings disappeared, even to their foundation stones, and in their place have risen food, raiment and whiskey shops, as well as more modern dwellings.

REMINISCENCES.

As I have walked over these localities and viewed again the places and scenes familiar to me in the days of my student career, even though my antiquarian spirit is feeble, it has been aroused at the desecration I have witnessed.

The high and ancient houses of the past have largely disappeared, and I cannot now get nearer the clouds than ten stories, and even this elevation can only occasionally be attained, in consequence of the levelling process now so familiar to the eye. At one thing I am rejoiced, and that is, that while the hands of man may destroy the works of man, the enduring hills and rocks in and around Edinburgh, to which I have called your attention, are not likely ever to be disturbed, except by the same Power that called them into existence and gave them their great and picturesque elevation above the earth's surface.

I look in vain for some of the houses in which, far up between the street and the clouds, I practically commenced my profession, when for long hours of the night I have on more than one occasion remained in rooms entirely destitute of bed, bedding or chairs, with "a farthing dip" stuck to the mantelpiece or the floor, my easy-chair a candle-box, or something like it, and on one occasion

a stone from the chimney, the more luxurious seat first mentioned being furnished by some of the more affluent neighbors, who, if not possessed of much of this world's goods, had kind hearts and looked well after the comforts of "the doctor." A little loose straw in the corner answered the purpose of a bed for my patients. Even here, had I desired it, I could have obtained, I have no doubt, from a broken bottle or broken cup, "a drop of whiskey to keep me warm," or, had I been a smoker, a whiff of tobacco to comfort me: hence the straw, the candle-box and the stone. Yet in these very rooms, centuries before, great men had lived in luxury, and notable men had probably first seen the light of day. But I am digressing—or, like the old soldier, fighting my battles over again.

To return to my subject, we have in and about Edinburgh a most picturesque blending of bold and elevated (almost mountainous) scenery with that which is quiet, cultivated and beautiful, producing an effect which I think can hardly be surpassed the world over. While this remark is applicable to its physical geography, we have in the varied structures which constitute the city—its houses, public buildings, church edifices, numerous monuments, broad and narrow streets and wynds—a contrast scarcely less striking, suggesting at the same moment memories of the long past, and everything that is progressive and beautiful connected with refinement, art and education of the present.

Built as the city is on the hills above and in the valleys beneath, this contrast between the architectural past and present is the more striking and is a feature of which the eye never wearies. No stranger should ever visit Edinburgh without viewing it at night, as a whole, from some of its commanding heights such as the Castle, Calton Hill, or, if the breath be good¹ and the muscles strong, from Arthur's Seat, from whence he will obtain a bird's-eye view of Leith (which is now continuous with Edinburgh), the old and the new city, from centre to circumference, here elevated, there depressed; in one locality displaying, between two straight lines of light, long and broad streets, in another the crescentic arrangements of the residences of the wealthy, while in a third the narrow outlines of the wynds and closes may be occasionally recognized by their very darkness. I can scarcely imagine anything more beautiful than Edinburgh by gas-light, seen as I have not unfrequently beheld it from one or two of these great central outlooks.

It would take a volume to describe this capital architecturally, a city (Leith included) of only 250,000 inhabitants, and as I have neither the time nor the practical knowledge to enable me to deal with this matter, I shall pass on to the consideration of some other subjects in which I presume your readers will be equally, if not more, interested.

(To be continued.)

For the *Christian Messenger*.

13 SALISBURY PLACE, NEWINGTON, EDINBURGH,
January 16th, 1872.

My Dear Editor,—

EDUCATION AND EDUCATIONAL FACILITIES.

Edinburgh partakes only to a limited extent of the advantages to be derived from the general educational, or parish, system of the country, which may be described in few words.

It is sustained by the "Heritors," or landed proprietors, and by small fees, and the schools connected with the system never refuse admission to the children of the poor who are unable to pay the usual small annual charge.

These schools are controlled and managed by the Heritors and Kirk Sessions—that is to say, by the landed proprietors, and the ministers and elders of the established Church of Scotland in every parish.

The instruction imparted is a good plain English education, but the more advanced boys, if they desire it, receive a rudimentary knowledge of Mathematics and Latin.

The Bible and the Shorter Catechism are used in all these schools.

The word "hospital" in this city and throughout Scotland is used in a different sense from the more common and generally received definition of the word in America. When it is met with here, and I am glad to say it is a word in very common use, it very generally designates an endowed institution for educational and charitable purposes.

Thus Heriot's, Gillespie's, George Watson's, John Watson's, The Trades Maidens', Stewart's, The Merchant Maidens', Fettes's, Donaldson's and other hospitals were founded and generously endowed by wealthy, large-hearted Scotchmen for the reception and education of boys and girls, under varied regulations, but principally for those in indigent circumstances, and the children of parents who have fallen into adversity through innocent causes.

Thousands upon thousands of children have in this way been provided—for a period of six or seven years—with comfortable, healthy and happy homes, educated and sent forth upon the world under the supervision of those who, as the trustees of the bequests, provide them on leaving the institution with clothing, books, and in very many instances with money to the extent of from £20 to £50 sterling to assist them during their minority or apprenticeship; while the more talented and successful pupils are enabled, by means of hospital-scholarships and bursaries, to obtain a university course and a profession.

Heriot's Hospital, founded in the earlier part of the seventeenth century by George Heriot, a jeweller, for "the maintenance, reliefe, bringing up and education of poore fatherlesse boyes, freemen's sonnes of the towne of Edinburgh," had on the day I visited it 126 resident pupils, and forty-six day scholars who were clothed and fed by the Hospital, but who remained at night with their parents or friends. They enter from seven to nine years of age, and are instructed by ten different masters in all the important branches of a sound English and mathematical education, as well as in Latin, Greek, French, drawing, music—vocal and instrumental—gymnastics and military drill, ere they are sent forth from its walls to fight the battle of life. This single institution, in consequence of the judicious management of its funds by competent business men, has now an annual income of about £23,000 stg., which not only maintains the hospital proper, but after more than a dozen large school buildings have been erected from the capital, in various parts of the city, is to-day imparting a generous and a *free education* to 3,400 poor children of both sexes.

Donaldson's Hospital, one of the most magnificent educational structures in the country, erected at a cost of £100,000 stg., was opened twenty or twenty-five years ago for the maintenance and education of poor boys and girls. I was informed by the servant who conducted me through the building that there were at that time receiving instruction in the institution 356 pupils, eighty-six of whom were deaf and dumb.

The chapel is very large and perhaps the finest I have seen in any of the public institutions of the country.

The building is beautifully situated, and from the windows in the rear, close at hand, three other large institutions, similar in character, are observed. The grounds are extensive, admirably kept, and the shrubbery beautiful.

The original bequest was £210,000 stg. This Mr. Donaldson was an Edinburgh printer, and I think I may with propriety add that he was, among printers, a *rara avis*—a well-paid printer, whose subscribers, if he published a newspaper, were honest and punctual.

Sir William Fette's Hospital, erected at a cost of £150,000 stg., "for the education and maintenance of young persons whose parents have fallen into adversity through innocent causes," is the only other separate institution of this description that I shall refer to. Within its walls the same noble work is going on, and pretty much after the same system, as that described in connection with the Heriot Hospital, with the exception of the outside Free schools, which are not supplied either by the Trustees of this or of Donaldson's institution.

The Merchants' Company of Edinburgh, a large and wealthy corporation, have been engaged for many years past in this same description of educational work, and the "Merchant Maiden's Hospital," maintained and managed by them, has provided an educational home for a large number of girls. But being possessed with the idea that these institutions, both male and female, could be turned to better advantage and with their vast endowments confer a much larger amount of good on the children of the middle and poorer classes if the hospital or monastic system were abolished, the funds of all, or many, were combined and appropriated purely for educational purposes—or, in other words, applied to sustain a large number of day-schools under first-class teachers, in which schools a most liberal education would be imparted at a comparatively cheap rate. With great tact and business capacity the Merchants' Company worked up this idea, which soon became popular, the more so from the fact that the private schools were becoming so expensive that men of moderate means found it a terrible pecuniary burden to give their children anything like a superior education.

The governing bodies of several of these hospitals co-operated with the Merchants' Company, and an arrangement was entered into by which those children "Foundationers," as they are here called, having a claim on these institutions for maintenance should now, and in the future, be provided for in the homes of relatives and friends, where practicable, or under the roofs of respectable families who would treat them as their own children. The basis of agreement between the company in question and the hospital trustees having been arranged, an Act of Parliament was sought and obtained, and the schools under the new arrangement went into operation some eighteen months since, and thus far have quite realized the anticipations of their friends and, as far as I can ascertain, are meeting with the approval of the inhabitants of the city and surrounding country generally.

The somewhat formidable opposition of the teaching profession has been materially neutralized by drafting into the new schools many of its ablest members who were formerly interested in private institutions.

The Act of Parliament to which I have referred does not confine the trust and management of these schools to those who formerly held control, but the new Board is drawn from the Merchants' Company, the Town Council and the learned professions. A more competent and better qualified commission could hardly have been arranged, combining, as it does, thorough business capacity with high educational attainments.

The benefits arising from these new educational establishments

are not confined by any means to the citizens of Edinburgh, for there is hardly a town in Scotland not now represented in them, and I may add that England also has numbers of young people receiving instruction in these schools. In visiting one of them a few days since, the head master informed me that the institution under his charge had pupils from the districts as far north as the Shetland Islands, and, in an opposite direction, as far south as the Channel Islands. Indeed, very many families have moved into Edinburgh from a distance purposely to take advantage of the schools in question. The highest charge for the more advanced classes is ten pounds sterling per annum, and for the junior classes two pounds ten shillings—and the parents rejoice in the fact that these amounts cover everything—there are no extras. In all these schools a very thorough English and mathematical education is imparted. Natural philosophy, geology and other branches of natural science, Latin, Greek, French, German, music (both vocal and instrumental), dancing, and in the female schools sewing, are taught by the most accomplished masters and teachers. At twelve years or age, or thereabouts, the boys or their parents generally intimate the branches to which they desire special attention to be given, and if they are intended for mercantile life they generally devote more time to the modern than the dead languages, and pursue that course of study better qualified to fit them for commercial pursuits; while those who are intending to adopt professions give their attention to the classics and such other branches as they shall be called upon to pass an examination in ere they commence the special work of the professions they have chosen.

In all these endowed schools, as well the Merchants' as those hospitals which are not yet in any way connected with them, physical training is not neglected. Brain and muscle alike receive their due amount of attention and education. Both sexes are regularly drilled, while the elder boys are taught fencing and gymnastics.

The number of schools connected with the Merchants' system scattered over the city I am not on the moment prepared to state, but there are to-day receiving instruction within their walls no less than 4,500 pupils, and I must add that the poor are not excluded, for in those connected with Gillespie's foundation the fees are merely nominal, and the children here, as in the out-door schools of Heriot's Hospital, receive instruction in the ordinary branches of an English education, with the addition of drill, vocal music and drawing; while all can compete for money prizes and for admission free of charge to the higher schools of the company, and the few who are at the top of the list may secure further pecuniary advantages in the form of scholarships or bursaries amounting in all to £400 stg.

Thus you see the son of the very poor man may, if he has the brain and the industry, compete in these Merchants' schools (as he may indeed in most of the separate hospital schools) with the sons of the better-off citizens for prizes worth contending for, which, if obtained, are sure to place the possessor in an admirable position for future success in whatever department of life he may be subsequently found.

Through the kindness of Mr. Knox, "the master" or president of the Merchants' Company, I was permitted to thoroughly inspect all or as many of these schools as I felt disposed, and to convey to your readers some idea of their extent, and the manner in which they are worked, I will, in as few words as possible, describe my visit to the female school which was organized in the Hopetown Rooms, Queen Street, in 1870.

On entering the building I was received by a servant in livery, but could not advance for some minutes, as the three staircases and the halls were fully occupied by the young ladies, who, to martial music—heard all over the house—in companies of forty, each headed by a governess, were marching two and two in all directions, vacating one set of classrooms and entering others.

This grand parade being over for an hour, the head master's office was reached, and that gentleman most kindly kept me continuously occupied for an hour and a half, during which I had a second time to be very closely inspected myself by this marching regiment of 1,250 or 1,260 Scotch and English lassies as they again changed their classrooms. I learned that the whole school was educationally classified, and that no class contained more than forty pupils, all in very nearly the same state of advancement.

Each company had its governess whose duty it was to scrutinize the department and to keep a general supervision over those under her charge, which charge commenced as soon as the pupils entered the house in the morning and terminated only when they left it in the afternoon. Except to very junior classes all the instruction is imparted by masters.

The musical arrangements are novel. The whole department contains forty-five pianos, and in all the classrooms, for this description of work, save one, there are eight instruments, and eight young ladies are instructed at one time, and play together in each room.

I visited two of these rooms, and in both, two of the eight pianos were silent, in consequence of the absence of pupils; but the six who were present, played with the utmost harmony, and as far as my uneducated ear could detect, there was not an error of a single note during the time occupied by these two classes in playing two long and difficult pieces of music. Of course this

result could not be attained without a very thorough classification of pupils, and not without much practice at home—a very few mistakes will send a young lady from a higher to a lower class—hence, great efforts are made to retain their positions.

Equal harmony was observable in the department of vocal music, where I heard the senior class of about sixty young ladies (from fourteen to twenty years of age) sing together most exquisitely.

The drawing and writing classes were at work in large rooms at the top of the building, in which two or more classes were being instructed at the same time.

The drill, play, dancing and sewing rooms on the first floor are large and high, and connected by folding doors, so that they can readily be converted into one room, as is the case once a week when Mr. Pryde, the principal, delivers a lecture to six hundred of the more advanced pupils on some subject connected with English Literature. In the basement is a large luncheon hall, where for a penny the pupils can purchase a bun and a cup of milk or coffee. Here also are the cloak and bonnet rooms—one for each class of forty pupils—in which each young lady has her own hook and box, numbered, where bonnets, cloaks and boots are carefully placed in the morning, as they enter, and taken again in the afternoon, as they leave the building. Comfortable slippers take the place of walking boots, which change assists in effecting three important results, cleanliness, quietness and the health of the scholars. These toilet arrangements take place under the supervision of the class governesses—with the same order which pervades the whole institution. The numbers are so large that in almost all the departments there are several teachers, who are well paid. The lowest salary paid to any of the masters is £210 stg. The principal, I was informed, is in the receipt of £600 stg. per annum. His duties are purely executive, and all the teaching he performs is the weekly lecture above mentioned. The governesses receive from £25 to £90 stg. The number of teachers and governesses combined amounts to ninety.

It is unnecessary that I should take you through the Merchant Company's male schools, which are conducted on the same general principles, with the adoption of such modifications as circumstances, sex, and future occupation will naturally suggest to your readers. One of the most important, is now accomplishing its work in the old Merchant Maidens' Institution, where from 1,000 to 1,100 boys are receiving a very thorough education.

(To be continued.)

For the *Christian Messenger*.

13 SALISBURY PLACE, NEWINGTON,
EDINBURGH, January 16th, 1872.

My Dear Editor:

THE UNIVERSITY OF EDINBURGH.

This fine old school, founded in 1582, is still pursuing its course; extending its bounds; and more than retaining its former position as the headquarters or centre for the higher education in Scotland.

This year, under thirty-six Professors, between 1,700 and 1,800 matriculated students are receiving instruction in the departments of Literature and Philosophy, Theology, Law and Medicine—and I am informed by the officials in the Secretary's office, that when the matriculation for the summer session is closed, this year's roll will probably reach 1,850.

The number of medical students is larger than for many years past—over 700—a very large majority of these young men belong to the British Isles, but all quarters of the globe are well represented. Under the first division (Literature and Philosophy) there are fourteen Professors teaching the following subjects:—I. Latin. II. Greek. III. Mathematics. IV. Logic and Metaphysics. V. Moral Philosophy. VI. Natural Philosophy. VII. Rhetoric and English Literature. VIII. Practical Astronomy. IX. Agriculture. X. Sanskrit and Comparative Philology. XI. Theory of Music. XII. Engineering and Mechanical Drawing. XIII. Geology and Mineralogy. XIV. Commercial and Political Economy and Mercantile Law.

I have enumerated the subjects in this division, some of which would hardly be recognized elsewhere as belonging either to Literature or Philosophy, to give you an idea of the ground covered by it. Theology has its four Professors; Law six, including the Professor of Medical Jurisprudence, who is also a teacher in the medical department—and Medicine twelve (exclusive of the chair of Medical Jurisprudence). Two of these thirty-six Chairs have been quite recently founded and liberally endowed: that of Geology and Mineralogy by the late Sir Roderick Murchison, and the Chair of Commercial and Political Economy and Mercantile Law, by the Merchants' Company of Edinburgh, who, as you will have learned from an earlier part of this letter, are by their liberality, and the great interest they are taking in the subject of education, setting a bright and admirable example to the mercantile profession of the world.

In the medical department but one of the Professors still fills a chair in the University who occupied that position

when I graduated in 1845, and he, Sir Robert Christison, Bart, is about to be entertained at a great banquet to be given by the profession of Edinburgh, and the whole country, on the occasion of the fiftieth anniversary of his appointment to the position. New men sit in the places of the great and honored dead, but they are laborers admirably equipped for the work; and certainly the thoroughness of the course of instruction imparted, and the facilities afforded for acquiring both a practical and theoretical knowledge of the profession can hardly, I think, be surpassed. The largest Infirmary contains between six and seven hundred beds, divided into surgical and medical departments in which are wards set apart for the treatment of special diseases, as of the eye, etc., etc. Connected with this Infirmary and under the same management is a large Convalescent Hospital, built and to some extent endowed by the bequest of a single individual, situated three miles from the city in a beautiful and healthy locality, to which patients are sent when it is found they require change of air and scene to finally restore them to health.

The Infirmary for sick children is very pleasantly situated and well managed, and receives to its wards a class of poor children who could not be treated successfully at their own homes; but here obtain the same professional care, generous diet, kind attention and nursing that they would receive were they the offspring of wealthy parents dwelling in luxurious homes.

This institution affords an admirable opportunity for students to practically study the diseases of children. One of the neatest and best constructed Infirmaries I have seen, is called after its founder, Chalmers, a plumber, who died some years since leaving a sum of money to erect and endow a small hospital for the treatment, I believe, of the more respectable poor. I mention it, as rather an unusual circumstance attracted my attention when I visited it. The physician who accompanied me to the building, one of the staff, treated. I observed, one of the nurses as if she were socially his equal. I was struck with her appearance and address, and shortly after learned from my friend that she was the daughter of a lord, who had left all the comforts of a rich and elegant home to take a nurse's position in a male ward of this institution—a very unusual thing in this country, but I have seen wealthy and accomplished ladies connected with a kind of Protestant Episcopal sisterhood, performing the same duty in St. Luke's Hospital, New York.

The managers of the present Royal Infirmary have purchased a large piece of ground in a very eligible locality, and are about to commence at once the construction of one of the finest hospitals in Great Britain or any other country. The architect's plans have been long under consideration, and are now completed,

but so extensive is the work that it will take five years to finish and equip it for the reception of patients.

With a national spirit and from the best of motives, these gentlemen have determined that the new Edinburgh Infirmary shall contain everything that the most advanced physicians, surgeons and specialists can desire. To those who in future years shall obtain their medical education here, as to the sick who shall be treated therein, this institution will be a great boon, and will aid in giving still further importance to the Edinburgh Medical School, and in swelling its already plethoric classes.

Large as is the old Quadrangular University (its two sides measuring each 360 feet and its ends 255 feet; one of its rooms, the principal library, being 200 feet long by 50 broad), immediately in its rear, and connected with it by an arched, glass-covered corridor—crossing West College Street—is a still larger structure, the great Museum of Natural History, Science and Art. This building, now nearly finished, will have the greatest capacity of any public building in Scotland, its height being ninety feet, its length 400 feet, and its breadth 200 feet. I cannot commence to describe it architecturally, or to give you a detailed account of its objects. Suffice it to say that in addition to the instruction, it, like other Museums, imparts on the varied subjects connected with Natural History, this institution is intended to illustrate Mechanical and Chemical Science, and the industrial arts, as applicable to the principal manufactures of the country; and when practicable to exhibit the machinery and appliances used in the production of these manufactures. Thus, as an example from among the metals, a piece of crude iron ore is placed before you, as it is taken from the bowels of the earth, and you are shown the varied changes it undergoes until, as steel, it is converted into the polished needle, the finest cutlery or the most approved and deadly firearms used in modern warfare. So in the manufacture of glass—you first see the sand and other raw material, and follow these through their varied changes until the most perfect bottle and the finest glass ornaments are brought under supervision. In the manufacture of silk, cotton, linen and wool, you first see the changes in animal life which precede the coming of the silkworm. Then you have exhibited casts of the internal economy of this animal, with the glands which secrete or form the raw material. You have the cotton seed and plant, the hemp seed and plant in various stages of development, and every variety of wool; then follow in regular order the many changes which occur until at length the many beautiful and useful fabrics of commerce are evolved.

You can then witness the changes effected by chemical agency, on all descriptions of animal and vegetable food, from the raw

state until you observe it in that condition in which it is found best adapted for conversion into healthy blood. If you wish to study the mode by which the engineer constructs vast bridges of stone or iron, the whole process is before you; or, if you desire to know how and by what mechanical and engineering appliances he rears far away from the shore on some partially sea-covered rock, a great stone lighthouse that will resist effectually the force of wind and sea, and serve in the future as a beacon to warn the mariner of his proximity to danger, you can here study the whole process from the laying of the foundation layer of stones in prepared beds of cement until the strong and graceful structure is at length fitted for the reception of its lamps and the human beings who are to inhabit it. From the few descriptive words here written your readers will perhaps be able to form some idea of the nature and objects of this great educational institution, the Museum of Science and Art. As an adjunct to the teaching of several of the chairs in the University, and as a means of imparting practical knowledge to the students in attendance thereon, its value cannot be given in words or figures. A historic interest will always attach to this great structure from the fact that laying its corner stone, in October, 1861, was the last public act of Prince Albert, the lamented husband of our Queen.

It would occupy too much time and space to enlarge on other educational institutions. The justly celebrated High School of Edinburgh, which has given to Scotland and Great Britain many men celebrated in literature, the learned professions, in the Senate and by deeds of arms, has a history, and is doing a present work, guided by an able head, keeping abreast of the times, and of schools of a like character; and well merits a prolonged notice, but all I can do is to name it as one of the *institutions* of the city.

The denominational schools of the United Presbyterians and of the Free Church of Scotland have here in Edinburgh, as throughout the country, done a great work, not for these churches only, but for the people of the land.

The private institution for the care and education of imbecile children under the charge of my friend Dr. Brodie, situated in the beautiful old village of Tileston, a mile or two south of where I am writing, is well worthy the attention of all who take an interest in this department of labor.

The institutions for the education and training for future usefulness of the blind, have long been doing a noble work in Edinburgh.

I have visited with great interest the Institution for the Deaf and Dumb in this city. The inspection and the comparison made

between the Edinburgh building and that in which so much valuable work has been done in Halifax by Mr. Hutton, under disadvantageous circumstances, makes me more desirous than ever of seeing a suitable building erected specially for this object in our own capital.

The last wing of the Insane Asylum at Dartmouth. I am pleased to hear, is to be commenced forthwith. When that is completed, the finances of the country being now quite equal to this small undertaking, I hope soon to see a Provincial Deaf and Dumb Institution, taking the place of that which in Gottingen Street, although small and inconvenient, has proved a blessing, not only to Nova Scotia, but to all the Maritime Provinces.

I had almost forgotten a very important class of educational institutions—not confined to Edinburgh, but now found pretty generally scattered over the country. I refer to ragged schools. Those first commenced in the city by Dr. Guthrie are designated “the Original Ragged Schools,” in contradistinction to others more recently organized. The Marquis of Lorne presided at the last annual meeting of Guthrie’s division of these schools, in connection with which a few words may interest your readers.

The meeting took place in December in the great music hall in George Street, and although my family were at the place nearly an hour before its commencement we had difficulty in getting seats. The building was densely packed. Some capital music, vocal and instrumental, was given the audience by some hundreds of little arabs, and by the band of the Guthrie brigade, and when the time for the commencement of business had arrived, the latter reminded the noble chairman that his presence was required by striking up “The Campbells are coming.”

The Marquis is a mere lad in appearance. He has a good head and a pleasant countenance, and will eventually, I dare say, make a good public speaker, but as yet he wants confidence and practice.

Dr. Guthrie’s speech was characteristic and amusing. He said he had promised the Marquis “a bumper house” and the promise had been fulfilled. In inviting him to take the chair, he, the Doctor, stated in his letter, that if Her Royal Highness the Princess would accompany him, it would not only be “a bumper,” but that the house would overflow, even until it reached “the other side of Jordan.” The point of the joke I did not understand until I was subsequently visiting the Royal Insane Asylum at Morning-side, when the site of Dr. Guthrie’s Jordan was pointed out to me running close to its southern wall, a “burn” or brook so small that a foot rule would span it, and two or three inches would sound its depth. A capital Pædobaptist Jordan! but happily for our side of the question, there’s another somewhere else broader and deeper. Among the speakers were eminent divines,

a law lord, a soldier, and others, but this noble old veteran, wherever he goes, although in feeble health still draws the multitude, and by his eloquence and original Scotch humor carries along with him, and "brings down the house," as but few living men can do.

There are several Ragged Schools in the country where the children are only cared for educationally. In these, Dr. G. informed us the attendance was most irregular, and the results unsatisfactory. His mode is to get at their heads and their hearts through their stomachs, by providing outside scholars, those who cannot be taken into the reformatories, with warmth, good porridge and broth, which these poor children cannot get at their own miserable homes.

He told us of a Ragged School in London which he had recently visited, in which the children are fed as well as educated, and I presume, housed and clothed—where 1,200 are now being cared for by the benevolent contributions of the wealthy who are interested in this very numerous class of residents of the great capital of England. This institution has an annual income of £20,000, stg., and sustains a training ship in the Thames to fit its boys for seafaring life.

Dr. Guthrie said when he inspected this institution, of which he had often heard before, he was constrained to address the managers in the language of the Queen of Sheba on the occasion of her visit to the court of Solomon, "It was a true report I heard in mine own land of thy acts and thy wisdom. Howbeit, I believed not the words until I came, and mine eyes had seen it, and behold, the half was not told me."

In closing these very general remarks on the educational institutions of Edinburgh, allow me to say that you are not for a moment to suppose that an abounding and a continuous liberality in relation to these objects has been confined to the capital, or even to the great centres of population and commerce; on the contrary it has extended itself widely in all directions, and has produced its results on the character of the whole people.

The population of Scotland to-day is small when compared with that of the whole country, but small though it is, I am fully convinced that it is a great element of strength—a strong right arm to the nation, a *liberal conservative element*, that in these days of national restlessness and threatened upheavals of the social and political structure will be in the future, as now, the firm, fast friend of order, and of monarchical institutions. And this constitutional and national stability is to be largely attributed to the pulpit teachings of a doctrinally stable and educated ministry, and to the general diffusion of a wholesome education among the people of all classes. It would have done you good to have seen the loyal universal sympathy exhibited by the whole people of this city, for the

Queen and Royal family during the recent dangerous illness of the Prince of Wales. There was no cold formality connected with it. No surface show, but simply the "welling up" from the hearts of all classes of the deep feelings called forth by the trying family and national occasion.

You may perhaps think that because I am half a Scotchman, and have a "Mac" in my name, I am prejudiced in favor of the land and its people, but although there is a large admixture of Scotch blood in my veins, for which I am rather thankful than otherwise, I still hope I am not so prejudiced but that I can look upon things as they are and draw fair conclusions. I am not one of those who think that everything of value in the heavens above and in the earth beneath is of Scotch origin, as some of the sons of the heather are apt to conclude. An illustrative case in point comes to my memory.

Many years ago as I was viewing Rosslyn Chapel—a fine old Gothic ruin of the fifteenth century, some seven or eight miles from Edinburgh—my attention was called by the worthy old Scot who was earning his shilling by detailing its history and describing its architectural beauties, to certain carved figures on the upper part of the ruin, which with distended cheeks were engaged in blowing or playing on some kind of wind instruments. With great gravity pointing to these objects, he observed: "Yon are the angels playing on the bagpipes." This was the first intimation I had had that the national musical instrument of Scotland was of heavenly origin. Personally I rather like the music, but if such were the fact, I fear there are some even of Scotland's own children who would almost prefer remaining outside, to enjoying *that sound* throughout a future existence.

Correspondents sometimes have a way of concluding their letters by saying "excuse brevity as the mail is just off." I have to beg to be excused for want of brevity, but for the abruptness of my manner of closing must plead that the mail for Halifax via Queenstown is about being closed in reality.

Ever sincerely yours,

D. McN. PARKER.

For the *Christian Messenger*.

13 SALISBURY PLACE, NEWINGTON,
EDINBURGH, January 30th, 1872.

My Dear Editor:

WHISKEY AND ITS DOINGS.

Whatever may be said of the bagpipes, there is another institution of the country which most assuredly is not of such exalted origin as that claimed by my Rosslyn guide for this musical instrument; and that institution is whiskey. The

whole land I fear requires a great reformation as regards the traffic in this terrible scourge of its people—an evil not by any means confined to men, but widely disseminated among the poor women, and even the children of the wynds and closes, and often, I fear, extending its devastating influence in this fair city to higher and more fashionable localities than these.

The records of the Infirmaries here exhibit a dark and oft repeated spot in relation to the habits of many of those who enter them, seeking relief from organic diseases which have resulted from long-continued alcoholic stimulation. Shortly after my arrival, as I accompanied one of my medical friends around his wards in the Royal Infirmary, I listened to the report of one of his clerks, which detailed the past history of a diminutive, unhealthy-looking boy of fourteen years of age, who had been admitted for the treatment of an incurable disease caused by the habit of whiskey drinking. The recorded history of the case stated the fact, that as an infant, his mother had been in the habit of administering gin or whiskey to quiet him and to produce sleep. When a little older, and able to speak, he would cry for, and demand it, and for the past few years, *have whiskey* he would, by fair means or foul. I watched the poor little fellow's case with a good deal of interest until a day or two before Christmas, when on entering the ward I found him dying, and learned that he had but a few minutes previously received a very gentle push from the hand of another little patient in an adjoining bed, and so changed had some of the internal organs become in consequence of his habits, that one of them had been ruptured or torn by the very slight pressure of his companion's hand. This case pointedly illustrates the danger of parents administering stimulants to infants when the necessity for it does not exist, and without medical advice. It is also very suggestive of the duty of mothers in relation to their offspring, for as we all know, there are more ways of administering alcohol to infants than by means of a bottle or a spoon. On New Year's Day, the scenes of open drunkenness and dissipation, principally on the High Street and Canongate, and between the bridges—among men, women and boys—was a sad, a debasing blot upon the social history of this beautiful capital of a great country. In the days of classic history, Greece had its "Athenian State poison," with which the lives of offenders against the State were destroyed. To the hemlock Socrates yielded up his life. The heathen governments of Greece, however, derived no revenue from its sale, they did not countenance its use, except for the object just specified; but the governments of Christian countries, like Great Britain, British America and the United States, invitingly place *their* "State poison"—alcohol—within the reach of every subject, raise

annually vast revenues—millions upon millions of pounds—from the traffic in it, in fact largely live by it, and thus indirectly encourage men to indulge in its use; and when under its influence, offences against the criminal laws of the land are committed, these governments inform their unhappy victims that they must either die or be immured, perhaps for life: and if the former shall be their lot, they strangle them with a hempen cord. Bad enough it is, for governments and legislatures to thus give the countenance of the State to that which like a pestilence “wasteth at noonday,” and is so utterly destructive of the spiritual, moral and physical condition of those entrusted to their supervision and care; but the iniquity of the thing is intensified, when one thinks and knows that these responsible public bodies stand idly by and see this *State disease*—habitual drunkenness—destroying its vast armies of men, women and children annually, without putting forth the slightest effort to reclaim or cure, by the aid of Inebriate Institutions, or other appropriate means, those whom they have been largely instrumental in placing in this pitiable condition. They (the governments and legislatures) will punish, but they leave to private philanthropy, and individual effort, the herculean work of reclaiming and curing.

Governments, it should be remembered, are composed of individuals, and there will be an individual account to be rendered by and by, for the terrible sins of omission and of commission in reference to this important matter, and that too, before a higher tribunal than “the bar of public opinion.”

THE FREE CHURCH.

In 1843 I witnessed the disruption of the Church of Scotland, and saw a majority of the 474 seceding ministers walk in procession, headed by Doctors Chalmers and Welch, from St. Andrews Church on their way to the Canon mills to organize the Free Church of Scotland. It was a day of terrible excitement, not unlike that of which I was also an observer in the city of Charleston, when, in April 1861 the Southern States of America consummated *their* act of Secession, by bombarding Fort Sumter. Both events were pregnant with great national results: both stirred to their lowest depths the emotional nature of the millions who were immediately and practically interested in these two great upheavals, or Secessions, both were momentous days, never to be forgotten, even by comparatively disinterested observers.

Well, this heavy brigade of Scotland's Church Artillery went out that day leaving their all—pecuniarily speaking—behind them. They had not a church structure in which they could legally place their feet, and not a manse left into which they could

enter to obtain rest. But what do we see to-day? In Edinburgh alone—exclusive of Leith, Tileston, Corstorphine, and other towns and villages, so close to the city, and so continuously connected with it as almost to form a part of it, there are thirty-six to thirty-eight Free Churches, or, approximately, one for every 5,000 of its inhabitants—erected at an enormous outlay, and many of them large and elegant buildings. The Barclay Church, costing £10,000 stg., was erected by money left for that purpose by a lady bearing that name. The ground alone on which Free St. George's stands, cost, I am informed, £10,000 stg.

This is Dr. Candlish's Church, and to give you an idea of how its congregation pours its gold, for denominational and congregational purposes, I may state that its contributions are annually over £8,000 stg. By referring to a document before me (the 28th Report of the Public Accounts of the Free Church of Scotland), I find that last year (1871) the amount was £8,736. 3s. 5d. stg. Her ministers are now comfortably housed, in manse or their equivalent; and the most of them are in the receipt of £150 stg., per annum, from the general Sustentation Fund of the denomination (a part of the great financial scheme organized by Dr. Chalmers and others, at the birth of the Free Church in 1843). The number of clergymen in the receipt of this *equal dividend*, of £150, at the present moment, I am unprepared to give you, but by making reference to a paper, read before the Statistical Society of London, by Dr. Buchanan of Glasgow, in March, 1870, I find that at the time of meeting of the General Assembly in 1869, it was 740. During that year, however, there were other two hundred and two (202) in the receipt of a smaller amount; making in all 942 ministers who were then placed on the fund in question. Of course you will understand that these "Sustentation Dividends" are separate, and distinct from the amount raised by each congregation for the maintenance of its minister.

Without such a fund to fall back on, the poorer congregations in many country districts of Scotland could not sustain a stated ministry. Stimulated by the exigencies of the hour the adherents of the Free Church at its very birth began to pour out their paper and their gold into the general treasury, as water is poured from vessel to vessel. To illustrate how deep was the feeling, and how generously men contributed of their abundance in those days, I will state a fact which was told me at the time—at the breakfast table of Dr. Chalmers by a member of his family. A Divinity Hall or Theological Institution was required to carry on the work of this new church, and the Rev. Dr. Welch in one day (if my memory is not at fault) addressed twenty letters to twenty wealthy individuals who were in sympathy with the

disruption movement, asking them to contribute £1,000 stg. each for this object. Promptly nineteen replied in the affirmative, and the twentieth, if I mistake not, did not refuse, but compromised the matter, by reducing his contribution.

From this beginning, three large and fine Theological Colleges have arisen. The buildings have cost £55,000 stg., one in Edinburgh, another in Glasgow, and a third in Aberdeen. And they are endowed to the extent of over £70,000 stg., over and above the interest accruing from this endowment, and about £1,000 stg. received from students' fees. Three thousand pounds are annually required to efficiently maintain the three institutions, and this balance is fully and cheerfully supplied by systematic collections taken up in all the churches of the body throughout the land.

In these three Colleges there are thirteen Professors, and the number of Theological students in attendance in 1869 was 241. A large Assembly Hall for the meeting of the General Assembly has been erected in Edinburgh by private contributions.

From the date of the disruption in 1843 to 1869, this new denomination had built 920 churches, and laid out for this purpose £1,015,375; 719 manses, expending therefor £467,350; elementary schools, 597, at an outlay of £185,000. Besides these elementary school buildings, and the education which has been carried on in them at an enormous local and general expenditure, the church has also erected and maintains two large and flourishing Normal Schools, for the training of teachers—at which in 1869, there were in attendance 1,645 scholars and 252 students.

One of my medical friends here informed me a short time since, that in the early days of the Free Church, his father went out to collect money with which they might organize an elementary school system, and did not stay his hand until he had collected £60,000 stg. They struck while the iron was hot.

From Dr. Buchannan's general abstract showing the aggregate amount of funds raised for all purposes during the twenty-six years from the Disruption to 1868-'69 inclusive, I give you the following figures:

Building funds (General)	£355,452
Building funds (Total)	1,312,272
Sustentation supplementary for aged and infirm ministers.....	2,792,587
Congregational	2,376,095
Education	367,946
Colleges	211,888
Missions, including Lowland and Highland, Colonial, European, Foreign and Jews	982,935
General trustees and miscellaneous	88,595
Total (Sterling)	£8,487,774

I have already shown you how Scotchmen have been educated in the common acceptation of that word. From these financial

statements (drawn from the able and exhaustive statistical paper already referred to) you will glean—notwithstanding a general impression to the contrary—that they have also been specially educated to give to objects worthy of their benevolence.

I have dwelt on this matter of the commencement and growth of the Free Church of Scotland, in a comparatively poor and not densely populated country, for the benefit of the Baptists of the Maritime Provinces, who have churches and parsonages to build, ministers to educate and support, a College and educational institutions to sustain and endow, to show them what a well organized system faithfully and conscientiously carried out can accomplish, and in the hope that this Scottish epidemic—for it is general, and not confined to one denomination—may spread, and attack our churches; that, with such facts and figures as these, and with the history of the commencement and growth of the United Presbyterian body in Scotland, and the Wesleyan Methodist Church in England before them, the Political Disruptionists in the Lords and Commons have an argument both potent and practical, in addition to those which have so long been wielded by Non-conformists in the discussion of the subject of Church and State.

UNION OF CHURCHES.

The hostile feeling of the days of my former sojourn in Edinburgh, between the Establishment and the Free Church—and a very bitter feeling it was, in those days—is now no more; and I may say that I have not, since my return to Scotland, heard an uncharitable expression fall from the lips of either party. I have heard these old church militants fight their battles over again, but in a far different spirit from that which characterized the days that are gone.

The contemplated union between the United Presbyterian and the Free Churches of Scotland, which has already been consummated in our Provinces, is a matter of certainty here in a not far distant future. A few old and strong men, influentially, stand in the way, but the feeling in favor of *Confederation* is growing. As an outsider, I can see nothing to keep them apart, and I dare say the day is not very far distant when these two bodies will again gravitate to and coalesce with the old establishment, when establishments in this country shall be a thing of the past; and the political prophets are not few who fix upon no lengthened period for the termination of the work, which, having commenced in Ireland they say will ere long place all denominations in England and Scotland on an equal footing in their relations to the State. On this question, Nonconformists in Great Britain are speaking in general terms, as a unit, and there are

not a few adherents of both establishments who are in sympathy with them. If, however, I can read the signs of the times from this Scottish centre of public opinion, the battle will be a hard-fought, and not by any means a short one, but considering the age in which we live, and the principles at stake, the views prevailing over the entire country of North America, on State religion, must eventually be the dominating views of the British Isles.

The Baptist denomination in Scotland is comparatively speaking a very small body, but small though it is, it has increased slowly and surely since I was last a resident of the country, and that increase is not numerical alone, but one of influence and wealth as well. Contrasted, however, with the great Presbyterian bodies they are but "as a drop in the bucket." The churches number from eighty to ninety, several of which are known as "Scotch Baptists," who have no stated ministry, but believe in the "Lay Element" doing both lay and ministerial work, but in other respects in practice and doctrine are the same as the great body of Baptists in America.

In Edinburgh (including Leith, where there is one) there are five churches. One of these supports two pastors, and raises annually over £1,500 stg. for congregational and denominational objects. In Glasgow there are four. The remainder are scattered singly over the country, principally in the north. Contrary to my expectation, I find that nearly all practice close communion. Nine or ten of the pastors are young men, equipped for the work at the College in connection with Mr. Spurgeon's Tabernacle Church in London. A majority of these churches, fifty-four in all, have been recently organized into what is called the "Baptist Union for Scotland," the constitution of which is not unlike that of our Convention, but its objects are different. This Union deals with the subjects of Home Missions in Scotland; it aids weak churches in maintaining the ordinances of the gospel; it assists in originating new churches in the larger towns; it does the work of a Ministerial Education Society by assisting young men of "assured piety and talent in preparing for the Christian ministry," and by supporting a Tutor (the Rev. Dr. Patterson) who in winter assists these young men in their Arts Course at the University of Edinburgh, and in summer gives them Theological instruction; it annually gathers the statistics of the denomination in Scotland, and finally it is intended to cultivate the brotherly and social element among the different churches which have not hitherto been associated. This is a brief synopsis of its objects. The Union supported in 1871 eighteen missionaries, who labored principally in the Highlands and on the isles of the north coast of Scotland, but in this work it is materially assisted by English contributions.

(To be continued.)

For the *Christian Messenger*.

13 SALISBURY PLACE, NEWINGTON,
EDINBURGH, January 30th, 1872.

My Dear Editor:

THE BAPTIST UNION FOR SCOTLAND.

In November last, the third Annual Meeting of this Association was held in Glasgow, and as I was desirous of seeing and hearing the representative men of the churches, and of learning something of their denominational operations, I spent a day and a half with them—an unknown observer of their proceedings—and must say, that I was highly gratified with the Christian spirit, the business capacity and the speaking talent of the brethren (clerical and lay) who took part in the proceedings. The Association was presided over by Mr. Bowser—a Glasgow merchant—who opened the meeting with an admirable address. The attendance at all the business and social meetings was large. While for the most part the same rules govern the Union that prevail at our Conventions, their system is more thorough, and although the meeting is open, and all delegates have full liberty to give expression to their views on every subject, but few men speak—generally only the movers and seconders of resolutions—but they come prepared, and their addresses are able and exhaustive. The real work of the Union is performed by large and influential committees, previous to the opening of the session, who submit the result of their deliberations in well-matured resolutions, and select the men who are to speak to them, giving them time to prepare for the occasion. Financial subjects were for the most part dealt with by mercantile and legal men, who, in this country, throw themselves into denominational work with their whole hearts. I only wish a similar activity and spirit could be infused into the business men of the denomination in the Maritime Provinces.

Mr. Newman, the assistant minister of the Dublin Street Church of this city, in speaking to the resolution relating to Home Missions, delivered an admirable address in which he dealt largely with the past history of this missionary organization. He said : “ In perusing the records I find (and I have not been particular in the selection) that there are five of our missionaries whose combined ages amount to 420 years, and whose united labors in connection with the society would spread over a period of 227 years; giving to each one an average of forty-five years of real missionary work. Of one it is reported that he traversed the marshy moors of Lewis with his shoes and stockings tied to his back or slung on his umbrella; of another, that after walking across hills and moors forty miles, and preaching twice, he lay

down at night upon some straw in the corner of the room after having partaken of some potatoes and salt." These interesting old records state the fact that these simple-hearted, earnest men "lived on bread and tea, sometimes a little butter to it, for breakfast; potatoes, and occasionally some fish for dinner; as for butcher's meat, it was a luxury they could not afford, and they scarcely saw it. One had a parish sixty miles long and forty miles broad. Much of their missionary work was performed on the islands of the far north, where they had to face the dangers of the sea at all seasons in open boats."

As this speech was delivered, and the extracts from the records detailed, I could not but compare the character and labors of these servants of God with those of the Baptist pioneers in Nova Scotia and New Brunswick—the Mannings; the Hardings; the Dimocks and others. Missionary longevity has been and still is a remarkable feature of this field of labor. It is not, we are told, an uncommon thing to find men of more than eighty years—and occasionally ninety—still vigorous and hard at work. This speaks volumes for the bracing air of the Highlands, and the sea breezes of the islands in the far north, as also for abundance of exercise, simple habits and diet. Mr. Newman is an Englishman, hence his neglect of porridge and brose, which do not appear in his missionary diet list—but potatoes and salt, with an occasional herring, and bread and tea, have certainly risen in my estimation since my visit to Glasgow, and doubtless men of my profession would have less to do if others than missionaries were to "go, and do likewise." As at our Conventions and Associations, provision is made to entertain ministers and delegates at the residences of members of the churches and congregations. A capital dinner was partaken of by a large number of the members of the Union in a very commodious vestry in the rear of the church in which the session was being held—having connected with it a kitchen, cooking apparatus, and all the necessary appliances for such an occasion. This social entertainment was provided at the expense of all the Glasgow churches. Speeches were made, and good ones too—under the stimulating influence of coffee—but they were nearly all of a business nature. In short, this dinner was in reality an adjourned meeting of the Union. I have found out since my arrival here that Scotch business men—as well as our American neighbors—thoroughly understand, both in theory and practice, the meaning of the saying "time is money."

I returned from this meeting by an express night train—a distance of forty miles, without a stoppage, in an hour and a quarter, greatly gratified, and amply repaid for having relinquished the lecture room and the hospital wards for a couple of days on a denominational excursion. I have already intimated

that Baptist sentiments do not grow with rapidity in Presbyterian Scotland, but, as with us in Nova Scotia, when the dividing questions—of much or little water; the subjects to whom it is to be applied; and the difference in church government—are removed, they find that Scotch men and women make most stable and hard-working Baptists. *The foundation* is generally well laid in pulpit and home teaching, assisted doubtless to some extent by the course pursued in the Public and Private Schools, in which, for the most part, the Bible is read, and the Shorter Catechism committed to memory and explained. In the Private Schools to which my children go this Catechism is learned by all the pupils whose parents do not object to it, and inasmuch as, when dealing with the subject of Baptism, there are quoted in full the following passages of Scripture, Matt. 28: 19; Acts 2: 38 and 41: Rom. 6: 3, 4; Gen. 17: 7 and 10, I imagine Baptist parents very rarely take exception to it. Referring to the quotation from Genesis above mentioned, I am reminded of a very professional answer—rather too *Jenner-ic*, however, for the occasion—which was given a few days since by an advanced young lady in reply to the following question, “What ordinance has taken the place of the covenant of circumcision?” “*Vaccination!*” was the prompt reply. It is hardly necessary to add that mistress and school were alike convulsed, and that exception was taken to this doctrinal teaching, and when an hour or two afterwards my children related the circumstance I fear my risible faculties were also overcome.

A few such replies as this would help to influence “the finding” of the Royal Commission which recently investigated the results of the religious training in the public schools of Scotland and reported against it as most unsatisfactory. In this connection, from the speech of Mr. Fordyce, M.P., recently made in Aberdeenshire, at social Free Church meeting, I quote the following paragraphs:

“The Commissioners who examined into the state of Scotch education found conclusively that it fails to communicate dogmatic or doctrinal instruction or the facts of the Bible in such a way as to be worth the name of a religious system.” And again, “The Royal Commissioners, in the late Scotch enquiry, expressed themselves as filled with amazement at the state of Biblical ignorance in which they found the children at school.”

I must say the very strong language contained in the above sentences surprised me, but if this was a thorough investigation—as I presume, from the importance of the subject, it must have been—it only tends to confirm my preconceived opinions as to the necessity of making home, Sabbath-school and pulpit instruction the main agencies for grounding children in Biblical knowledge. In America it is very generally believed that the intelligent

knowledge of the Bible and the general state of morality existing among the Scotch people—especially in the country districts—has its origin in the parish school system. The report of this Royal Commission will do more than throw doubt upon this opinion, and will tend materially to strengthen the views, so strongly expressed by Hugh Miller (than whom no man was better able to speak with authority), who, in adopting the ideas of practical and competent observers before his day, said, in effect, that the moral sentiment and thoughtful tone of the people resulted from the teaching of the national pulpits—not from the schools. In former years Sabbath-schools were not resorted to in this city or country by the children of the higher and middle classes, but, I am glad to say, there is a change taking place, and all classes are waking up to the importance of this institution. The poor wandering Arabs of the streets and lanes have long been looked after, and in this way have had the gospel preached unto them, but the result of my enquiries has led me to the conclusion that, both in the United States and the Dominion, Sunday-schools exert a more widespread influence than they do in Scotland.

The Royal Institution for the exhibition of paintings and the Antiquarian Museum, closely approximated as regards locality, are extensive and costly Grecian structures, subserving the purposes indicated by their names—the cultivation of a taste for the fine arts and antiquarian science.

Many of the paintings in the former are of great and increasing value. A single fact stated in my hearing in his speech at the annual dinner of the Fellows of the Royal College of Physicians quite recently by Sir George Harvey, the President of the Royal Scottish Academy, will give you an idea of the native talent of some Scotch artists and the price their works command. The Association in quite recent times bought an oil painting from one of the members of the Royal Academy for exhibition in their institution, paying less than £1,000 for it. A short time since an English dealer offered them £2,500 stg. for the picture, and the offer was declined. Should it rise in value in the future as it has done in the past, a century hence it will take a long purse to remove it from the walls of the Royal Institution. More valuable in the eyes of many is the great collection in the Antiquarian Museum. Both, in their own way, are doing an educational work for Scotland.

The Botanical Gardens, to which, during the summer of 1843, I was obliged to hasten a distance of nearly three miles from my lodging in the mornings before breakfast, to attend the course of lectures there delivered to medical and other students, have been extended and vastly improved since the days of my student life. The various descriptions of plants are arranged in their proper

order, so that the student finds all the species of each genus tastefully grouped together. The garden is not very large, being less than thirty acres, but one can hardly conceive it possible to have such an institution more perfectly arranged and ornamented. Its palm house, one of the largest and finest in Great Britain, is seventy feet high, and is literally filled to the glass roof with these immense plants and their magnificent foliage, so that as we walked along the narrow pathway, or cast-iron gallery, which at the point of junction of the stone and iron body with the glass roof encircles the largest building, and looked down upon the scene beneath, it was beautiful, and carried one in thought to the jungles of far-off India and to the banks of the Amazon. All that it wanted to complete and make perfect the *tropical scene* was the gay plumage of its birds, with here and there a specimen of its larger and more formidable animal life.

I have visited the Royal Asylum for the Insane at Morning-side, with great satisfaction. It is large, and with recent additions accommodates comfortably seven or eight hundred patients from the different ranks of society.

Many having superior accommodation pay from £200 to £300 stg. annually.

It is pleasantly situated, with the Blackford, Braid and Pentland Hills in its immediate neighborhood, but it wants what it can never have, water scenery to perfect the view. So rapidly is Edinburgh spreading itself out that the city is close upon it and will soon completely surround its grounds, making a change of locality desirable, if not essential.

It is one of the oldest institutions in the country, and as regards the site, plan of the buildings, and some of its internal arrangements is inferior to the Mount Hope institution at Dartmouth, the front view from which would of itself, if it could be imported here, add, I feel assured, to its percentage of cures.

Pianos abounded. In one of the large female wards I noticed three large first-class instruments. It had a fine, large billiard-room, thoroughly lighted, warmed and ventilated, croquet and bowling greens, with several high stone-walled exercising grounds, which, in reference both to the health and safety of the patients, should, in all such institutions, be considered a *sine qua non*. Without these safeguards escapes must be constantly occurring, and the anxieties and cares of the medical and other officers—always sufficiently large without this unnecessary addition—must be greatly enhanced.

This has heretofore been an out-door want of our Dartmouth Hospital, and while I am greatly gratified to learn that the government is in a position to complete its last wing during the present

year, I hope, should I be spared to return, to see two such stone-walled exercising grounds as those I am now remarking upon.

The gentleman, a member of the board of management, who accompanied me on my visit, showed me the things without as well as those within. On the farm connected with the Asylum is a large piggery, containing something like one hundred of the finest animals I have seen. A sale of a number of these pigs had just been concluded at an average price of £10 stg. each.

(*To be continued.*)

For the *Christian Messenger*.

13 SALISBURY PLACE, NEWINGTON, EDINBURGH,
January 30th, 1872.

My Dear Editor:

The charitable institutions which I have not yet found time to visit are many, and among them is the very large and beautifully situated Poor House for the City of Edinburgh, on the eastern slope of the Pentlands, about a mile beyond the Royal Asylum. I hope shortly to see something more than its handsome exterior, to get an insight into its management, that I may be enabled to compare it with our own in Halifax and those I have elsewhere visited.

As I returned to the city my friend pointed out a Scottish relic of bygone days, the "Bore Stone," in which James IV. planted his standard in 1513, and in the neighborhood of which he marshalled his forces before setting out for the fatal field of Flodden. This large piece of red sandstone, with its standard hole, still deeply marked, is embedded in the wall of the street, close by the Parish Church, as is also the iron plate beneath it which records its history.

I have mentioned this "Bore Stone" with some degree of hesitation, fearing lest it may perchance meet the eye of that enterprising class of practical geologists from the neighboring Union (so graphically described by Mark Twain) who, as travellers, go about the world with geological hammers in their pockets, collecting specimens for their private museums from every stone or statue that by the *generality of man is looked upon as historic and sacred*. However, should such a breach of antiquarian law and Scottish usage ever occur in connection with this exposed and unprotected stone, one thing I may say, the Lord Provost's hammer would with almost unerring certainty fall, and that heavily, on the head of the offenders, for in Scotland, in reference to national relics, and all historic material, every Scotchman is both a detective and a policeman.

DOCTOR CHALMERS.

In this part of Edinburgh, Morningside, is an object of more recent date, but no doubt of far more interest to the people of Scotland than that to which I have just called attention: the house in which were spent the last years of one of "Nature's noblemen," a man born to reign over, and sway by a superior and highly cultivated intellect, the minds, not of the masses only—in the ordinary acceptation of that term—but the intellectual masses as well, throughout the entire land. I refer to Dr. Chalmers, the simple-hearted Christian, and in his day the greatest of Scottish preachers—an orator born.

I never saw him but on two occasions, both in this house, for at that time (1844) he had in consequence of impaired health retired from the active duties of the ministry and was engaged in perfecting the financial and other vast schemes connected with the Free Church of Scotland, of which he was the moving, organizing spirit, the great human head.

His mental endowments, as well as his Christian and general character, have long been familiar to your readers as to the whole Christian world. It would therefore be more than superfluous for me to occupy your space in giving a boy's impressions of the man; but this I may perhaps be permitted to say, that nothing in or about him struck me more than the simple, warm-hearted, genial nature of the man, and the great readiness with which the Leviathan could unbend himself to gather from one so young some crumbs of knowledge connected with certain natural phenomena existing in Nova Scotia. When speaking of the tidal flow of the Bay of Fundy, his whole countenance depicted the interest he took in the subject, and demonstrated the fact that one of his ruling passions—a love for nature and the sciences connected therewith—was strong, if not in death, certainly in advanced old age.

This house in which he lived and died will, I hope, in the long years to come be carefully preserved as an object of national interest.

There is another house, however, and more lowly, by which I have stood with even greater interest, that which now contains all that is mortal of Thomas Chalmers, and, as if to convey to those who "view the ground" the character of the man and the simplicity of his nature, the massive, but very plain, piece of sandstone which marks the spot has simply engraved upon its sombre face the two words "THOMAS CHALMERS."

Immediately adjoining are the graves of three men well known to science and the Christian public of this country: Hugh Miller, the geologist; James Miller, the Professor of Surgery in the Edin-

burgh University—my teacher and friend of former years—and Sir Andrew Agnew. The graves of men truly great have always been objects of interest to living, thinking men, recalling as they do the history or memories of the past, and often suggesting hopes for the future. And I imagine this last earthly house of Thomas Chalmers will be in the far-off years, as it is now, a historic spot, to be visited by all who are familiar with the land, its history and its Church.

In this connection the cemeteries of the city, ancient and modern would seem to demand a word or two. They are numerous, but small, and that to which reference has already been made, "The Grange," as indeed are all the others of recent date, is ornamented with trees and shrubbery and beautifully laid out and kept.

These contain the remains of many notable men of modern times. Professor Simpson, the man who for a number of years filled one of the most important medical chairs in the University, and who was made a baronet in consequence of his professional attainments but perhaps more particularly because of his application of chloroform to obstetric and surgical practice, is buried in the beautiful spot known as Warriston Cemetery. The great dead of Edinburgh, and of Scotland, in the long past, were interred in the ancient cemeteries of Grey Friars, St. Cuthbert's, the Canon-gate, Roselrig, etc. These latter are the oft-frequented haunts of antiquarian visitors.

So near here are many of these cities of the dead to the busy, bustling scenes of life and business, that it is an easy transition to step from the former to the latter (as we know it to be, everywhere, to pass from the latter to the former—from active life and health to the grave), so perhaps I may be forgiven for abruptly passing from cemeteries to banks.

The banking institutions of Edinburgh are numerous, the buildings in general very large, the architectural appearance of many of them imposing and chaste, their internal arrangement and fittings magnificent, and last, but not least, their dividends such as would be likely to make the shareholders of Nova Scotia banks envious. Thus, the National Bank of Scotland quite recently declared a dividend of thirteen per cent. and three per cent. bonus, in all sixteen per cent., while others followed closely in its wake. A capital investment for original shareholders! But even these dividends have been largely surpassed by several London and English banks, which have yielded to their proprietors as much as twenty and twenty-five per cent. on their paid-up capital. Edinburgh is neither a commercial nor a manufacturing city, and at first sight it seems difficult to understand how it sustains so many extensive banking institutions, but it is to be remem-

bered that Leith, the third, and Granton, the fourth, seaports of Scotland (in reference to the amount of revenue collected), are "part and parcel" of the capital, the banks of which, or their branches, to a great extent do the business of these two seaports. For its population, it has an enormous retail business, which is materially increased in consequence of the city being generally full of visitors; and so this department of trade, its university and schools, furnish largely buyers and consumers. Then much of the banking business of Scotland is centred here. The wealth of the city is very great, and increasing from without every year, in consequence of men who have made their fortunes in India, Australia, North and South America, and elsewhere, returning in large numbers to spend their last days in the capital of their country, where a cultivated society and educational facilities for their families can be enjoyed to an extent hardly to be equalled, and certainly not to be surpassed, elsewhere. Literary men, and those who have retired from the public service of India, the army and navy, flock hither; and from these varied sources the banks have their vaults well filled, making the supply almost always greater than the demand.

My opportunities of seeing the banking institutions of England have been but limited, but those that I have visited—with the exception of the Bank of England—are eclipsed, architecturally speaking, by those of Edinburgh.

Indeed, so critical has the general architectural taste of this city become that no public body, or private individual, would think of erecting in any central locality a building for banking, commercial, religious or benevolent objects, of small size, of defective proportions, or deficient in architectural beauty, for fear of doing violence to this long cultivated taste of its inhabitants and of detracting from the *tout ensemble* of the modern Athens—hence we may, with very considerable certainty, conclude that as years roll on, Auld Reekie in this as in other respects will not decrease but increase. Bowing to public sentiment in this particular, the British Government, when, in 1861, it undertook to erect a new General Post Office, expended on a building for this service alone £120,000 stg.

Edinburgh has several great publishing and printing firms, which are scattering over the English-speaking world educational material and healthy, substantial literature, in happy contrast to the light and demoralizing trash which in annually increasing quantity is spreading itself over our continent. On this matter I may say that there is here a public sentiment which would speedily crush out or render bankrupt any publishing house that would engage in a business tending to impair and lower the moral tone of the community.

I have carefully inspected the great establishment of Thos. Nelson & Sons, one of the largest houses of the kind in the world, having a branch of its business in London and an agency in New York—an institution worthy of the country. Including engravers on steel and wood, the stereotype gang, the bookbinders, and other classes of special laborers, there are employed in the Edinburgh establishment alone nearly six hundred persons, of both sexes. The most perfect labor-saving machines to be procured are in use, and the whole system and management of this vast literary barrack appear to be thorough and complete. With the exception of the paper, everything concerned in the manufacture of a book is produced within their own walls. A detailed description of the place and the work it is doing would demand a lengthy notice, which I cannot give you, and if I could I fear the minutiae would interest only a limited number of your readers, so I will rest contented with thus briefly alluding to it.

And now, Mr. Editor, in order that your readers who have confined their perambulations to the New World, and those younger members of the families in which the *Messenger* is a household institution, who have not as yet wandered beyond their own Province, may yet have some idea—although a very imperfect one—of what constitutes a leading and notable city in the Old World, I have dwelt much more at length on my subject—Edinburgh—than I intended when I commenced. But although I have written much—wandering occasionally, I fear, too, from my text—I have left much unsaid, and I feel assured that when any of those who may take the trouble to peruse these “Jottings” shall visit this locality *and take the time to see and inquire* into all that is interesting and instructive connected with the Edinburgh of the past and of the present, they will be inclined to say with the Queen of Sheba when addressing Solomon, and Dr. Guthrie at the London Ragged School: “Behold, the half was not told me.”

I am afraid if I were to dwell on the meteorology and climate of Edinburgh at this season I should have to state some unpalatable truths connected with its moisture and the changes of weather which are constantly occurring. As is usual, during the past six weeks the checks of its inhabitants have been fanned by high winds and oft-recurring gales, but there has been no frost of any moment, and any ice that may have formed has not exceeded an inch, or at most an inch and a half, and has continued only for a day or two. The last day I walked into the country the plows were actively at work turning over the soil, and there has been no frost to prevent them since. In closing, permit me to say a word or two in relation to a matter in which we, as well as every inhabitant of Halifax, should be deeply interested. I have recently read with much satisfaction the resolution moved by Alderman Wylde in the City

Council, to borrow money to enable the civic authorities to undertake a thorough and modern system of sewerage for the city. The work will of course be expensive, but nevertheless it should be done. And every citizen who has the true interests of the community at heart should sustain those who are moving in the matter.

For want of such a system in Halifax very many lives are annually sacrificed by typhoid fever and other preventable diseases—diseases which by a judicious expenditure of money could with moral certainty be warded off, to a great extent.

The civic government, led on by Mr. Wylde, are only doing that for which the citizens of Halifax should hold up both hands, and, if opposition should arise, I trust the press of the city will be at their backs and aid them in bringing the matter to a successful issue.

In this country the sewerage question is, at present, attracting great attention, and the recent illness of the Prince of Wales has given it additional importance. In Edinburgh the professional societies are freely discussing the subject.

The errors and defects of present systems are being canvassed, and as was practically illustrated the other night at the Medico-chirurgical Society by Dr. Balfour, the neglect of architects, builders and plumbers, in the performance of their duties, has caused death to enter the dwellings of families residing here in fashionable localities, where the drainage was supposed to be perfect.

In this connection I may say that I have read with great pleasure, in the *Dalhousie College Gazette*, the address of Dr. Farrell on State Medicine and Public Hygiene, delivered at the opening of the present session of that college. Dealing, as it does, with important principles connected with human health and the public interests, it should have had a wider circulation than it has obtained. These principles for which the Doctor contends must eventually come to the surface and be adopted, in the main, by the governments and the public of all civilized and advanced countries.

With best wishes for your continued welfare,

I am, dear sir,

Very truly yours,

D. McN. PARKER.

CHAPTER VIII.

FIRST YEARS OF CONSULTING PRACTICE (1873-1881).

"Life is—to wake, not sleep,
Rise, and not rest."

—*Browning.*

"BEECHWOOD" had been leased for two years, in 1871, and upon his return my father resided with his brother Frank at 96 Morris Street until he could resume possession of the Dartmouth home in August, 1873. The family returned from Scotland in June. He purchased, for office purposes, in the spring of 1873, the two-and-a-half story house, number 70 Granville Street, the old home of the Primrose family, which adjoined on the south the site of the Young Men's Christian Association building erected afterwards at the corner of Granville and Prince Streets. The first floor contained his offices, the second was occupied by the late Dr. W. C. Delaney, dentist, and a housekeeper lived in the attic story. Here my father commenced practice as a consulting physician and surgeon, and remained until the spring of 1882, when he sold the property to the brothers Mahon, who removed the house and extended their business premises, which now cover its site.

It is, perhaps, unnecessary to say that his prestige in the profession did not suffer through his absence abroad, and that he found ready to his hand, upon his return, a large consulting practice. The only difficulty he encountered—and he had to contend with it for some time—was in resisting the importunities of former patients and many close friends to take their cases in the old way. He had been pre-eminently an old-school family physician. As such he had acquired in the years of general practice a thorough understanding of family history, in the medical sense, and of the history of cases chronic and otherwise, which seemed to these old patients to make his services of more value to them and to their children than the services of other physicians. And then, as family physician, he had become the repository of many confidences, semi-professional and otherwise, which, unwillingly enough on his part, had been invited by his capacity for wise counsel and his sympathetic spiritual qualities, and, so to speak, thrust upon him in the course of medical ministrations in the homes of patients. This delicate relation of father-confessor and custodian of family

skeleton-closets would fain have been continued by some whose homes he would now no more enter in the old way. It was difficult to make such old friends and patients understand that his retirement from general practice and assuming the work of a consultant only, forbade that he should visit them professionally save when called in consultation with another practitioner. There had not been hitherto in Halifax or in the Province any member of his profession who confined himself to consulting practice, and the self-imposed limitation, with the professional ethics of the situation, were slowly understood. It was hard in some cases, too, for him to have to sunder close and long-standing ties of this description.

The dynasty of the "specialists" had not then extended its sway to this Province. If he could have been said to "specialize" as a consultant, it was in surgical cases. No important operation at the hospitals, or elsewhere, was attempted without him, and he performed, I believe, operations which had not been attempted previously in Halifax. As a surgeon, particularly, his services became now more generally in request throughout the Province, where he was frequently called to operate, or to advise upon operations. His flights through the country upon such service were frequent and rapid. When he would appear in a community, summoned by one physician, others would avail themselves of the opportunity to consult him, and he rarely made casual non-professional visits in any part of the country without being discovered and carried off for consultations. I recollect once, when at college, hearing the Sabbath calm of Wolfville disturbed by a shrieking locomotive, with a single car attached, dashing through at a most unusual and what was thought to be a reckless rate of speed. It was my father going "special" to Yarmouth, on a Sunday visit in an urgent "case of necessity or mercy."

His office consultations fully occupied all the hours set apart for them. The waiting-room seemed always occupied, and very often filled, by patients awaiting their turn to be called within. I have rarely known a moment of his office hours to be unemployed at 70 Granville Street, or at his subsequent and last location, on Hollis Street.

He had always been an authority upon professional ethics, in which his standards were high and unimpeachable. In this department his judgment was not infrequently invoked by practitioners, more usually out of town, for the adjustment of their differences; and his opinion in such cases was accepted as final and binding. In his customary methodical manner he would preserve the written records of such cases. His opinion was frequently taken by railway authorities and accepted by the claimants in cases of adjusting claims arising out of injuries to persons in accidents, where it was

desired to keep the question out of courts. In numerous instances of both these classes of questions, and in many, widely varying in their nature, in the spheres of business, ethics and religion, was he blessed as a peacemaker among men.

It was wonderful to see how widely he was known, and as widely honored, throughout Nova Scotia in particular, but also far beyond its borders. It may be questioned whether any man in the Province, at this period, had more friends and acquaintances than had he. With his family it was proverbial that he knew "everybody," go where he would; and, in travelling with him, so invariable was his answer to the question who this person or that might be who engaged him in conversation, that one would suppose "the world and his mother" had been "old patients of mine."

He could now live a life that was more regular in its habits and less strenuous in its activities, though it must be said that the usual work of a day was still more than a day's work. He was sure of more of the home life which he loved, and of which through so many years he had been deprived. As he said, he could now get to know his children and have some time for their society. At least they would not have gone to bed ere he returned at night and be still asleep when he set out from home next morning.

A fondness for all children was one of his traits. He loved to have them about him, and even the noise of their games and play about the house seemed agreeable to him. When, in the seventies, he would return home about five o'clock in the afternoon of a stormy day which kept young folk indoors, and would find the house in possession of the neighborhood's children, gathered with his own for romping games, he would take his accustomed afternoon "nap" in the sitting-room upstairs, undisturbed by the rush of "hide-and-seek" throughout the house, the clamor of the fiercest Indian warfare in the attic, or the shock of naval battles fought in the long play-room overhead, where toy guns popped, steel clashed on steel, and fire-crackers resounded from the wooden cannon of the men-of-war constructed there. He said it helped him sleep, and he rebuked suggestions for peace. In the same spirit of fond toleration, at a later time, would he work over his cases and his other business in the evening to an accompaniment of discordant practice by a small orchestra across the hall preparing for some meeting of the Dartmouth "Euterpean Society."

As has been intimated at an earlier page, it is beyond the scope of this undertaking to enter with any degree of particularity the field of my father's professional work; nor would this be possible, save for some professional contemporary who had been closely associated with him through many years—and of such none now remain. Moreover, to his family he was habitually and impenetrably secretive in all matters of a professional character. This

was part of the ethics of his calling. As indicative, however, of his general standing in the profession at this period, as estimated by one of his junior brethren who was the author of an obituary tribute published in the *Maritime Medical News* for November, 1907, which voiced the consensus of professional opinion then, a quotation from that article may speak:

“At this time (1871) he stood in the very front rank of his profession, was engaged in most of the more serious cases, was held in high esteem by his professional brethren, and was regarded with unbounded confidence by the public. Indeed, so great was Dr. Parker’s professional success during the first twenty-five years of his practice that the second quarter-century’s practice can hardly be said to have added much or anything to it, though it continued and confirmed it, and rounded out a half-century of practice in a manner that has been very rarely equalled.” Referring to the period of study and investigation from 1871 to 1873, the author says: “Such a proceeding on Dr. Parker’s part was eminently characteristic. He never suffered himself to fall behind the rest of the world in the knowledge of his profession. He was ever determined to keep up-to-date, and he did so. Notwithstanding his fifty years of practice, he was fully possessed, to the last, of the latest advances in medical and surgical science. Upon his return to Halifax in 1873, he did not again enter into general practice, but limited his practice to that of a consultant in medicine and surgery. In this he was highly successful. He enjoyed the esteem and confidence of his professional brethren as well as of the public, and his fine professional judgment, great knowledge and ripe experience found a wide field of public usefulness.”

On August 4th, 1875, the Canadian Medical Association met in Halifax. The minutes disclose that he took an active part in the discussions; among others, those on “Surgical Cleanliness,” and cases of typhoid fever resulting from defective house drainage. He also moved a resolution for a committee to take up with the Dominion Government the whole matter of Vital Statistics. He was a member of the Nominating Committee for this session. Subsequent to the period covered by Dr. Charles Elliott’s notes in the sixth chapter he attended various meetings of this Association, and his interest in it by no means flagged after the earlier years of its history to which Dr. Elliott more particularly refers. To follow his attendance upon the meetings of the various professional societies to which he belonged, and to trace his contributions to their work at this date, can only be very imperfectly done, for want of access to records, and in some cases owing to the lack of any records of transactions.

We have seen, by the address of 1871 to the Canadian Medical Association, that the subject of the care and reformation of inebri-

ates was then upon his mind. The policy which he then advocated upon the platform was not lost sight of by him, and having enlisted the sympathy and financial support of a number of his fellow citizens, he attempted to carry it out in Nova Scotia. In May, 1875, the "Act to Provide for the Guardianship and Cure of Drunkards," which he introduced in the Legislature and carried through, was passed; and its essential provisions yet remain to his credit on the statute book of the country. Though the clauses touching the legal procedure for the interdiction of drunkards and the appointment of guardians were doubtless drafted with legal assistance, I detect my father's hand in certain portions of the Act—in the preamble, for instance, which explains its purpose thus: "Whereas, the drunkenness of the heads of certain families and other persons in this Province has heretofore, on many occasions, been the cause of ruin to their families, and of grievous injury as well to their relatives as to their creditors;

"And whereas, in the interests of society it is necessary for the future to remedy such evils;

"And whereas, experience has shewn that drunkards who appear most incurable may often be reclaimed by a reasonable and regular course of treatment, and that such course of treatment can be efficaciously pursued only in institutions organized for the purpose."

This Act provided that the Government might grant a license to keep an asylum for the use of drunkards to any persons who might appear deserving of it.

In furtherance of his object he next applied himself to the establishment of such an asylum, on a philanthropic basis. In 1876 he introduced in the Legislature a bill to incorporate "The Nova Scotia Inebriate Home," which passed in April, in which he is named as one of the corporators, and which secured to his corporation a government license. The Sinclair property, known as "The Grove," near the first lake in Dartmouth, had been previously leased, and the Home was formally opened by the Lieutenant-Governor on August 2nd, 1876. My father was its only President, and contributed of his means and his labors to its maintenance. But the idea was in advance of public sentiment; and the institution, wholly dependent as it was upon public charity for support, languished for want of funds. It was closed May 1st, 1880; but during its brief career 297 patients had been admitted and treated.

This, I think, was the only charitable institution with which he connected himself that did not succeed. Largely through his influence the idea was revived in 1891, when the Legislature passed another Act, which he supervised in its progress, for the establishment of an Inebriate Home by the city of Halifax; but, owing to

lack of public interest, this second venture into the same field of philanthropy fell short of the measure of success achieved by my father under the legislation of fifteen years before.

Just now, in 1909, the State of New York is putting into practice the principle of my father's legislation and efforts of 1875 and 1876, and the "Certified Inebriety Reformatories" of England, established in 1898, are meeting with success. The far-seeing Nova Scotia pioneer in this department of sociology was simply in advance of his time, as might be said of him in some other respects.

One would suppose that the charitable and educational institutions with which he was already busily associated at that period were enough for his strength and available time. Some enumeration of them appears in my monograph on "Daniel McNeill and His Descendants." But, "in labors more abundant," no enterprise to uplift and help his fellow-man failed to enlist his sympathetic service if he thought that by taking hold he could do aught in the uplift to mitigate the sum of human misery.

The writer in the *Maritime Medical News*, who has already been quoted, said of him: "Indeed, it would not be easy to mention any philanthropic institution in this city or vicinity with which this man of overflowing sympathy and good-will and of many activities was not connected as a willing helper and conscientious worker." And this was true. It would be superfluous to enter here upon an account of his public services of this character. References to these appear elsewhere, and shed sufficient light upon them. The account of his pioneer work on behalf of the inebriate is furnished as illustrative and typical.

Reference has already been made to the estimation in which my father was held by men of high standing in his profession abroad. At Edinburgh, in the early seventies, he impressed many of his brethren by his qualifications and personal attractiveness; so much so that he received, but declined to consider, certain overtures looking to his establishment there. Among these men was the late Sir Grainger Stewart, then lecturing in pathology at the University. In 1876 Professor Laycock, who had occupied the chair of the Practice of Physic, died, and Sir Grainger was one of the applicants for this professorship. In support of his application he sought, by the following letter, a testimonial from my father. That which follows is found, among others furnished by such men as Sir Andrew Clark, Sir William Jenner, Professor Andrew Halliday Douglas, and others equally distinguished in the medical world, included in a pamphlet addressed to "The Right Honorable and the Honorable the Curators of the University of Edinburgh." This testimonial is given place here, not only to attest my father's standing in his profession, but as throwing more

light on the period of his research work of a few years before. It may be added that this testimonial is not the only instance of the kind connected with professorships in the University of Edinburgh.

" 19 CHARLOTTE SQUARE,

" EDINBURGH,

" Sept. 22nd, 1876.

" MY DEAR DR. PARKER.

" Poor Laycock died yesterday, and I intend to become a candidate for the vacant chair.

" May I ask you to send me at your earliest convenience a certificate, as vigorous as you can conscientiously make it. I intend only to send in a very few testimonials, and therefore shall be glad if you will speak as to the character and success of my clinical teaching and general medical qualifications.

" Excuse great haste, and accept our united kind regards.

" I remain,

" Yours very sincerely,

" T. GRAINGER STEWART.

" May I ask you to send me your titles on a separate slip."

TESTIMONIAL.

" From the Hon. Daniel McNeill Parker, M.D., Edin. (1845); Member of the Legislative Council of Nova Scotia; Consulting Physician to the Provincial and City Hospital of Halifax; Honorary and Corresponding Member of various Learned Societies in Europe and America; formerly President of the Dominion of Canada Medical Association, etc."

" HALIFAX, NOVA SCOTIA.

" October 13, 1876.

" Through the medium of medical periodicals, and his work on 'Bright's Diseases of the Kidneys,' I have been familiar with the name of Dr. T. Grainger Stewart, and considered him an advanced and able Pathologist, and a Medical Practitioner of high scientific attainments. But he was personally unknown to me until the year 1871, when I visited Edinburgh, and there remained for sixteen months. During this period I had ample opportunity of observing his diagnostic powers, and of estimating his practical knowledge of disease, and its treatment.

" For the greater part of the Winter Session of 1871-72, and of the Summer Session of the latter year, as also during three months of the Winter Session of 1872-73, I almost daily accompanied him in his visits to his wards in the Royal Infirmary, and was a very regular attendant at his bedside teachings, where he always had a large following of advanced and intelligent students, to whom he imparted, concisely and ably, all that was important connected with the literature, diagnosis, and treatment of the large number of interesting and important cases which were constantly collected in his wards—many of them having been sent to him by medical men from a distance.

" From this teaching in the wards and from his more carefully prepared and exhaustive lectures in the clinical class-room, at which, for the time already specified, I was a very constant attendant, I derived much important information that has since been of essential service to me in the practice of my profession.

" In brief, I may state that, as a Clinical Teacher, I have not listened to his superior, and I have no doubt but that as a Lecturer on Systematic Medicine he will exhibit equal ability.

" From what I have stated above it will be observed that I have had exceptional opportunities of measuring Dr. Stewart's qualifications and

capacity, and am thus enabled to speak with confidence as to his fitness to fill the position he now seeks—that of Professor of Practice of Physic in the University of Edinburgh—and in *strongly recommending* him for this post of honour and importance in my 'Alma Mater,' I feel assured that should he be the successful candidate, the interests of the school will be advanced, and the Science of Medicine will lose nothing by his appointment to the vacant chair.

“ (Sgd.) D. McN. PARKER.”

In 1876 his summer vacation was spent, with my mother, at the Centennial Exhibition in Philadelphia, the first of the great American “World’s Fairs.” It seems characteristic of him, as his life is reviewed, that he was attracted always by first, or new, things, and participated in, or saw, or investigated them, in many spheres of human interest. The fund of information which he brought away from the “Centennial,” in his notes of observation and in his remarkably retentive memory, was wonderful to me, more especially after I had “taken in” the bewilderments of a subsequent World’s Fair at Chicago.

In 1878 I was with him on an outing through Prince Edward Island and New Brunswick. An incident occurred on the Island which amused him not a little. It was the year of the general election which resulted in the return of Sir John A. Macdonald to power, upon the National Policy. Hon. Edward Blake, Hon. Richard J. Cartwright and Mr. Wilfrid Laurier were stumping the Island for the Mackenzie Government, and we heard them speak at Charlottetown. Mr. C. J. Brydges, the General Superintendent of Government Railways, who knew my father, was in charge of their travelling arrangements, and, having provided a special train to take the politicians to Georgetown, he invited my father to join the party. We went accordingly, “to economize time,” as my father would have said, for we were through with Charlottetown and were awaiting the regular train of the following morning to go to the eastern part of the Province. All went well until next morning, when at the breakfast table of the hotel in Georgetown, conversation turned to some question of party politics, and one of the political trio asked my father for an expression of opinion. “You must excuse me from Council,” said he, laughingly, “for I am a supporter of Sir John Macdonald!” The politicians looked dour, straightway emulated the proverbial oyster—who knows when to shut up—and Mr. Brydges looked sheepish, discovering that he had made a *faux pas* in wasting courtesy upon a fellow-traveller who was now beyond the pale of recognition by the triumvirate. We were struck off the “patronage list,” and we pursued the next stage of the journey painfully following in their wake on a freight train, which habitually balked at every one of those double curves for which the Island railway was then famed, and gave every opportunity to its human freight to “let patience

have her perfect work." It was small wonder that our neighbors in the car failed to understand my father's occasional bursts of hilarity, and seemed to resent them, for the journey on that freight ("accommodation" they called it) possessed no element of humor for a passenger who wanted to get anywhere. The circumstances of this sort of travel might well evoke the Tapleyan spirit. My father had some of that; but it was the recollections of the two preceding days which caused the merriment.

In October, 1879, there was a holiday tour, with my mother, on the St. Lawrence and up the beautiful Saguenay River, with a visit to Ottawa.

In the summer of 1880 the Canadian Medical Association met again in Halifax, when my father made the address of welcome to the delegates. It was, in part, as follows:

"The Canadian Medical Association has done Nova Scotia, and especially the city of Halifax, the honor of holding its annual session here, down by the sea; and representing, as I do to-day, the profession of both Province and city, permit me, on their behalf as well as my own, to cordially welcome the Association to our Provincial capital and to the cool and genial atmosphere of an Atlantic city. We are greatly gratified that so many men of high professional and social position have favored us with their presence; that Quebec, Ontario and New Brunswick have so many able representatives in attendance; that so much substantial and profitable work has already been done, and that more of a truly scientific and educational character remains to be submitted to the common brotherhood of our widespread organization.

"I am pleased to know that even those who have left our shores, some of the ablest men in our profession in the Dominion, our workers in the past, who are now in the Fatherland that they may there attend a similar professional Association, if absent in the body are with us in heart and in spirit; for they have left with us valuable papers on important subjects to be read before this Association and have thus contributed to the interest of the meeting and the advancement of the cause we all have at heart. Brouse, Almon, Putnam, McDonald, Howard, Grant, Osler and others will well and ably represent our body at the meeting of the British Medical Association, and thus create a deeper interest in the Canadian profession in the minds of our brethren of the British Isles.

"The work already performed during this session has been eminently practical and profitable, whether it has had relation to surgery, medicine or the public health; and let me say, in reference to this last-named subject, that it is matter for congratulation that hygiene has taken in recent times such a hold on the professional mind. Would that our efforts, disinterested and

magnanimous as they are, could have a like effect on, and stimulate to activity and aggressiveness, the different Legislatures of our common country, and those for whose interests they are supposed to exist and to labor—the outside public, the entire population of our land, who, while we labor and warn, sit idly by as if they had no interest in the matter. And this they do while thousands are annually falling, like leaves in autumn, and returning again to dust from whence they came, by the inroads of zymotic diseases—by preventable diseases, diseases that could be kept at bay if the Legislatures and the people of our country would but lend an attentive ear to the oft-repeated warnings, proclaimed aloud and from the very housetops by a generous and philanthropic profession, who live and labor not only to cure, but to stay and prevent disease and the causes of disease.

“It is often assumed that medical men, in coming together as we are doing now to discuss medical, surgical and sanitary subjects, are acting solely in their own interests and in the interest of science. Let me here disabuse the minds of any present who may entertain this idea, by stating that it is *first* the public interest, *secondly* the advancement of medical science, and *lastly* our own interests; and that this *all* means: how best to elevate and render more useful to our common humanity the profession to which we belong, how best to alleviate suffering and save the lives of those who are made in God’s own image—our fellow-men. The subject of dollars and cents, of fees, of how to increase our professional emoluments, of how best to bleed the sick and the afflicted, has never once come up for consideration in this Association since its birth in the fair old city of Quebec in the year 1867.

“I congratulate the Association on being so ably represented in the presidential chair by my friend Dr. Canniff, the Professor of Surgery in the Toronto School of Medicine. We are glad to have a gentleman distinguished in the West both as an author and a practical surgeon, in our midst guiding our professional ship in its journey and skilfully piloting it onward to a sure and safe scientific harbor and anchorage.

“We miss our worthy, able and laborious Secretary, Dr. David, who, since the inception of the Association, has been its ‘Atlas,’ bearing its weight and its official responsibilities on his shoulders, until, through difficulties seen and unseen, he has materially assisted in making the Canadian Medical Association an honored institution which is accomplishing much for the elevation and for the scientific progress of our profession. Dr. David tarries behind to regain physical health and strength ere he again resumes his duties, and Dr. Wright, in the meantime, ably takes his place. We congratulate him on his success in the performance of the arduous preparatory work, and that which attends his sessional duties.

"We have again to welcome our friend the Treasurer, Dr. Tuedell, who never fails to establish himself in the pockets and purses of the members. We welcome him gladly as an able, true and high-minded representative of our French-Canadian brethren; and when he returns to his home in Quebec I would like him to say to his confrères that the Nova Scotians regret that they have not had the pleasure of a larger representation of our old and new friends from that Province on this occasion.

"But, gentlemen, I must close, by saying to one and all of those who come to us from outside our Provincial lines, our friends from New Brunswick and Prince Edward Island included, we extend to you a hearty welcome, and trust that the day may not be far distant when we shall have the pleasure of seeing you with us again on a similar mission."

The following information is extracted from the Society's Minute Book, touching my father's connection with the work of the Medical Society of Nova Scotia during the years covered by this chapter.

"1873, June 18.—Meeting in Kentville. Dr. Parker was present and spoke on the use of the galvanic cautery and the treatment of aneurism by electrolysis, and explained and illustrated Lister's antiseptic method, and showed several new instruments brought from Edinburgh.

"1874.—Meeting at Amherst. Dr. Parker reported for the Committee on Ethics, recommending the adoption of the Code of the Medical Association of Canada.

"1875.—Meeting at Halifax. It was proposed to form a Maritime Medical Association. Dr. Parker was appointed a member of the committee on that subject; he was also nominated for the Medical Board, or Council, and was elected chairman of the Committee on Surgery for next year.

"1877, June 20.—Meeting at Truro. Hon. Dr. Parker was elected President for next year.

"1878.—Meeting at Halifax, in Y.M.C.A. Hall. President, Hon. Dr. Parker, who delivered his address at 3.30 p.m., June 19th. This address was 'highly interesting and instructive, being illustrative of the practice of medicine and surgery in this Province thirty years ago as compared with the same of to-day, . . . the relation of the profession to the public and of its legal status in the community, and concluded by offering very important and seasonable advice to the junior members of the profession.' Dr. Parker was appointed on a committee to convey to the public the expression of the Society's opinion that diphtheria is a contagious disease. He was also nominated on the Committee on Medicine.

"1879, June 18.—Meeting at Halifax. Dr. Parker read a paper on the Progress of Medicine, prepared by Dr. Fraser, of New Glasgow, who was unable to be present. He participated in the discussion of various papers, and gave an account of a case of 'housemaid's knee' occurring recently in his practice. He was elected to represent the Society on the Provincial Medical Board, and on several committees.

"1880, June 16.—Meeting in Halifax. Dr. Parker took an active part in the sessions. He moved the vote of thanks to the retiring President, Dr. D. H. Muir, and in his speech spoke on the Medical Act and its enforcement in the suppression of quackery. Later he moved for and obtained a committee on the subject of 'Medical Laws of the Province and Physicians' Certificates,' of which committee he was made chairman. He 'presented an interesting case of morphia poisoning, due to hypodermic injection of 1-3 gr. of morphia, which was successfully antidoted by the injection of ammonia liq.'

"1881, June 15.—Meeting held at Antigonish. Dr. Parker was equally active at these sessions. In his speech on moving the vote of thanks to the retiring President, the late Dr. Edward Farrell, he expressed the opinion 'that the Dominion Government should take steps toward establishing a Bureau of State Medicine,' spoke strongly upon the question of improved measures of sanitation for the promotion of the public health, and contended that the Society should 'take steps to throw the onus of so many deaths from infectious diseases upon the Provincial Government.' He was appointed on a committee to labor with this government to obtain improved legislation for the prevention of zymotic and contagious diseases and in behalf of sanitation generally." (It may be added here that improvements in the Public Health Act followed.)

"He reported for the Committee on Certificates of Lunacy certain amendments of the Lunacy law embodying changes in the form of certificates now in use. As usual, he was appointed to one or more standing committees."

These notes and extracts will serve to illustrate his customary activity in the work of medical societies.

The period which the present chapter comprises was marked by little of incident to record. It was occupied by the routine work of consulting practice and surgical operations; and, as freedom from the incessant demands of a general practice now permitted it, more work on directorates of business and charitable enterprises was taken on. The day's work was more regular than of old, but strenuous in its very regularity and in the variety and multiplicity of duties. He had no capacity, seemingly, for idleness, or what most men term resting, at least when at home; and a full time-table was a real enjoyment to his ever active mind.

Rest and recuperation had to be enforced by the periodical absences from the scene of labor; but when away from home for this object his absences were usually abbreviated by an almost feverish anxiety to get back to work and a complete programme for the day. Apart from continual activity, he rarely seemed happy for more than a short time.

Closing this chapter now, we take up in the next some account of his farthest tour, on vacation, the recollections of which never ceased to be as much a source of enjoyment to him as were the experiences of the travel themselves.

CHAPTER IX.

ACROSS THE CONTINENT.

"Travel, in the younger sort, is a part of education; in the elder, a part of experience."

—*Francis Bacon.*

IN the summer of 1881 my father joined a party, consisting of Sir Charles and Lady Tupper, Mr. Andrew Robertson of Montreal, Collingwood Schreiber, Chief Engineer of Government Works for Canada, Mr. Jones, his private secretary, and Colonel and Mrs. Clarke of Halifax, upon a tour which had British Columbia as its objective point. Sir Charles Tupper, then Minister of Railways, and Mr. Schreiber, went to inspect the western section of the Canadian Pacific Railway, which was then in an early stage of construction, and upon business connected with the location of its Pacific terminus, also to inspect portions of the road building in Manitoba.

The story of my father's participation in these travels is told in selections from his letters home. Some of the series, however, are missing.

The Canadian Pacific Railway, which was completed five years after this tour, has made travel to the Pacific Province an easy and commonplace thing, and we are all familiar enough with the new British Columbia, while Manitoba has become quite central in the Canada of to-day. But in 1881, to visit the Coast and to see something of interior British Columbia under the old order were very different; and this tour, as I think some of the following letters will show, has some features of unusual, and even historical interest, when viewed from a standpoint of nearly thirty years after the event—years of phenomenal progress and of change in all the conditions of Western Canada.

The first letter, dated August 5th, is from Ottawa, where he had undertaken a mission to the Government for Professor Lawson, of Halifax, in connection with the Dominion Exhibition, about to be held in Halifax. Thence he went by way of Prescott and Toronto to Sarnia, where he visited his old friend, Colonel Vidal, then a member of the Senate, and joined the party for the westward journey.

The second letter following will serve to illustrate his style of correspondence with his children. The other letters follow without comment.

ALEXANDER HOTEL, SARINIA, ONTARIO,
August 8th, 1881.

My Dear Wife:

After despatching my letter to you from Ottawa, on Friday night, I embarked on the train in a through Pullman for Toronto, was shunted about a good deal at Prescott Junction, but on the whole slept well. In the morning, at Oshawa, we picked up Senator Gibbs and son (the latter was once my patient in Halifax). This was a pleasant change. Gibbs said he was just conning over in his mind how to get at me, so as to ask me to spend a day or so with them en route for British Columbia, when I turned up, in accordance with the old saying, "Think of," etc. He said if Mrs. Gibbs had known that I was on the train she would have gone to the station to see me. Having made up my mind, however, to keep on to Sarnia, I could not go back to Oshawa, as it is, as you know, against my principles to change my plans unless something of moment should render it imperative.

At Brampton, where we arrived at two o'clock, or thereabouts, our train was delayed by an accident which befell the Eastern train. A switch had been left open, and the engine and some of the first cars got off the track, tearing up the rails and sleepers for some distance and precipitating the engine down a steep embankment thirty feet—smashing it all to pieces and nearly killing the engineer. This occurred at six o'clock a.m., and it was 3 p.m. before the *debris* was removed and the road bed in a condition to permit our train to pass along. It was consequently after nine o'clock before I reached my hotel, the Alexander House, where I am very comfortable. Had we been on time, I should have gone to Vidal's that evening. The next day being Sunday, and knowing that he and his wife are always occupied with Sunday school work, I did not call until this morning. He was very glad to see me. A telegram from Halifax about Exhibition matters was awaiting me at his house—sent to his care—else I should have taken them entirely by surprise.

You will remember that on one occasion when I was attending a Medical Association meeting at Toronto, many years ago, the Hon. Malcolm Cameron was very attentive to me, and although I was driven to death with work I had to go and partake of his hospitality. He died four or five years since, and I met his daughter this morning at Vidal's. I had forgotten all about her, but she had not forgotten me. She has the reputation of being a very clever woman, and her father was at one time one of the leading

minds in Ontario. In front of my bedroom window is the beautiful St. Clair River, connecting Lakes Huron and Erie. It is about three-fourths of a mile in breadth and runs at the rate of six miles an hour, its entire length being about one hundred miles. Instead of dining at Vidal's, as he wanted me to do, I crossed the ferry and spent the day looking at the sights of the long town called Port Huron, which stretches itself along the banks of the river on the American side, and, having dined at my hotel, am now writing you a few lines before I take a nap, after which I shall walk up to Vidal's and he will take me out in his carriage to Lake Huron. a very pleasant drive, he says, and in the evening I am to join a party of friends at his house, asked to meet me. His minister (Presbyterian) married Alex. Mackenzie's daughter, so I shall have the opportunity of seeing her to-night. Mackenzie, Vidal tells me, is better. He has not yet returned from England.

I attended at the service of Rev. Mr. Johnston (Baptist, of course) morning and evening, and went to his Bible class in the afternoon. The day was pleasantly and profitably spent. Mr. Johnston preached two good sermons, and led his Bible class with much ability. There were about thirty present, intelligent young women for the most part. I walked home with Mr. and Mrs. J. in the evening, and had half an hour's very pleasant conversation. He has been here six years and is doing well. At present they are building a new church and are temporarily worshipping in the Y.M.C. Association Hall. He would just be the man for us, I think, but he is like Nehemiah, engaged in a great work and cannot go down and leave it. In my efforts to put on a clean shirt yesterday I tore off a button, and the chambermaid has just been sewing it on again. This is the only accident I have met with, save the destruction of the outer apparatus on the lock of the large trunk. It is a wonder they had not broken and torn the whole framework away, so violently do they toss the luggage about. I have had the greatest comfort in the Pullman at night by keeping the foot window open after your mode of procedure. While others have been melting I have been cool and comfortable. In the morning, however, the porter looks amazed to see my head where my feet ought to be. To keep the sparks and ashes out of my face and eyes I turn my head towards the engine. There is only one risk about it, and that is that a spark may light on the sheet and ignite it and cremate me, and possibly others, but as the trains are enormously long, and my Pullman thus far being in the rear, the sparks lose their igniting power ere they get to the crack in my window.

I am very sorry now that I did not ask you to write to me here by Friday night's mail. As it is, I shall not be able to hear from you until I reach San Francisco post office. I will probably drop

you a line from Salt Lake—unless I should chance *to be sealed* there. By the way, where is the photograph of Brigham Young and his many bed-fellows? I had hoped to have had it with me, to enliven the journey a little, but thus far I have not come in contact with it.

I go out to Point Edward to-morrow morning to meet the train with Tupper and Company at six o'clock. A street car leaves the hotel at 5.40 a.m. The Grand Trunk station is two miles from the centre of Sarnia. Yesterday and to-day have been delightfully cool here, but they have had it frightfully hot, up among the 90's, as Vidal expresses it. . . .

Ever your affectionate husband,

D. McN. PARKER.

GRAND PACIFIC HOTEL, CHICAGO,
August 10th, 1881.

My Darling Little Fanny:

I wrote from Sarnia, just as I was leaving for this city, to dear mamma—the oldest member of the family. I will now take the opposite extreme, and select the youngest member as my correspondent on this occasion. . . . We crossed the St. Clair River on a large steamboat. The whole train was carried over at once, as the deck of the boat had three lines of rails on it. The sleepers did not know that they were being ferried over the St. Clair. Sir Charles had a Directors' car with sleeping accommodation only for three persons, but we can all sit during the day in the parlor, and at night Col. Clarke, Mr. Robertson and myself can be accommodated on a Pullman car, while I can dress in Sir Charles' room in the morning. Mr. Robertson joined us here to-day, and goes on to British Columbia with us. We arrived at Chicago at eight o'clock last night and put up at this magnificent hotel (the Grand Pacific), where I have a large and airy bedroom, which Sir Charles and Mr. Schreiber have been using to-day to transact business in. After tea Sir C. and Lady T. and I walked about the streets for an hour and more, and we have just come in now from a similar excursion. Before coming up to my room I took a look at the moon through a large telescope and saw her mountains and extinct volcanoes, or the craters, as they are supposed to be. Willie must explain all this to you and teach you a *little lunar astronomy*. . . . Chicago is an immense city of more than half a million of inhabitants, with beautiful buildings, wide streets and a vast number of railroads centring in it and running to all parts of North America. It is the great pork and cattle mart of the United States, and the stockyards are really vast in extent. Thousands upon thousands of cattle and pigs were

in the pens and yards to-day when Col. Clarke and I went out to visit the place—six miles away from our hotel and yet in the city. There is not a hill in the city, as far as the eye can reach—the country is as level as a bowling green. If you will look at your map you will find that it is situated on the southern extremity of Lake Michigan, and that it is in the State of Illinois. Mr. Jones (Mr. Schreiber's secretary) has been buying all kinds of food for our journey across the plains and Rocky Mountains. We start to-morrow at 12.30 for San Francisco, and will have five or six nights yet on our train ere we reach that city. The weather has been intensely hot, and I have felt the heat and the dust very much, but not so much as I did when mamma and I went up to Ottawa. We hope it will rain in a day or two, and the temperature and dust will then be lowered and laid. It would have been a fatiguing journey for mamma, but I do wish she had come with us. I think she would have enjoyed it, and Lady Tupper would have been delighted with the arrangement. Our party will be pretty large and a very pleasant one, but mamma's presence would have increased the pleasure of the trip immensely. Sir Alexander Galt and his nephew, as secretary, came with us to Chicago on their way to Manitoba. The nephew is the brother of Ada Tupper. They left to-night for their destination. The Pacific Railway Syndicate (Messrs. Stephens, Angus and McIntyre) are here to meet Sir Charles on business.

And now, my precious child, I have given you a summary of my wanderings since my last letter to dear mamma, knowing as I do that you will be interested in your dear old dad's movements. I am so sorry that I did not ask mamma to write me here. It will be a long way off and a long time before I hear from home. I trust God will keep and preserve you all until I return, if I am spared to do this. With a great deal of love to dear mamma, Mary, Laura, Willie, all at Uncle Frank's, Bellevue, and Aunt Emma, and with very much to your dear little self,

I remain, my dear child,

Your afft. father,

D. MCN. PARKER.

P.S.—On the receipt of this tell mamma I want her and you all to write me at once to the care of Honble. Joseph Trutch, Victoria, British Columbia. This letter will reach me there by the steamer which leaves San Francisco on the 30th August. Mail another letter for me to *the same address* on the 26th of August. Then another letter or two at short intervals—at Palace Hotel, San Francisco, Cal. I will write again from San Francisco immediately on my arrival. I hope all things are moving along satisfactorily at Dartmouth and in Halifax.

D. MCN. P.

By the by, I forgot to mention that our stay in British Columbia is to be somewhat shortened, as we visit Manitoba and the Western Territory ere we return. We will strike off at Omaha and reach that country by the way of St. Paul.

Thursday morning. A fair night's sleep, a good breakfast, everybody jolly, and just off for the land of the Mormon. Good-bye, and God bless you all.

D. P.

OMAHA, NEBRASKA,
August 12th, 1881.

My Dear Wife:

We crossed the Mississippi last evening at eight o'clock and the Missouri River this morning at 9.30, and are resting here on its banks for two hours ere we take the train for Ogden and Salt Lake City, more than one thousand miles further west. We have passed through the great "Hog and Corn Country," rolling prairie land and waving corn lands, rich and beautiful to the agriculturist's eye, but monotonous and lacking variety to me. It is an immensely rich country and the land is practically inexhaustible as regards its corn producing power, but it is not a wheat producing district. Trains are rushing north, east, west and south, and the whole land appears to be alive with travellers, and with the brute creation being wafted east to fill the hungry stomachs of the northern and eastern population of this vast republic. . . . Dinner is waiting at the hotel and we start just as soon as it is over, so I must stop. I slept well last night considering the temperature. Just fancy, the temperature of our car for ten hours or thereabouts was over 100 degrees, and for several hours it kept at 105 degrees. I felt nearly used up and exhausted, and Lady Tupper looked as if she must succumb to it. The heat was more intense than for a long time past. Much love to all.

Ever dearest wife,

Your afft. husband,

D. McN. PARKER.

SAN FRANCISCO,
Thursday, August 18th, 1881.

My Dear Wife:

We arrived here yesterday at 2.30 p.m., having been delayed nearly four hours to repair damage done by a mountain stream which was increased in volume by a thunder shower, producing what is called a "wash-out," or destruction of the bed of the railroad. These wash-outs are exceedingly common, more especially on the Southern Pacific, where quite recently the mail train

was delayed three or four days from this cause while the road was being repaired. However, on the Central Pacific, which brought us to San Francisco, they are infrequent, as rain at this season is rare. On the Pacific slope and in this region they have had no rain since April last. Their wet season is from October or November to February or March. We left Salt Lake City on Monday afternoon at 3 p.m., and connected at 5 p.m. with the Central Pacific at Ogden. The drive for the next one thousand miles beggars description for dust, heat and discomfort. The country (or mountains) through which we passed was barren to an extent that one could hardly imagine. Here and there along the banks of the rivers there was grass and a variety of vegetation, but sage grass, which grows and flourishes on sand and rocky ground, was the prevailing description of vegetable life. Notwithstanding the barrenness of the land, great droves of cattle were constantly seen, and occasionally ranches of large size by the streams. The cattle were passing continually from one locality to another seeking food. Water is obtained to supply the railway villages and posts by wells, and the pumps to draw it are driven by windmills. In fact, every isolated house, not near a stream, and every ranch thus situated has its deep well or wells and windmill. Mountain streams are often utilized for purposes of irrigation and the water is carried long distances by small canals and occasionally by iron or wooden pipes. We all stood the journey pretty well. As we were ascending the Sierra Nevada Mountains and winding our way along the most circuitous road, with the sharpest curves I ever travelled on, through Tuesday night and Wednesday morning we found extra clothing a desideratum, but there was only one thick blanket to my Pullman berth, so I had to get up and put on my day clothing, and in this way made myself comfortable. When daylight appeared I found our train dashing along through a pine district, and by eight o'clock we had reached a fine agricultural portion of the State of California. Continuing our journey with rapidity, as the conductor wanted to make up as much lost time as possible, lost in consequence of the delay caused by the "wash-out," we reached Sacramento after breakfast. This is a city of 25,000 inhabitants and the capital of the State. Here a deputation of Nova Scotians waited on us. . . . At Benicia we crossed the Strait in an immense ferry boat, which took our whole train and the engines on board, and could have taken many more. It accommodates twenty-six or twenty-eight passenger cars and two engines. The boat is over 400 feet long and 125 feet in breadth, with an immensely powerful engine. She was designed after the pattern or model of our Dartmouth "Mic-Mac," but the railroad authorities have always, very unfairly, I think, declined to make public recog-

dition of the fact. She is steered from both ends and runs into just such docks as we have for our great line on Halifax harbor. At last we were at the Oakland ferry opposite San Francisco, where we left the railroad and embarked on another leviathan boat (also planned after our models) and in twenty minutes were in far-famed San Francisco. Having left our car, and Douglas, our faithful colored porter, at Oakland, to await our return from British Columbia, we drove to this hotel (the Palace) into a large quadrangle, covered with glass, alighted from our carriages on to marble floors, were carried to our rooms by a lift and then took headers into our several baths. . . . Before I did anything, immediately after my arrival and luncheon, I walked over to the post office, a distance of half a mile, for letters from home, but after a search had to come away disappointed, and it was really a great disappointment. . . . I shall go over again after the arrival of the Eastern mail to-day, and trust I shall be more successful. Failing to-day, I shall probably not hear from you for a long time, as we start to-morrow at 10 a.m. for British Columbia *via* boat to Portland and then by rail and boat through Oregon Territory and across the San Juan Channel to Vancouver Island, to bring up for a day or two at the city of Victoria before going up the Fraser River to Yale and Kamloops from Westminster at its mouth. No sooner had we arrived than the best photographer in San Francisco wrote a note to Sir Charles asking to allow him to have the honor of taking a photograph of the party; so it is arranged that we shall all go to his (Tabor's) chambers "to be took." I think it was suggested by myself that we should have the porter, Douglas, included in the group, so he is to accompany us, and the photo will include the entire party—the darkey, the most important personage of all during our transit across the great, howling wilderness, will fill up the background. . . . Mr. Schreiber has been exceedingly attentive and kind to me. In fact, the whole comfort of our journey has hinged on him. He is in reality in command, having before visited British Columbia *via* San Francisco. He makes all our plans and guides the ship, while his secretary, Mr. Jones, carries out the details—pays our bills, supplies the car with provender, and looks generally after our wants. We have a settlement to make before we leave here. Until we square up our accounts I cannot tell how much money I have expended. . . . I should be very grateful (and I am) to God for all His goodness and mercy in bringing us thus far on our journey without any accident or occurrence of any kind to mar the pleasure and enjoyment of the trip, and my prayer to Him is daily that He will keep and preserve you and our dear children in life and in health, and that we may all meet once more on earth in our own quiet and dear old home, and that

I may find all those we love, outside of our own immediate family circle, as we left them, and poor Mary Allison greatly improved and well. I long to hear how the poor child is, and this makes me additionally anxious to get your letter. Ere this reaches you Willie will be in Yarmouth and will, I trust, enjoy his trip. I will write to him from British Columbia. He should be working up all his subjects, so that he will pass a First Class examination, which will give him some advantages. I presume he has seen Charlie Tupper relative to going into his office. Willie Tupper enters Rigby & Tupper's office as a student at once, I believe, that is, unless he goes first to Harvard law school. . . .

1 p.m.—We have just returned from Tabor's photographer's establishment. The negative looks well and will, I think, give a good group. I called on Dr. McNutt, formerly of Truro, who has a large practice here. He is absent from the city, but I will see him on my return. . . . We propose seeing the Chinese quarters to-day. There are twenty or thirty thousand of them in the city. In this hotel there are a large number of young Chinese men of good families, who have been receiving an education at some of the United States colleges, but who are now ordered home in consequence of a change in the Chinese government. It is said that the first minister of the Celestial Empire is impressed with the belief that these youngsters are learning too much and are becoming enamored with the habits and customs of the Americans and relinquishing the traditions, modes of life and other things in which they have been trained in their earlier life; hence the summons home. You find the Chinaman everywhere on the Pacific Road, and doing everything. We fell in with large numbers of Indians, principally of the "Snake" tribe, all along the line. The men were clean, well dressed and good looking Indians, but the squaws were just hideous. If my *squaw* was as ugly and ferocious looking as these women are I most assuredly would go in for a divorce. All through the back parts of this country, and along the line, but off the track, the Indians are constantly killing the cattle-men and miners. At one of the stations I met a man on the platform, and while we were talking elicited the fact that he was one of three partners in the cattle business in the back prairie lands, and was also engaged with them in prospecting for minerals. He told me that he had lost one of his "pardners" recently, the "Injuns" having killed him, and to-day's papers give accounts of several such murders. It will take the U.S. Government a long time to change the nature of these red men of the forest, whose lands and homes they are so freely taking possession of. Dishonesty and bad government, breaches of faith, etc., on the part of subordinates of the Government are keeping up this "bad blood" between the American whites and the Indians, while

the opposite course on the part of the Canadian Government enables the latter to get along amicably with the Indians of our territories.

Thursday evening, Aug. 18.—I have just received, my darling wife, your nice long and interesting letter with its enclosures, and I cannot tell you how glad I am to learn of your welfare and to get the many items of home news that you have given me. I should have gone away to British Columbia quite depressed if I had not received it. . . . I cannot help, my dear wife, writing you long letters. It is the greatest happiness I have when away from you and the dear children to be talking to you on paper. . . . May God ever be with you all. Remember me with much love to Letty, Frank and M. A., and all *Granville Street*. Also to Annie and Jane, and tell Wambolt that I was asking about him.

Ever your loving husband,

D. McN. PARKER.

NEW WESTMINSTER,
August 28th, 1881.

My Dearest Wife:

I closed my letter to Willie on Thursday last just as our party were about to drive out to Esquimalt, the real harbor of Victoria, and three miles from that city. Mr. Dunsmuir, of the Wellington Coal Mine (Nanaimo), took charge of me. The drive was beautiful and the day pleasant. We found the harbor small but good and well land-locked. In it were two English men-of-war, and a large Russian man-of-war arrived later in the day to coal. We inspected all the points of importance connected with the harbor, *critically* examined the dry dock, now in course of construction, finding no little fault with the local Legislature in consequence of an Act passed by them excluding Chinese labor from the work, and as a consequence they cannot now get white labor, and the work is dragging itself very slowly along, and will in all probability take years to complete, unless this Act is repealed. The graving dock is to be 450 feet in length, 90 feet broad and 24 feet deep. The coffer dam is a splendid work of art, and entirely precludes the entrance of water—very unlike the one constructed by H. G. Hill at the Ordnance, which Benjamin, Martin and William had to pay dearly for. No better city for a graving dock could be found. The rise of tide there is about nine or ten feet. Mr. Innes, naval store-keeper of the Esquimalt dockyard, showed us all through this establishment. He has about £100,000 stg. worth of stores under his charge, and every store-house was found beautifully neat, as much so as our Annie's kitchen. Altogether it was like visiting an extensive museum. I drove back to town with Mrs. Trutch by the "Gorge Road." The Trutches and

Senator McDonald both asked me to dine with them in the evening. The latter was giving a state dinner to dignitaries, but Schreiber and I engaged ourselves—each to the other—to dine at our hotel, the “Driard,” and to look up Mrs. Jones and Mrs. Wallace in the evening. This programme was carried out, and we found my old patients delighted to see us. . . . The next morning (Friday) we embarked on board the Dominion steamer “Sir James Douglas” for Nanaimo—having, in addition to our original party, Mr. Trutch and his secretary (Mr. Bovill), Mr. Walkem, the leader of the Government of British Columbia (Attorney-General), and Mr. Dunsmuir (before mentioned), the proprietor of the Nanaimo coal mine, for which he has refused \$1,000,000; and quite recently he has paid each of his partners, Admiral Farquhar and Capt. Egerton, R.N., £30,000 stg. for their shares, for which they paid him originally only about £2,000 stg. Coal stock is evidently a better investment here than at Victoria mine, Cape Breton. Trutch represents the Dominion Government here. . . . He was originally an engineer, from England. He held an appointment under the Crown, when British Columbia was a Crown Colony, and when it became a Province he received a pension. . . . He was the first Governor after British Columbia came into the Union. Both he and his wife are pleasant people, and his sister, Mrs. O’Riley, wife of the Indian Commissioner here, is equally agreeable. Their residences at Victoria are beautiful, especially O’Riley’s cottage and grounds. At six o’clock p.m., Friday, we entered Nanaimo harbor and the first thing we saw on landing was the old Hudson’s Bay blockhouse, erected on a little hill by the edge of the water to protect the officers and men from Indian attacks in the days gone by. It must have an interesting history—doubtless a bloody one. Sir Charles had an address presented to him by the Mayor and Corporation, and he had rather a fiery speech after it from Mr. Bunster, the member for this county, who pitched into the Government for doing so little for the Province, and especially for not having carried out Mackenzie’s promise to construct a railroad from Nanaimo to Esquimalt (on Vancouver Island). . . . Tupper in reply polished him off splendidly—evidently to the satisfaction of the Mayor and Corporation and others present. After a good night’s sleep, Tupper, Robertson and myself breakfasted with Mr. Dunsmuir at his residence at 6.45 a.m., and then drove seven miles to his mines over a good road. Saw his three shafts. Went down one some distance (walking), inspected the nine feet seam—not far from horizontal—the dip being one foot to seven, and got all the information we could before embarking on Dunsmuir’s narrow gauge railroad for Departure Bay, his shipping port (three miles from the mines), where Vancouver the

explorer wintered, and there we met the "Douglas," which had steamed inside the island from Nanaimo. The boat was sent ashore, and at 9.30 a.m. Saturday we were on board pointing our prow towards Burrard Inlet, the selected site of the terminus of the great Canadian Pacific. Our sail the day before was inside the island, and it was like inland lake navigation, and it appeared all the time as if we were running for the rocks and likely to ground our ship, when of a sudden there would appear a little opening, narrow, deep and often with abrupt and vertical banks, hundreds of feet high. Along these grand and picturesque channels we would run for a short time and then emerge suddenly into open water again, looking like a *cul de sac*, to find at the other end a similar outlet. In these passages and around the most of these lake-like inlets of the Bay of Georgia there is no anchorage, so deep is the water, and had we wished it the captain could have placed his steamer so close to the rocks that we could have stepped ashore without even an intervening plank to bridge the distance. At twelve o'clock we entered English Harbor, crossed it and, passing through a channel nine hundred feet wide, ran into Burrard Inlet, and to Capt. Raymuir's mills, where we landed to see the works and partake of his hospitality at luncheon. The immense timber in his mill surprised us. "Douglas Pine" sticks were there measuring from 80 to 100 or 120 feet. At the butt end one must have been about eight feet in diameter. While we were engaged in inspecting these works and the machine shop, suddenly, in a moment, we had to rush from the place to join our ship, as the rain was pelting down by the bucketful and we were without wraps and could not hold on. Tupper, Schreiber and Marcus Smith, the engineer in charge of the survey at the Inlet, had to go up to the top of it—ten miles—on the steamer to inspect the different localities suggested for the terminal works of the railroad, and we had not a moment to spare, even to inspect Raymuir's large trees, a minute's walk from the house where we lunched, one of which has a diameter of twelve feet and a circumference of thirty-six feet. At Port Moody we blew our whistle, and a tall man came out of the woods, and by his boat boarded us. He turned out to be a Mr. McLeod, of Amherst, who is engaged on this end of the survey taking soundings and boring on shore for a rocky foundation to hold the superstructure. He looked like a drowned rat as he emerged from the forest in response to our call, which reverberated among the hills and mountains, and startled the Chinese cooks and laborers who were in camp. This spot was the very picture of solitude and grandeur. Having got all the information required from McLeod, we passed down the inlet again to a small hamlet called Hastings, not even taking the time to call upon Senator Nelson, who has a large

mill on Burrard Inlet, nearly opposite Raymuir's, and who had asked us all to lunch with him there; but Raymuir's invitation had been given and accepted before his reached Tupper. After anchoring our ship and ordering her back to Victoria, we all landed, and almost at the water's edge were met by three covered coaches, which carried us quickly over a "corduroy" road of nine miles to this town, New Westminster, which we reached at 7.25 p.m., instead of five o'clock, the hour Tupper had arranged by telegram to be there to meet a deputation of the citizens and receive and reply to an address from the Mayor and Corporation. We dined at once and the address was presented immediately after dinner. This was followed by a torchlight procession and a band of music, which paraded up and down before the hotel for some time, then halted, forming a semicircle, and gave three cheers for Tupper, who replied in a short speech from the balcony for himself and subsequently for Sir John A. Macdonald, who was returned for the Victoria district here when rejected by Kingston, his old constituency. Walkem, Attorney-General of British Columbia, was then called to the front by three cheers and made a very good speech. Among the City Councillors was a terribly ugly man, who came up to me and said, "How do you do, Dr. Parker?" He turned out to be a Mr. H., of Barrington, who many years ago was a patient of mine. Then young Rand called, and also a former student of Dalhousie, who is now principal of the Westminster High School. This morning I went to the Episcopal church with the Tupperes and heard a capital sermon—the truth in its simplicity—and earnestly put, and to-night I propose accompanying Rand to a Presbyterian church where he attends, there being no Baptist church in the town. To-night at ten o'clock we go on board the up-river steamer and start for Yale, 120 miles, at four o'clock in the morning. . . . Tupper never was better, so he says. He eats, drinks and sleeps well and is enjoying the journey immensely. Of course he is king out here. The people think they owe their Canadian Pacific Railway to him, and this has given him a strong hold on the popular voice, as also among the better classes. . . . Robertson is as jolly as ever, and just as full of his fun and nonsense. He was great on Mormonism and the Salt Lake City institutions when we were there, but we did not allow him to be sealed or to bring away any new wives, confining him to the good one he has got. When at sea he and I occupy the same staterooms, and on land the same sections of a Pullman, or rather the opposite berths, I having Schreiber above me, and he Jones. The ladies to-morrow night go into quarters at Yale, at Mr. Onderdonk's, an American gentleman, who has the contract to build that portion of the railway extending east from Yale to Kamloops—an \$8,000,000 contract.

As the most of Yale is burnt down, the rest of us will probably have to go into camps there, and at our other stopping-places further east. From Yale we travel in wagons over the celebrated "Cariboo" road, with the dashing, daring coachman so often referred to in the press, the fellow who can put the wheels of his coach within a hairbreadth of the extreme margin of a precipice, and yet carry his passengers safely to their respective destinations. The ladies remain at Yale under the special care of Col. Clarke, who will miss the fine scenery and wild life of the extreme eastern portion of our journey. We will be back in Victoria next week, will spend a few days there quietly, and then embark on board the fine steamer "Dakota" direct for San Francisco, by which boat our passages are already secured. After a delay of three or four days at San Francisco, we will take up our car and Douglas, the porter, and will then depart for Omaha, St. Paul and Winnipeg—if God permits it—and we shall all be well and able for the journey. I am keeping very well, get a fair amount of sleep, and eat with a relish. There is no fatigue or anxiety or care of any kind to me in thus travelling. Schreiber and his secretary, Jones, do all the work, attend to the most minute details, pay bills, etc., keeping an account with each of us. I squared up the day I arrived at Victoria. . . . We all miss you. Lady Tupper often says, "Oh! I do wish Mrs. Parker had come," and no person wishes it so much, my dear wife, as the man who is now addressing you. But it is now too late to mend the matter. We left behind us all the things we could spare at Victoria, so as to make our up-country luggage as light as possible. . . . We had fires in this hotel last night, and after our drive enjoyed them very much. We have walked through an Indian village near one of the great salmon canneries by New Westminster, where we saw the native men, women and children in their normal condition, with dogs, cats, hens and geese gathered around and in the camps. They are away from their lodges, or winter homes, engaged in canning and catching salmon, and their residences are of the most temporary character and sadly lack cleanliness and sanitary regulations. This cannery employs, I think, over one hundred Indian men and three hundred Chinese. The latter are all stowed away like spoons in a drawer, and the three hundred live in a house not larger than our coach house and Wambolt's dwelling. They like it, and are allowed to act in the matter as they please, but why they are not cut down by fevers and diphtheria I cannot tell. The universal Chinese are found in thousands in British Columbia engaged in all kinds of work. I cannot fix upon the date of our return from Winnipeg, but it will, I think, be the middle of October before I shall be with you in Dartmouth. I wrote you from Chicago how and where to address me, and am

looking forward with great pleasure to getting letters on my arrival at Victoria next week. I think we are sure to leave for San Francisco a fortnight from yesterday, before which time I hope to receive several *sets* of letters from you and our dear children. On the receipt of this you may *the same day* write to me at *Winnipeg, Manitoba*, care of James Dickie, Esqr., Canadian Pacific Railway, and I will get it before leaving that province for the East, after which you need not write. . . . To-day I had a visit from a Mrs. Baker at my hotel. . . . She is a Baptist, and wishes me to collect \$2,000 to pay off the debt on a Baptist church in Victoria, and then to send them a clever and popular preacher—a revivalist that will wake up the whole Pacific slope and overcome the spiritual lethargy and declension of the people here. Please see that the money is collected and the man ready for transmission by the time I get home, so as to save me the trouble. I have also had a visit from a Mr. Archibald, of Truro, connected with the government telegraph office, and have just seen a Mr. Chisholm, from Antigonish. Could I ascend to the moon, or succeed in reaching the North Pole, I would certainly meet in both places Nova Scotians—friends and patients. I have been thinking of you all very much to-day, and trust that you and the children have had a happy and profitable day. May God bless and preserve you and them from every evil and enable us to meet again on earth, is the prayer of your ever affectionate husband,

D. McN. PARKER.

CHASE'S BRIDGE, OR COOK'S FERRY,
THOMPSON RIVER,

September 1st, 1881.

My Dearest Wife:

After writing you on Sunday last I went in the evening to the Presbyterian church with Mr. Rand. It was the dinner hour at the hotel, and I could not even get my good Presbyterian friend, Mr. Robertson, to accompany me. We had a good sermon, and it was pleasant to meet with God's people, although they were strangers to me. . . . After service we embarked on board the Yale steamer, all having comfortable cabins to ourselves. I slept well, but was occasionally disturbed by noises overhead. At two o'clock a.m. steam was got up and they ran about ten miles, when the fog or river mist prevented them from seeing the channel. So the captain "tied up" until daylight, that is, ran his ship close into the bank of the river and fastened a hawser to a tree and let her tail down stream with the current, which runs from six to eight miles an hour. We had a capital breakfast, a large and

well furnished cabin each for gentlemen and ladies, a smoking-room and every hotel comfort, only the powerful engine, in acting on the rapidly revolving stern wheel, shook the entire ship and caused a vibrating, shaking motion which you will see well illustrated if you will look at the letter I wrote you on a steamer similarly constructed which was conveying me in 1861 down the Cape Fear River from Fayetteville to Wilmington. Our crew, except the officers, were Indians, and good, intelligent workers. They piled in the pine wood, which we occasionally stopped on the river to obtain, in a way to open our eyes as to their strength and activity. The sail up stream was delightful; the mountain scenery was grand, beyond description. The view was constantly changing, in consequence of the serpentine course of the Fraser, and this gave great variety to the scene. Our progress was but slow in consequence of the rapidity of the current, the whirlpools and other difficulties we had to contend with. Indian villages were passed in numbers. Many of them were temporary structures, made of pine boughs, canvas or matting, to be used only during the fishing season, after which they go back to their respective rivers from which they take their name. Thus many are called Thompson River, Buonaparte River or Dead Man's River Indians—from the locality where they more permanently dwell. They are in the main small men and women, and for the most part live on fish, which are caught (especially salmon) by the million. They split them and dry them in the open and dry air of this region without any salt or smoking processes. They store them for winter use in "caches," or large boxes, placed from thirty to fifty feet up on the strong branches of the pine tree to keep the bears and other animals from reaching them, and, the better to protect them, these trees have a circle—about twelve inches in breadth—of tin plate nailed to them, so that the claws of the animals are prevented from aiding them in their ascent to the odorous and much-coveted fish suspended above their heads. The Indian horses are small, and they use a modified Mexican saddle. Both men and women use this saddle, and the latter sit on it, as do the men, with their legs across the animal. They are engaged as "packers," that is to say, thousands of them live by carrying freight to the miners and ranch men living far back in the mountains, the packs being fastened on the backs of their horses and mules. We often met long trains of these mules on the Cariboo road, and saw them descending by the narrow and high mountain trails, carefully picking their way along lest they should be precipitated hundreds of feet into the rivers below. One Indian rides ahead with a cow-bell on his horse's neck and, in large or long trains, another follows mounted. With unerring certainty the pack horses or mules follow the bell mule and but very seldom lag

behind, and then only for a minute to taste a sweet morsel of the coveted grass which perchance may be seen beside the trail. When they stop at night beside a stream of water, the packs are removed and placed in a semi-circle. When the animals are ready in the morning for their burdens, each mule marches up to his own pack-saddle with unerring certainty, and there they stand, like a regiment of soldiers on parade, with their noses close to their own packs, and never move until all have the order given them to fall in and march behind the bell mule. In driving along we constantly meet the Indian burial-places, the dead having a roof over their graves to protect them from the storms. Flags are flying from flag-poles, and large *dolls* are frequently placed in front of these roofs, sitting like children on the ground; and white and colored pieces of cloth are used to ornament these graveyards. Often the Indians' winter abode is a beehive-like structure made by making a framework of wood, filling in the interspaces with small limbs and brush, and covering the whole structure with earth. It looks like a great charcoal pit. All parts of it are closed except a circular hole at the very top, which serves as a place of entrance for the family and exit for the smoke, giving them at the same time all the light they can get. A straight notched stick is fixed in the ground at the bottom of the pit, which projects through the hole in the roof and answers as a ladder for the family to get in and out of this singular abode. In British Columbia there are probably from thirty to fifty thousand Indians of various tribes and names—some living almost altogether on fish, others on animal food. The latter, I am told, are by far the most intelligent and active, and being brave and warlike men, the fish-eaters dread them, as they cannot cope with them in war. Here the Indians but seldom molest the whites, while they perform much of their agricultural and other work, and on the whole do it satisfactorily. They, however, do not care to work for any length of time among white people, preferring rather to spend their money in their own way and about their own homes. The women are degraded, immoral, and are made to bear the burdens of life and act as pack mules, when marching without mules or horses. We meet them by hundreds at every turn; but few of them speak English, consequently I cannot converse with them.

The fishing on the Fraser and Thompson Rivers I was interested in very much. The Indians use hand nets and fairly *scoop* the salmon out of the rivers. The "run of fish" was over before we struck the fishing districts, so we did not see the salmon ascending in vast numbers, *millions* together, but I stood by a party of fishermen near Yale and saw them scooping them out of the river by twos and threes continuously. The men, boys and women have a stage made overhanging the little whirlpools and rapid currents,

and on these frail structures they sit with their feet dangling above the stream, and work by the hour, returning to the water the smaller fish and killing the larger ones by a blow on the head ere they throw them on the rocks surrounding the fishing points. Eighty thousand were brought to the Yale canneries in one day last week by the fishing Indians and white men. As we got nearer Yale our progress was retarded by the rapid current; the river grew more narrow and deeper (from 150 to 200 feet), but at last we reached Emery bar, one of the many "placers" or gold washing sand bars between New Westminster and Yale, and there we met the Canadian Pacific Railway. Mr. Onderdonk and the principal citizens of the place (Yale) came down with an engine and flat-car fitted up with seats cushioned and covered over with red cloth, and we were then driven through Yale, a distance of eight miles, passing into and out of three tunnels, one six hundred feet in length. The inevitable address was presented to Tupper, and amid much cheering we left the centre of the town and were landed at Mr. Onderdonk's door from our car. Here four rooms were provided for Tupper, the Clarkes, Robertson, and myself. Everything was on a grand scale for the locality, or rather, I should say a most comfortable scale. We lived as if we were in New York. Mrs. Onderdonk is a nice, unaffected American lady, with a family of four children, and he is quite a young, good-looking man, gentlemanly and well informed. At half past one o'clock, luncheon being over, the famous Dufferin coach was at the door, built after the fashion of the old English mail coach, with a top that could be opened or closed at will. Robertson and Jones remained behind, to follow us the next morning by an express. Mr. Onderdonk started with Tuppe in his double-seated buck-board waggon and two horses. I took the box seat with Steve Lingley, the celebrated driver over the four hundred miles of mountain road from Yale to Cariboo. The ladies, Schreiber, Marcus Smith and Clarkes were inside. This coach was commodious and very easy and was built specially to take Lord and Lady Dufferin to Kamloops over this, the most dangerous road in the world. A splendid team of four horses carried us along at a rattling pace, over heights that would have made your blood curdle. Sometimes we were one thousand feet above the river on a road barely wide enough to carry our carriage, and I trembled lest the horses should shy or a bullock team should meet us. A string of pack mules could be readily passed if we saw them in time to choose our stopping-place, but a bullock team is more formidable, as the brutes will crowd and push one another just at the moment of passing our horses and carriage. These difficulties were, however, overcome. At the suspension bridge over the Fraser I got in with Onderdonk, and Tupper entered the carriage. I found the buck-

board easy and comfortable. On arriving at "Hell's Gate," the narrowest part of the river, we saw marked on the bank or mountain side of the road, in red paint, the height reached by the water in 1876. The river rose 140 feet and covered portions of the road at least ten feet, stopping all travel and rendering it necessary for the mails and passengers to take the high trail above the road on mules' backs. Of course these terrible rises in the water destroy much of the road, and even long after they subside the road is impassable. On the opposite side of the river we could see the line of railway progressing, tunnels being driven by compressed air along the mountain heights where it would seem impossible to make a road. Men were at work making a track above the river at dizzy and perpendicular heights. They were let down from the mountain tops on ladders with ropes attached above to trees, and every shot that was fired in blasting rendered it necessary that the men should get out of the way by running up these ladders. Engineers made their measurements and took their cross-sections, being let down in many places by ropes from above, and there they would perform their work suspended, like Mahomet's coffin, between heaven and earth, for hours and days—a break or a slip of the rope and eternity was before them. One poor fellow, an engineer, while at work thus, fell down the precipice and was dashed to pieces. For many miles the line is a terrible undertaking, but it is progressing rapidly, and there are ninety miles now in course of construction and three thousand laborers at work. Mr. Onderdonk's contract costs the Government \$8,000,000. He tells me that he has now in plant, houses for men, shops, stores, horses, mules, oxen, acid manufactories, and gunpowder and dynamite factories, \$1,000,000—all necessary to carry on the work. . . . The Cariboo Road, along which I was driven, is four hundred miles long and cost \$1,500,000. Very many miles of it were built at a cost of \$15,000 per mile. At length we reached "Boston Bar"—one of the celebrated gold-bearing sand bars on the Fraser. Here a good dinner awaited us and we remained all night, starting the next morning (Wednesday) after breakfast. This day's experience was like the last as far as wild and grand scenery was concerned and this terrible road. We called at Mr. Keefer's camps, one of the Canadian Pacific engineers. The camps were beautifully neat and very comfortable, and were situated just at the spot where the railroad will cross from the left bank of the river to the right. We dined at the village of Lytton, at the point where the Thompson River forms a junction with the Fraser. With fresh horses we took the bank of the former and passed away from the Fraser River, driving along through magnificent river and mountain scenery. The Fraser was muddy and yellow but the Thompson was green and its rapidly

running current beautiful to look at. On this road we fell in with Mr. Onderdonk's teams in large numbers, some of them with twelve mules, others with sixteen oxen and six spare ones following, in case those under the yoke should get sore-footed or leg-weary; some carrying, in great high prairie waggons, flour, others rice for the Chinamen; another team drawing a portable sawmill to cut firewood for the different boarding houses, the road being like a beehive. In one spot or portion of the road that a rifle shot would very well cover, there were one thousand Chinamen working, massed together. Every white man as we passed him touched his hat to Onderdonk, but John Chinaman and the Chinooks (Indians) took no more notice of him than if he had been a horse. In this neighborhood we saw landslides in abundance, one of which not long since was so large and descended from such a height as to carry a part of an oat field and an Indian burying-ground clean across this broad river, and there left the oats to grow and the dead men's bones to rest without being in the least disturbed—fences, roofs, images and all. The river's bed was changed for a time, but the fast flowing current eventually brought it back, so that it now runs not far from its former site.

At 7.30 o'clock we reached this place (Chase's Bridge). Onderdonk and I slept at one of his houses near the bridge, where I had a splendid bed, with a rifle just over my head ready for action if an enemy had broken in upon me. Lady Tupper and Mrs. Clarke, with their husbands, spent the night at Mr. McLeod's house—one of the engineers. Mrs. McLeod had written them to do so, and this morning they have not accompanied Tupper and Clarke, who have driven in (to join us here) the six miles from McLeod's. They have determined to remain there and rest while we proceed on to Kamloops. Our party is to be diminished by the return of Schreiber, Marcus Smith and Boville (Trutch's secretary). The single big coach will carry us all, and Mr. Onderdonk will remain here for to-day and go back to Yale by coach, leaving his buckboard and horses for us in making our return journey.

SAVONA'S FERRY, at the junction of the Thompson River with Kamloops Lake, Friday night, September 2nd.—We had a very pleasant drive over a rolling prairie, getting along rapidly, as the horses are in capital condition and very fast, and we change them often. As we were driving past Governor Cornwall's ranch, his brother Henry met us on horseback and asked us to drive up to the house to lunch. He, the Governor, lives at Victoria, the seat of government of British Columbia, and, only being recently appointed, his wife and family have not yet moved down to Government House. They have a beautiful ranch. Henry is married, and they live with two families of children in the one house. They are English gentlemen, graduates of Cambridge—keep a pack of

fox hounds and hunt the fox of this country as they do in England. We lunch with them again to-morrow. They have no neighbors for many miles—no church—but live with a colony of Indians around them who do their farm work. Occasionally a clergyman in passing gives them a sermon in their parlor. If they wish to visit a neighbor, the ladies mount their horses and ride thirty miles to find one—that is, one with whom they can associate. Their ranch is beautifully irrigated by means of a lake, which is fed by a mountain stream. Without such irrigation here the soil will not produce cereals, hay or green crop. Our four-in-hand stood at the door awaiting the termination of the luncheon, and as soon as the inner man was satisfied we were all aboard again. While changing horses, six miles from Cornwall's, another address was presented to Tupper and appropriately replied to. At 7.30 we reached our present resting-place, Wren's inn, at the foot of the Kamloops Lake, where a first-class dinner and good beds awaited us. Here Tupper telegraphed to Charlie, who either personally or through the *Herald*, will inform you that we are well, and state that we were then near our journey's end as far as British Columbia was concerned, and would at once commence our homeward steps. In the evening Wren's three daughters and wife sang for us, exceedingly well, and one of the young ladies played the violin—an instrument made by her father—and did it very well. . . . The proprietors of the lake and river steamboats had a very comfortable boat awaiting our arrival at Savona's Ferry to take us up the lake and the upper branches of the Thompson River. This place is called Savona's Ferry in consequence of a celebrated Corsican brigand named Savona having left his country for his country's good and settled on this ranch. Mr. Bernard, M.P. for Victoria, one of the proprietors of the "Peerless" (our stern-wheeled steamer), was on board, with two of the local members, and at 9.30 a.m. to-day we started for Kamloops town, which we reach at 11.30 or 12 a.m. The boat steams seventeen miles an hour, draws only eighteen inches of water when light, as she is to-day, and three feet when loaded. The address was delivered in the court house—introductions given to all Kamloops—a grain mill and saw mill visited, a good lunch disposed of, and at 2 p.m. we crossed the river to the Indian reservation and visited the tribe resident there, about 500 souls. The chief was absent on a trading trip to the "Crees" on the east side of the Rocky Mountains, exchanging his horses for furs, and will not be back again for some months—if at all, as the tribe to which he has gone will only want a very small amount of provocation to scalp him. We steamed up the south branch of the Thompson some miles, returned again to the town and took on board all Kamloops—ladies and gentlemen, who in honor of the event were bound to

see the last of us at the foot of this beautiful body of water. I enjoyed the sail and the splendid scenery of this district exceedingly. Our dinner was awaiting us, and our long table was filled to overflowing by the Kamloops contingent. A ball was extemporized, a fiddler obtained, and they danced all night till five o'clock a.m., whites and half-breeds, with an assembly of Indians and a few Chinamen as onlookers, to add variety to the scene. This hotel has a large ballroom attached to it—unhappily very near my bedroom. Extemporized beds for the Kamloops ladies occupied one end of it. There were five or six I think, and the rest was occupied by the dancers. A ball out here means business. The last one held at this hotel commenced at 12 o'clock on Monday morning and lasted continuously day and night until 12 o'clock the next Saturday. McLean, the fiddler, was the only person present in whom I felt any interest. He is a villainous-looking half-breed, whose father was killed not long ago by the Indians, and a few months since he had three brothers hung for a most diabolical murder in this neighborhood. Another young man was hanged with them, named Hare. His step-mother, a young and interesting looking half-breed, a widow, was one of the Kamloops contingent at the ball. Her husband died in France recently, having served two years in the Provincial Penitentiary for stoning and doing his best to kill a man. I was asked to the ball, but politely declined, so I cannot give you the details, but one incident, worthy of note, was a pretty half-breed lady, with well developed breasts, nursing her equally well developed baby, in the presence of all the guests and the dancers. This was one of the little incidents mentioned to me this Saturday (Sept. 3rd) morning by Mr. Jones. I went to bed, but sleep was out of the question, as the music of the "fiddle" and the feet was too much for my over-sensitive brain. One of the young ladies of the hotel, Miss Jannie Wren, is known all over the country, and is quite a character—well educated, ladylike and amiable. She, although only twenty years old, is able to handle a rifle, land a salmon or the immense trout of Kamloops, being an expert fisherwoman, and is a most fearless rider and canoe-woman. When men fear to cross the river, she will spring into her canoe and paddle it across the stream, which runs at the rate of six or eight miles an hour. Only a short time ago, in a gale of wind, her father and other persons were crossing the river on the ferry-boat, with a number of mules, when the fixed wire rope broke. Some of the mules and men were drowned, and her father was all but gone and was carried away down the stream when she, paddle in hand, sprang into her canoe and gave chase, overtook him before he sank and safely landed him away down stream. All this was done when men were unequal

to the emergency. On another occasion, when a buggy and pair of horses had left the hotel and gone for some time over the road that we travelled, and Governor Trutch was in great need of them, to carry him to Cache Creek, she ran without preparation, bridled her horse, leaped on his back without a saddle, and, like the Indian women of whom I have spoken, started like the wind, and, after a chase of miles, brought the carriage back for the governor. Life on the frontier develops character and makes the women bold and brave. Yet with all this, you would take her for a refined and educated lady, who had seen much society and mingled with the world,—simple and gentle and retiring in manner. By the by, I should have said that there were two ladies at the ball who did not require to “do *something temporary with a teapot*” before the dancers. Jones tells me that, having nursed their babes to sleep, they placed them in one of the beds in the room, and then went to work in the dance.

You will be surprised to hear that both Tupper and myself have gained nine pounds in weight since we left San Francisco. The beef and mutton here are superior to anything I have eaten elsewhere—in consequence of the peculiar feed of the country, wormwood, sage-grass and bunch-grass. All our party are well.

SATURDAY NIGHT, SEPT 3RD.—Here I am again at Chase’s Bridge. Tupper has joined his wife at McLeod’s, as has Clarke; the rest of us are at the hotel here, where we have just dined, and I am dropping you a line before getting to bed—finishing up my journal. I know you will scold me for writing at such length, but it requires no mental effort, and really gives me enjoyment to be thus conversing with those I love so dearly. It is just one month this evening since we parted, and during that time I have travelled from 5,300 to 5,500 miles away from you, but am again slowly nearing my dear old home. The “Douglas” has been ordered to meet us at New Westminster on Wednesday next, to convey us to Victoria, from which place we will sail for San Francisco this day week. We all would have liked to remain one week more in the Kamloops district, inspecting the rivers and lakes of that district, which would have caused us to travel in the “Peerless” about 500 miles further, but our Winnipeg and Manitoba engagements will preclude that. I am longing for letters from you and the dear children, and the captain of the “Douglas” has been ordered to bring them over from Mr. Trutch’s office in Victoria, so they will meet me in New Westminster on Wednesday. I am invited to dine with the Board of Trade on Thursday next. We will be too late for the Mayor’s dinner on Wednesday, unless we should have a very rapid run, with a strong, fair wind on that day in crossing the channel. We had a very pleasant time at Governor Cornwall’s ranch to-day, a splen-

did luncheon and most agreeable society. I enjoyed both very much. A grandson of the late Hon. John Creighton, of Lunenburg, called Heckman, has just called on me. He is here on the engineering staff of the railroad. We have not seen any rattlesnakes, although they exist in large numbers all through this part of British Columbia. Two were killed in Mr. McLeod's garden and two more just outside his house this summer, and one was killed at Cornwall's a short time since. The pig is the great destroyer of the rattlesnake, and will hunt, kill and eat them. Wherever the pig abounds these snakes become scarce. Hence pork is at a premium and pigs plentiful, the more so because it is the only kind of meat that the Chinamen will buy and eat. There is a Mr. Tuck staying at this hotel, an engineer from St. John, brother of Harry Tuck. . . . As I shall be going over the same ground traversed by me before, and referred to in former letters, this will be my *last long letter*. You will hear from me again at San Francisco. As Lady Tupper is not with us, I cannot send her love. She was longing for you the day we parted. And now, dearest Fanny, farewell. May God bless you and ours and all we love, to whom convey very much love. Friends mentioned before, please remember me to again, when you see them.

Ever your loving husband,

D. McN. PARKER.

THE DRIARD HOTEL,
Victoria, B.C., Sept. 9th.

FRIDAY NIGHT.—We journeyed on to Onderdonk's at Yale, where we were again lodged and looked after most hospitably. Ran down stream to New Westminster, arriving there at 8 p.m., spent an hour or more with Mr. Rand at Homer's store, slept on board the steamer, and reached Victoria and this hotel at 4 p.m. Wednesday, in time for the Mayor's dinner. Last night we dined with about fifty persons, members of the Board of Trade, and did not get home until one o'clock this morning—a splendid dinner and any amount of speeches. The night previous I dined at Trutch's, where the Tupper and Clarkes are staying, and was asked to do so to-night, but declined. Senator McDonald came to the wharf and asked me to stay with them, but I did not care to be separated from our friends, and declined. They live some distance from the city, and it would have been troublesome to have been tied down to certain hours for luncheon, dinner, etc. Tupper has received five addresses to-day and yesterday, and is being surfeited with them. The Nova Scotians in this part of British Columbia, numbering 114 I believe, were

among the number, headed by Laurie and Ramur. There was no mail coming here and going East earlier than ourselves, so instead of mailing this "up country" I brought it with me, and to-morrow we will take in the "Dakota" the first mail for three or four days past, and it will carry this letter; so on its receipt you will be assured that we reached San Francisco safely. We remain there, D.V., two days, and then go to Omaha and St. Paul on our way to Winnipeg, where we will probably be in about a week from Friday next. I have had a large number of callers, and have been busy in returning their visits, all to-day. I will mail this to-night, so that it will reach you a day earlier than if I carried it on to San Francisco. God bless you all. Good night.

Your own husband,
D. McN. P.

P.S.—In my haste I forgot to mention the delightful letters received from you and the children—mentioning Frank, Mary Allison, Mrs. Fane, Jessie Passow, Moren, Gibson, Lady Hoyle, the Browns, the unanimous call to Mr. McArthur—the hay and Mr. Mott's very generous attention (for which tender him my special thanks), Wambolt and his father—the coal and Capt. Trott and the "Minia," and the family of the Trotts, the Barkers, the fire at Allen's tannery, Willie's visit to Wolfville, Hattie Allison and her visit to Dartmouth, the Barker children, Mr. Vermylee and party and his yacht "Atalanta," the Lewis's at Parrsboro, Mr. Saunders at dinner on Sunday, the raspberries in our garden and poor Laura's rent and bleeding hands and arms, Wilkin's death, John's departure for Baltimore. . . . Col. Reid's appointment, Aunt Elizabeth's gout, Grant's bill for hay, Rev. Mr. Lockhart—Libby Black's marriage, the weather and fog of Halifax, the cotton factory. Mrs. ——— and her present, who to my mind is very thankful for small favors, Georgie Grant and her intended visit, Gill Troop and the "Minia" (Willie had a narrow escape from seasickness, fog and discomfort), George Troop and Texas. Poor boy, I am sorry he is going so far from a mother's love and care, but God can care for him. It may all be right, and I hope it is. I liked the poor boy and shall miss him. The 26th of August will never be forgotten by me, my dearest wife.

I have just enumerated the news and statements of your last three letters, which, with two from Mr. Saunders and two *Christian Messengers* from Mr. Selden, all reached me at Onderdonk's in Yale, having been ordered up by telegraph. You may depend on it I was glad to have such a budget, and retired to a little mountain stream close to the house, where, on a comfortable seat

and under the foliage of a large tree, I devoured the contents, and was thankful to God for His goodness in preserving your lives and health. Remember me most kindly to the Passows, and congratulate Jessie for me on the improvement in her health. Tell them that I was at Lieut. Baker's to-day, returning his visit, and saw Mrs. B. and her infant. . . . Mrs. Baker is a daughter of Mrs. Jones and a niece of Ramur's. I saw Mrs. Ramur yesterday at her beautiful cottage on the waters of the harbor. She was a daughter of G. P. Lawson's. I trust Moren, Lady Hoyle and Gibson are all doing well. Cambie, the engineer residing at Yale, married Gibson's grand-niece. She was a daughter of John B. Fay, and when residing in Wolfville was a friend of dear Johnston's. . . . Lady Tupper is well and has stood the journey well. We meet to-morrow on board the "Dakota," and will all be together again until Winnipeg is reached. Tupper never was better in his life. Again farewell.

Yours ever,

D. McN. PARKER.

S.S. "DAKOTA," PACIFIC OCEAN,
 September 11th, 1881.
 September 12th, 1881.
 SAN FRANCISCO,
 September 13th, 1881.

My Dear Children:

I am in receipt of a letter from each of you. That from Willie, as also Mary's, reached me yesterday, just as I was starting from the Driard Hotel. In fact, the gentleman who was driving me to Esquimalt to join our ship had whip and reins in hand, and in a second more I would have left without them, when a clerk from the Dominion office rushed up and delighted my heart by handing them to me. The mail was not sorted, and I was obliged to leave without getting the *Christian Messenger* and *Visitors* which Willie forwarded to me, but I presume Mr. Trutch will forward them to me at Winnipeg. We sailed at 3 p.m. from Esquimalt, the harbor of Victoria not being large enough to accommodate a ship of the size of the "Dakota," and thus far we have had a very pleasant passage, the sea being smooth, but through the night the captain was obliged to run at half speed in consequence of the fog in the Sound. To-day the weather is fine and the temperature mild, and as we have no minister on board, it is hard to kill the time without any Sunday service or appropriate literature. The Sabbath is not well

observed on the slopes of the Pacific, and in the interior of British Columbia in many of the villages there are no places of worship, and where there are preaching stations, generally speaking, they are episcopal houses, and the clergyman's visits are few and far between. In all British Columbia there is but one Baptist meeting house, and that without a stationary minister. It is in Victoria, and is the one referred to in a former letter as being in debt, which debt *Mother is expected to pay off* by her own subscription, aided by sums obtained from other sources. The only passenger on board our ship known to me is a daughter of the late Sir James Douglas, a former governor of British Columbia. She is a widow, and full of fun. Her mother was a half-breed. Col. Laurie was, I think, sorry to part with us. I saw a great deal of him at my hotel, and have a letter for his wife, who is to be at Chicago, bound for British Columbia on the 19th inst. I hope to meet her on the train for a few moments. The Colonel finds it very dull at Victoria, and will be very glad to have her with him. All Victoria drove down to Esquimalt to see us off. Lady Tupper's stateroom was flooded with bouquets, and ours (Mr. Robertson's and mine) has a delicious odor of roses, from a very large and beautiful bouquet which adorns it—one of Lady Tupper's. Altogether, our visit to British Columbia has been exceedingly enjoyable, and as far as Sir Charles Tupper is concerned has been a continuous ovation. Addresses and speeches are now ended until we reach Winnipeg, where I presume they will be repeated to a limited extent. However, as Sir Charles has been there before, I presume he will not be beset with them, and possibly, as he ran the gauntlet only last year, he and we may escape the infliction. I was very much interested in Willie's most satisfactory statement of the doings at the Convention. Altogether, the result of the meeting was satisfactory. . . . Did he subscribe \$100 for me towards paying off the Home Mission debt? I am very glad you have seen and shown some attention to the ladies from the American yacht, and that Georgie Grant has been over. Tell dear old mother that I was struck with a remark in her letter in reference to "Amelia," of Salt Lake City. She expresses regret that she should have married *so soon* after her husband's death, from which I assume mother does not object to "widders" marrying again, if they will only hold on for a little longer than six months. It is very suggestive of a stepfather for you, as she does not appear to take exception to the principle.

After reading Mary's letter, in which reference is made to the cows, I was very much exercised in a dream about these animals of ours. They were lost and I was hunting for them

for hours on horseback, but without success, while the family at home were suffering for milk. It was a great relief to me to find that it was but a dream. . . . Mary says you have had but twelve really fine days since May 1st. How different it has been with us. Every day has been fine, and while the days have been a little warm for a few hours, the nights have been deliciously cool. . . .

SAN FRANCISCO, PALACE HOTEL,
September 13th.

At 7.30 p.m. we reached our hotel, and we are all congregated together here on the same floor, in the same luxurious apartments as we had before. Not the same rooms, but a story lower, on the first floor. Our voyage was delightful. Every day was pleasant, and on the whole I stood it well. The ship was large and full of passengers, and among them we found a good proportion of Ontario people. My services were called into requisition, as a child on board was attacked with illness—probably scarlet fever—and I was asked to prescribe for her. Col. Clarke and I have been out taking a walk through the streets, and I have come in with a bag of grapes, three pounds for twenty-five cents, and am having a feast. The California fruit is very abundant and fine. The best pears in the world are grown here, and grapes are sold for a mere song. I wish you were all in my room, and we would have a bushel basket full, and have a feast and a surfeit. Figs, apricots, apples and plums are grown in vast quantities, and are exceedingly cheap. A deputation of the Canadians here has just called on Sir Charles, asking him to meet them to-morrow night at the rooms of the Canadian Society, that they may have the opportunity of hearing an address from him. He has accepted their invitation, and no doubt will give them a stirring speech. I did not find a letter or letters from home on my arrival here, but hope to hear from you to-morrow. I wrote to Mr. Saunders, on the "Dakota," in answer to two letters from him, received at Yale. And now, my dearest children, I must say good-night and good-bye for the present. My next letter will probably be from Winnipeg, for which place we will leave San Francisco on Friday next, the 16th inst., at 3 p.m. May God bless and preserve you all in health and strength of body and soul alike is the earnest prayer of your loving father. With much love to darling mother and you all.

Ever yours affectionately,

D. McN. P.

CAR "KFWAYDIN," NEAR OMAHA, NEBRASKA,
September 20th, 1881.

Tuesday, p.m.

My Dearest Wife:

I write under difficulties, as you will perceive from the character of this scrawl, for even the Union Pacific does not run sufficiently smoothly to enable a man to pen a letter so that it may be readily deciphered. My object is merely to let you know that we are thus far on our journey to Manitoba, and, thank God, I and all my travelling companions are well—exceedingly well. Tupper and I increased thirteen pounds each from the day we left San Francisco for British Columbia until our return to the Palace Hotel on the 13th inst. Schreiber and all have increased in flesh, but the ladies will not go on the scales, *dreading the result*. The fact is, the magnificent climate, the beef, mutton and fruit of British Columbia, with absence from mental work, have done the work of putting the flesh on one's bones in a way that Nova Scotia could not have done. N.B.—Prepare to emigrate. On our arrival at San Francisco every courtesy was extended. One gentleman drove the party out to the Park and to the Cliff House to see the hundreds of sea-lions that bask on the rocks by the cliffs and roar like great bulls of Bashan. Some of them were very large, weighing between two and three tons, and "Ben Butler" even more than this. They are not allowed to be shot and are consequently quite tame, and thus visitors become familiar with individuals and give them names. This drive altogether was about sixteen miles, and we took it in a four-in-hand drag, the pace being never less than ten miles, and the team was composed of magnificent horses. The next morning Dr. McNutt called and drove me with a first-rate pair of horses many miles around the outskirts of the city, and afterwards introduced me to his wife, the daughter of a former mayor of San Francisco, a Dr. Kughn. I called and saw the Davies again, and found them well. We had a letter from "Lee Chuck," whom we met in British Columbia, to his partners in business in San Francisco. They treated us with the greatest kindness and attention, and showed us all over "Chinatown," introducing us to the principal institutions and features of life among this peculiar and interesting people. We saw their "joss house," or place of worship, their theatre, and lunched with them, partaking of their usual food and drinking their tea, as made by themselves, each cup being a teapot, or answering the purpose of our teapots. On leaving them we were all presented with some articles of Chinese manufacture, but of these and the details of our visit to the Chinese in San Francisco I will speak when we meet again—if God in His goodness should permit me to return again to my home. We drove on Thursday to the village

of Berkely, beyond Oaklands, to visit the University of California, with Mr. Ward, manager of D. O. Mills' bank (Mr. Mills himself being ill), lunched with him at his Oaklands residence and took the steam ferry again at five o'clock for San Francisco. On Friday at 3 p.m. we again crossed to Oaklands and re-embarked on board of our good car the "Kewaydin" for the run east, and thus far have got along pleasantly and in safety, without rain (indeed, we have had no rain since we left Canada) and with a pleasant temperature, requiring two blankets at night. At mid-day it is warm, but not oppressive, and there is always a pleasant breeze. To-day the flags at the military and railway stations are all at "half mast." The President is dead. The news reached our train at two a.m. to-day, and sad news it is for the nation, and still more for the widow and fatherless children. May God sustain them in their sorrow and give comfort to the bereaved family and nation! Lady Tupper is very well and as happy as the day is long, so cheerful and full of fun—while Tupper is overflowing with humor and is as frisky as a colt. I never saw him in better spirits. He is enjoying the trip amazingly. Clarke and wife are very pleasant indeed—very jolly and exceedingly sociable. Robertson is one of the jolliest fellows you ever saw, brimful of Scotch fun and anecdote, while Schreiber and Jones, his secretary, are both first-rate fellows. Altogether a more sociable or agreeable party could hardly have been got together for such a journey. It only lacks one thing, my dear wife, and that is your presence, to make it perfect, and this is the decision and daily talk of the Tupper and myself. But we have arranged another trip, if we are alive and well; that is, to cross the continent by the Canadian Pacific as soon as that work is completed, and you are to be the figurehead of the party. Stewart Tupper joins us at St. Paul to-morrow and goes over the rest of the journey with us. The storms on Lake Superior and losses of ships and lives have influenced us to relinquish that part of our journey and to change the programme. After going east to the lake we shall return to Winnipeg and re-enter Canada by Chicago, running down there by the banks of the Mississippi. We will go up to St. Paul by the banks of the Missouri. On Thursday next at 8 p.m. we hope to arrive at Winnipeg. We take all our meals in our own car, Douglas, the porter, being a good cook. He cooked on one occasion for the Princess for ten days. I must mail this letter now on the car, so that it may go east to-day. How great the difficulties of writing it have been you can judge from the handwriting, but I hope you will be able to decipher it. Tupper and wife send a great deal of love to the whole family. God bless you all, my dear wife.

Your afft. husband,
D. McN. PARKER.

WINNIPEG, MANITOBA,
September 26th, 1881.

My Dearest Wife:

After mailing my last letter, as we were running close upon Omaha, the western-bound train was met, and I ran into the Pullman department and saw Mrs. Laurie for a moment and told her that I had left letters for her at Ogden. She was looking well, and was so astonished to see me, not for one moment anticipating that I was on the road. I had not time to ask her any questions about home or Halifax, as the trains only stopped long enough to exchange mails—one or two bags—and then were off again in desperate haste. . . . We crossed the Missouri River to Council Bluffs, took tea at the Railroad Hotel and ran north by another line of railroad (leaving the Central Pacific road) along the eastern side of that river, and then diverged to the north-east until we struck the Mississippi River and, crossing it by a great and high bridge, entered St. Paul, Minnesota, a great railway centre and a place of much importance. It is quite a new place, but has a population of nearer sixty thousand than fifty. After leaving Council Bluffs, for the first thirty miles we encountered a terribly bad piece of road, and although I had a Pullman section to myself and no upper berth, with a good large bed, I could not sleep. On reaching Sioux City it improved, and the corduroy structure was left behind. We saw a large amount of very beautiful prairie land as we passed through the States of Iowa and Minnesota. In the latter the wild duck were seen by the millions in lakes, ponds and pools, close to the road, and they would not move at the noise or near approach of the train. I could have killed them with stones. A sportsman will frequently go out in the morning here and in the back parts of Manitoba, along the prairie districts, and shoot them by the hundred. St. Paul was covered with mourning for the dead President. Flags were at half mast throughout the entire country, and thousands of lithographs of the President were to be seen surrounded with crape or black cloth in the shop windows of all towns and villages, and everywhere on the British side of the line flags were at half mast. We inspected at St. Paul a huge Mississippi steamer such as you have seen in illustrated newspapers, drawing not more than three or four feet of water. Clarke and I walked over the enormously high passenger bridge, so that we can now say that we have floated on the Father of Waters, have crossed it by rail often, and once on foot. On the afternoon of our arrival we drove all around the city and inspected its public buildings, and saw much to admire in its surrounding scenery. It is destined to be a vast city ere many years. Stewart Tupper and a young lawyer named Campbell, of Toronto—his special friend—with Mr. Pottinger of the

Intercolonial, joined us here (at St. Paul) and have been with us since. Messrs Angus, Hill, Stephen and McIntyre, of the Canadian Pacific Syndicate, were at "Stephen," on the road owned by them (the St. Paul, Minneapolis and Manitoba), so Tupper and his wife went on with Mr. Robertson at 6.30 p.m. on Tuesday night by a special train in his own car to meet these gentlemen on matters of business connected with the Canadian Pacific and Vancouver Island railroads. We followed two hours later by the regular train, that is, all the rest of us, and the next morning at ten o'clock rejoined the Tupper and went aboard our own car again. At Emerson, which is only about fifty or sixty miles from Winnipeg, we were met at the station by Mr. Fairbanks, son of S. P. Fairbanks, Willie Esdaile, and a young Creighton who married E. W. Chipman's daughter. We also had pointed out to us the cottage once owned by Major Cameron (built by him) in which Emma lived while he was carrying on the survey. . . . We reached Winnipeg at 7.30 p.m. Thursday. Stewart Tupper, Campbell, Robertson and Jones left us, and Mr. Stickney, the superintendent of the Syndicate's portion of the Canadian Pacific, attached his private car to ours and we started off for Brandon, a town of six weeks' growth, at the point where the Canadian Pacific crosses the Assiniboia River. Owing to the non-existence of a telegraph, to prevent accident we had to run this distance very slowly, sending on ahead of us a trolley worked by men to give notice of the approach of our train. We did not reach Brandon until three p.m. Friday. The road was inspected by the railway men and Mr. Stickney; the new town was visited; houses of all sizes, hotels, shops and workshops were being rapidly built. Tents were occupied by men with and without their families. Delicate ladies were dwelling in these tents, and are likely to continue in them all winter for want of houses. New shops were receiving goods brought up by railway, and a "bang-up" jeweller's shop was only opened the day of our arrival, where gold watches, chains, brooches and almost everything in this line could be purchased. You may depend upon it there was stir and life in Brandon. . . . Just at the railway bridge there was tied up to a tree a stern-wheel steamer belonging to the Hudson's Bay Company, whose vocation is now gone, as she was employed in carrying goods and passengers on this river; which work is now performed by the railroad. There is much valuable land on the prairie districts between Winnipeg and Brandon, which is being occupied by settlers and is now, I imagine, all taken up. A few miles back from the railroad the soil, we are told, is magnificent and yields for years from twenty-five to thirty bushels of wheat to the acre—simply for the plowing. From fifty to sixty bushels of oats to the acre is the common yield. To get land now men must push

west as the railroad progresses, and it is being advanced with marvellous rapidity. The Rocky Mountains and the Bow River country will be reached in two years from this date. The Syndicate is composed of able men—all of them “live men,” and no grass grows beneath their feet. Last year they cleared one and a half millions of dollars, or more, by their St. Paul, Minneapolis and Manitoba road, and will clear more this year. Our passage across the bridge of the Assiniboia River was delayed some hours by a wrecked train (a goods and working train). Our return to Winnipeg was consequently late, and our intention of visiting Portage la Prairie, a town of over two thousand inhabitants, was frustrated by this delay, and the rain, which poured down upon our train as we neared the place. The inhabitants were greatly disappointed, but those of them who were at the station assured Tupper that if he would run for that district he would not have a single opposition vote. The Grit doctor and leader of the opposition made the statement in our car. The Pacific Railroad and the energetic action of the Syndicate in pushing forward the work, together with Tupper’s decision as to the route, has effected a great change in favor of the Government in Manitoba. Portage la Prairie was to have been passed by, at a distance of eight miles, by the Mackenzie route, but a shorter and better road brings it six or seven miles nearer the Portage, and this has greatly pleased the inhabitants. We reached Winnipeg late at night, took another engine, left Mr. Stickney behind, as he had to go at once to St. Paul, kept his private car and porter with us, and then ran through a beautiful but rocky country to Rat Portage—the Lake of the Woods. It rained nearly all day, but on our arrival there was a small steamer awaiting us, and we crossed the lake in her to Mr. Jennings’, the engineer of this section. Some of the party continued up the lake in the steamer, but Tupper and wife, Mrs. Jennings, Mrs. Clarke and myself embarked in a large birchbark canoe, paddled by two halfbreeds (skilled men) and Mr. Fleming, a young engineer, son of Sandford Fleming, and ran down the lake to the Winnipeg River (the outlet of the Lake of the Woods), which river runs about forty miles or more and then empties itself into Lake Winnipeg, and this again empties (after running north a long distance) into Hudson’s Bay. At the rapids of the Winnipeg River we disembarked, took a trail by the river’s side and followed it to a beautiful waterfall. Although the rain was pouring down and the trees were wet, we would not have missed the falls and the beautiful scenery for anything. The ladies got their India-rubbers cut to pieces and were quite wet, but on our return to Jennings’ cottage by the lake-side there was a huge fire lighted to warm us, and this, with a cup of hot tea, prepared us for our return to our car, where dinner awaited us, and our party was

enlarged and our table taxed to its utmost capacity by the addition of Mr. and Mrs. Jennings, Mr. Fleming and three railroad contractors. After dinner Mrs. Jennings left for her home and we started for Winnipeg, going over the road slowly so as to enable Tupper and Schreiber to carefully examine the work. Two magnificent iron bridges were examined, which look sufficiently stable to last for centuries. On our arrival here all left the car but the Toppers, Mrs. Clarke and myself. Stickney left his car and porter, and it is placed at my disposal, so I occupy *it* and eat in the "Kewaydin," instead of going to a very inconvenient and overcrowded hotel. Col. Clarke did not go either east or west with us, as he was desirous of going out on the prairie to shoot prairie chickens and ducks, but the weather being wet we found him in our car shortly after our arrival on Saturday night. I am very glad that we did not go further east than Rat Portage, as riding on horseback sixty miles—or perhaps a hundred—and then being tossed about at very considerable risk to life, at this season of the year, on Lake Superior, would have been no joke. We were satisfied with the journey toward Lake Superior, made by rail—130 miles—which, with 145 miles west to Brandon, has given me a pretty clear idea of what kind of a country Manitoba is, and what the engineering difficulties are on the eastern end of the line to Prince Arthur's Landing—four hundred miles from Winnipeg, this being the distance which the Dominion Government have to cover with a railroad east of Winnipeg. That west the Syndicate have to pay for and construct. This, with 127 miles from Emery's Bar on the Fraser to Savona's Ferry on the Kamloops Lake, and ninety miles from Emery's Bar to Burrard's Inlet on the Pacific Coast, is the amount of mileage to be constructed by the Dominion Government and to be handed over when completed to the Syndicate. This body of men are doing their work better than the Government would have done it. They are building a work which they are to own and operate in all time to come, and hence it is in their interests to make it a durable structure. They have in some places taken up the work of the Government and replaced it (modifying the route) by a more permanent and better road. . . . I never saw such a muddy place as Winnipeg—it is really dreadful. Its population is assumed to be from fourteen to twenty thousand. Gas works, water works, and a street railway company are likely to be established ere another year passes. Everything in the shape of land in and about the city is inflated. Corner lots 66 by 100 feet in the best localities are selling for \$15,000. Two miles out of town lots 40 by 120 are bringing \$175 and \$180. Speculation is rife. Everybody is excited. Some are making fortunes, and many will be ruined. Every visitor goes in for land—but as I have had

enough of such speculations in Dartmouth I am not likely to embark my capital in any such wild undertakings. I leave to-morrow, Tuesday, the 27th inst., for Emerson, alone, that I may have an opportunity of visiting the Mennonite settlement—Russian immigrants, who, to the number of about 6,000, occupy many square miles near that town. They live in small villages, ranging in distance from Emerson from twelve to thirty miles. Tupper will pick me up there on Wednesday morning. George Almon is living at Emerson and I shall probably see him. Newton Esdaile is here in Winnipeg, engaged as a house painter. I told Willie to tell him to call and see me, but he has not yet turned up. Poor William West, we learn by telegram, is dead at last. A fine man and a good citizen has been taken from our midst, for whom I have long entertained a sincere regard. I was delighted to receive your letter enclosing one from dear little Nornie. I was greatly pleased to learn that she had seen Cape Breton under such pleasant circumstances. It was a most agreeable surprise to me. Uncle Martin was very kind and generous, as he always is. It was certainly a cheap excursion, but if it had cost the dear child ten times the amount it did I should gladly have paid it to have given her the pleasure of seeing the Island and our eastern counties. I am glad that Willie asked his young friends Welton and company to stay with him during the Exhibition period. The Weltons were always kind and hospitable to him, and it will be giving them some slight return for their past attentions. I hope the Exhibition passed off well, but I fear the Commissioners were not ready for the opening when the day arrived. . . . Give much love and many kisses to our baby, and tell her papa often thinks of and prays for her. I am much pleased to hear that she is doing so well at school and likes it. Congratulate our dear boy from his *old* father on the event of his having reached his majority. I am glad you gave him such a useful present, and pray God he may long live to use and enjoy it. You speak of Mary as if she had been at Bellevue. Give her very much love from me, and tell her I hope she has enjoyed herself during my absence. It always affords me great pleasure to know that my dear ones are happy and enjoying the comforts and blessings of this life while attending to the higher and more important things of the life to come. . . . We expect to spend next Sunday in Chicago, and then will stop, possibly a whole day, in Toronto, after which I shall hasten home, where you may expect to see me the last of next week if God so wills it. I will telegraph you after reaching Quebec, or from Campbellton. With love to all at Bellevue, the Lewis's, all at Frank's, and with any amount of love to you, my dear wife, and our dear bairns,

I remain ever your affectionate husband,

D. McN. PARKER.

It is terribly cold, and the fire in Stickney's car has not yet warmed the air, so my fingers are nearly frozen. I am sleeping under as many blankets as I would have in midwinter. I have fairly galloped over the course, as jockeys say, in my haste to finish my letter—my last letter to you ere we meet at home. As usual I fear you will have difficulty reading it.

After the conclusion of this western tour, the *Dominion Pacific Herald*, of New Westminster, published on November 9th, 1881, the following editorial:

“ THE RESULTS.

“The visit to this province of Sir Charles Tupper and party does not seem to be altogether barren of good results. Much was expected directly from Sir Charles, as a prominent member of the Dominion Government; but it is questionable whether more may not be expected in the way of what may be termed reflex results. After all, British Columbia only requires to be properly known to be appreciated; and to be appreciated is to have her chief wants—population and capital—supplied. The readers of the *Herald* have already seen what Sir Charles Tupper and Mr. Andrew Robertson have had to say about our province since returning home. It will be remembered that the Hon. Dr. Parker, of Halifax, was one of the party. The Doctor is one of those unassuming, shrewd men who say little but think much, and it is quite clear from what he has had to say about the Pacific Province since returning to his home in Nova Scotia, that he took in a great deal, considering the shortness of his visit and the limited opportunities for observation he enjoyed. Having, on his arrival in Halifax, been subjected to the interviewing process, he said of Columbia:

“I think it is destined to become one of the greatest provinces in the Dominion. The beauty of the climate is wholly indescribable. I have travelled a good deal in Europe and America, but I never enjoyed as fine a climate anywhere. I do not think any country in the world can show a finer climate than this, at once so invigorating and so uniform. Of winter they have but little, and cattle never require to be housed in any month of the year. I believe its resources to be very great. At present they are very largely undeveloped, but enough has been done to show that the province possesses the elements of wealth in abundance. As for its agricultural resources, though it may in many places appear to be what Mr. Blake called it—“a sea of mountains”—still mountains imply the presence of valleys, and these valleys and very often the mountain sides as well, are very fruitful. British Columbia is a very big province, and it is a very great mistake to suppose that because it is traversed by two mountain ranges, it does not nevertheless possess a large amount of fine farming lands. And not only is the soil very productive where worked, but the products of the soil are of an excellent quality. The finest plums I ever tasted in my life were raised at a place called Boston Bar, about 25 miles up the Fraser River from Yale. For grazing, the capabilities of British Columbia cannot be surpassed. It must in the near future become a great stock-raising province. Its mineral wealth is believed by competent judges to be unlimited. At present gold, coal and iron are the only minerals worked, but silver, copper and many other minerals are known to exist. But undoubtedly the two greatest resources of British Columbia are her lumber and fish. These are practically unlimited, and while a considerable export in both is already established, it is not a tithe of what the province is capable

of producing. With her vast mountain sides covered with Douglas pine, oak, spruce, cedar and hemlock, and her immense inland waters and coasts teeming with salmon, halibut, cod and oolachan, and all other kinds of fish, no one can entertain a doubt as to the capability of British Columbia to give remunerative employment to a large population. Already fish-canning has become an industry of no small importance—some ten or twelve canneries being in operation a few miles from New Westminster. On the whole, my opinion of British Columbia is that it is a magnificent province with vast resources, and that the Dominion made no mistake in acquiring it, and will make none in having it opened up and connected with the rest of Canada by means of the Pacific Railway.”

From the foregoing letters on Canadian travel in 1881, and from what is quoted by the British Columbia paper from the “interview,” which appeared in the *Halifax Herald*, can be estimated something of the quality of the writer’s far-seeing confidence in the future of his great country. He rejoiced in it. Elsewhere through these pages will be found other traces of a patriotism wider still. He was in spirit a robust Briton, loving the Mother Land and cherishing ideals for Greater Britain that were imperialistic. He was always a close student of British public affairs at home and abroad. Few were more fully informed in detail, or had a more comprehensive and philosophical grasp of all history, current questions and events which concerned Britain’s world-wide Empire. I do not know if he ever voted in Britain, but I find that in 1880, at least, he was a registered voter for Parliament, in the constituency of the University of Edinburgh. His sympathies in British politics were always with the Conservative party.

CHAPTER X.

THE CLOSING YEARS OF ACTIVITY.

"We men who in our morn of youth defied
The elements, must vanish;—be it so!
Enough, if something from our hands have power
To live, and act, and serve the future hour."

—Wordsworth.

Early in the spring of 1882 occurred the removal of the offices from 70 Granville Street to 95 Hollis Street, the property of the Nova Scotia Permanent Benefit Building Society, of which he was the President. For some years he occupied the two front rooms on the second floor; but afterwards the two ground floor rooms on the north side. These latter were his last offices, and from the front door of this building the old shingle, as he called it—a brass plate from which the legend "Dr. Parker, Surgeon," had been well nigh erased by half a century of furnishing—was finally removed on August 1st, 1895, to find its place among the things that had been.

The year's routine in 1883 was broken by a visit to Richmond and other parts of Virginia, where the latter part of winter and the spring months were spent, for the benefit of my sister Mary's health and his own. While there he studied extensively the history of that State, the biographies of many of its celebrated men, the American Civil War, from the Southern point of view, and the history and conditions of his religious denomination in Virginia and the South generally. The profuse notes of these studies, containing a great fund of information and displaying the critical and philosophical side of his mind, though of deep interest, are not sufficiently elaborated to publish.

At Richmond he devoted some time to professional investigation in the hospitals, and at one of the colleges he delivered an address on sanitation, which, if one may judge from his notes, appears to have been thorough, informing and timely. He was much interested in the work of negro education, which he was able to observe closely at the Richmond Institute, of which his old friend, Dr. Charles H. Corey, of New Brunswick, was the president.

In the spring of 1884 he accompanied his family to Cambridge, Mass., where I was a student at Harvard, and he there spent a fortnight's vacation which was very enjoyable to him.

At that time he approached nearer to the state of doing *nothing* than I had previously known him to do, though, of course, there were new medical works to be read and much writing to be accomplished.

The year 1885, in the medical history of Halifax, was signalized by the dispute between the Medical Board of the Provincial and City Hospital and the Government's Board of Commissioners of Public Charities. Its cause was that the latter Board, in violation of the by-laws and regulations provided for it and in disregard of a regular competitive examination thereunder by the Medical Board, of two candidates for the position of House Surgeon in the Hospital, arbitrarily appointed the inferior competitor to the office, thereby reversing, or at least nullifying, the result of the lawful medical examination which placed the man appointed fourteen points behind the successful competitor. The Charities' Board assigned as a reason for this extraordinary breach of law and propriety, that "this Board, believing either gentleman qualified for the position, exercised its own judgment in making the choice." This rude assumption of "patronage," in disposing of such a hospital appointment, by paltry politicians, besides being illegal, was a direct insult to the members of the Medical Board, and they would not consent to have their honor compromised by being made parties to such an objectionable procedure. They resigned on May 12th. My father, who was senior consultant on the staff, was then out of town, but tendered his resignation separately, shortly afterwards, by letter, in which he said, "that the person filling the position of house surgeon should have the entire confidence of his superiors as to integrity, industry and the disposition to obediently carry out their orders and instructions. To some extent the house surgeon holds in his hands, as it were, the reputation of his superiors; and if this fact is not morally appreciated, it can readily be imagined what results might follow in the wake of an inefficient and unfaithful officer. An officer appointed in opposition to the rules and regulations of the hospital, and to the finding of the professional examiners of the competitors, cannot but be influenced by the thought that he is to a large extent independent of the medical staff, and is rather the subordinate of the board, to whose good offices alone he is indebted for his position."

He bore the leading part in the controversy with the Government which followed, urging "the utter impossibility of any staff being able to work to the advantage of the patients with a house surgeon forced into that position and his appointment reaffirmed contrary to their protestations." In one of his letters to Hon. W. S. Fielding, the Provincial Secretary, he wrote: "All the Medical Board require in relation to the professional management

of the hospital is what has been conceded by the trustees and directors of similar institutions elsewhere."

He never accepted another appointment to this Government hospital. The interests of patients had been wrongfully and forcibly subordinated to the interests of political partizanship, and sorrowfully he accepted this condition of affairs. The particulars of this dispute, which, owing to the hospital (after due notice by the Medical Board) being deprived of a medical staff, and owing to the refusal of any other members of the profession of standing to accept positions on the Board, and owing also to the suspension of the Halifax Medical College, which followed, created considerable public feeling, are minutely and faithfully stated in a pamphlet published by the Medical Board for the information of the public, signed by each of the twelve members, beginning with my father; and this statement of the case has never been challenged.

Apart from the customary full tide of professional work, the years at this stage otherwise passed uneventfully until the month of March, 1886, when, with my mother, he made what proved to be his last visit to Great Britain. The physical ailments, which in the end triumphed over his body enfeebled by age, were now becoming more acute, and he wished to consult physicians in London. The visit was timed so that the Colonial exhibition in London could be seen. Sir Charles Tupper was then High Commissioner for Canada, and a long-standing promise to visit him and Lady Tupper in their London home, on Cromwell Road, for the renewal of "old times," could now be redeemed. Accordingly the first three weeks in England were spent with them. Then followed visits to Leamington, near the historic castle of Kenilworth, to see Mrs. Shuttleworth; to Southport, to see another niece of my mother, Mrs. Dr. Davies; and a stay at Ventnor, in the Isle of Wight, for more favorable climatic conditions.

A trip to Portsmouth was made, specially to see the old "Victory." From what has been said, at a previous page, of my father's strong admiration for Nelson and his achievements, it can be readily imagined with what peculiar reverence he trod the decks which the footsteps of his hero-admiral had pressed; with what various emotions he examined the parts of that historic flagship more immediately associated with Nelson's life on board, with his conduct in the memorable culmination of his career at Trafalgar, and with his affecting and triumphant death in the hour of that great victory.

Cardiff, in Wales, was visited in June, that my father might see the grave of his brother, Captain Frederick H. Parker, who had died, at the age of thirty-three, on December 3rd, 1858, during a voyage which he undertook in the "Walton" in the summer of that year, after his recovery from the illness for which he was

invalided home in September, 1857, as previously related. My father wished to be satisfied that the monument to his brother's memory, and his last resting-place, were being properly cared for.

At Liverpool the same fraternal office was performed at the grave of his brother, Captain John Nutting Parker, of the "Pembroke," in the cemetery at Anfield Park. John's death occurred September 26th, 1868, at the age of forty-seven.

At the opening ceremonies of the Colonial Exhibition, my father and mother were fortunate in having seats reserved near those occupied by the Queen and the Royal family; and there for the last time he saw the face of his august Sovereign, for whom he always cherished a feeling of the deepest reverence.

While at Cromwell Road he met for the last time his old fellow-student and life-long friend Van Sommeren, who had retired from the army with the highest medical rank, and was living at Red Hill in Surrey. He was invited by Sir Charles Tupper, with others, to meet my father at a dinner, on which occasion the pleasures of the re-union of these three Edinburgh students of the forties can readily be imagined.

Early in June my parents went to Edinburgh where they went into lodgings for three weeks, at 42 Minto Street, and had Sir Charles and Lady Tupper as their guests for a week. This was a week of pure enjoyment to the old fellow-students, returned to the latest scene of their educational work, which had been shared so much together. Old haunts were re-visited, old days lived over again, and, for the time, they dwelt in happy reminiscence. Writing to my sister Fanny from Edinburgh on July 21st, my father says: ". . . . Sir Charles and I visited our old lodgings in Salisbury Street, where we spent a good part of our student life in Edinburgh, and the old scenes and places so familiar to us over forty years ago. Our teachers of that day are all dead, save one, and not one of our friends at whose houses we were wont to visit can be heard of, outside the cemetery. Dr. Gordon's widow, I believe is alive, but where, I cannot find out. We visited the Grange and Dean Cemeteries together, and there found the names of many of them. We propose leaving for London early next week. Sir Charles and I will run down to Newcastle for a day to pay a visit to Capt. Arthur, a gentleman who was very kind to us when, as youths, we were in this country. We knew intimately his nephew, Dr. Bowman of Calcutta, who was our fellow-student, and I once spent seven weeks at his hospitable home in the neighborhood of Newcastle.* He is now a good deal over eighty years

* This must have been in a summer recess during his medical course at Edinburgh.

of age and quite infirm. We will visit and see him for a few hours, for the last time in this world. Afterwards I hope to spend two or three days with Mrs. Robinson and her sisters (the Nuttings) and then shall go to Dr. Hunt's in Sheffield for a few days, if I am well enough." After telling of a visit to an exhibition then being held at Edinburgh and of meeting there Jane Agnes Black and her Scottish cousins, the Misses Lorrimer, who dined with the party, this letter, in referring to home matters, has these characteristic playful touches: "'When the cat's away the mice can play.' So I presume you are all taking advantage of my absence in the mornings, and but seldom see the sunrise. My 'gallops' are pretty well over now. I am a very deliberate old man when I take my walks abroad; and you will be quite equal to keeping up with me should I be spared to return. 'Worse and more of it.' I objected to Tom taking possession of my house, and now I hear you have a 'J.l.c.k.' There will be war to the knife on my return, and I should not be surprised if there was, about that time, a sound as of mewing and barking arising from an oat bag in the neighborhood of the end of my wharf. 'Keep it dark,' though."

The proposed visits mentioned in this letter were made. At Twickenham, on the Thames, he saw for the last time Mrs. Robinson and the Nuttings: Ellen, widow of Colonel Robinson of the Royal Engineers, and Misses Mary and Isabel Nutting—all daughters of his great-uncle, James Walton Nutting, and the favorite cousins of his boyhood.

At Edinburgh, though no friends of the student days could be found, friendships of the Edinburgh sojourn of 1871-3 remained, and were renewed.

A third grave, here in Edinburgh, more precious in memory even than the other two visited in England and in Wales, was seen, and fondly lingered over many times—and for the last time.

Sir Andrew Clark, one of the physicians whom my father consulted in London recommended for him a course of the waters of Homburg in Prussia. So, after leaving Edinburgh, three weeks were spent in Homburg, and, on the route, Paris, Strasburg, Cologne and other places were visited. On landing at Calais on this occasion, he had his pocket picked on the gangway of the boat, his sole experience of the kind, but as it was his habit to distribute his money among various pockets, while travelling, the loss was not serious.

Upon returning to England, two weeks more were spent in London with Sir Charles and Lady Tupper, when my father received further medical treatment and advice, in the course of which, as during the earlier visit, he revived friendships with the foremost men of his profession in the metropolis, and lost no

opportunity for improving his knowledge of the latest things in medicine and surgery, for the benefit of patients at home.

Shortly before sailing from Liverpool for home, late in the autumn, visits were paid to my mother's nieces, the daughters of the late John A. Black, at Birkenhead, and to her niece, Mrs. Samuel Adams, daughter of her eldest brother, Benjamin E. Black, at Kingstown, near Dublin, Ireland.

From this, his last visit to the Old Country, my father derived infinite satisfaction, and its reminiscences never ceased to delight him. He was also greatly benefited in health by the travel and rest, as also by the medical treatment he received.

At this period the family were spending the winters in Halifax, not far from the Hollis Street office, in order that my father might escape the rigors of the season as far as possible, and especially the exposure incident to crossing the harbor in the ferry boats, in which he was often obliged to remain outside in bad weather to attend to his horse. But the hotel and boarding house life was not congenial to him, and he hailed with delight the advent of the spring, when he could return to the spacious quarters at "Beechwood" and the comforts of his own home. I have rarely known anyone who enjoyed the pleasures of home and domestic comforts as did he,—anyone to whom home meant so much. I think this practice of city hibernation began about 1884, but was not submitted to for more than five winters. His domestic spirit then rebelled against this alteration in his habits of life, and he concluded that he could better tolerate exposure to inclement weather, even though this aggravated his bodily ailment, than forego the comforts and joys of his home life in the winter months.

About this time it was that he began gradually to unburden himself of directorships in companies and of private trusteeships, which were growing too onerous for his impaired strength. On the 6th of January, 1888, for instance, he resigned his place on the directorate of the Halifax Gas Light Company, after many years' service. About the same time the Halifax and Dartmouth Steam Boat Company, of which he was President, sold out its entire undertaking, and this proved to him a salutary relief. To fiduciary offices of a charitable or philanthropic character he adhered longer, giving to them the preferential claim upon his services.

His physical vigor, as yet, was not impaired to any great degree, for I recall that in January, 1888, he accompanied me to New York, where we remained two weeks, and that during this time he was able to undergo considerable exertion with but little pain or inconvenience. However, he was obliged to take the greatest care of himself, and at this time it may be said he had become almost a valetudinarian in his habits of life.

In December, 1888, the *Maritime Medical News* was instituted by some of the junior medical men of Halifax. To show his sympathy with the enterprise he contributed to some of the earlier numbers. In the second number (January, 1889) is found a communication from him on the hygienic features of the Halifax sewerage system, and in other early numbers there are references to cases at the Provincial and City Hospital with which his name is associated either as operator or as consulting surgeon. But he was not connected with the paper, and deemed it better to leave this work to the care of younger men. This was the second venture into the field of medical journalism in Halifax. The first journal, conducted chiefly by the late Dr. W. B. Slayter, was published about twenty years earlier, but as it did not receive the full support of the profession, survived only two or three issues.

In 1888 was organized also the Nova Scotia Branch of the British Medical Association, meeting in Halifax, monthly. My father was its President in 1890. By the fourth annual report (September, 1891), it appears that up to that time this Association had held its meetings in his offices, which, owing to the growth in membership, had then become too small for the purpose. He was a frequent attendant and contributor to the discussions at these meetings. From a report of proceedings at the meeting in January, 1891 (incidentally found in the *Maritime Medical News*) I extract the following brief summary of his remarks in a discussion of a paper on "The Relation of Membranous Croup to Diphtheria."

"Hon. Dr. Parker regarded membranous croup and diphtheria as identical. He attached great importance to the well established fact that mucous, unlike serous membranes, do not, when inflamed by simple irritants, pour out upon their surface a fibrous membrane. When such occurs a specific agent plays a part. As a special point he referred to a case where he was called upon to assist a medical man in performing tracheotomy. The operator believed the case to be one of membranous croup. Dr. Parker dissented, believing the case to be one of diphtheria, though there was not the slightest sign of membrane visible, nor evidence of the malady in the neighborhood. The son of the operator was placed in charge, and sat up with the child the first night. A few days after, symptoms of diphtheria set in and unfortunately proved fatal; nearly all present were familiar with the circumstance.

"He referred to a paper he read many years ago describing an epidemic of what was certainly diphtheria which extended from Maine to Florida in the early part of the last century. He also described an epidemic of putrid sore throat which prevailed through the western part of Nova Scotia about fifty years ago. His knowledge of the matter was obtained from very reliable authorities."

Another example of his contributions to the work of this Association is found in the *News* report of the meeting of February, 1891, at which he discussed cases of femoral aneurism which he had had in his practice. But these illustrations of his connection with the work of the Branch of the British Medical Association must suffice, though it may be added that because of his great experience gained through so many years of practice and assiduous study, he was deemed one of its most valued members, and could illumine any subject under discussion by his contribution to it.

On July 3rd and 4th, 1889, the annual meeting of the Nova Scotia Medical Society was held in Halifax, when my father took a prominent part in the discussions, and read what proved to be his last prepared paper delivered at any meeting of medical societies. It dealt with "Cheloid"—a rare malignant disease—and aroused much interest in the profession. This paper was published by request, in the *Maritime Medical News* for November, 1889. In the second Appendix ("B") to this Memoir will be found two of his earliest public addresses, the first of them dating back to the twenty-third year of his age. In another Appendix ("C") will appear this last of his formal addresses, delivered forty-three years later.

Many earlier papers read by him before various medical societies have not been preserved, perhaps, in part, because there was no medical journalism in the Province to perform such an office for the profession. At this stage of his life, when physical infirmity was imposing limitations upon his energies, he was passing on such work to his juniors, but almost to the end of his career, he continued faithfully to attend the meetings of various medical organizations, when the place of meeting and the state of his health would permit, and was an attentive and sympathetic hearer, while contributing out of his experience and knowledge to the impromptu discussions upon the papers which were read by others.

Some few years before this time, in the old Waverly Hotel, formerly the residence built by Chief Justice Blowers, at the corner of Barrington and Blowers Streets, had been established the Victoria Infirmary, a private institution under charge of Sisters of Charity, for reception of patients requiring surgical or medical treatment. In 1887 the name was changed to "The Halifax Infirmary" in consequence of the Government having changed the name of the Provincial and City Hospital to that of the "Victoria General Hospital," in commemoration of the Queen's Jubilee. In 1889 the staff of the Halifax Infirmary was as follows:

"Consulting Surgeon—Hon. D. McN. Parker, M.D.

"Attending Surgeons—Edward Farrell, M.D.; John F. Black, M.D.; William Tobin, M.D., and W. B. Slayter, M.D."

My father, I think, occupied this position on the staff from the inception of the Infirmary. He filled it for some years. After his retirement from practice, upon visiting the fine addition to the building, on the south, when completed, the enthusiastic reception tendered him by the Sisters of Charity eloquently testified to the affectionate esteem in which he was held by this managing body of the Institution.

The Maritime Medical Association, having for its constituency the three Maritime Provinces, was formed in 1890, under the presidency of the veteran Dr. William Bayard of St. John, N.B.

My father, who was among the promoters of this organization, attended its first annual meeting, at St. John, on July 23rd, 1891, and was there elected its second president. In the month preceding he visited Toronto, Providence and Newport (Rhode Island) on a vacation tour with my mother.

In August of this year he attended at Moncton, N.B., the annual meeting of the Baptist Convention of the Maritime Provinces, and, on the way inspected properties for the Nova Scotia Permanent Benefit Building Society and Savings Fund, at Amherst, Maccan, the Joggins Mines, as also at Moncton. This duty for the Building Society was one he frequently performed, and it may be said here that in valuing real estate, anywhere, he was remarkably accurate and successful. This was but one phase of a general business capacity which made him what might be termed a many-sided man. After the Convention he visited his sister Sophia, then living with her daughter, Mrs. Dr. Warneford, at Hampton, N.B. Family visits there and at Amherst, where lived the widow and children of his brother Foster, were made as often as opportunity would permit.

On the 11th of March, 1892, he severed his long connection with the Nova Scotia P. B. Building Society and Savings Fund, upon which occasion the late Mr. Robie Uniacke, one of the trustees of the Institution, spoke as follows, according to the minutes of the meeting of Trustees and Directors at which the resignation was presented:

“Mr. Uniacke said that he could not permit Dr. Parker to retire, without expressing to him, on behalf of the Board of Trustees,—and he also spoke for their associates, the Directors,—the high appreciation they had of his services in the interests of the Society, and he could not help feeling, whatever action the Board might take, that the withdrawal of Dr. Parker was a serious loss to the Society.

“Identified as he had been with it for many years, his ripe experience of its working, coupled with his broad knowledge of this country and its interests, had made him an almost indispensable factor in its success. He felt that it was fortunate that this Society should be presided over by one whose strict integrity

and high moral worth were so conspicuous. The financial value of Dr. Parker to the Institution was in itself of no slight importance.

"Mr. Uniacke referred to the very pleasant relations that had always existed between the retiring President and the officers and members of the Institution; and he trusted that the same harmony of feeling and unity of action which Dr. Parker had done so much to promote and maintain, would ever characterize the Society."

The following resolution was then passed:

"Whereas the Hon. Dr. Parker has resigned the office of President and Director of this Society,—Therefore resolved, that this Board regrets exceedingly parting with their esteemed President, and desire to minute their high appreciation of the deep interest he has always taken, and the earnest efforts he has ever put forth to promote the welfare of the Institution, and we trust that while parting from him officially, we may still have the much valued assistance of his extended knowledge and wise counsel."

This tribute from business colleagues when severing relations with them is given place here, as typical. There were many other such expressions.

The second annual meeting of the Maritime Medical Association was held at Halifax on July 6th, 1892, but my father, in consequence of ill health, was not present to perform the duties of President. He had reluctantly gone away in June for a season of rest and recuperation, and after a brief stay in Cambridge, Mass., had found a place of retirement in the village of New London in the mountainous region of New Hampshire, where for three weeks or more he escaped the oppressive heat of an unusually trying summer.

He had served for twenty years as a member of the Provincial Medical Board, and for three years previous to this time was its President. Before leaving home on this occasion of rest, he felt it incumbent upon him to reduce his labors by resigning this office. In connection with this resignation, the following letters were exchanged between him and the Secretary of the Board, Dr. Lindsay:

"PROVINCIAL MEDICAL BOARD OF NOVA SCOTIA.

"Office of Registrar,
"241 Pleasant Street,

"HALIFAX, N.S., June 26th, 1892.

HON. D. McN. PARKER, M.D., ETC.,

"DEAR SIR,—I have been directed by the annual meeting of the Provincial Medical Board held on Wednesday the 20th inst., to express to you the regret which each member feels in that you

have found it necessary to sever your connection with the Board, and to convey to you the thanks of all for your long and valuable services to the profession, both as a member and more recently as its esteemed President.

"Hoping that change of scene and rest will do much to restore your bodily vigor and that you may yet be long spared to witness the results of your past labors in raising the educational standard and in promoting the dignity of our honorable profession in this Province,

"I am, with much esteem,

"Yours very truly,

"(Sgd.) A. W. H. LINDSAY."

"DARTMOUTH, June 28th, 1892.

"A. W. H. LINDSAY, M.D.,

"Sec'y Prov. Med. Board of Nova Scotia,

"DEAR DOCTOR LINDSAY,—I beg to acknowledge the receipt of your letter of the 26th inst. relating to my retirement from the Provincial Medical Board of Nova Scotia, which letter gives expression to the kind friendly feelings entertained for me by my Brethren in the Profession, with whom I was so long associated in the management of the important interests entrusted to our care by the Legislature and Government of the Province.

"At your next meeting will you be good enough to return them my warmest thanks for this brotherly token of remembrance. Both as an ordinary member and President of the Board I have to express my gratitude to my late colleagues for the harmonious character of our meetings and for their hearty and manly co-operation in carrying on the work of the institution, often under circumstances of a trying character, when, not infrequently, duty demanded that justice and the law should be sustained at the expense of personal feelings and friendship.

"Humanly speaking, the years that remain to me will be but few, but while here I shall continue to take a warm interest in the work of the Provincial Medical Board.

"I cannot conclude this brief note without expressing my thanks to you personally for the able, laborious and satisfactory manner in which you have ever performed the duties pertaining to the office of Secretary; and I may add that, for the years I occupied the President's chair, I could not help feeling that you were the chief foundation stone, upholding an institution connected with which are most important public and professional interests.

"Yours truly,

"(Sgd.) D. McN. PARKER."

The time had now arrived when physical disorders were becoming more insistent and acute. Occasional brief periods arrived

when he could not leave the house. At times, the motion of a carriage would cause him pain, and exposure to cold increasingly affected him. His general vigor of body began to decline, and he was more easily fatigued. His vision, too, was becoming impaired. He now found it necessary to visit New York yearly for medical treatment and relief by specialists.

These circumstances he calmly accepted as warning intimations that soon he must lay off the harness, disarm, retire from the ranks and leave it to younger men of his profession to close up the gap and continue the conflict with sickness, disease and death. His had been a strenuous share in this war for many years, and it had well-nigh worn him out. He had achieved a large measure of success as a leader in the work of his life. He had earned the right to his discharge now, when there was some expectation that he might enjoy a few years of a restful old age, though the happiness of these years might be qualified by bodily infirmities. It is truth to add, he could retire from active service bearing an escutcheon which never bore a stain.

The years 1893 and 1894 saw him engaged as usual, but with a little less activity, and apart from the customary routine of duty and occasional short absences from home for change and rest, or to attend some professional or denominational gathering, there seems nothing of special interest or importance to record concerning these years. In the summer of 1893 he spent a vacation season in eastern Nova Scotia with my sister Fanny. Her reminiscence of this outing will be found in the Appendix "A." In October of that year, as visitor for the Baptist Convention of the Maritime Provinces, he inspected the Baptist educational institution at Grand Ligne, in the Province of Quebec.

The first day of August, 1895, would mark half a century from his entrance upon his professional career. He resolved, just when I cannot tell, to round out that period of practice and retire on that date.

In the spring of 1895, he took quite an extended vacation with a family party. The main purpose of this was that he might receive some special medical treatment at Johns Hopkins Hospital in Baltimore. I am indebted to Rev. Dr. Chute, of Acadia University, who was then pastor of the First Baptist Church, Halifax, for the following letter written to him by my father from Baltimore, at that time:

" BALTIMORE, M^d., April 14th, 1895.

" Dear Brother Chute:

" I notice by the *Herald* of last Saturday week that you were to fill your own pulpit on the following Sunday; so I suppose you are again at home and at work as usual.

" I do not expect that you would be mentally rested by your

brief sojourn in Stewiacke, as, if I understand you correctly, you intended burdening yourself with the preparation of some literary work for publication. Possibly a variety of this nature may tax you less than the ever-recurring preparation of sermons for our people. However, I would advise you when you revisit your old home, to make the days spent there days of mental as well as physical rest. I trust you found your mother well. Doubtless the occasion was one of great pleasure to you both. I can well remember the enjoyment it gave me in the lifetime of my parents, to drive once—generally twice—a year to my old home in Hants County. It did me good to see and know that these visits added to their happiness. With me these pleasant drives terminated long years ago—when they were called from earth to heaven.

“We embarked on the ‘Carthaginian’ on Thursday afternoon between 5 and 6 o’clock, with the expectation of sailing shortly after that time, but the night was a wild one, and a storm of snow came upon us, so that we did not cast off from the wharf until after six o’clock the next morning. Our passage to Philadelphia was exceedingly rough and tedious, and instead of getting into port on Sunday afternoon, we did not get off the ship until 3 p.m. on Monday. We were all sick and greatly shaken up, but my poor wife suffered more than all the rest of us put together, and is only now beginning to feel ‘herself’ again. This ends our journeyings by sea. I had hoped to have crossed the Atlantic once more with her, to have visited again the grave of my poor boy in Edinburgh, and taken a last farewell of many old and dear friends resident in Great Britain; but after the experience of our short voyage of the other day, I feel that I can never ask her to accompany me; and I cannot go without her.

“Our first Sunday after landing was spent in this city, and remembering that my old friend, Dr. Ellis, only recently retired from the Eutaw Place Baptist Church, I assumed they would be likely to have an able man as his successor. So I found the place. The house was small and unpretending and the congregation far from large. They have no regular pastor yet and the man who filled the pulpit was a Chinese missionary—not long returned from his sphere of labor. He was *slow* but sensible—and did not take up the subject of missions at all; and this we regretted, as, no doubt, he could have given us much in connection with this matter that would have pleased and gratified us all. Today—Easter Sunday—Mrs. Parker, Miss Black and myself went to a very large Methodist church, which I think will accommodate 1,500 in its pews, and it was literally packed. The organ and singing charmed us. The pastor, who is Dr. or Mr. Townshend, gave us a fair sermon in connection with the Resurrection. It was historic and all the main features of that great event were briefly

dwelt upon. While it contained no new matter, the subject was well arranged and put together, so as to interest the congregation. The floral exhibition and new bonnets must have diverted the attention of many. Large sums of money were wasted on both. The Methodist body is large in Baltimore and apparently rich. Here, Mrs. Parker's grandfather preached in the early days of his ministry. The church attended by us belongs to the Methodist Episcopal Church—but aside from the flowers and bonnets I saw nothing to remind me of Episcopacy. The church structure, however, is grand and elegant as well as capacious. People here don't know much about the Baptists and I see but few places of worship that they recognize as belonging to our body.

"I have been under the charge of Dr. Osler—formerly of Montreal, who is the senior physician of Johns Hopkins Hospital—an old friend and both able and practical. He and a Dr. Brown of the same hospital have very kindly been advising me as to treatment and care in the future, as well as now.

We go to Washington next week for a few days, where the weather is finer and warmer than here. I still feel the changes in the weather and temperature very much, and enjoy sticking my feet in the fire. I hope in Washington to be able to leave off some of my winter togger.

"From Washington we will go to New York for a time, and when you can change the temperature in Halifax, our flag will be again the Union Jack. I shall be glad to be back once more in my own home in Dartmouth. Moving about the world in former years had great attractions for me, it was an educational process, and even hotel life was enjoyable; but those days have passed away, and the earthly home, which should be an emblem of that which is eternal, is yearned for, and even thus early in my absence from it I am looking forward to my return to it with pleasure. The three score years and ten are passed, and in two weeks from to-day, if I live to see it, I shall have entered upon my 74th year. My life, which has been a long one, has, for rapidity, passed as a shadow, and that which remains of it, when the end shall be present, will be shorter still; but, thanks be to God, which giveth us the victory—through the blood of His Son—I hope and am assured that I then shall change the fleeting for that which is enduring, an eternity of happiness; and shall be forever with the Lord, my Saviour.

"I trust this will find you and yours happy and well, and our church in a good, sound and prosperous condition. I constantly have you and them on my mind, and heart, and my daily prayer is, that God may ever be with you and them. Mrs. Parker and Fanny join in love to Ella and yourself.

"Ever yours faithfully,

"(Sgd.) D. McN. PARKER."

In June, I joined the party on their homeward way, in New York, where, as in Boston and elsewhere on the return tour, he was in unusually good health and spirits, and entered heartily into the sight-seeing and other pleasures of the occasion. I well remember his unconcealed and almost youthful amusement when we induced him to make the voyage around the ponds in Central Park, New York, on one of those absurd "swan-boats" to be found there. In September of that year I was again with him in New York. Then we both were subjects for special medical treatment.

The incidents connected with the first of August, 1895, must be left to a separate chapter.

CHAPTER XI.

THE JUBILEE.

"He is the happy man, whose life even now
Shows somewhat of that happier life to come."
—Cowper.

On the morning of the first day of August, 1895, fifty years from the day when he was capped "Doctor" at Edinburgh, he went to his office for the last time, and there spent the forenoon superintending the removal of his library and other effects to his house, including the time-worn brass door-plate (his "shingle") which had a long history of its own.

Into the emotions and reflections of those significant hours it is not for us to enter.

His surgical instruments, with few exceptions, he distributed among brother practitioners and the hospitals. Other professional paraphernalia followed the same course.

His medical confrères, aware of his intention, had signified their earnest wish to celebrate the day by waiting upon him with congratulations and an address. Much as he deprecated any public notice of his retirement, this graceful compliment could not but be accepted. This event I record in a typical press notice, of the day following; adding to this an example of other press references of the time, expressive of public opinion as to my father's life and character. One other such reference will be found in my paper of earlier date. I deem it well to let other men praise him, that his posterity may the better understand what their ancestor was, in his profession and in character.

The *Halifax Morning Chronicle* thus reported the presentation of the address:

HON. DR. PARKER'S JUBILEE.

Fifty Remembered Yesterday by the Physicians of Halifax and Dartmouth—Address Presented—Dr. Parker's Reply.

As already announced Hon. Dr. Parker yesterday completed fifty years of active practice in the medical profession, in which he has attained eminence as a physician, won the esteem and confidence of his professional confrères and the goodwill of all with whom he came in contact, whether in his personal or professional relations. The occasion was deemed a fitting one by the medical men of Halifax and Dartmouth to congratulate Dr. Parker on reaching his professional jubilee, and to

tender him a token of their esteem. Consequently, yesterday afternoon, the following medical men waited upon Dr. Parker, at his residence in Dartmouth, for the purpose of conveying to him their congratulations in a united and formal manner: Drs. Farrell, Lindsay, Dodge, Black, Campbell, Chisholm, Curry, Trenaman, Jones, Gow, Hawkins, Purcell, Kirkpatrick, Goodwin, Silver, Mader, Murray, Somers, Tobin, W. F. Smith, Anderson, Millsom and Walsh. Drs. Fitch and DeWolfe also called in the afternoon, but were unable to remain, while a number of others were prevented attending owing to pressing professional engagements.

Dr. Farrell, by request, occupied the chair, stated the object of the gathering, and in choice and appropriate language conveyed to Dr. Parker the greetings of himself and his confrères. He then called upon Dr. Jones, who read the following complimentary address:

"To the Honorable Daniel McNeill Parker, M.D., M.L.C., etc.

"SIR,—We, the medical profession of Halifax and Dartmouth, cannot let pass the fiftieth anniversary of your graduation day without giving expression to our great appreciation of the eminent professional attainments and personal qualities which have characterized your career during the past half century.

"In all branches of the science and art of medicine great advances have been made during this period of time, and it is a matter of sincere gratification to us to know that amidst all these evolutions you have ever been found in touch with the times; a diligent student in a progressive science.

"The appreciation of your skill and knowledge has been shown by your medical brethren in the fact that you have held all the high offices in the medical societies and organizations of this province, as well as the presidency of the Dominion Medical Association. Your interest in these associations has been active and practical, and their growth and stability have in many cases been due largely to your fostering care.

"In the course of a very busy life, devoted to the practice of medicine, during which you have been the guide, counsellor and friend of many families in this community, you have found time to be identified with the medical charities of this province. You occupied for many years a prominent position on the original commission which governed the affairs of the provincial and city hospital and of the poor's asylum and of late on the medical boards of the Victoria general hospital and the Halifax dispensary, always unceasingly giving your services to the relief of the suffering poor.

"Not only have those charities directly connected with our profession been benefited by aid and counsel from you but also the institution for the deaf and dumb, the home for the aged, the industrial school, the school for the blind, and others, with the growth of which you have been closely identified.

"Though the cares and responsibilities of your profession have been great, nevertheless you have not failed in your duty as a citizen, but have occupied for many years an influential position in the councils of your country. Amongst your other public services, you have guided and guarded all legislation referring to the medical profession in such a painstaking and careful manner that we feel the high and satisfactory position occupied by the profession to-day in Nova Scotia is due largely to your untiring zeal and rare good judgment. These services and those in connection with the provincial medical board are fully appreciated by medical practitioners from one end of Nova Scotia to the other.

"We can hardly express how much we esteem you for the kindness and consideration always manifested to your juniors. You have ever been ready to advise and help the young practitioner beginning his professional career; and there are not a few men amongst us who can never repay their debt of gratitude.

"It is also felt that the dignified position taken by you in relation to professional ethics has resulted in much benefit; and we hope that your example will be our guide in the future and will be long followed to the well-being of the public and of the profession.

"We beg that you will convey to Mrs. Parker and your family the assurances of our heartfelt wishes for their continued welfare. And in conclusion we assure you of our desire that you may long be spared to enjoy in your voluntary retirement from professional duties that repose and dignity which fitly crowns the declining years of a life so full of duties and honors.

"Dr. Parker, who was visibly affected by the spontaneous and cordial greeting extended to him, read a somewhat lengthy but deeply interesting reply, in which he reviewed the history and advances of medical science in this province, recalling many well-known names of those who have passed away, reciting the difficulties under which medical men labored in those comparatively primitive times, and giving many interesting reminiscences of his laborious and busy life of fifty years as a practising physician.

"Refreshments were then served to the company by the Doctor and his family, and after some time spent in social conversation, good-bye was said and the company separated, all being pleased that they had the opportunity of testifying their respect and esteem for 'Father' Parker, who has now definitely retired from the active work of his profession."

My father's reply to the address, as afterwards published in the *Maritime Medical News*, was as follows:—

Gentlemen:

You have done me the honor to present me with an address, on the occasion of the expiration of the 50th year of my professional life. I have listened with interested attention to your warm, friendly and courteous utterances, and have to express my heartfelt gratitude to you for these expressions of your feelings, to one who has for a longer or shorter portion of this half-century, been a co-laborer with many of you.

If, during that lengthy period, I have been instrumental, even to a very limited extent, in advancing the interests of the Medical Profession, or the community in which I have spent the greater part of my life, I am thankful that the opportunities were given me to co-operate with you, and others not of our profession, in striving to give relief and comfort to those who required it; and to impart an education to those who have unhappily been deprived of the ordinary means of receiving instruction.

At the outset you must permit me to say, and to say emphatically, that your estimate of my career and work, is far in excess of that which I should be credited with. Kindness of heart and personal friendship have prompted you to put the case more strongly than I (who am not infrequently in the habit of looking in upon the inner man, and surveying my past work) can subscribe to.

The nature of the occasion would seem to suggest that I should

make some reference to my earlier professional life, and the environments of the men who practised in this city and province fifty or sixty years ago; and, at the same time touch briefly on some of the changes that have occurred in the profession, and professional work, in more recent times.

As was the custom, in the days of my boyhood, I was indentured, as a Student of Medicine, to Dr. William Bruce Almon, father of Senator Almon, than whom, both as a physician and a citizen, no man in the province stood higher. He was health officer of the port and in the performance of his duty, when visiting an emigrant ship, contracted a malignant form of fever, and in 1840 died at the comparatively early age of fifty-two. He fell, as years after John Slayter fell, on board the cholera ship "England," in the service of his country.

Fifty years ago in July, I received the Diploma of the Royal College of Surgeons, Edinburgh, and on the first day of August, 1845, I graduated as a physician at the University of that city. The effort to obtain the qualifications necessary to commence the practice of medicine and surgery being over—the "capping" ceremony, and annual address to the graduates—full of sound advice, and kind expressions—having been brought to a close, I was cast adrift from college life (with a large number of young men from other lands) and thrown upon my own resources.

I well remember the reaction that followed the excitement of that day; when alone in my apartment, I discussed with myself the outlook for the future.

I had been drinking at one of the principal fountains of medical knowledge in the mother country, and, taking kindly to the work, had greatly enjoyed the opportunities there afforded me. Nothing would have given me greater pleasure, or done me more good, than to have continued under the educational wing of my "alma mater" for a longer period, and there taken advantage of the opportunities afforded one, of pursuing post graduate studies; with the ulterior object of possibly making that city my professional home.

I was fully impressed with the fact, that notwithstanding the long coveted licensing parchments were then in my possession, I in reality had, after years of hard work, but an imperfect knowledge of several of the branches of the profession of my choice—and this prompted an ardent desire for more. But!—and how often this little word of three letters crosses the track of man and his desires—but. "I was not born with a silver spoon in my mouth," and consequently ere long found myself on the Atlantic; and in accord with Horace Greeley's oft-quoted suggestion, "Young man, go west," I came west, returned to my own land, and promptly entered upon the active duties of my pro-

fession in this city—a general practitioner, as were all my confrères of that period. The population of Halifax, then, was only about 18,000 and of the province 250,000. The only substitute for a hospital was the Poor's Asylum, a large brick structure, standing near the corner of Queen Street and Spring Garden Road, and in its immediate neighborhood, facing on Queen Street, was the old Bridewell or House of Correction, the ancient forerunner of Rockhead.

It was at this Poor House, under the direction of Dr. Almon, that I began "to learn the rudiments," drew first blood, and ere long became the Phlebotomist of the house. Those were the days when the lancet (now an almost forgotten surgical instrument) was in constant use.

It was several years after this that "Mount Hope Asylum," for the care and treatment of the insane in Nova Scotia, was commenced at Dartmouth. When its southern wing was completed, a large number of those who were most likely to be benefited by treatment, in a modern asylum, were removed from the Poor House to Dartmouth. Prior to this, the home for the poor of Halifax was the only place within the province where the insane could be cared for and retained; and it was a happy day for these unfortunates, when the foundation stone of this much desired and longed for institution was laid.

In addition to the Poor House, there stood on Granville Street, immediately in the rear of the ground now occupied by the Bank of Montreal, a very small institution known as the Halifax Dispensary. It was in a small room, in an old and diminutive house, and its work was done on a small scale. Dr. Gregor was instrumental in establishing it, and for years was in sole charge. I was associated with him for a short time; but in such quarters, with a grant of only £50 annually for all purposes, not much work could be accomplished, and when it was destroyed by fire the loss to the community was unimportant.

This was in time succeeded by another on the west side of Argyle Street, near to Duke Street. It was better equipped, on a larger scale, and did more satisfactory work; but it did not live long.

In 1845 the Poor House and Dispensary No. 1 were the only institutions connected with medicine and surgery in the city or province, and I need hardly add that the facilities for acquiring pathological knowledge, or for growth in any other department of our science, were extremely meagre.

New standard works were comparatively few, and medical periodicals were not then, as now, poured down upon us. Post mortem examinations were rarely held, because of the almost universal hostility of the outside public. The stethoscope was begin-

ning to be used, and was possessed, for practical purposes, only by the younger men.

The microscope, in its relations to professional research, was not in those days an instrument in practical use in Nova Scotia.

The ophthalmoscope and other scopes for illumining and bringing into view some of the dark recesses of the human organism may have been dreamed of, but they were not then begotten.

Before my day there had been a medical society or societies in Halifax, but incompatibility in its professional material rather than lack of ability brought it, or them, to an untimely end. I am glad to say that no such results have followed the more recent establishment of such organizations in our city, and as far as I know the work of the county societies of our Province has not been thus interrupted. To-day we have a "Halifax Branch of the British Medical Association." For many years past an efficient Provincial Society has existed, but a union of this with similar institutions in New Brunswick and Prince Edward Island has resulted in the formation of "The Maritime Medical Association," which in the two or three years of its existence has brought to the front several men of marked ability who had already established local reputations, but hereafter their names and professional standing will be recognized over more extended areas. Many years ago a futile effort was made in this city to establish a medical periodical, but the field was too small and the staying powers of the originators insufficient to keep it afloat. But the *Maritime Medical News*, under the patronage of the Maritime Medical Association, has, I feel assured, "come to stay," and although in bulk not large, it is really a very useful and well conducted journal, and one that should be sustained by its comparatively large constituency in the three provinces.

Things are wonderfully changed since the "forties" opened upon us, not only as regards the principles and practice of medicine and surgery, but also in the provisions made by the Government and the public for the treatment, comfort and welfare of the sick of our province and city. To-day we have one of the best-equipped hospitals in the Dominion, sufficiently large for present requirements, and with unoccupied ground surrounding it that will admit of almost any extension. Here, I am free to say, much advanced and important work is being done, by a very proficient and able professional staff.

In former years much of our surgery—difficult and complicated cases especially—went to the United States, in consequence of the want of such an institution; but this drain has been largely interrupted by the marked success which has attended the operative treatment of the gentlemen in charge of the surgical side of the house.

A few years since, an efficient and well managed institution, known as the "Halifax Infirmary," was established by an organized body of Roman Catholic ladies—Sisters of Charity—in which a large number of medical and still greater number of surgical cases have been treated with very satisfactory results. In the latter department abdominal surgery has predominated. This private hospital has also performed quite an important part in staying the United Statesward current in serious surgical cases, many of which, without it, would have crossed the line, in consequence of the great objection our people have to enter a *public* institution here at home.

Again, I am glad to say that we have *now* a well equipped public dispensary, where valuable work in the several departments of medicine is performed within the institution, and also, in connection with it, at the homes of the poor and helpless.

I have said that all the medical men in Halifax when I joined them in 1845 were general practitioners. Specialists did not exist. Many of them did their own surgical work, and in country districts, far removed from the city, they had occasionally to perform important operations alone, unaided and under the most unfavorable circumstances; as was the case with Avery on one occasion, on the eastern shore, in a hut or very small house, in the middle of the night, with only a "tallow dip" or candle to give him light to operate on a strangulated inguinal hernia. The man's life was saved by the promptitude and pluck of the surgeon. Diseases of the eye, ear and throat, in short, all cases presenting themselves, were treated by them.

Operations for cataract fifty or sixty years ago, when the patient could afford it, were generally performed by Guthrie of London, who is credited with saying that a man would destroy a bushel of eyes before he became an expert and successful operator.

The late Dr. W. B. Webster, of Kentville, was the first surgeon in Nova Scotia, if I am correctly informed, who successfully operated for cataract. It was in 1836. Now we have several oculists in the capital, and the operation is of frequent occurrence.

Operative surgery may be said to be almost a specialty here, as the more important and serious cases are dealt with by a few men.

But few of the surgeons now living in Nova Scotia can have anything like a correct idea of the difficulties which had to be contended with in operative surgery half a century ago. In protracted and painful operations the patient had often to be strapped to or held on the table by continuous muscular effort on the part of assistants.

It was soon after operating on a distressing case of this character (which operation I was obliged to finish on the floor, as it

was impossible to restrain and keep a man of his strength quiet on the table from which he had thrown himself), that I became aware of the fact of the discovery, at Boston, of sulphuric ether as an anæsthetic.

Lawrence VanBuskirk, a dentist, practising in Halifax at the time, as soon as he learned that ether was being used by inhalation there in practical dentistry, with commendable enterprise visited Boston and familiarized himself with its use. On his return, having a case that required amputation of the femur, I went to VanBuskirk's office, and, after discussing the matter fully, asked him to administer ether to me, that I might personally have some knowledge of its action. He consented; and very shortly the exciting stage was upon me, and I was floating through space, suspended or upheld like Mahomet's coffin, between heaven and earth. My actions alarmed him, as he was yet but a novice in its administration, and he did not carry on the experiment to its full results. The next day he, VanBuskirk, gave my patient ether, and in two or three minutes she was unconscious and insensible to pain. The limb was amputated, the wound dressed, and the poor woman taken from the table to her bed; and while my professional friends and I were discussing the prompt and happy results which had attended the use of the anæsthetic, a voice came from the bed, "Give me a little more, doctor, a little more, for I am not yet asleep." I told her the operation was over and the limb removed. For a time she was incredulous, but when she fully took in the situation she was overcome with gratitude, and in a well pronounced Hibernian dialect expressed her thanks to God and then to the medical men who surrounded her. I, too, felt very grateful, when it was thus practically demonstrated to me that exemption from suffering could be promised to thousands and millions, who in the future should seek to be relieved by the surgeon's knife. This, I believe, was the first case operated on in Nova Scotia under an anæsthetic.

The senior practitioners in Halifax in 1845 were Robert Hume, Mathias Hoffman (both retired naval surgeons), James F. Avery, Frederic Morris, William Gregor, James C. Hume (son of Robert) and Alexander Sawers.

The juniors were Thomas Sterling, Rufus Black, Wm. J. Almon, Charles Cogswell, James R. DeWolfe, Edward Jennings and James Allan (who graduated with me at Edinburgh). The above, with one exception, studied in Great Britain, thirteen of them at Edinburgh, one took a partial course in Dublin and graduated subsequently in New York. When I cast in my lot with the above gentlemen I was the junior in age and rank. Now all but Senator Almon and Dr. DeWolfe have joined the great majority, and we three only remain to tell the story of medicine in our city half a century ago.

I have referred to Great Britain, and especially to Edinburgh, as the educational source from whence the capital in olden times was supplied with medical men.

The towns and larger villages in the out-districts of the Province derived their supply in the main from the same schools. The most of them were members or licentiates of the Royal Colleges of Surgeons of Edinburgh, London and Dublin; and among them a few came from one or other of the public services of the United Kingdom. Those coming to our new country from these several sources were generally well educated and intelligent men, and often exerted, aside from their professional position and work, an elevating and salutary influence on the communities where they lived and labored. In the early history of medicine in Nova Scotia the "regular practitioner" had to contend with empirics to a much greater extent than in more recent times.

These men were generally illiterate, but shrewd and insinuating, and would sometimes exert no small amount of influence on the simple-minded settlers, prejudicing seriously the interests of the qualified men and in many instances largely reducing the already meagre incomes of the latter.

In those districts where the schoolmaster had not been much abroad—the present public school system did not then exist—the illiterate people were often led almost to believe that the educated man was the quack, while *he* had been born a doctor, and had received his knowledge of the healing art by intuition.

I could narrate from personal experience many incidents—some of them amusing, and others again quite the contrary—in connection with these *outside and would-be* members of the profession, who had sought an entrance to the fold by irregular and more than doubtful modes; but here I will only, by the way of illustration, call up, and that in a few words, a single instance.

The reference is to one of this class of illegitimate practitioners, who had obtained a diploma from a western United States manufactory, whose portals had never been darkened by his presence, but on remitting \$100 or \$150, with a commendatory letter signed by several of his neighbors, received from the authorities of the so-called medical school the document asked for—a diploma. The application, or rather, I should say, the accompanying dollars, brought the required parchment, and the man became thereby Dr. ——. These facts were given me by one of the persons whose signature was attached to the letter.

Not long after this I was asked to see a patient some seventy miles from the city, who was said to be seriously ill with pneumonia. On my arrival there I found the lungs entirely free from disease. The case was one of "Herpes Zoster," the eruption occupying an intercostal space or two over one of the lungs.

I had travelled only a few miles on my return journey when I was stopped by an inmate of a farmhouse, who asked me to see a young child suffering severely from a "rupture." I found on examination a retained testis, covered by a truss with a strong steel spring. The error in diagnosis was explained, the instrument of torture discarded, and the mother and child made happy.

Both these cases were under the treatment of the man above referred to. These dupes, as well as very many others, ere long reached the conclusion that it was cheaper and better for them to discard quacks, and when necessary obtain the services of regularly qualified practitioners.

The Medical Act of 1872, and the amendments thereof, have been largely instrumental in decreasing the number of empirics. The preliminary examination and the other several parts of the curriculum demanded by this Act *must be* complied with; and the result has been not only to weed out irregular practitioners, but to give to the Province a better educated, and hence a more reliable, class of professional men.

It has been so long since I sat as a member of the "Medical Board," that I think I may be permitted here, without making myself amenable to the charge of egotism, to congratulate the Province and profession on the work performed in recent times by this "body," in so faithfully and judiciously carrying out the provisions of the Act, without fear or favor—always having uppermost in their minds the public interest. I have made the statement that half a century ago, and more, Great Britain furnished by far the larger number of the duly qualified men in this Province.

The statistics relating to this matter of supply are now marvellously changed.

The official "Medical Register" for the present year gives the full number on the list as 387; of these 29 graduated in England, Ireland and Scotland; 258 in the United States; 100 in the different schools of the Dominion of Canada. Included in the latter are a few names, I think not exceeding half a dozen, who were licensed to practise under special legislative provisions prior and subsequent to the passage of the Act of 1872.

Of the whole number on the "Register" for 1895 (387), there were practising at the date of its issue, in Nova Scotia, 335; and in other portions of British America, the United States and elsewhere, 52, the places of residence of five being unknown. The question naturally arises, why this *decrease* in the number of British and the remarkable *increase* of United States graduates? In the consideration of this subject several matters are involved, some of which I will briefly refer to.

First. Several of the leading schools in the larger cities of the

United States have in recent years risen to eminence, and now compare favorably with the best institutions of the kind in Europe. The country (the United States) both in area and population is large. It has acquired enormous wealth, and both private and public funds are freely and generously given that the hospitals may not be surpassed by those of other lands, and that every appliance may be provided to aid in restoring the sick to health, and in imparting the most advanced practical and scientific instruction to the thousands of young men who flock to these universities and schools to obtain a professional education.

In the choice of teachers the greatest care is used to select able and practical men—working men with energy and “push,” as our neighbors express it, who are progressive, and never stand still.

Again, the curriculum, and the time required to complete it, and the general educational qualifications of those who are about to commence the study of medicine in these large and more important schools have been advanced, and it is now a *sine qua non* that in these respects the policy of British schools shall be carried out. The number of inferior and cheap schools in the United States is, however, still very large, and the competition which has heretofore existed will continue, and no doubt for a time will reduce the numerical strength of those which have thus added to their qualifying power, but in the nature of things that which is *superior* must eventually *increase*, while the *inferior*—unless their ways are mended—will with equal certainty decrease.

In considering the subject of our Medical Register, past and present, the question of the “Flags” seldom enters our thoughts. In the first half of the present century the national sentiment of the loyal Province of Nova Scotia would have turned the scale against the United States, if all things else had been equal.

It fell to my lot to be born nearer to 1812, and 1776, than most of the profession now living within our provincial limits; and I can call to mind how strong that sentiment was sixty years ago. Then the British schools and the degrees obtained from them ranked high, and were held in great esteem by our provincial public; while the standing of the comparatively small number of United States graduates who were practising here was depreciated, doubtless in some cases improperly and unjustly.

Literature and science, however, have a tendency to break down such feelings; and their votaries are generally the first to keep in abeyance or forget those disturbing elements within us which, if latitude were given them, would continue personal and national hostilities for generations. In some measure, then, we may attribute the diminished number of British graduates, and the strikingly large number of United States diplomas and degrees recorded on our provincial register, to the more generous sentiments

caused by the intermingling of men interested in literary, scientific and professional pursuits.

"A fellow feeling makes one wondrous kind," *Sometimes!*

Here permit me to refer to an instance where the national sentiment to which I have referred, was officially exhibited to a distinguished member of our profession, long years ago a practitioner in Nova Scotia. I refer to Dr. Robert Bayard (father of Dr. William Bayard, of St. John), who died in New Brunswick in 1868, in his eighty-first year.

He was a lieutenant in a regiment commanded by his father, retired from the army, studied in Edinburgh with my old friend and preceptor, William Bruce Almon, and graduated there in 1809. He was immediately appointed Professor of Obstetrics in the University of New York, where he remained until the war of 1812, "when he received notice to quit," and with military promptitude obeyed the order. He crossed from Portland, Maine, to St. John, New Brunswick, in an open boat, practised medicine in Kentville, N.S., for a few years, and then removed to St. John, where he became the leader and father of the profession in that city and province.

He was subsequently offered his old position in the University of New York, but declined to accept it. This case of Dr. Bayard's illustrates, first, the evil and prejudiced side of national sentiment, and at a later period its better and more pleasing features, which were brought, though late, into activity by the opposite or neutralizing sentiment of a scientific and professional brotherhood.

I would here say, parenthetically, that in connection with this change in the countries selected by our provincial young men, in which to qualify themselves for professional work, we are not to lose sight of the following considerations, the proximity of the two countries, the ready means of access, and the financial aspects of the case; the last very generally deciding the question.

I need hardly say that it has afforded me much gratification, in searching the records, to notice the large number of medical men whose names appear on the "Register" as graduates of our own Canadian schools, some of whom are recognized as among the ablest and best men in our provincial profession.

Another matter suggested by examining the register should not be permitted to pass without remark. It is that of the 258 who graduated in the United States, nine subsequently obtained diplomas or degrees from British schools. While of the one hundred holding Canadian qualifications, eight supplemented these in the same manner. The time, labor and money thus spent in acquiring these additional qualifications will, I feel assured, never be regretted; and the advantage will not be confined to the prac-

titioner alone, but his patients will also be partakers of the benefits resulting from the increased information and practical knowledge thus obtained.

There being no necessity on legal grounds to add to the qualifications already possessed by the gentlemen above referred to, similar and almost as satisfactory results may be obtained by frequently visiting (as I am glad to say many of our practitioners are doing), hospitals connected with the larger and more important schools in the United States and, without examinations, giving as much time and attention as possible to post-graduate studies. I can speak from experience on this matter, for in the past it has been my habit to often visit these institutions, and twenty years ago I was thus occupied at school again in Edinburgh for the greater part of eighteen months.

In a word, remembering the responsibilities connected with professional life, I may say that as the allied sciences of medicine and surgery are so rapidly advancing as the years go by, it becomes more than ever before a moral obligation devolving on our membership to lose no opportunity for thus adding to our store of practical knowledge.

MODES OF CONVEYANCE IN FORMER YEARS.

In the earlier years of my practice my journeys to the outlying sections of the county were made on horseback, and as soon as it became an object to economize time my city work was largely performed in the saddle.

Avery and Black, perhaps more than any of my confrères of that day, adopted this mode of visiting their patients. There were but three policemen in the city at that time—none of them young—who could never see so small an object as a doctor's horse when standing tethered on the sidewalk. The senior Hume, a man of more than six feet in height and large in proportion, even when quite advanced in life, reluctantly relinquished the saddle for a carriage. I do not remember ever to have seen his large and high horse when under the saddle increase his pace beyond a walk, and when he took to wheels his "coach was slow," and the wheels revolved more slowly still when the doctor had by his side his old shipmate Lord Dundonald, who for the usual term of years was admiral in command of the fleet on this station.

This prince among British sailors—bravest of the brave—was even a larger man than Hume. Both were Scotchmen of the olden time, and many's the "crack" these venerable men had as they drove between Admiralty House and Barrington Street, Hume's place of residence; the horse in the meantime, taking in the situation, would "gang his ain gait" while the two discussed the past, the scenes and events of their early sea life. Outside the

main roads leading to Annapolis, Pictou and Amherst, which were "from middling to fair," journeys were more comfortably made on horseback than in any other way. Along mail coach routes, when distant places had to be reached and urgency demanded it, I quite frequently travelled in a light carriage with coach horses, generally driving myself.

Greater comfort and economy of time were thus attained; but sometimes serious, and at other times amusing, incidents would occur to retard one's progress, in consequence of "an evil spirit" taking possession of the strange animals given me by the grooms at the different stations. When, as was occasionally my lot, for want of roads I had to be conveyed along the shores of the coast in a whaler propelled by the strong arms and willing hearts of a crew of fishermen, who never hesitated to drop their work, however urgent it might be, and ship their oars in haste, that they might convey relief to a fellow fisherman, or any member of his family, when sickness and suffering rendered medical assistance necessary; or when riding on horseback through bridle paths in unfamiliar country districts, facing a pelting storm of rain or snow, the story of the trials of the veterans who lived and labored far from the capital, during the last of the eighteenth and the early years of the present century—handed down by tradition—would be recalled, and although it was too late to sympathize with them, I would feelingly appreciate what they in their day and generation had endured. The hardships from exposure with me were only occasional, but my brethren of these earlier dates had to face them "year in and year out." Having my face washed by salt-water spray as I sat in the stern-sheets of a boat, or in a saddle wet and uncomfortable, had not the effect of making one "feel jolly under the circumstances," but the mentor within would suggest the contrast between *now and then*; between my general environments and those of my professional forerunners, just referred to, who often journeyed through forests where even bridle paths were absent, guided by "blazed" trees, and very frequently in winter long distances were covered, their feet not resting in stirrups, but encased in moccasins of moose skin, strapped to the friendly snowshoe.

With these men, society and local educational advantages for their children were dreamed of, but could not be realized or enjoyed. Their comforts were few and their general surroundings undesirable.

The contrast just referred to could but end in this conclusion: that after all "the lines had fallen unto me in pleasant places." The whole country is now intersected with roads, many of them inferior, it is true, but carriages can be driven over the most of them; and for a new and small province, with a population not

exceeding 500,000, the railroad mileage is large, there being not less than 842 miles in operation, exclusive of the lines employed in carrying coal only. Within my recollection, and since I commenced my professional labors, very marked changes have taken place in nearly every county of our land, making the work for medical men comparatively safe and pleasant; so that the 335 men spread over the Province may be said to be in the possession of a "goodly heritage."

In the early years of my practice, professional men seldom rested from their labors, or left their fields for change and recreation; and I believe I was the first "medicine man" (as the Indians were wont to call us) in this city who adopted the plan of relinquishing work, for a longer or shorter period, annually. Three times I crossed the Atlantic, and on one of these occasions remained in the mother country a year and a half, pleasantly and profitably occupied as a student, without the cares and responsibilities which pertain to men in active practice. Shorter absences enabled me to obtain much information of a useful and practical character, connected with the Dominion of Canada and many of the States of the neighboring Union, from the Atlantic to the Pacific.

A want of knowledge of foreign languages rendered my visits to Continental Europe less profitable both generally and professionally than they would otherwise have been. However, as a consequence of these *runs away*, mental and physical rest were obtained, health was conserved, very pleasant and lasting friendships were formed; all of which will tend to enhance the enjoyment of declining years, as "by my ain fireside" I shall sit watching and waiting for the end to come. I refer to this subject because I consider it of no small moment to the hard-worked professional man, whether he be a doctor, a clergyman, or a lawyer, to periodically leave his work and obtain rest.

The preservation of health and the prolongation of life are far more important than that for which very many men are spending their strength and shortening their days.

In my experience I have seen many strong and good men fall, as if by their own hands, into an early grave, from continuous overwork and mental taxation, when, humanly speaking, had they adopted the course which I found it incumbent on me to follow even before I reached mid-life, they might have lived to the allotted age of man or even beyond it.

The statistics in connection with the population of Halifax and this Province, and the percentage of medical men to that population in the years 1845 and 1895—half a century—are not uninteresting, and I will as briefly as possible direct your attention to the matter. The census in the one case was taken about six years after 1845 (*i.e.*, in 1851), and in the other, four years before 1895

(i.e., in 1891), so you will please bear in mind that my estimate of the population both at the beginning and end of the half-century in question is approximate, and inasmuch as we have no official data prior to 1872 that I am aware of, to guide us in relation to the number of physicians or surgeons practising in the counties outside the capital, my estimate on this point is also an approximate one.

In 1845 there were living and working in Halifax fourteen practitioners exclusive of myself.

The population of the city as given in the census of 1851 was 19,949. Remembering, as I do, how slow the increase was during the last sixty years, I have placed it in 1845 at 17,000, which being divided by fourteen (the number of medical men), would give a per capita constituency of 1,214.

Col. Sellers himself would hardly be able to say "there were millions in it," but while all lived and apparently enjoyed life, the lion's share of the practice was in the hands of four or five men. All in those days, both in the city and country, dispensed their own prescriptions, and thus to a considerable extent supplemented their purely professional incomes. I assume that the population of Halifax since the census of 1891, when it amounted to 38,495, must ere this have reached 41,000. Now, with a working force of from fifty to fifty-five medical men, taking the first named and smaller number (fifty) as the basis of the calculation, there will be but 820 inhabitants to each practitioner.

I have compared notes with Dr. DeWolfe—my senior by a few years—and he has kindly placed on paper for my benefit a list of the names of medical men practising in Nova Scotia in 1845, to the best of his recollection, and together we have reached the conclusion that there were about one hundred, but not more, occupying the entire field at that period.

The census of 1851 gave to the Province a population of 276,117. My starting-point is six years in advance of that date; and I have assumed that 250,000 would about cover the number for 1845. This would give to each physician or surgeon a constituency of 2,500 individuals, if it were possible to make an equal division in a matter of this nature, but such a thing is practically impossible. The few will *live*, and the many will simply *exist*.

For the last twenty years, or more, there has been a widespread tendency among the young men of North America, in choosing occupations for their life's work, to select law and medicine, in preference to agricultural, mechanical or other employments, in which many of their fathers were engaged, to the prejudice, often, of their own welfare and the interests of their country. Two years ago I spent several weeks in a village in an elevated and beautiful part of the State of New Hampshire, where

I noticed that nearly all the farm work and manual labor was being performed by men advanced in years. On asking the question, "Where are your young men?" the reply was, "In the cities and towns, behind counters; or away from home seeking to become lawyers and doctors." Without adequate mental training or ability, without any natural liking or special aptitude for either of these professions, an increasingly large number of young men is being annually added to their list of membership, until at length the fact has been established by statistics that the due or proper proportion which should exist between these professions and the population has ceased to exist.

Leaving this subject, in so far as it relates to law, to lawyers, permit me to say that I do not wish to be misunderstood on the question of manufacturing doctors, if I may use such an expression!

My idea is, that whenever and wherever a young man of good character, of mental ability and industry, has a strong and persistent desire to enter the medical profession, his wishes should not be thwarted, but parents and friends should do all in their power to aid him in accomplishing the object of his ambition, by giving him first of all a liberal education, and then placing him in such a position that he can acquire as thorough a knowledge of medical science as can be imparted in our own or other countries.

On the other hand, those who are immediately interested would do well to advise *neutral young men*, those without energy, or "push," or the educational qualification essential to success; who look forward to a life of comparative ease, comfort and respectability, and would enter our profession to obtain these objects—to remain at home, or look elsewhere for congenial occupation.

To conquer success in the medical profession a "bed of roses" is not to be thought of. Continuous labor, both mental and physical, is essential. In the "hive" he cannot remain a "drone," but must be ever a working bee.

Bearing on this subject, I beg leave to call your attention to a partial synopsis of two lectures—the first delivered to the students of Pennsylvania University in 1877, and the second before the same body sixteen years later, in 1893—on "Higher Medical Education," by Dr. William Pepper, Professor of the Practice of Medicine in that University.

The statistics and other matters dealt with in this article will, I know, interest you, and I feel assured you will admire the decided and manly spirit in which he deals with the prominent evils and grave errors surrounding the important subject of medical education in the United States.

It is well that one of the leading medical minds and most prominent men in that country should have thus dealt with the

matter. No man outside the bounds of the United States, or belonging to another nationality, could have laid bare the deficiencies and lack of sound morality existing there in connection with this subject, as Pepper has done, without being charged with either national hostility or professional jealousy. While I am assured that the prominent evils—sins of omission and commission—mentioned by Pepper do not exist in Canadian institutions, the laws on our provincial statute books making it imperative that the preliminary educational standing of the student, the curriculum, and the time (four years) required to complete the course must be rigidly adhered to; still I feel that this severe but, I believe, just criticism may be read elsewhere, and even in our own Dominion, without doing injury.

“NEED OF A HIGHER MEDICAL EDUCATION.

“(From the *Springfield Republican*.)

“There is much that is instructive in the two essays, ‘On Higher Medical Education,’ by Dr. William Pepper, recently published by the J. B. Lippincott Company, and they forcibly call attention to our deplorable lack of any high standard in this matter. In fact, humiliating as the truth may be, Dr. Pepper ranks the United States in regard to the education of its physicians, not simply below the chief countries of the Old World, but below many nations which we have been accustomed to look upon as only half-civilized. He lays the blame for this shortcoming at the doors of the medical colleges, which have suffered their greed and their ambition to excel in point of numbers to lower their standard so as to permit practically anyone who will pay their fees to obtain a degree. This practice is not only dishonest, but in the long run unwise from a financial point of view, for in consequence of the ease with which anyone who cares to may enter upon the practice of medicine, that profession has become so overcrowded that a large part of those who undertake to practise it are unable to make a living.

“Dr. Pepper estimates from the existing statistics that, taking the length and breadth of a country, urban and rural, one thoroughly qualified medical man can minister efficiently to, and in turn be fairly supported by, a population of from 1,500 to 2,500 persons. The truth of this is shown by the proportion of physicians to population in the principal countries of the world. Great Britain, with about 38,000,000, has 22,000 medical men, giving one to every 1,707 of the population. Germany, with 50,000,000 people, has 16,270 practitioners, or one to every 3,038 of the population. France, with her 39,000,000, has 16,593 physicians, including officers of health, or one to every 2,766. In

Norway there are but 502 doctors to two millions of people, or one for every 4,000; and for Russia's 115,000,000 there are 13,443, or one for every 3,551 of the people. The ratio in other countries is as follows: Austria, one to 3,857; Belgium, one to 2,341; Italy, one to 3,536; Netherlands, one to 2,434; Spain, one to 3,375. The United States, however, with her 62,622,250 of population, boasts of 100,000 physicians, or one for every 626 of the population.

"Yet no one would be ready to infer from this that there is twice as much sickness in the United States as in Great Britain, or four times as much as in France, or five times as much as in Germany, or six times as much as in Norway. In fact such an imputation would be indignantly resented if it were made. The only conclusion, then, that can be reached is that our country is enormously overstocked with doctors, owing chiefly to the ease with which diplomas can be procured. There are, no doubt, many bogus diplomas still in circulation, in spite of the efforts which have been made to suppress such downright dishonesty, but it is hardly necessary to purchase a spurious article when the real thing can be obtained about as cheaply, and with the expenditure of so little time and effort on the part of the candidate.

"That there has been not a little improvement in the quality of the education given in the better schools is pointed out in these lectures, which have special interest on account of the manner in which they were delivered. The first was given before the medical students of the University of Pennsylvania, in 1877, and the second before the same body just sixteen years later, in 1893. In the first the lecturer devotes his time to showing the great decline which had come upon the medical schools of the country since 1811 in the standard of admission and graduation. In most schools, in 1877, the student was only required to attend two courses of lectures, each of less than five months' duration, 115 to 120 days of actual teaching, and even this time was largely wasted, owing to the lack of any classification of the students, so that advanced pupils and those fresh from the farm had to listen to the same lectures. So easy were the examinations that the proportion of the rejected did not exceed one in fifty applicants. This was in the best medical schools, while there were sprouting all over the country cheap institutions which gave diplomas with the flimsiest excuse for a course in instruction.

"In the address of 1893 Dr. Pepper was able to point to many gratifying symptoms of improvement. Out of 143 medical schools in the United States and Canada, not less than 129 have adopted some standard of general qualifications. On the other hand, the morbid process of establishing medical schools of inferior quality has gone on with more rapidity than before, and in the twelve

years from 1873 to 1890, inclusive, no fewer than 168 new schools were chartered. Ohio, which is somewhat celebrated for the number of its colleges, is not behind in this field, and has nineteen medical schools for between 2,000,000 and 3,000,000 of population. In some departments of education the small institution is fully as good as the large university, but in medicine, technical development has been so rapid of late years that only the largest and best equipped of schools can furnish the facilities for studying to the best advantage.

“It is time that the Legislatures of the several States should take this matter in hand and put a stop to the production of uneducated physicians, while the schools of medicine owe it to themselves as well as to the public to raise the standard of their education to the level required in other countries. To suppose that an adequate preparation can be obtained in less than four years is absurd, and although those who graduate earlier may become expert physicians, it is at the expense of those on whom they practise. Dr. Pepper justly says: ‘It is a hardship to students who have been admitted without examination, to be dismissed after two or three years because their teachers are not able to supply the fatal defects of early study. It is a more cruel hardship to the community to have turned loose upon them ill-trained physicians, literally wolves in sheep’s clothing, who by cramming or coaxing, or the cupidity of examiners whose fees will be affected by the result of the examination, have acquired an unmerited diploma.’
—“*Evening Telegraph*, Philadelphia, April 1st, 1895.”

This undue numerical growth of the professional men in the United States, Canada and elsewhere must ere long undergo a change. In our department, as in the general business of life, the supply, on well recognized principles, will, of necessity, be regulated by the demand; and when, from this overgrowth, the struggle for existence becomes more acute than at present, “the survival of the fittest” will settle the question as to who shall rise and who shall fall. The time is even now at hand when the parties more immediately interested in this important matter should “call a halt.” “stop and think,” ere they finally determine the question and select the occupations of their future life.

And now, gentlemen, I am about to say farewell to the practical work of the profession of my choice, to which I was wedded fifty long years ago. I am now in my seventy-fourth year, and am quite frequently admonished that the step I am taking is necessary, and that the responsibilities and duties which have fallen to my lot in the years past should be relinquished to younger men. With the regrets I experience in thus acting there is mingled the emotion of pleasure, because I well know that I am leaving on the field

men who are better able to fill the place than I could possibly do were I to continue for a time longer your co-laborer.

Very soon "the places that now know me will know me no more," and while the great truth embodied in this quotation is especially applicable to those advanced in life, no class of men know better than those belonging to our profession how necessary it is that even the youngest of us should keep these words hidden in our hearts and ever fresh in our memories.

If twenty-five years constitute what we are wont to call "a generation," I may fitly close my remarks by saying that for two generations I have held amicable and most satisfactory relations with the members of our profession in this city and province. And now, gentlemen, permit me to most sincerely thank you for all the courtesy and kindness which I have received at your hands since we became brethren in the great brotherhood of medicine and surgery; and last, but not least, for the address which you have to-day done me the honor to present me with.

Mrs. Parker and my family cordially thank you for remembering them, and unitedly we would reciprocate the more than kindly utterances contained in the closing paragraph of your address.

The *St. John Messenger and Visitor* of August 7th contained the following reference to this event:

"FIFTY FAITHFUL YEARS.

"Thursday last, the first of August, was a day of special interest for Hon. Dr. Parker, of Halifax, as marking for him the completion of fifty years of professional life. Congratulatory messages, we learn, were received from many friends who knew of the interesting anniversary, and also an address from the men of his own profession in Halifax, among whom his learning and practical ability have long been recognized as entitling him to a distinguished position. Not only because of his eminence in his profession but as a member for many years of the Legislature and taking a somewhat prominent part in the political affairs of the province, besides his general and active interest in whatever concerns the welfare of the people and because of the strict integrity and marked ability which have characterized him in all his work, Hon. Dr. Parker is widely and most favorably known, and especially in his native province where his life has been spent and his work principally has been done. We need not say to the readers of the *Messenger and Visitor* that Dr. Parker has been a life-long and consistent Baptist. His praise is in all the churches. The cause which he has long and deeply loved has received his generous and unswerving support, not only in connection with the church of which he has long been a valued member, but in all the benevolent enterprises in which the denomination has been engaged. He has ever been the kind and most practically sympathetic friend of our ministers and their families, to whose physical ills he has ministered without fee or reward save the love and gratitude of his patients and the satisfaction of giving, in times of need, medical advice and attendance of a character which otherwise could not have been secured.

"The *Messenger and Visitor* desires to present its congratulations to Dr. Parker on the rounding out of so long a period of most faithful and

successful labor in the service of God and humanity and to express the hope that not a few happy and peaceful years may yet remain to him in which to enjoy the rewards and honors of a well-spent life. It must be with a degree of satisfaction and with much gratitude that a good man looks back from such a position as that which our friend has reached to consider the good way by which, in the providence of God, he has been led.

"Dr. Parker, as his friends all know, is not a man to court public attention, and we perhaps incur the risk of a kindly reproof from our good friend for having ventured to say so much about him here, but if we said anything it seemed impossible to say less, and certainly we might say a great deal more by way of appreciation, without any danger of reproof from conscience."

A great many congratulatory letters and telegrams were received from physicians, absent friends and patients, among them a joint letter from Moncton, N.B., signed by six old patients. I select eight, as representative of various types of these letters:

"GOVERNMENT HOUSE.

"HALIFAX, N.S., 1st August, 1895.

"MY DEAR DOCTOR.—Let me join with your medical friends in congratulating you to-day upon your attaining a jubilee in your profession.

"Fifty years of useful service to your fellow-beings is something to look back upon with pleasure. You have that pleasure to-day, for in this community what numbers can recall instances of pain, suffering and disease alleviated by your skill and care. But I must speak for my own family, and for myself personally. We acknowledge and will always feel under a debt of gratitude to you. Please then accept our united congratulations, and with our sincerest wishes for your health and happiness for many years to come, believe me,

"Very sincerely yours,

"(Sgd.) M. B. DALY."

"HALIFAX, August 1st, 1895.

"DEAR DOCTOR PARKER.—Mrs. Stairs and I are about going off for a run in the country. We leave this morning, or I should have liked to have called upon you to-day—with my congratulations—this being the anniversary of your fifty years' status as a physician. We call to mind meeting you in London fifty years ago, just about this season of the year. As a physician, how many cases of pain and suffering you must have relieved.

"We remember also your care and kindness to our children when they were young; you may not remember, but we do, our dear Willie who died at 14 years of age, and your more than professional goodness. You will remember our journey with Jack to the South States on the outbreak of the war of secession.

"With best wishes for your and Mrs. Parker's good health and happiness, for myself and Mrs. Stairs.

"Yours sincerely,

"(Sgd.) W. J. STAIRS."

"DEAR DR. PARKER.—The notice card announcing the intention of your brother practitioners to present you with an address expressive of their regard for you as a man and a physician reached me only this morning. I was quite ignorant of any such plan being on foot, and therefore, much to my regret could not and did not take part in the proceedings. Nevertheless, my dear doctor, I wish thus immediately to

convey to you my best wishes and congratulations. When I was a junior you were always kind, and now as a senior I regard you as one to whom I can look for counsel and advice, and to whom I could communicate any schemes looking to the amelioration of the condition of the insane, among whom my life is now spent, with the certain knowledge that if they commended themselves to your judgment you would lend your aid as a man, a physician or a legislator. May you continue long to enjoy the rewards of a well spent life.

"Perhaps one of the sweetest and most appreciated of them is the knowledge that by your professional conduct you, through your long practice, have the good will of all and the affection of many of your confrères.

"With kind regards to Mrs. Parker,

"I am, yours sincerely,

"(Sgd.) GEO. L. SINCLAIR.

"Mount Hope, August 2, 1895."

"OFFICE OF CITY AUDITOR,

"HALIFAX, N.S., 2 August, 1895.

"MY DEAR SIR,—I feel as if I should not allow the opportunity to pass without adding my humble congratulations to those which you are receiving at the present time from all sides—professional and otherwise. Knowing you as I have, more or less intimately, for the greater part of a lifetime—having been acquainted with many who were friends to us both, and having myself been at one time associated with you in the discharge of public duty, it seems fitting that I should join in the tribute of esteem and affection which your long and eminently useful life has called forth.

"Trusting that you still have many years before you, and that your last days may be the best of all, with kindest regards to Mrs. Parker, I beg to subscribe myself,

"Most sincerely yours,

"(Sgd.) JOHN A. BELL."

"455 HURON STREET, TORONTO,

"August 7th, 1895.

"MY DEAR DR. PARKER,—Permit me to add my congratulations and good wishes to the many you have already received on reaching your jubilee year, the particulars of the celebration of which I have read in the papers. A life without a stain, and full of right and benevolent action, such as you have been enabled, by divine grace, to live is the best legacy which a man can bequeath to his family and to the generations following; it is, moreover, connected with the richest promises concerning the life to come. May the remaining years of your earthly life be many and happy, and at evening time may it be light. Mrs. Welton joins me in the heartiest wishes for the continued health and prosperity and happiness, temporal and spiritual, of yourself and Mrs. Parker,

"Very sincerely yours,

"(Sgd.) D. M. WELTON."

"PARTRIDGE ISLAND, PARSBORO, N.S.

"August 1, 1895.

"MY DEAR DR. PARKER,—I notice by the papers that this is the 'jubilee' of your professional life. Mrs. Rand and I beg to extend our most cordial greetings, even though we are not of the guild. It must be most gratifying and pleasant to you to be able to cast your eyes backward over the years of hard and successful work, and to know that it has not been in vain. Whenever I speak with young men preparing for the medical profession, I am always reminded of your admirable exemplifica-

tion of the Christian physician, and feel impelled thereby to urge the highest motives upon their attention.

"I trust, too, that as you cast your eyes forward it is with the assurance that there is a higher sphere of service awaiting you,—one where the assuaging of pain will be a thing of the past, but gracious ministrations an unending delight.

"Mrs. Rand and I are finding great refreshment here. There is no air so full of nerve stimulus and health to me; and the beauty of the place, with its unceasing variations, gives me rest both of spirit and body.

"We unite in kindest remembrances to Mrs. Parker and yourself.

"Ever yours,

"(Sgd.) THEODORE H. RAND."

"MAITLAND, HANTS CO.,

"August 1st, 1895.

"To the Honble. D. McN. Parker, M.D., Halifax.

"Observing by the *Halifax Herald* of yesterday that, dear venerable doctor, you celebrate to-day your golden jubilee—fifty years a physician—and that the medical profession present you with an address, I take the liberty of writing you my congratulations, and wish you the enjoyment of many years yet in the diamond lustre of this event, with the heavenly blessing of Almighty God, to His glory.

"I recall many occasions of your kindness to me in consultations and wish to mention a visit you paid my dear daughter Florence who had a downstairs fall when about two years old. I was anxious lest the continued depression from the shock might develop into serious trouble. Your advice was timely, and in a few weeks she fully recovered. I always could catch a profitable lesson from you. I know that you are living a life not in vain, and that your professional legacy will run into generations.

"Very respectfully yours,

"(Sgd.) E. N. PAYZANT, M.D.,

"Jeff. Med. Coll., 1855."

"MAITLAND, HANTS CO., N.S.

"August 3rd, 1895.

"Hon. Dr. Parker, Halifax, N.S.

"MY DEAR SIR,—Having just arrived in Nova Scotia and being made acquainted with your jubilee, I hasten to congratulate you. In this world the tones of joy and congratulations are so seldom heard that one is almost startled by the sound, but they acquire additional sweetness from the contrast.

"It is truly refreshing to me to think of my dear old student days, when I had the pleasure of listening to your clinics in the hospital at Halifax.

"Please accept my congratulations on this the fiftieth year in your noble work, and I hope you will long be spared to continue in your labor of love. With sincere wishes,

"I beg to remain,

"Respectfully yours,

"(Sgd.) O. F. McCALLUM, M.D."

To acknowledge by letter, telegram and personal visits the large packet of such communications which accumulated was no slight undertaking, but this was conscientiously and diligently accomplished. The spirit in which he received and acknowledged these communications is exemplified in the following letter to the late Rev. S. McCully Black, then editor of the *Messenger*

and *Visitor*, and also in the subjoined extract from his reply to the letter of Dr. Theodore H. Rand, the Chancellor of McMaster University, Toronto:

“ DARTMOUTH, N.S.,
“ August 9th, 1895.

“ Dear Brother Black:

“ Fifty years of professional life have been permitted, by the goodness of God, to fall to my lot, and now that I am retiring from the field in which I have so long labored, my esteemed clerical, medical and other friends are almost overwhelming me with unexpected kindness. I have just closed a letter to a minister, in which I say: ‘Some way or other my friends here and elsewhere have overestimated my character, career and work, and I have already told many of them by pen and speech, that after a close self-examination of the inner man, I am compelled to greatly differ with their estimate of me.’ Were I in the market and for sale, I am well assured that the purchasers would do well to take me at my own valuation rather than that of my editorial and other friends, whose brotherly feelings have prompted them to say so many kind things concerning me.

“ It would, as you suggest in your editorial remarks, have been more in accordance with my tastes and feelings if I had been permitted to retire into the quiet and rest of private life without ‘note or comment.’ However, it cannot now be changed, and I most cordially thank you for the spirit which prompted you to give utterance to the overkind and more than friendly thoughts embodied in your article relating to me in the last issue of the *Messenger and Visitor*.

“ With kindest regards to Mrs. Black, yourself and Brother Saunders, I remain,

“ Ever yours faithfully,

“(Sgd.) D. MCN. PARKER.

“ Rev. S. McCully Black.”

The following is the extract from the letter to Dr. Rand:

. . . . “ Although my life has been one of toil, it is pleasant for me to look back and to recognize the fact that the loving hand of the dearest of all friends has guided me during all these years, through labors, trials, joys and sorrows, until now the end must in the nature of things be not far away. In view of that period I look forward with confidence, having the assurance that He who has brought me thus far on will never leave nor forsake me. My professional brethren and many other friends have recently exhibited great kindness, and I might add

even affection towards me, for which I am and will, I trust, ever be grateful."

In this spirit of humble, grateful acknowledgment to God for the mercies of the past, of simple trust in Him for the future, and with heartfelt appreciation of the many expressions of admiration and affection which had been showered upon him by his fellow-men, my father passed from the varied scenes of activity in which he had long been conspicuous, and closed the epoch of the "Fifty Faithful Years."

CHAPTER XII.

POLITICS AND THE LEGISLATIVE COUNCIL.

"You were not borne all onely for your selves;
Your countrie claymes some part of all your paines."
—George Gascoigne (1574.)

Daniel McNeill Parker was born into a family which, paternally and maternally, was Conservative or Tory in all its history and traditions; even though, on the paternal side of the house, the Quaker ancestors had owed their enfranchisement to the Whig ministry of Walpole in 1722.

If it be true, as the Lord Chancellor in "Iolanthe" sings:

"Every little boy or girl who's born alive
Is born Liberal or Conservative"—

it was true *a fortiori* of him that he was born into the political party whose principles and fortunes he consistently followed for a long lifetime. His father was an active, ardent leader in promoting the interests of that party in his county, where his political influence was a considerable factor in election contests. The son imbibed with his mother's milk the spirit of a Toryism which went back to the influences of the American Revolutionary War, as they affected her Loyalist father and his family.

As indicative of the strength of party feeling in general at the time, and of his mother's in particular, it is related of her that, travelling with her husband by coach from Halifax to Windsor, and presiding at table when the coach stopped for supper at an inn, she declined to pour a cup of tea for Lewis M. Wilkins, who was of the party, because he had "turned his coat" in 1854, and accepted office in the Liberal Government.

Early association with such men as his great-uncle Mr. Nutting and Mr. J. W. Johnston could not but strengthen the party tie during youth, as one may discern in the letter to C. M. Nutting, written from Edinburgh in 1843. In comparatively early life he entered unofficially into the counsels of the party, where his energy and political sagacity made him a valuable accession. When the reins of leadership passed from the hands of the veteran Johnston to those of his distinguished successor, the Cumberland doctor, with whose removal to Halifax my father

was closely connected, he had attained a position in the inner circle of party leaders, and later his influence was strongly felt in the movement for Confederation during the years when the scheme was in its formative stage.

In September, 1863, he was among the Nova Scotians who met and warmly welcomed Hon. John A. Macdonald, Hon. George Brown, Hon. Alexander Galt, Hon. George E. Cartier, Hon. William McDougall and Hon. D'Arcy McGee, the delegates from the Canadian Government who came to Halifax to discuss the question of Union after the Charlottetown conference, which had been held on the first day of that month. The friendships then formed by my father with these leaders of political thought and with other men of large calibre, drawn together by this momentous question of the times, were enduring, and became cemented by further association at Ottawa and elsewhere in later life. For the talented and ill-fated D'Arcy McGee he then conceived a warm admiration, and their association at that time grew into a friendship, founded on mutual regard, a tie which caused my father a very real and painful shock when, five years later, the assassin's bullet snapped all the earthly ties which had bound McGee to a host of admiring friends.

At this period the old house on Argyle Street, being situated near the centre of political life at the Province Building, became a frequent meeting-place for the conclaves of Conservative or Confederate leaders. My father's interest in the supreme political question was deep, his efforts on behalf of his party's policy were untiring. Yet he could not reconcile with his sense of duty to his profession any open or public participation in politics which would make undue demands on his time. But when the heat of conflict deepened in 1867, he at length yielded to the pressure of his party, and particularly to the persuasion of his life-long friend, Dr. Tupper, the leader of the Government, and accepted a seat in the Legislative Council, in time to participate by voice and vote in the contest with the anti-Confederates, who, after the event, were striving mightily to overthrow the Union, so far as Nova Scotia was concerned.

My father was one of six members of the Council who were appointed just before the British North America Act came into force. Previous to this Act (of Confederation) Legislative Councillors, under a clause in the commission of the Governor of British North America, were appointed by the Lieutenant-Governor of the Province, subject to confirmation by the Sovereign. My father's commission from the Lieutenant-Governor was in the following terms:

POLITICS AND THE LEGISLATIVE COUNCIL 415

" Province of Nova Scotia
Seal. " (Sgd.) F. W. WILLIAMS.

(ROYAL ARMS.)

" By His Excellency Sir William Fenwick Williams of Kara, Baronet, Lieutenant-General in Her Majesty's Army, Knight Commander of the Most Honorable Order of the Bath; Grand Officer Legion d'honneur; 1st Class of the Turkish Order of Medjée, etc., etc.; Lieutenant-Governor and Commander-in-Chief in and over Her Majesty's Province of Nova Scotia and its Dependencies, etc., etc.

" To D. McN. Parker, Esquire, M.D.

" GREETING.

" By virtue of the power and authority in me vested, I have thought fit to constitute and appoint, and do, by the advice of the Executive Council of the said Province, hereby constitute and appoint you the said D. McN. Parker a member of the Legislative Council of this Province provisionally until Her Majesty's pleasure be known.

" Hereby granting unto you all the rights, powers and advantages which to the said office do or may lawfully appertain, and requiring you diligently to perform the duties thereof.

" Given under my hand and Seal at Arms, at Halifax, this twenty-eighth day of June in the thirtieth year of Her Majesty's Reign, A.D. 1867.

" By His Excellency's Command,
" (Sgd.) CHARLES TUPPER."

As the British North America Act became operative on the first day of July, 1867, and as the commission of Viscount Monck, the last Governor of British North America, containing the clause authorizing provisional appointments to the Council by the Lieutenant-Governor, was revoked at the time of the Union on the issue to Viscount Monck of his new commission as the first Governor-General of Canada, a constitutional question arose as to the mode of appointment to the Council at this period of transition from the old *régime*. The point was raised in a despatch to Lord Monck by the Duke of Buckingham, Secretary of State for the Colonies, calling attention to the unsatisfactory condition in which the right to appoint the Legislative Councillors was left by the British North America Act. The Privy Council of Canada advised Lord Monck that inasmuch as the 88th section of the Act provided that the constitution of the Legislature of Nova Scotia should continue as it existed at the Union until altered under the authority of that Act, the old mode and authority of appointing the Councillors was kept alive by that section. This opinion was communicated to Sir Hastings Doyle (General Williams' successor in the government of Nova Scotia) in October. The "red tape" unwound slowly through voluminous despatches exchanged by the three

governments. The question was set at rest by the following despatch, dated December 3rd, 1867:

"My Lord: With reference to my despatch No. 74, of the 23rd August, enclosing a despatch from Lieutenant-General Williams, reporting the provisional appointment of six gentlemen to be members of the Legislative Council of the Province of Nova Scotia, I have the honor to acquaint your Lordship that the names of these gentlemen (Messrs. John McKinnon, Peter Smyth, William O. Hefferman, Samuel Creelman, Daniel McNeill Parker and James Fraser), were duly submitted to the Queen in Council, and that Her Majesty has been pleased to approve their appointment.

"I transmit to your Lordship herewith warrants under the royal sign manual and signet, authorizing you to appoint those gentlemen to seats in that Council accordingly.

"I have, etc., etc.

"(Sgd.) BUCKINGHAM AND CHANDOS.

"To Governor Viscount Monck, etc., etc."

Accordingly, with the following letter my father received from the Queen, through Viscount Monck, the Governor-General, his confirmatory commission, which I insert as a matter of historical interest.

"Offices of Secretary of State for the Provinces,

"OTTAWA, 26th December, 1867.

"SIR,—I have it in command to transmit to you a Warrant under the Royal Sign Manual and Signet authorizing your appointment to a seat in the Legislative Council of the Province of Nova Scotia.

"I have the honor to be, Sir,

"Your obedt. servant,

"(Sgd.) ADAMS G. ARCHIBALD,

"Secretary of State for the Provinces.

"To Honble. Daniel McNeill Parker, Halifax, N.S."

The Royal Warrant was as follows:

Royal
Signet.

"(Sgd.) VICTORIA R.

"TRUSTY and WELL BELOVED, WE
GREET you WELL.

"We being well satisfied of the Loyalty, Integrity and Ability of Our Trusty and Well beloved Daniel McNeill Parker, Esquire, have thought fit hereby to signify Our Will and Pleasure that, forthwith, upon the receipt of these Presents, you do Swear and Admit the said Daniel McNeill Parker to be a Member of Our Legislative Council of Our Province of Nova Scotia. And for so doing this shall be your warrant.

"WARRANT for the appointment of DANIEL McNEILL PARKER, ESQ^{RE} as a MEMBER of the LEGISLATIVE COUNCIL of the PROVINCE OF NOVA SCOTIA."

“Given at Our Court at Windsor, this twenty-ninth day of November, One Thousand Eight Hundred and Sixty-Seven, in the Thirty-First Year of our Reign.

“By Her Majesty’s Command,
“(Sgd.) BUCKINGHAM AND CHANDOS.”

This Warrant is endorsed as follows :

“To Our Right Trusty and Well beloved Cousin Charles Stanley Viscount Monck, Our Governor General of Canada, or, in his absence, to Our Lieutenant Governor or the Officer Administering the Government of Our Dominion of Canada for the time being.”

At a subsequent period, pursuant to powers given by the British North America Act, the Legislature of Nova Scotia passed an Act conferring on the Lieutenant-Governor of the Province the absolute right to nominate the members of the Legislative Council, as had been done in the Province of Quebec in 1867.

I have been unable to find in the archives of the Province Building, or in my father’s library, any copies of the Debates and Proceedings of the Legislative Council previous to the year 1875, nor copies for several of the years subsequent. Reference to those at hand shows that his contributions to the debates, for the most part, consisted of brief, pithy, business-like speeches, always to the point, and of a helpful character because of the facility with which he would sift out immaterial and irrelevant matter and grasp the main issue. He did not waste the time of the House by much speaking, and he never addressed it without having something to say that was pertinent and of value. When he spoke he was forceful, and his utterances never failed to make an impression. He revealed the trained mind by his power of concentrating into a few well-chosen sentences much more than some others would be capable of expressing in a speech of wearisome duration. His conception of the House was that it met to do business, not for making speeches; and often, by leading the business-like men of the Council into colloquy with himself, he effectually disposed, in short order, of questions which, but for his qualification for directing and controlling other minds (somewhat upon the Socrati. method), might have been spun out into hopeless futility. His reported speeches and more brief remarks or observations display a thorough familiarity with business affairs of a private nature, arising out of private bills, and with the public business of the Province, touching finance, mines, Crown lands, education, railways, public charities, the administration of the law, or what not. To be so thoroughly conversant as he was with

all questions coming before the House, by bill and otherwise, evinces the most careful study and preparation at home,—to which I can bear testimony from observation.

In the Council's Select Committee on Bills he was considered, as he was in the House, a guiding authority, both from his excellent judgment, his mastery of all the details of bills, and his long experience in matters of legislation. It was probably in this committee, which he assiduously attended and for whose work he sedulously prepared himself in the spirit of a guardian of the public interest, that his most important services to his country were performed—apart from public notice or recognition, but with the utmost devotion to public duty.

At a memorial service in St. Matthew's Church, held in commemoration of several members of the Halifax Young Men's Christian Association who had died during the year 1907, Mr. Justice Russell, who spoke of my father's life, said that no one could put more of conscience into the work of legislation than did he; and the Judge founded this tribute upon his own long experience as reporter and legal adviser to the Legislative Council. A deep-seated, sensitive conscientiousness did, in truth, set its mark upon my father's labors as a legislator, as in all his work. It impelled to a faithful thoroughness of mental and physical effort in the discharge of his duty to the people, both in and out of the House, which could hardly be excelled.

For the greater part of his term of office he was in opposition to the Government for the time being. His criticisms of certain measures of his opponents were often trenchant and telling, sometimes tinged by a humorous sarcasm which, though to sting the adversary on the raw, yet disarmed anything like asperity in an attempt to reply, by the good spirit and geniality in which his attacks were delivered. He was fair and conciliatory to political foes, and exercised a restraining and controlling influence upon political friends. Though taunted once upon the floor of the House with the name of "partisan," and admitting the charge, in a general sense, he did not hesitate upon some occasions to speak and vote against his party. His own judgment, his own conscience were never surrendered to any purely party demand or consideration.

In public speaking, he spoke, at first, with a peculiar hesitancy and an audible out-breathing at intervals in his sentences; but upon getting well into his subject he became fluent, vivacious, forcible. He was orderly in arrangement of thought, cogent in argument, correct and choice in diction. Though not gifted as an orator, nor ever attempting oratorical flight, he was an attractive and excellent public speaker, whether in the Council or upon the platform, secular or religious.

His seat in the Legislative Council was the first on the left of the President, and there was a certain fitness in his occupancy of that commanding position in the House. He was never, officially, the leader of his party in the Council (though once in debate he was termed by an opponent "the whispering foster-father" of the Holmes-Thompson Government); but in another and better sense he early became a leader there, and, later, the Parliamentary authority and the Nestor of the House. In the absence of the President his political opponents were wont to place him in the chair.

I venture to think that if, during the Fielding régime in Nova Scotia, a majority of the Legislative Council had been the peers of the honorable member from Dartmouth, in fidelity to duty, in personal character, in capacity to think out, shape and guard the legislation of the Province, there would have been less said and attempted about the vexed question of Abolition.

His standing in the House, his qualifications of mind and character, and his services in that forum of his country are so aptly set forth in the speeches of colleagues, of both parties, in connection with the resignation from the Council, as quoted in the monograph on "Daniel McNeill and His Descendants," that it seems unnecessary to say more by way of describing my father in his capacity of a legislator.

From the Debates of the Legislative Council the speeches and short addresses which follow are extracted by way of illustration. Perhaps his most lengthy speech, so far as the records are available, was on the bill to establish a Provincial University, in 1876, upon which occasion he spoke for about three hours against this bill. This speech, among other matter, contains a strong argument for the system of denominational colleges as then existing. The bill passed; but the "paper university," as my father foretold, had a brief and unsuccessful career.

The parliamentary method of reporting speeches in the third person detracts from their style on perusal, as will be noticed.

Taking the Debates in order of time, the first at hand are those of the

SESSION OF 1875.

On a resolution condemning the Government's policy concerning the Annapolis and Digby Railway.

"Hon. Dr. Parker had already expressed himself at some length upon this question, both during the present session and the one which preceded it. On both occasions he had taken exception to the working of the Act which gave rise to this discussion. He (Hon. Dr. P.) had heard it said that it was difficult to preach from a text that we do not believe in, but he had never realized the force of that remark so strongly as since hearing the hon. member from Yarmouth, who seemed to have a pretty strong conviction that the scheme on its present footing was an

impracticable one. He (Hon. Dr. P.) believed that an additional grant of \$2,000 per mile was to be given to the Western Counties Railway Company this year. He not only feared that this, too, would be insufficient but that it would give other companies a claim upon the Government to come in and ask for similar advantages. He took exception to the Act, however, for this reason. No Act should be placed upon the Statute Book, by any Government, one clause of which conflicted with another. It was their duty to have Acts of this character so worded that 'he who runs may read.' In the Yarmouth Railway we had a practical illustration of the evils of the clause under discussion. Its effects had been and would be disastrous. It seemed that the company had been unable to obtain the money which they required, so far, in England, upon the security which they had to offer, and he feared that that which they had obtained from the Government, as well as that which they might yet obtain, would be so much unproductive capital, doing nothing for the country. He felt that a course had been pursued in reference to the Yarmouth Railway which was not satisfactory unless we had a positive assurance that the road would be completed. So far, though 30 miles had been graded, only 9 were in running order, and even the 30 miles graded had spaces between them not touched at all, which rendered them comparatively useless. Had the company commenced at one end of the line and placed all their work there, we would have had to-day something that would have been of use to the country. Practically, the portion now completed was altogether unproductive, while if the company had gone properly to work we might have had at least 18 miles in running order. Had this been done the road would have been in just as good a condition for borrowing purposes, and would have been productive besides. If we were perfectly assured that the company were able to carry on their work to completion, it might be well to adopt the Engineer's plan of commencing it in different places, but in the present case he (Hon. Dr. P.) believed that the other would have been the better plan. He wished here to call attention to a discrepancy between the statement laid upon the table of moneys paid out by the Government, and one laid before a meeting of the Company at Yarmouth on Feb. 10th, 1875. The total expenditure to date by this latter statement was \$254,835, while \$162,000 of this amount had been received from the Government, leaving, if this statement were correct, only a balance of \$92,836 as paid by the Company. Papers on the table showed a Government expenditure up to the 12th March, 1875, of \$213,845. From this take the above \$162,000, and you would have as the amount paid between Feb. 10th and March 12th, 1875, when the thermometer was below zero during a good portion of the time, and the snow and ice on the track must have been in such quantities as to almost preclude progress and work, the sum of \$51,845. Why this money had been paid at a time when it could not possibly be earned was difficult to say. It was also stated that two contracts, amounting to \$161,000, had been given out at about this time, upon which \$34,000 had been paid. Possibly this had been because the contractors were in difficulties, and clamorous for money. The effect that this loose legislation was likely to have upon the monied men of the Mother Country would do a positive injury to the Province. If we wished them to invest their money in the country we must show them that we could give good security. Capitalists would make a point before investing their money in the Province, to enquire into the character of its legislation and the extent of its liabilities. It was necessary to be careful. Legislation should be such as could not be misunderstood.

"The hon. gentleman, in concluding, reiterated his remarks of a previous day as to the inexpediency of taking mere personal security for the completion of contracts of this character. The security might be very good to-day, but no one knew what it might be a short time hence. He thought the practice a bad one, and trusted that the House would agree with him in this opinion."

POLITICS AND THE LEGISLATIVE COUNCIL 421

" HALIFAX ANNIVERSARY BILL.

" The bill to provide for the celebration of the settlement of the city of Halifax was then taken up on the reading of the first clause.

" Hon. Dr. Parker moved that the further consideration of the bill be deferred until this day three months.

" The hon. gentleman remarked that he considered such an expenditure as that contemplated by the bill entirely unnecessary. The taxation of the city of Halifax was annually growing. It amounted now to a million and a half if not more, and though a thousand dollars was not in itself a large sum, yet if it were made an annual charge it would amount in course of time to something considerable. As it was it represented a capital of \$17,000, which, if applied to some proper object, would be quite unobjectionable. It was true that the bill had passed in the City Council by a comparatively large vote, but yesterday he had met one of the Aldermen on the street who begged, if possible, that the Bill should not be allowed to pass for the reasons which he had stated. The argument of Hon. Mr. Cochran was that the expenditure of this money would afford the poorer classes a day of recreation. If that were all, and the citizens felt disposed to contribute towards such an object, he should not object. But there were many other holidays, and when he looked at their effects, and what took place on them, he was not sure that they were of any great advantage. We had horse races, drinking booths, and a good deal of dissipation on such days. It would be remembered that when we had a sculling match here between Brown and Biglin every newspaper in the city came out and said that they hoped we would never have a repetition of such scenes as occurred then. The 21st of June, being to a great extent under aldermanic supervision, might not lead to dissipation to such an extent but to his mind it had a demoralizing effect upon the community. The amount of labor that was thrown out of gear was considerable. Employers were put to great inconvenience, and workmen often were not fit for their duties for the next week, and their families suffered in consequence. There were many other ways in which the poorer classes could enjoy themselves. We had the Public Gardens, the Park and other places to which they might resort.

" He expressed the feeling of the heaviest tax-paying portion of the community. If the Aldermen wished for such a celebration they should provide it at their own expense."

The motion was adopted.

On a resolution to amend the constitution of the House by reduction of membership, and otherwise.

" Hon. Dr. Parker observed that this matter was not a new one to him. He had often thought of it before. If his friends had come into power this session he had a programme which he had intended to propose to them. First upon it was the reduction in the number of the Council. Next came the roads and bridges; next, the public printing; next, the consolidation of the Crown Lands and Mines Offices; next, the extension to Canso; and, lastly, stop the County Courts, if possible. That would have been his programme had he been a member of Government, which he never hoped to be. The measure which he would have urged upon his friends then, he was here to advocate to-day. In the history of the Council there never had been a time when the proposed change could be as advantageously made as now. The Government had a majority of he could not exactly say what, and could be put to no inconvenience by the change. The necessity for keeping the membership up to its present rate did not exist now as it did in preceding years. When members were brought in, and the number raised again to 21, some years ago the Government had not a majority here, and there was a necessity for their

action. Looking at the relative numbers of this and the other House (21 to 38), it would be seen that they were out of all proportion. A smaller number of active, intelligent men would be quite sufficient. The subject of representation by population, though well to be kept in mind, had more application to the popular branch of the Legislature. He saw no necessity for bringing it in here. Neither was it absolutely necessary that every county should be represented. If it had been so considered a short time since, it might have been carried out. Here we had, however, a representation of four members from Halifax when other counties had none. It was desirable that there should be more than one member from Halifax, but was not strictly essential that there should be three or four. The use to which this body was sometimes put was to hold it out to some independent member in another place as a means of securing his vote. It was to be regretted that this had been so in the past, and he trusted that the same story would not have to be told of it in the future. If the appointments to this House were even made elective, which idea had been thrown out by an hon. member, it had much better be abolished altogether. Such a mode of appointment would be foreign to the purpose of these bodies, and might bring in a class of men whose presence would not be desirable. The proposal to reduce the pay of members, while it might not be unobjectionable to the city members, might not be acceptable to those of the country, who came from a distance, and were under expenses while here."

The resolution was lost.

SESSION OF 1877.

On the following resolution concerning the Great Seal of the Province,

"Resolved, That it is inconsistent with the duty of the Government any longer to either entertain or use the old Great Seal of the Province, as by so doing the Government would be acting in direct opposition to the explicit direction and authority of our Sovereign Lady the Queen."

The explanation of this resolution is that upon the consummation of Confederation, in 1867, the Queen, in Council, had authorized a Great Seal for Canada, and a new one for each of the constituent Provinces, which seals were transmitted by the British Secretary of State for the Colonies with the request (tantamount to a command, and based upon Order-in-Council) that the old Provincial seals should be given up to the British Government to be cancelled. But the bitterness of the Anti-Confederate Government of Nova Scotia, which obtained power toward the close of the year 1867, led it to disregard the British Order-in-Council with the pursuant request and to enter upon a childish and futile correspondence with the Colonial Secretary, looking to the retention of the old seal of Nova Scotia in lieu of the one authorized. This attitude of the Nova Scotia Government was closely associated with the efforts then being made by the Anti-Confederate party to take the Province out of the Union. Meanwhile, and up to 1877, the old seal was being used by the Government upon Crown grants and licenses, commissions and all other public documents requiring the Provincial seal, and the question of its validity had come before the Supreme Court.

" Hon. Dr. Parker said it was likely that a large proportion of the population of the Province would think it a strange thing that what appeared to be no more than a small piece of metal, inscribed with a device and motto, should occupy so much of the time and attention of the Legislature; but when we consider the relation the Great Seal bore to the State, we are not surprised that it should on all occasions produce a marked effect, when any irregularity arises in connection with its use. The hon. gentleman who had just sat down (Hon. Mr. Morrison) had shown how in the Mother Country, governments, and the whole body politic, had frequently been disturbed in this way. We found that the Great Seal had been used from the earliest ages. It was hardly necessary for him to go back, and show the relation it bore to the State, as related in Old Testament history, which must be familiar to many members of the House. But, coming down more to our own times, we found that anterior to the Norman Conquest it had hardly any existence in England. The general custom of using a seal was introduced into that country by the Normans, who brought it from their own land. The first authentic charter of which there was a trace in England bearing a seal, without a signature, was that given by Edward the Confessor to Westminster Abbey some time in the eleventh century. He only referred to these facts to show the important bearing which the use of a seal had in English institutions. At one time the Scotch used the seal altogether, but afterward, by act of Parliament, it was made imperative that a signature should accompany it. One thing that was particularly to be noticed in connection with the subject was that there could be but one Seal of State; and in England, whatever may have been the case in the past, the use of the Great Seal was guarded with extreme jealousy, far more so than appeared to be the case here. There was an old saying that there could not be two Kings in Brentford. It ought to be equally true that there could not be two Great Seals in Nova Scotia, but before closing he would not only show that there were two, but that they had been used on important public documents. It would not do for the people of Scotland to insist upon the right to use the seal of Robert Bruce, however affectionately they might regard it. Neither would it do for the English to claim the right to use the Seal of Edward the Confessor. Both must sink their individual interests, and use the seal that they received from the Crown. Neither would it do for a body of gentlemen constituting an Executive Council in any part of the British Dominions to disregard any seal that they might be ordered by Her Majesty to use, by pleading an attachment to another seal; though this was precisely the condition of affairs at which the resolution now under discussion was aimed. The right of the Queen to establish a new seal, and direct its use, was generally admitted. It was admitted by the Executive Council themselves in the words:

"The council, while freely recognizing the right of Her Majesty the Queen, to change and alter the Great Seal of the Province at pleasure,' etc. But, notwithstanding that they admitted the right, they acted in disobedience to it. The documents before the House showed the great care with which matters of this kind were treated in the Mother Country. The one coming first in order was the warrant of Her Majesty, commanding the armorial bearings to be assigned to the Provinces of the newly created Dominion. On the 8th May the five seals for the Dominion and the Provinces respectively were transmitted to the Governor-General by Lord Granville, together with the Queen's warrant directing the use of the Seals for all things whatsoever that shall pass the Great Seal of the Dominion and the four Provinces, and also the return of the old Seals in order to their being defaced. The next document was a despatch from Mr. Howe, Secretary of State for the Provinces, to Sir Hastings Doyle, transmitting copies of correspondence with the Imperial Government respecting the altering of the seals of the Provinces, a copy of the warrant granting armorial bearings to the several Provinces and stating that the Great Seal for this Province would be forwarded on the first fitting

opportunity. The despatch directed the Lieutenant-Governor, immediately on receipt of the Seal, to take steps for carrying out Her Majesty's pleasure, and also to transmit the old Seal with a view to its being defaced. We had here, connectedly, a history of the whole transaction, which must leave on our minds an idea of the importance of the subject under discussion, and which must teach us that it was no light matter to delay placing this Seal in use in opposition to the commands of Her Majesty. He (Hon. Dr. P.) attached as much importance to that warrant of Her Majesty as he would have done to an Act of Parliament, had such been necessary, to repeal the use of the old Seal. This was more particularly true when we consider the extent to which this country was governed by despatches. It was as binding upon us to pay attention to commands conveyed in this way, as if we received an Act of Parliament assented to by Her Majesty. The Government of 1869, which was responsible for this act of disobedience, was an Anti-Union Government, but they should have remembered that they were dealing not with the Dominion but with the Imperial authorities. He (Hon. Dr. P.) thought that they would now regret that portion of their proceedings, which placed them in hostility, not to the Dominion Government, but to the Imperial Government. The allusion in the Queen's Warrant to the Seal of the Dominion, to be composed of the arms of the four Provinces quartered, had in his (Hon. Dr. P.'s) opinion, an importance not generally attached to it. Suppose that the Seal at present used in Nova Scotia, which did not form one of the quarterings of the Seal of the Dominion, to be held to be the legal one. In such a case, what became of the Great Seal of the Dominion? We would have confusion worse confounded at Ottawa. If the Great Seal of the Dominion were invalid as not bearing the arms of the four Provinces quartered, as it was required to do, and as it did not do, if the seal now in use in this Province were the legal one, even the Lieutenant-Governor, who received his commission under the Great Seal of the Dominion, would not be properly qualified. He thought that sufficient attention had not been paid to this point. A few days ago an hon. member had promised to settle the question by putting a hook in the nose of this leviathan. He had a leviathan to handle, and one that he (Hon. Dr. P.) thought he would find it difficult to manage with all his skill.

A good deal has been said about the memorandum of the Minister of Justice referring to the seal of the Dominion and the seals of the Province. But he (Hon. Dr. P.) maintained that that memorandum was nothing more than an argument, suggesting that the same rights and privileges enjoyed by the larger Provinces of Ontario and Quebec should be conferred on Nova Scotia and New Brunswick. The Minister of Justice had no doubt that Her Majesty had the sole power to order and change at will the Great Seal of the Dominion. His question was whether, under the altered position of the Provinces caused by the British North America Act, the power to fix the Great Seals of the Provinces did not rest elsewhere. He called attention to the provision of the Act that the seals of Ontario and Quebec should be of the same design as those of Upper and Lower Canada respectively, and inferred that if the Lieutenant-Governors of Ontario and Quebec had the sole right of altering the great seals of these Provinces at pleasure, the same authority ought to be held to exist in the Lieutenant-Governors of Nova Scotia and New Brunswick. He did not convey the impression that it was settled, but merely that it was a question for argument. He (Hon. Dr. P.) thought that probably the seals of Upper and Lower Canada were sent in the usual course to England to be defaced, and that the Provinces under their new names received new seals of similar design to the old ones. He concurred in the propriety of seeking to have Nova Scotia and New Brunswick placed on an equal footing with the larger Provinces. Because we were less in population he did not see why we should not have the same privileges. But, however proper this might be, the fact appeared to be that we had not the same privileges. In the same way he might say that he did not see why this House did not enjoy the same privileges as the other House in regard to

money bills. The fact was sufficient that we did not, and that if we attempted to make an alteration in a money bill it would be at once returned to us. He (Hon. Dr. P.) could not help alluding to a high compliment which had been paid Sir John A. Macdonald by the Provincial Secretary, who had called that gentleman the ablest constitutional lawyer in the Dominion of Canada. He (Hon. Dr. P.) quite concurred in the propriety of that observation, and believed that the history of his seven years of government would bear testimony to the correctness of the estimate. The reply of Earl Granville to the memorandum of Sir John A. Macdonald, just referred to, was proof positive to his (Hon. Dr. P.'s) mind that the new seal sent to this Province was the seal to be used in connection with all public documents to give them validity. Earl Granville's opinion was that Nova Scotia and New Brunswick not being mentioned in the Act, the powers previously vested in the Queen with regard to the appointment of their seals could not be held to be taken away by implication. The 133rd section of the Act provided that the French language should be used in the Courts of Quebec. His hon. friend from Arichat (Hon. Mr. Martell) might as well rise and contend that because Nova Scotia was not mentioned, the French language should be used in our courts, as for anyone to give powers to this Province by implication in regard to the establishing of the Great Seal, because similar powers had been given in terms to other Provinces. On December 10th, 1869, General Doyle acknowledged the receipt of the new seal, and engaged to transmit the old one. The hon. member who had preceded him had said that he did not believe that there was a President of the Privy Council at that date. General Doyle said positively that he had received the seal at the hands of the Privy Council, and it was not to be assumed that he had made a misstatement. He wished to call attention to the words in which the Lieutenant-Governor engaged to return the old seal. There were no conditions about his language. Nothing could be more positive, and when a Governor made a promise like that, the inference was that he intended to keep it. He could not say why it was that General Doyle had never returned the old seal in accordance with his promise.

"Hon. Mr. Morrison said that perhaps he had never found the convenient season.

"Hon. Dr. Parker said that possibly the explanation was that the person who had charge of the seal would not hand it over; but it is likely that General Doyle would himself think it proper to give the required information. He would now refer to another despatch of Sir Hastings Doyle, bearing date 7th February, 1870, addressed to the Secretary of State at Ottawa, enclosing the Minute of Council of the Province of Nova Scotia deprecating any alteration in the Great Seal and requesting that it be brought to the notice of His Excellency the Governor-General 'in order that the same may, if he sees fit, be transmitted to the Secretary of State for the Colonies.' This despatch struck him as being a masterpiece of sarcasm. It suggested that, in the opinion of the Lieutenant-Governor, it was not at all necessary the despatch should go any further. It suggested also that the action of his Council, in disregarding the command of Her Majesty, was disloyal. It was quite clear that the Governor-General did not see fit to forward that Minute of Council. On the 6th of February, 1874, Lord Kimberly addressed a circular despatch to the officers administering the Government of the different colonies of the empire, desiring to be furnished with copies or impressions of the Arms or Seals of the colonies. On the 17th of March a copy of the despatch was forwarded by the Under-Secretary of State to the Lieutenant-Governor, asking for two copies or good impressions of the Arms and Seal of the Province of Nova Scotia. On the 4th March following, Lieutenant-Governor Archibald, in accordance with the request, enclosed two copies of the Great Seal of this Province. He (Hon. Dr. P.) had asked to be informed whether the copies so sent were taken from the old seal or from the new seal, and the hon. treasurer (Hon. Mr. Brown) had replied that they

were taken from the old seal. Had His Honor the Lieutenant-Governor been aware of the existence of this secret correspondence, or of the fact that there was this other seal in the Provincial Secretary's office he (Hon. Dr. P.) assumed that he would, in obedience to Lord Kimberley's request, have demanded that the copies forwarded should be taken from the new seal. He would like here to call attention again to the fact which had been brought out several days ago, that on the 4th series of the Revised Statutes there was a copy of what was in fact the new seal. He had asked by what authority this copy had been placed there but there appeared to be a painful want of information on the subject. The Hon. Treasurer could not say who authorized it. He (Hon. Dr. P.) maintained that that seal must have been placed there by the authority of some member of the Government. It could not else have got there. The Hon. Treasurer had assumed that two copies of the Revised Statutes having this seal were sent to the Colonial Office in accordance with the usual practice. The result of this was that we had two Great Seals in use in this province, the new seal having been used on one of the most important public documents that could emanate from any Government, viz., the laws of the land. He had no doubt that every person who had read this correspondence would regret the secrecy that had been maintained in regard to it. Not only were the outside public kept in ignorance of its existence, but even the Legislature knew nothing of it. The Government of the day exercised authority in regard to the correspondence that no Government should have exercised. Both the public and the Legislature ought to have been acquainted with its existence. In the last clause of the minute of Council it was said that the people of Nova Scotia were warmly attached to the old Seal. The language used would convey the impression that the Seal had been in use here for centuries, but instead of that being the case we found that it had only been in use since the accession of Her Majesty. He did not believe one man in a hundred had ever heard of or seen this seal, or that any member of the House, with the exception perhaps of the President, if he were placed in the witness box and the seal placed in his hands, could swear to its identity. What expression then would be strong enough to characterize the language of that Minute. One might infer from it that the whole people of Nova Scotia were in a lachrymose state because the seal to which they were supposed to be so affectionately attached was to be withdrawn. He would say that had the people of Nova Scotia known that Her Majesty had commanded the use of this other seal, and had this correspondence, which was secreted in the office of some member of the Government, been laid before them, the loyalty of the people would have coerced the Government into yielding obedience to the commands of Her Majesty. He believed that the new seal should have been put into use as soon as it was received from the Governor-General. He did not consider a proclamation necessary, as none had ever been made in a previous case. In New Brunswick the seal had been proclaimed, and the old one sent to England immediately. The only explanation he could offer why a proclamation had been made in New Brunswick was, that the new seals had been proclaimed in Ontario and Quebec, and that in New Brunswick it was considered that while a proclamation would give the matter publicity it could do no harm. How much better it would have been had the Government of Nova Scotia acted in the same loyal spirit as the Government of New Brunswick. In the latter Province they had as Attorney-General a man at once able and loyal, and they had also an able constitutional lawyer at the head of the Government. There everything was going on harmoniously. Here there was nothing but confusion and disorder. We had been made the laughing stock of the whole continent, if not of the Mother Country too. The position of the present Government of Nova Scotia was a very peculiar one. He did not accuse them of having acted wrongly up to a certain date. The Provincial Secretary said that he was ignorant that such a seal and correspondence had any existence. He believed that the Hon. Treasurer was ignorant of any wrong intention too. As he had said,

they could not be charged with a dereliction of duty up to a certain time. But when that moment arrived—when they once became aware of what had occurred—they should not have hesitated a moment as to their course. Instead of that they had assumed the position of defenders of the late Government. They said that correspondence was still going on, and until that was ended the matter was not definitely settled. The only correspondence was a Minute of Council, which the Lieutenant-Governor sent to Mr. Howe to be submitted to the Governor-General and sent to the Secretary of State for the Colonies or not, as he pleased. The moment the despatch of Lord Granville was placed in the hands of the Lieutenant-Governor, that moment the whole responsibility was thrown upon the Government of Nova Scotia. The Dominion Government had performed their part. It remained for the Government of Nova Scotia to do theirs. It was quite proper for the Government to ask to be placed on the same footing with the Governments of Ontario and Quebec. He would have joined them in that, but the first thing that he would have done would have been to adopt the new seal. His first act would have been one of obedience. Then he would have insisted on our right to be placed on an equality with the other Provinces. He did not see why a Judge in Nova Scotia, who exercised the same functions as a Judge in Ontario or Quebec, should not be paid in precisely the same way. There should be no distinction made between them. He had asked the other day for information as to what documents required the addition of the Great Seal to give them validity, and he had been referred to the Revised Statutes. He had been unable to find the information sought for there, and he thought the Government ought to have supplied it. He thought this was a question that the Government should turn their attention to, in order that we might be kept out of difficulty. It was said that marriage licenses were valid because they bore the seal of the Lieutenant-Governor, but they required as well the signature of the Provincial Secretary, whose commission was required to be under the Great Seal. If therefore, that officer had never been properly appointed, it looked as if even the marriage licenses might be invalid. It was a rather interesting question to know who was the proper custodian of the Great Seal in this Province. We were told that it was kept in the office of the Provincial Secretary. He (Hon. Dr. P.) thought that it ought to be in the hands of the Lieutenant-Governor; that it should be affixed by him, and by him alone. It was admitted that a great error had been committed, and it was our duty to rectify it as speedily as possible. The highest judicial authorities in the Province had decided against the legality of the old seal. The Attorney-General of the Province, in referring to the matter a day or two since, had pointed out this difficulty in passing an Act to legalize the acts which had been done under the old seal: that if the seal were illegal, the Parliament which had been summoned under it was illegal too. The only constitutional way that he (Hon. Dr. P.) could see out of the difficulty was that some of us here be sent about our business, and that a new Parliament be summoned under the new seal. This was the only deduction he could form from the opinion given by the Crown Law Officer. He thought it was the duty of the House to adopt the resolution now under discussion. It might be voted down now, but he believed that, in after years, the principle embodied in it would be sustained."

SESSION OF 1878.

On the report of a committee on the Memorial of Stephen Selden for the revival of a Department of Vital Statistics (which Memorial my father had presented).

"Hon. Dr. Parker said that there was one point in connection with the department to which he would like to refer before the discussion closed. One feature of the work that would be performed by the officers of the department was to report the number of deaths from various causes in different sections of the country. In certain counties what were known as zymotic diseases, such as diphtheria, scarlet fever, and others, prevailed to a large extent. If the head of the department found any disease prevailing to an unusual extent in any particular locality there should be an investigation held which would likely elicit facts, showing the existence of local causes which produced the results. It would then be the duty of the officer to report to the Government, who if the cause was preventable, could see to its removal. In this country it had been the habit of people to erect houses without paying sufficient attention to drainage. Sometimes drains were carried too near wells of water, the water became poisoned in consequence and created disease in the persons who drank it. Such facts as these at once suggested practical legislation. There ought to be certain county or civic authorities who could be applied to in reference to such matters, and to whom plans of drains would have to be submitted for approval. It had been estimated that a life in Canada was worth to the country \$500. If 20,000 deaths occurred in the course of a year from preventable causes, it would, according to his calculation, involve a loss to the country of \$10,000,000. The fact that deaths from these causes affected chiefly the laboring classes, showed that this question was intimately associated with the question of labor. It also affected the question of emigration, for any man who thought of emigrating would obtain the vital statistics of various countries and where the death rate was the smallest there he was most likely to carry his family and himself. In France a health bill had been passed in 1842 which, shortly after its passage, had reduced the death rate from one in thirty-six to one in thirty-nine, and, subsequently, to one in forty-seven. There a decrease of nearly thirty-three per cent. had been effected by proper legislation. Germany, Austria and Russia were all dealing with the subject, and also many of the States of the neighboring Union. In England no less than fifty public health bills had been passed within a comparatively short period. In the city of London, through this instrumentality, they had effected the remarkable reduction in the death rate from forty per thousand to twenty. He trusted that these facts would impress hon. members with the importance of having in this country a proper system of vital statistics, or, in other words, a system for the registration of births, deaths and marriages."

On the discussion of this memorial at another stage,

"Hon. Dr. Parker was glad his hon. friend had brought this subject up again, and he would take the opportunity to mention a few circumstances connected with the office. When the office was organized in 1864 it was looked upon as an important one, and a very efficient officer was placed in charge of it. From that time forward the office had gone on doing good and substantial work for the country, the reports containing a vast fund of information that ought to be of great use. When the present Dominion Government came into power, they pensioned the head officer and appointed a successor. They had now abolished the office, and were paying pensions to Mr. Costley's successor, together with the other officials. As the matter stood at present the Government were paying away the sum of \$2,000 in pensions, the office had been closed, and the public were not deriving a particle of benefit. This was a great hardship. At the same time he might mention that the person placed aside by the Dominion Government had a claim of \$294.50 against the office in regard to which he had never been able to obtain any satisfaction. In the year 1872 the Sessions of Halifax County objected to pay certain moneys to the Registrar, on the ground that in

1867 the Dominion had assumed the care of matters relating to statistics, and had relieved the Province of the burden. A case was made up on the point with the sanction of the Dominion Government, and referred to the Supreme Court of this Province. The decision of the court, which was delivered by the late Mr. Justice McCully, was to the effect that the matter was no longer under the control of the Local Government and that the responsibility for the work done in connection with the office rested with the Government of the Dominion. He (Hon. Dr. P.) concurred that a great injustice had been done the Province by the abolition of the office, and hoped that prompt action would be taken to provide a remedy. We could hardly tell what injury would result. He had already referred to the relation of the office to health, emigration, and other subjects. The action that he would suggest would be a joint resolution addressed to the Dominion Government from both branches of the Legislature. If the office were revived the persons who now received pensions could be placed in harness again, or in the event of their refusal, the Government would have the right to cease payment of their pensions."

Although the report of the committee was favorable to the memorial, the Department was not re-established until 1908.

PUBLIC CHARITIES BILL.

This Bill now being taken up for its second reading:

"Hon. Dr. Parker said that before the bill passed its second reading he wished to make a few observations in regard to it. He did not complain of the appointment of a committee of management for the asylum for the insane, for he was aware that that institution had suffered in years past for want of such a committee. He did not take exception to the principle of the Bill before the House. His great objection to it was that although there were several things in the Bill that could be amended with advantage, we were given to understand that no amendment would be permitted because it was a Government Bill. He had on a previous occasion called attention to the clause in the Lieutenant-Governor's speech referring to the recent investigation into the affairs of the Insane Asylum, in which it was assumed that the appointment of a commission appointed for that purpose, was made under the authority of a recommendation from the committee on Humane Institutions appointed by this House and by the House of Assembly at the last session of the Legislature. He had taken exception to this assumption at the time, and he did not now believe that the reports could be so construed—the subject had already been dealt with at considerable length, and the time of the committees of both Houses taken up day by day and almost all the material facts elicited that were brought out by the commission. The expenses of the commission, including fees to commissioners, travelling expenses, and reporting and printing, would make a sum total of between two and three thousand dollars, and yet this costly report had overtaken nothing more than could have been accomplished by an enquiry conducted by the government themselves. Dr. DeWolf, Dr. Fraser, and one or two subordinates had been placed on trial. They claimed that they should have been permitted to be present to hear and cross-examine the witnesses who gave evidence against them. That which they claimed was sound in principle and should have been assented to. Any man placed on trial in this country has the opportunity, or should have, of hearing the testimony of the witnesses against him, and which may affect him. This right was not afforded to these gentlemen. They had not the opportunity of replying to the charges against them, and the testimony was not read over to them when they demanded it. Such a course

was not in accordance with British justice or British usage. It was true that they had the opportunity of being examined in relation to facts elicited from the examination of previous witnesses, but that was a very different thing from having those facts stated by the witnesses in the presence of the parties charged who could then have had the opportunity of refuting, or, at all events, of cross-examining them. He was free to admit that irregularities had occurred in connection with the institution to which he referred, but he believed they were such as could have been cured by a direct supervision of a Board of Commissioners. Hitherto the Commissioner of Mines and Works had had practically the entire control. There was a Board of Commissioners it was true, but what authority had they? None whatever. Their duties consisted of going through the wards, inspecting them, and making a report. These Commissioners were disposed to do their duty, deal faithfully with the institution, and had the Government placed it more fully under their control the over-expenditure of which we had heard in past years would not have occurred. During all these years, though, the Government were silent. They had heard all these charges in relation to over-expenditure, and, more especially, in regard to the comparative expenditure between our asylum and those in other places, but they took no action and the expenditure continued the same year after year. In consequence of this neglect a large amount had been lost to the Province and the parties who were largely chargeable for these sins of omission and commission were the Government themselves.

"In regard to the change made in the officials he would not say aught against the gentleman who was to be Dr. DeWolf's successor. Dr. Reid was a clever man and physician, but he (Dr. P.) had maintained outside, and he would maintain here, that the head of an institution of this character should be a trained man, having had an experience of not less than three years in institutions of a similar character, and he thought the Government had committed a mistake in not procuring such a one. No doubt Dr. Reid's capabilities were such that in a few years he would be familiar with the details of such a position, but he was not so prepared to-day. He (Hon. Dr. P.) could speak as to the duties devolving upon the incumbent of such an office as Dr. Reid was about to enter upon, with an authority derived from experience, having been for some years at the head of the Board of Commissioners, and had a part in the organization of the institution.

"The Bill before the House proposed to deal with the management of the institution in combination with several other institutions. It appointed a Board of five Commissioners, the Chairman of the Board being the Commissioner of Works and Mines. In the course of three years there had been some three changes in that office. We had had Mr. Robertson twice, the late Attorney-General once, and now we had Mr. Gayton. We were now placing at the head of the Board a man who came in to-day and might go out to-morrow. He did not say Mr. Gayton would go out. He merely suggested the possibility. The experience gained in a few months would thus be lost, and would have to be acquired by someone else. If there were so many shifts in this office the institution would necessarily suffer in its material interests. The next officer was the Mayor of the City of Halifax, who was to be a member of the Board ex officio. He did not say that the present mayor and his predecessors were not men of stability, but they were in one year and out the next. The training acquired by one would be lost when the next came in. This idea of constant change in connection with such an institution as the one he referred to did not strike him as being in accordance with its interests. Besides this the Mayor of Halifax had no official connection with the institution on the other side of the water. His position in regard to the Poor's Asylum and the Hospital was different. The city was directly interested in these institutions to the amount of \$100,000, as it paid interest upon the debentures to that

amount in consequence of expenditure incurred in connection with them. It was therefore incumbent upon the mayor to exercise some supervision over the Poor's Asylum and the Provincial and City Hospital; but, in connection with the Insane Asylum, he had no such responsibility. In regard to that institution it was just as he might see fit whether he would act or not. That he could give much time to such an object was hardly to be expected, as most persons holding the office of mayor wished to give what time they could afford from their official duties to their own private business, and would usually be too much occupied with other matters to give much attention to the performance of a duty for which they were to receive no compensation. In regard to the Superintendent, the Bill required him to be a person who had been in actual practice for a period of not less than ten years. Such a provision as this was all right; but we should not forget how it might affect the position of the Assistant Superintendent. A man after five years' practice might take the position of Assistant Superintendent. After he had been in that position for three years, and had had the advantage of all the special training that his position would enable him to acquire, in case of a vacancy in the position of Superintendent, the Assistant would be prevented from taking it, and it would be necessary to go out and call in some one else who, while he might have been in practice ten years, would be altogether wanting in the training that the Assistant had acquired, and which was of the first importance. It would be necessary to commence *de novo*. He (Hon. Dr. P.) maintained that if we had in the institution an assistant who had in all respects performed his duties satisfactorily, and had had four or five years' practice, and would bring some degree of talent to the position, in case a vacancy occurred in the position of Superintendent the Assistant should be promoted to the position. So far as the Bill prevented this the principle was erroneous, and was such as no one would think of applying to his own private affairs. We were informed that no amendments could be entertained to the Bill, but he trusted that this feature of it would be amended at an early day.

"There was another matter to which he would like to direct attention. The Secretary of the Board ought to be the servant of the Board. The gentleman appointed to the office would make a most efficient officer, but was constantly employed under the Government in the Mines office, and the Board consequently could not exercise that control over him that it was necessary for such an organization to possess over their Secretary. This was an objection to the Bill which he regretted to see, inasmuch as it gave it a political appearance. For years past we had heard a great deal of the debts due this institution from the various counties. It was to be feared that the Chairman of the Board being a departmental officer of the Government would be subject to influences which would not permit him to get from the Counties the amounts that ought annually to be collected. The amount due this year, he understood, was nearly as large as last year. He had always felt that if an independent Board of Commissioners had the control of this matter it would not be in the position in which it was. He believed that the Board, as constituted by the Bill, was too small to carry on the work as it should be done. The Chairman was the head of a department, and had other duties; and the mayor might attend or he might not. No one knew, who had not had actual experience, how much time would be occupied. It would take half a day to merely go through the institution at Dartmouth. Another feature of the Bill that was objectionable was the provision that no appropriation of money could be made at a meeting of the Board at which the Chairman was not present. He felt that great practical inconvenience would result from this. If the members of the Board were nominated by the Government, they ought to be able to place some confidence in them, yet they were precluded from dealing in any way with financial matters, unless the political head of the Board was present to influence and to guide them. Such a provision placed the Board in a position differing little from that of the inspecting commissioners who had

performed the duties hitherto. If they were to have no other authority than this, the matter might almost as well have been left where it was. The Board would feel quite as competent to deal with financial matters as their Chairman, and should not be deprived of the authority which this clause took from them.

"He would now turn for a moment to the position of the City of Halifax, as it was affected by the Bill before the House. The following extract from the minutes of the City Council on this point had been placed in his hands.

" EXTRACT FROM MINUTES OF CITY COUNCIL,

" March 20th, 1878.

"Whereas, it has been brought to the notice of this Council that a Bill has been introduced into the Legislature, the effect of which will be in a measure to take away from the citizens of Halifax the representation they now have on the Board of Commissioners of the City Hospital and Poor's Asylum, and whereas the City of Halifax is liable for a sum of one hundred and one thousand dollars on said buildings, and contributes towards the support of the Poor's Asylum about eighty per cent. of the total expenditure,

"Therefore, resolved, That the matter be referred to the Committee of Laws and Privileges with instructions to place the matter before the Legislature, and to represent the great injustice that will be done the City of Halifax should any Bill be passed the effect of which would be to give the City of Halifax any less representation on the said Board for the management of said institution than they at present have.

" A true extract.

" (Signed)

THOS. RHIND,
" City Clerk."

" At present the Board of Commissioners managing the Hospital and Poor's Asylum consists of twelve members. Eight of these were appointed by the Lieutenant-Governor. The Mayor of Halifax was a member *ex officio*, and the civic authorities, who had such a large stake in the institutions, appointed three. In 1866, when the Act was passed giving the civic authorities this right, he (Hon. Dr. P.) had agreed in the opinions of the corporation of the day, and had joined with them in urging upon the Government their claim to a representation upon the Board in proportion to their interest in the institutions. That was one-third of the representation. The city had enjoyed that right ever since, and he was in a position to say that their representatives had very faithfully performed their duties. He could not lay his finger on any man who had not given the necessary attendance upon the meetings of the Board. Whenever a new man came in there were always more experienced men present upon whose information he could draw. The total cash expenditure of the Poor's Asylum, last year, was \$25,166.03. Of this amount upwards of \$16,000 were contributed by the Government, \$4,618.86, or about one-fifth, by the City of Halifax, and \$1,425 were derived from other sources. The hospital derived from the provincial treasury the sum of \$4,000, from the City of Halifax \$3,945.72, from the marine and fisheries department about \$2,200, and one or two small sums from other sources. From this it would appear that the City of Halifax, last year, paid within a few dollars of the amount paid by the Province. Yet in the future, it was to be deprived of a voice in the management of these institutions. He contended that this would be an injustice to the city. He was aware it would be argued that the City of Halifax would practically have the whole representation, because the commissioners would necessarily be selected from the city, but it was one thing to select the Board from a community and another to have a portion of it appointed by the community. It struck him as being, to a certain extent, a blow at what was known as responsible government, and the old Tories were

In this case the parties sustaining the principles of responsible government, while the liberals were the parties attacking them. He thought that when the people came to read the Bill they would not feel that they had been dealt with on liberal principles.

"The institution at Dartmouth was a more expensive one to maintain than that at St. John. The heating would cost, probably, not less than fifty per cent. more. The system of treatment had also been different, there being three attendants in our institution, where, in St. John, they had but two. The bill before the House provided for two assistants, one to be paid \$450 and the other \$350. One had sufficed before and one would do now. The salary had been reduced, it was true, but, on the other hand, the assistants had to be maintained.

"A member of the City Council had submitted the proposition to him (Hon. Dr. P.) that if the Legislature took away from the city the right it previously enjoyed of being represented at the Board, they should assume the liability of \$100,000 at present borne by the city. He had little doubt that the citizens of Halifax would feel very grateful if the Legislature acted upon this suggestion. In reference to the appointment of the commission all that the report has suggested to his mind was that the matter should be left to the Government, and not that they should go to heavy expenses to elicit facts that were already known."

On a bill to unite the offices of Provincial Secretary and Provincial Treasurer,

"Hon. Dr. Parker quite concurred in the remarks of Hon. Mr. Creelman in reference to the number of members of the Executive Council and the expense connected with that body. He could not say how much of the expense was unnecessary, but he thought the visits of councillors to the city were more frequent than there was any real occasion for. He believed the Executive Government was larger than it should be. It was larger than that of Ontario, where they had a population of 1,620,851, and yet had only four members of Government, who were all departmental officers. Unless the blue books were in error these four persons constituted the Government of that large Province. If the Government of the Province of Ontario consisted merely of four members, surely the number of our Government was capable of reduction. It was suggested that it would create discontent if one section of the country were represented in the Government and another not. He could not conceive how that could be the case. If we had a small Government they could communicate with the members of the counties by letter or by telegraph when business specially demanded it, and in that way save these expensive trips. Halifax had at present but two members of Government, as two of these residing here for the time have represented counties in other parts of the Province. In reference to the combination of the offices of Provincial Secretary and Treasurer it was a very desirable thing if we could economize thereby. But there was a question whether, in reality, we were economizing. In New Brunswick, where this same plan has been adopted, they had an Auditor of Accounts, to whom all accounts had to be submitted before being paid. Accounts were compared by the Auditor with existing legislation, and no amount could be paid unless it was found to be comprised under such legislation. In this Province amounts had been paid out of the treasury for want of proper supervision. If we had an Auditor, he believed that for the future this would be checked. The Provincial Secretary's office was, perhaps, overburdened with work as it was. That officer, in carrying on the business of what properly belonged to his department had quite enough to do, and was not in a position to give that attention to financial matters that they required. In New Brunswick the auditor was not the head of a department, but occupied the position of a head clerk. He received a salary of \$1,500. His (Dr. P.'s) objection to the present bill was that it did not

afford sufficient protection. The Public Accounts Committee had not time to examine every account in detail. They were exceedingly numerous, and no committee could give them the supervision and care that an auditor could. He did not take exception to the abolition of the office of Treasurer if only proper checks were provided."

At an earlier stage of this bill he had said:

"The facts which had been stated to-day made him (Hon. Dr. P.) think it the more necessary that in connection with the amalgamation of the offices of Provincial Secretary and Treasurer we should have a public auditor, as they had in New Brunswick, whose duty it should be to see to just such matters as these."

As in the case of the Statistical Office, what he here contended for was realized long after the scene which then knew him knew him no more. A bill establishing the office of Provincial Auditor passed in 1909.

SESSION OF 1879.

The Holmes-Thompson Government had now been formed, on the defeat of the Liberal party, which had held power since the autumn of 1867.

This ministry, in consequence of the alleged extravagance and misgovernment of its predecessors, took the first step looking to the abolition of the Legislative Council, by the following resolution, moved by Hon. Samuel Creelman, a member of the Government:

"Whereas, By the provisions of the British North America Act, 1867, in reference to the legislative powers of the Parliament of Canada and the Provincial Legislatures, the principal and most important legislation was assigned to the Parliament of Canada, and the minor and less important to the Provincial Legislatures;

And Whereas, Railway subsidies and other expenditures have nearly, and will in a short time more than exhaust the balance of debt in favor of Nova Scotia, and thus cause a decrease in the provincial revenue, to the extent of interest formerly received on the balance, amounting to \$100,000.00 annually;

And Whereas, For some years past, the expenditure of the Province has so largely exceeded its revenue that retrenchment is now indispensably necessary;

Therefore, Resolved, That in order to reduce the legislative expenses of the Province, in the opinion of this House, it has become necessary to dispense with the Legislative Council as a branch of the Provincial Legislature."

A similar resolution was moved in the House of Assembly.

On the resolution of Mr. Creelman:

"Hon. Dr. Parker regretted that he was called upon to follow gentlemen taking the same view of this question that he did himself, but as no one else seemed disposed to speak, he would claim the attention of the House for a time. He felt, he might say, impressed by the gravity and importance of the occasion. It was no light matter for him as a legislator, or for any body of legislators, to widely sever the connection that had existed for such a length of time between this and the other branches of the Legislature. It was no light matter for us, as individuals,

to attempt to dislocate a system which had existed in this Province for a century and a quarter or thereabouts. He felt, however, that it was his duty to vote for the resolution before the House, and, before doing so, to express his views in reference to it. He had been a member of this House now for some eleven or twelve years, during which period he had had the honour—he emphasized the word—of voting and acting with the Opposition. It seemed rather hard now, after a change of government had taken place, and at the very commencement of their career as supporters of the Government, that he and his associates should be called upon to advocate a measure the result of which would be to sweep this body out of existence; but, hard though it might seem, they were fully prepared to abide by the result of their action. He had long experienced the feelings of a man in opposition, but, notwithstanding that, and any desire that he might have to realize the feelings resulting from another position, he felt it to be his duty to waive all personal feelings, and to give his support to the resolution introduced by the Honorable Commissioner of Mines and Works. As a member of the Opposition, he (Dr. P.) had always felt it incumbent upon him to consider the various measures which, from time to time, came before the House, separate and apart from all party bias; and he believed that neither he nor the gentlemen with whom he was associated had ever thrown difficulties in the path of the gentlemen who held the government of the country. They had never given what was known as a factious opposition. Whenever they differed in principle from the Government they had not hesitated to express their opinions, and to place these opinions upon record. But when, on the other hand, measures came before the House in the principle of which they could concur, they had not hesitated to aid the Government in carrying them. When measures came up here which seemed to require modification, it had been their aim to act in the interests of the Province and of the people. As members of the Opposition, they had felt their responsibility, but the responsibility attaching to members or supporters of a Government was always much greater than that which attached to the members of an Opposition. He did not hesitate to say that if the majority of members which supported the former Government in this House had done their duty we would not now have had to meet a deficit of \$315,000. He believed that when the financial condition of the Province came to be more closely looked into that deficit would be found to be nearer \$400,000 than \$300,000.

“He (Dr. P.) was not one of those who believed that this body was a relic of the past, as the honorable member from Halifax, who preceded him, had expressed it. Work of the greatest importance had been done by the House in correcting and revising immature legislation. In tens, twenties—even hundreds—of cases, this body had been enabled to amend important bills, in a manner that prevented mischief from resulting to the country and the people. But, notwithstanding all this, he was here to perform a duty, and that was to co-operate with the leader of the Government in this House in causing the existence of this body to cease. This action was forced upon us by the action of the majority who supported the late Government, as, if it had not been for them we would not have been in the position in which we were. There had been an impression abroad that this body was composed of independent men, acting and voting independently of any outside influence. Those who had sat here for any length of time were in a position to state that such was not the case. They were in a position to know that gentlemen sitting here, though further removed from them, were swayed by the same influences as members of the other branch of the Legislature. We had had the misfortune—and it was a grave one—of having in this Province a Government sustained by a very narrow majority. They had not only been so situated, but, on several occasions, they had actually been in such a position that even a single member had had them in his power. On several occasions two or three members, by using an influence of this description, had been able to compel the Government to

pass acts of the most injurious character to the Province, and this had been the main instrument in placing us in the condition in which we found ourselves to-day. Two or three members, coming from the western counties, had been able to force the Government either to resign or pass measures which resulted in placing us where we were, financially, to-day. Those two or three men had not only influenced the Government, but they had influenced this body as well. So that we might say that the country had been governed by two or three men, and sadly had it prejudiced the interests of the country. There had been, it was true, two or three instances in which this House had not been brought under the influence of the other House or of the other Government. One memorable instance of this was the Ballot Act. The Opposition here was opposed to the principle of that bill. Two or three members on the Government side of the House took the same view of it, and it was rejected. A second bill was submitted, and we, feeling that it would not be wise to oppose the wishes of the country, yielded, and permitted it to pass. The very next year the leader of the Government in the other House introduced a measure to abolish the act. We, in this House, felt that it would be a disgrace to pass such a measure one year only to repeal it the next, and the result was that the act was retained, and was on the statute book to-day. Then, again, there was the County Courts Bill. The Opposition were joined in reference to that bill by two gentlemen who are absent to-day—the one through death and the other on account of illness. These gentlemen aided in the attempt to prevent that bill from becoming law. He felt it his duty to acknowledge that they had received from political opponents a degree of aid that almost enabled them to succeed in defeating that bill. Notwithstanding these instances, however, this House had been controlled at one time by the Government and at another by the other House, but oftener on account of the necessities of the Government. It had frequently been the case, when Government measures were submitted here, even where we agreed with them in principle, that we have been prevented from modifying them in the public interests. The first instance of this character to which he would refer was the Public Charities Bill. He would call attention to his remarks on that occasion, as found in the debates of the House. On the bill being taken up for its second reading, he (Dr. P.) had said that 'he did not take exception to the principle of the bill before the House. His great objection to it was that, although there were several things in the bill that could be amended with advantage, we were given to understand that no amendment would be permitted, it being a Government bill.'

"A few days subsequently another measure was introduced by a member of Government, and, after being referred to the select committee, was unanimously recommended by them to the House, with several amendments. The statement was then again made by the member introducing the bill that, it being a Government measure, he could not accept any amendments; and he insisted that the amendments recommended, even though they did not alter the principle of the bill in the slightest degree, but were generally admitted to be an improvement, could not be accepted. He (Dr. P.) said then, as he said now, that such acts weakened the position of the House, and were derogatory to its dignity, and that if we were to be prohibited from exercising our legitimate functions we had better put on our hats and allow the door to close behind us. Such things as this had influenced him in taking the position he did to-day.

"We would now refer to a very important measure to which no amendment had been permitted, because it was a Government measure, and of which we were feeling the evil effects to-day. He referred to the Western Counties Railway Bill. A money clause was contained in that bill, which provided that when \$40,000 of the company's money had been expended in the construction of the road they should be entitled to draw \$20,000 out of the public treasury. The bill neglected

to state what was to be done with the latter amount. He (Dr. P.) suggested that an amendment should be made for the purpose of conveying the idea that after the \$20,000 had been drawn from the public treasury it should be expended upon the road, and that the company should only be entitled to draw another \$20,000 after they had expended a further \$40,000 of their own money, and so on until the whole amount of subsidy voted in aid of the road had been drawn. Ostensibly the bill stated that the company were to pay two-thirds of the money to the Province's one-third, but we saw at a glance that if the bill were permitted to pass in the shape in which it was introduced, it would result in the Province paying one-half instead of one-third. And what did we find to-day? We found that the whole of the subsidy voted had been drawn while the road was not more than half completed. To complete it would probably require the expenditure of a million dollars more. He (Dr. P.) had been struck the other day when it was said that the people of the Town and County of Yarmouth had expended \$300,000 on this work. An impression had been abroad that the company had not paid in anything like that amount, but, taking those figures as correct, we had, as the result, over \$700,000 taken from the public treasury and expended on this work and only \$300,000 of the company's money. He was not opposed to the principle of the bill referred to. He desired as much as anyone to see the people of Yarmouth brought into a closer connection with the outside world. It was not the principle of the measure he objected to—it was the fallacy conveyed by the manner in which it was worded. Assuming for a moment that his ideas and those of the gentlemen acting with him had been carried out, the same amount of work would not have been accomplished, but we would have only paid out \$100,000, instead of \$700,000, and have had the balance of \$600,000 to our credit at Ottawa, drawing interest at the rate of 5 per cent. per annum, representing for the Province an income of \$30,000. This would enable us to understand the position in which we had been placed by the failure on the part of the majority in this House to perform their duty.

“Next, another prominent case demanded our attention. He referred to the Nictaux and Atlantic Railway. This transaction had a very interesting history, and one that would be long remembered. Two American gentlemen happened to own an iron mine at Nictaux. Seeing how easily the late Government could be influenced, in consequence of their dependence upon the support of two or three members, these gentlemen educated certain members how to act; and, by addressing public meetings, succeeded in creating a public sentiment in favor of their scheme and in bringing it to bear upon the members. Then, having primed the members, they sent them, like legislative highwaymen, to command the Government to stand and deliver, and they did stand and deliver. They placed on the statute book an act analogous in many respects to that in reference to the Western Counties Railway, and what was the result? The Province was required to pay the sum of \$440,000 as a subsidy in aid of the construction of the Nictaux and Atlantic Railway. But who would run such a road? No one. There was nothing whatever in it. The proper course would have been to have subsidized a boat to run along a portion of our western shores, to have built a connecting link between the Nictaux Mine and the Windsor and Annapolis Railway, and have made the company a present of it. When he suggested this idea, however, he was informed that not a penny of the money would ever be called for. The bill was passed, the money was being demanded, the work was in course of construction, and when completed it would be entirely useless, yielding nothing to the revenue, and doing little or nothing for the counties through which it passed, or for the company having it in charge. What position would we have been in, then, to-day had this branch of the Legislature put its foot down and refused to permit such expenditures as those to which he had referred? The Opposition at the time requested the

Government of the day to stop, while they were in a position to do so. The advice he would give now to the present Government was to buy out that company, or to make a compromise with them, by entering into some arrangement by which the further prosecution of the work might be stopped. Were he in the Government this was the course that he should adopt. He might accumulate such instances of the dereliction of duty on the part of the Government majority in this House, but all that was necessary to do further in this direction was to point to the financial statement laid on the table of the House a few days ago.

We were all aware of the fact that it was considered desirable that the number of members of this House should be decreased. The late Government said that they concurred in the propriety of the step, and would aid in carrying it into effect; but time passed and, no action being taken, a resolution was moved by the honorable leader of the Opposition at the time to reduce the number of members to seventeen. No explanation was given of the reason which influenced the Government in delaying to take any action in this matter at that time, but an explanation was given the other day, when there appeared in the anteroom of this chamber four gentlemen formerly members of the other House, who held illegal commissions, appointing them members of this body. This was the explanation of the delay. This body was to be used for the purpose of rewarding gentlemen who had supported the former Government through all its trials and difficulties.

At the close of the last session we had here fifteen members, of whom five supported the Opposition of that day. One of the latter was ninety-four or ninety-five years of age, and could hardly be expected to be present another session. The honorable member for Pictou, another supporter of the Opposition, was so seriously ill that there was little hope of seeing him here again. We stood, then, in this position: Ten supporters of the Government to three Opposition. Immediately after this, however, Honorable D. C. Fraser, one of the supporters of the Government, resigned the seat to which Hon. Mr. Francheville was now appointed. Mr. Fraser became a candidate at the last election and was defeated. He lost a seat and Hon. Mr. Francheville gained one.

There was an old saying that the last straw breaks the camel's back. When it became known that the late Government had appointed four additional members to this House the *Gazette* that contained their appointment was that last straw. This appointment was made by a Government that had retrenchment in their mouths and economy on their tongues. As soon as that *Gazette* was issued he (Dr. P.) said that that act of the Government would be the means of causing the existence of this body to cease. The people could not reach this body in the same way that they could reach the members of the Government and of the other branch of the Legislature. But we were all members of the outside public. He was here as one of the people, and spoke as one of the people, and in the interests of the people. If this body had not exhibited the independence which it should have shown, and was merely to reflect the sentiments of the House of Assembly, he thought we had better be away from here, and that seemed to be the position which the House had occupied in the past. This being the case, he thought it would be far better to have but one chamber, and that one the representative chamber sitting in the other end of the building. We had been accused of not being in earnest in this matter. He would refer to a brief address made by him in the House last year, in which he referred to this subject, and spoke as follows:

"Hon. Dr. Parker enquired whether it was intended to permit this body and the House of Assembly to continue at their present fixed figures of eighteen and thirty-eight respectively. There were many business firms that with a small staff managed a revenue amounting to more than that of the Province at present. He thought the Government should turn their attention to the matter and make some suggestions in reference to it. The subject of doing away with this body would probably be one of

those that would come before the people at the approaching election. No one valued this body better than he did, but after some of the exhibitions which we had recently witnessed here he questioned the wisdom of continuing it if it was to become merely a reflection of the Lower House. There had been one bill here the other day which some of the best minds in the council wished to simplify by the addition of a single word. The amendment had been unanimously agreed to by the committee to whom the bill was referred, but when the amendment came before the House some of the very gentlemen who sat on the committee and there agreed to it joined in voting it down for no other reason than that it was feared the amendment would not be agreed to by the House of Assembly. As soon as such a position as this was taken it would be better for us to put on our hats and go home. The same thing was true of the legislation of previous years. We were not permitted to carry out our views in regard to the amendment of the railway bills for a similar reason. It was time we were able to conduct our business in an independent spirit.'

"In reply to that, Hon. D. C. Fraser said:

"Hon. D. C. Fraser was glad the honorable member had brought up this question, though he wished that he had been a little more definite. The honorable gentleman professed to be quite willing to do away with this House. He (Hon. Mr. F.) could tell the honorable member this, that if he or any of his friends would move a resolution to that effect, it would receive from the friends of the Government a degree of support that would surprise him.'

"He might say now that such a resolution had been introduced, and we expected to be surprised in the manner in which Mr. Fraser had hinted, and to receive from the gentlemen who formed the majority at that time a cordial support to the present resolution. That was the position which he took last year, and that was his position this year.

"Some reference had been made to legislative expenses. The cost of this body was not a very large amount for a prosperous Province, but yet, in the condition of our finances, it was a large sum. With public services, such as roads and bridges and education, demanding money, and with the treasury not in a position to grant the sums required, the twelve thousand dollars per annum expended upon this body became an important item. He himself believed that the true panacea for all our evils would be *union of the Maritime Provinces*. Last year he had the honor of being a member of a delegation to New Brunswick with this end in view. The members of that delegation were informed that the financial position of this Province was such that their proposition could not be entertained, though under other circumstances the Government of the other Province would have been glad to have done so. Our financial condition was not then known as it is now. The finances of the Province of New Brunswick were not in a satisfactory condition, but they were in a much better condition than ours, as they had resources that we had not. He did not think it at all probable that that Province would unite with us in carrying out the measure of maritime union. He (Dr. P.) was of opinion that our legislative expenses, amounting to from thirty-eight to forty-four thousand dollars, were larger than they should be. It was a duty incumbent upon the present Government to decrease that expenditure. He trusted that when the estimates came before the House one of the first reductions observable would be a decrease in the amounts paid to the members of both Houses. If it were not so, he would be very much disappointed. This was not the time to speak of a reduction of the House of Assembly, but he believed it to be in the interest of the Province not only that this House should be abolished, but that the body sitting elsewhere should be reduced in numbers. He had no hesitation in expressing the opinion that the public service of the country could be carried on quite as effectively with one member from the smaller counties and two from the larger, as they were at present. He made this suggestion publicly, for the public and the country, in the hearing of some members of that House, and with the view of influencing gentlemen sitting there, if they

could be influenced by anything he might say. He had a good deal of other matter upon his notes, but the opening addresses of the honorable members who had preceded him had anticipated many things that he might have said.

"In conclusion, he believed it to be his duty as a member of this House, having the interests of the Province at heart, to give his vote in support of the resolution which had been placed upon the table of the House. He had formed pleasant associations here, and had always been on terms of the pleasantest character with every member of the House. The days spent here would not soon be forgotten by him; but, still, he felt it to be his duty to do as he had said and vote for the resolution moved by the Honorable Commissioner of Works and Mines."

On the following day:

"Hon. Dr. Parker desired to correct a misapprehension that might exist on the minds of some honorable members in reference to some remarks which he (Dr. P.) made yesterday. In referring to the subserviency shown by this House to the late Government he wished to say that whatever Government assumed authority, if they were placed in such a position that two or three members could displace them, if such a body as this were in existence, they would be likely to utilize it, as had been done in the past, and undermine the independence which should always characterize such a body as this. While the present Government remained as it was at present, it held his entire confidence and support, but Governments might change, until in a few years hardly one of the original members of the present Government remained; hence the words used by him were not to be understood as applicable solely to the last Government. In reply to what had been said by Mr. McCurdy, in reference to his (Dr. P.'s) remarks with reference to illegal commissions, he (Mr. McC.) had said that the commissions held by the honorable gentlemen appointed in the year 1867 were illegal also. He (Dr. P.) begged to say that the commissions were not at all the same; that the commissions issued in 1867 were signed by Her Majesty the Queen. It was a grave question as to whether the commissions held by certain gentlemen recently appointed were in accordance with law, and it would be the duty of the House to deal with the matter during the present session. The honorable member from Londonderry had referred to the Senate of Canada, and asked why we did not attempt to abolish that body, and said that we might as well abolish the one body as the other. The subject was outside of the present resolution altogether; we were not dealing with the Senate of the Dominion. The honorable member had further accused honorable gentlemen who advocated this resolution of doing something that was 'suicidal, disloyal, and un-British.' He (Dr. P.) would place before the honorable gentleman a statement made last year by the then leader of the Government in this House—Mr. D. C. Fraser. He had referred to it once before, but it was necessary to repeat it. Mr. Fraser, in reply to remarks of his (Hon. Dr. P.'s) in reference to the abolition of this body, had spoken as follows:

"He (Mr. F.) was glad the honorable member had brought up this question, though he wished that he had been a little more definite. The honorable gentleman professed to be quite willing to do away with this House. He (Mr. F.) could tell the honorable member this, that if he or any of his friends would move a resolution to that effect it would receive from the friends of the Government a degree of support that would surprise him."

"Such a resolution as that suggested by the honorable gentleman's leader last year was now before the House, and yet the honorable gentleman characterized it as being 'suicidal, disloyal, and un-British.' If the advocates of the resolution before the House were chargeable with these offences, the charges were just as applicable to the leader of the honorable gentleman of last year. He (Dr. P.) took it for granted that,

if such a resolution had been brought before the House last year, Hon. Mr. Fraser would have given it his support; and, in doing so the honorable member from Londonderry would have been at his back. The honorable member had said that the present Government wished to get rid of the council, so that they might borrow money that would enable them to keep in power for twenty years to come. He did not suppose the honorable member spoke from experience. The late Government had kept themselves in power by borrowing money. They had been compelled to borrow money in consequence of the manner in which they had squandered the public funds. The honorable member suggested a reduction of 25 per cent. in the salaries of members. He (Dr. P.) was perfectly in accord with that clause of the amendment. He would concur, also, in the reduction of the pay of members of the House of Assembly. In reply to the remarks which had been made with reference to the Province of Ontario he might say that that Province was in a position to carry on the work of legislation with a smaller number of legislators in proportion to population than this Province. This was largely so on account of the existence in that Province of municipal corporations, which relieved the Legislature of a great amount of work. He hoped that before long he would see the same idea adopted here. The honorable member from Londonderry had said that we were face to face with direct taxation. He (Dr. P.) was aware of that, but who had brought us into this position. It was the party upheld for the last four years by the honorable member from Londonderry himself. He (Dr. P.) wished to place this on the proper shoulders. If we were face to face with direct taxation it was not the fault of the Government of the day, or of their friends, but of their predecessors. The honorable member from Kings (Hon. Mr. Dickie) had said that the advocates of the resolution before the House proposed to abolish this body only because of the financial difficulties of the country. That was one reason, it was true, but it was not the only reason. It was a fact that for the last twelve years this House had not been a check upon the other branch of the Legislature. To prove all this it was only necessary to refer to the financial acts placed upon the statute book during that time. The honorable member from Hants had said that if we left the Council as it was it would not be subservient to the other branch of the Legislature. The honorable gentleman had reference to the future, but he (Dr. P.) had spoken of the past. His charge was that 'in the past this House had been subservient to the other body.' The honorable gentleman had told of a patient who was bled because the young doctor who attended him considered that he should do something. The allusion was an unfortunate one for the honorable member, because his own friends had bled the public treasury until they had brought about a deficit, which existed at the present time, and they were not young practitioners who had been guilty of this malpractice. One of their very first acts had been to take \$6,710.94 out of the public treasury. This was their first act of depletion. Seven hundred thousand dollars had gone to the Western Counties Railway, without any visible result, and \$440,000 had been squandered upon the Nictaux and Atlantic Railway. In looking over the public accounts he observed that in August last the sum of \$16,000 had been paid out for a bridge in the County of Digby. We all knew the relation that the month of August bore to the month of September. In the month of August the amount referred to was drawn for on the treasury; in the month of September the election took place. He would say nothing more, but allow honorable members to place these two facts together and draw their own conclusions. Another item of \$2,500 had been appropriated to pay expenses of a lawsuit commenced by Mr. Woodworth against certain private individuals, members of the last House of Assembly. If the late Government had continued in power we would probably never have heard of these things. While the honorable member from Hants had nothing, it was true, to do with the acts referred to, he had given his support to those who had. Even if this body were not abol-

ished, he (Dr. P.) trusted that in the future there would not be the same necessity for a check upon the other branch of the Legislature as there had been in the past. The honorable gentleman (Hon. Mr. Cochran) had told us that Confederation or something else had brought us to the verge of bankruptcy. He (Dr. P.) would say that it was not Confederation that was responsible for our present position, but the illegal withdrawal from the public treasury of the sums to which he had referred, and acts of a similar character.

"Mr. Cochran—Does the honorable gentleman consider it illegal to withdraw money from the public treasury without an act authorizing the withdrawal?"

"Hon. Dr. Parker said he did, excepting under very extraordinary circumstances. The cases to which he (Dr. P.) had referred were altogether unjustifiable. The honorable member (Mr. C.) had expressed some alarm lest the Province of Ontario should obtain an undue ascendancy over us in the future. To lessen the honorable gentleman's apprehensions he (Dr. P.) might point to the new tariff just introduced. That did not look as if the wishes of Ontario alone were to be considered. On the contrary, manufactures in which we were interested were satisfactorily protected. Besides this, who had we representing us in the ministry of the Dominion just now? He would point to Hon. Mr. Tilley, Minister of Finance, a gentleman from New Brunswick. In an almost equally important position—that of Minister of Public Works—we had Hon. Dr. Tupper, a Nova Scotian. The important position of Minister of Justice was filled by Hon. James McDonald, the member for Pictou. Another office, that of the Marine and Fisheries, was occupied by Hon. Mr. Pope, of Prince Edward Island. So that, at the present time, the Maritime Provinces had four of the ablest men of the Dominion holding some of the most important cabinet offices. The honorable gentleman had asked why the office of law clerk had not been abolished. This office had been known for years as a sinecure. Why did not the Government supported by the honorable gentleman abolish it? The Government had abolished it, or had framed a bill, which would come up in a few days for approval, by which it is proposed that the Hon. Attorney-General and the Junior Clerk of the other House shall perform the duties pertaining to that office. The honorable member had asked why the Speaker's salary and the sessional pay was not attended to, and he mentioned the sum of \$1,400 as the salary received by that officer as sessional pay and allowances. During the last four years the late Government had had abundant opportunities of reducing these expenditures. There had been frequent opportunities for reducing the members' pay; the necessity existed, but there had not been the disposition to do it. He was not prepared to say what the intentions of the present Government were, but the point he wished to make was: These reductions should have been made several years ago. It was a significant fact that when it was proposed to reduce the membership of this House, all but one of those supporting the Government of the day voted against it. The only one who had voted with the Opposition in favor of the reduction was the late Mr. McKenna, of Shelburne. The honorable member from Pictou, who was here to-day, feeble in health, had made some remarks in relation to the subject under discussion. He (Dr. P.) was always glad to see his friends acting independently. It was a pleasant thing to see that honorable gentleman rising here and speaking in accordance with his convictions, even though the opinions of the honorable gentleman were different from his own. If the same independence had been shown heretofore by the members of this House we would have been in a different position from what we were. He (Dr. P.) agreed with that honorable gentleman in relation to the subject of *legislative union*. He believed that the time was coming when such an union would be effected. If he were not mistaken, the opposing sentiment was fast dying out, and a legislative union of the Provinces would, before long, take place. If so, it would relieve us from much expense, and he trusted that the honorable gentleman would live to see it accomplished."

POLITICS AND THE LEGISLATIVE COUNCIL 443

At a later day my father, as chairman of the committee appointed to draft a reply to the resolution of the House of Assembly respecting abolition, read a minority report in favor of it and a majority report against it. The Council stood thirteen to six against abolition, these figures representing the respective strength of the Parties in the Upper House.

SESSION OF 1882.

On the Railway Consolidation Bill:

"Hon. Dr. Parker, in rising to speak upon the important question before the House, said that he felt physically unequal to the task, yet as his friends desired him to speak this afternoon, and he felt it to be his duty not to give a silent vote, he had concluded to say a few words. The subject before the House was a very important one. It had its origin in the bill of 1880, which contemplated the consolidation of the railways from Halifax to Yarmouth. That measure was repealed by the more comprehensive one before the House to-day. The bill of 1880, which accomplished nothing, had given place to a larger measure, which embraced nearly all the roads to which subsidies had been given by the Province. The resolution of the 10th of April of last year, moved and carried in the House of Assembly without a dissenting voice, authorized the Government to take such action as would result in the disposal of their interests in the subsidized roads. That resolution itself gave us the explanation of the procedure of the Government in the matter. They were under no obligation to publish the resolution in the press of the country. The House of Assembly had not dictated what course they should pursue. They took the course that was best, in their own judgment, and he (Dr. P.) thought they had adopted the mode best calculated to accomplish the end in view. The resolution, after reciting the interests of the Province in the several roads to be affected, proceeded as follows:

"Be it therefore resolved, that the Government be authorized and empowered to enter into negotiations with any person or persons, or corporation, for the purpose of effecting a sale of the interests possessed by this Province in the said railways, or any of them, and to contract for such sale upon the best terms that can be obtained therefor."

"He just gave this part of the resolution, which was satisfactory at all events to him. He thought that the Government had faithfully adhered to it, and the result we had before us to-day. The hon. member from Londonderry (Hon. Mr. Morrison), in asking for information a few days ago, had said that this was the most important question which we had had before us since Confederation. He (Dr. P.) concurred with him in that sentiment, but while doing so he did not concur with him in the other sentiment or term by which he characterized the scheme of Confederation as a "terrible scourge." He (Dr. P.) did not believe that it ever had been or ever would be a 'terrible scourge.' There were some persons whose mental equilibrium seemed to be so disturbed by certain facts as to render them unable to discriminate between a blessing and an evil. All we had to do with the hon. gentleman, for instance, was to mention the scheme of Confederation, and he was at once placid in this condition. He (Dr. P.) was afraid, from the tenor of the hon. gentleman's remarks in connection with this bill, that he was unable to discriminate between good and evil. (He used the word in a political, not in a moral, sense.) He inferred from what the hon. member had said, that he was about to vote against one of the best measures ever submitted to this House for its consideration. (Applause.) He (Dr. P.) regretted this, for the hon. member had arrived at a time of life when he ought to know better. (Laughter.) There was not one

section of the country that was not going to be advantageously influenced by this measure. It would be felt in the outlying districts, as well as in the centres of trade and population. The agriculture, the fisheries, the mines and minerals, the whole trade and commerce of the country would be revived and benefited and time would demonstrate that a great work had been accomplished by the consolidation of the railways, which were now separate and distinct. (Applause.) The past history of our railways was a very important matter. He was glad the Hon. Commissioner of Works and Mines alluded to it in the way he had done to-day. He (Dr. P.) had intended to refer to the subject himself, but as it had been fully dealt with both by the Hon. Commissioner of Mines and the hon. member from Londonderry, he (Dr. P.) would pass it by, merely alluding to a few points which they had omitted to touch. One of those points was the visit of Mr. Powlett Thomson to this country. At Quebec that gentleman summoned around him the ablest men of this country—British North America. He (Dr. P.) well remembered the departure of Howe, Johnston, Young and Uniacke to attend that convention. Such subjects were discussed as the modification of our provincial constitution, the closer relations of the Provinces, the Halifax and Quebec railway, etc. He believed that on that occasion the foundation was laid for the Confederation of the Provinces, which was such a bugbear to the hon. member from Londonderry, and also for the Intercolonial, then known as the Quebec and Halifax railway. He remembered also the meeting at Portland. How important that meeting was few of us could tell. Our ablest men were there—Wilmot and Tilley, from New Brunswick, and the men he had mentioned from Nova Scotia as having been present at Quebec. On that occasion our representatives from the Lower Provinces so distinguished themselves for their eloquence and their practical business ability as to almost throw into the shade the representatives from the Northern and Eastern States and other places. The foundation of the railway from Bangor to St. John was laid on that occasion. Shortly after this there appeared in this Province some railway magnates, who came with a view to the establishment of the road now known as the Intercolonial. We thought ourselves already in possession of the road when, suddenly we found ourselves jilted, and Portland stepped in between us and the object of our wishes, and for years we were deprived of it. The gentlemen to whom he had referred came to us in the interests of the Grand Trunk Railway, and we were treated in the way he had described. About this time, 1851, a pamphlet was written on the subject of the Halifax and Quebec Railroad, which he (Dr. P.) considered an able and somewhat remarkable production, and which he would like every member of the House to procure a copy of and read. It was written by Mr. Wm. Pryor, and many of the predictions which he made in it had been literally fulfilled. Mr. Pryor claimed that flour could be brought from Quebec to Halifax by the proposed road for 2s. 6d., or 60 cents per barrel. This has been more than realized. To-day, or in the summer season at least, a barrel of flour could be brought from Toronto to Halifax for 60 cents. A short time since he (Dr. P.) happened to be standing in one of the stations on the Windsor and Annapolis Railway, when a small parcel about the size of his two fists was delivered to a man, who enquired how much was to pay. The reply was, 'sixty cents.' He could not help making the remark at the time that he could import a barrel of flour from Toronto to Halifax for the sum charged for the conveyance of this small parcel 120 miles. The pamphlet to which he had referred also contained statements in regard to the transportation of coal. It was said that coal would be sent from Pictou to Halifax for a dollar a ton. During one week in January 375 cars of coal arrived at Richmond from Pictou, and in one week during the present month 253 cars. The prediction in regard to coal had been fulfilled, both in regard to quantity and price. Reference was also made to the moving by rail of agricultural products. At that time, he presumed, the shipment of beef to England was not thought of. It was further said in the pamphlet that vessels would come to Halifax for

timber and deals conveyed here by rail for shipment. He (Dr. P.) was informed that last summer there was an average of five vessels per week loading timber at Richmond. He referred to these things to show what might be done when railways were consolidated under one management. Mr. Pryor took the ground, looking into the future, that the railways must be under one management, that we must have a consolidated system of railways in order to produce these results. He went on to make a still more significant statement. Those were the days when men were dreaming of railway communication between the Atlantic and the Pacific. In relation to this subject, Mr. Pryor said:

"It must never be lost sight of in the consideration of this great enterprise that the great and paramount object in its construction is to shorten the distance between England and her extensive and valuable North American possessions—between Europe and America; and ultimately to bring Europe, America and Asia into the closest possible connection."

"That was a prediction which to-day was being literally fulfilled. In the Provinces of British Columbia and Manitoba recently he (Dr. P.) travelled 300 miles over roads which, at no distant day, would be placed in direct connection with both the Atlantic and the Pacific. He would not be doing himself justice if he did not refer to another subject of the past. He alluded to that which agitated the country about 1854, when Mr. Howe initiated the policy that railroads should be built out of the treasury of Nova Scotia. He (Dr. P.) was younger then than now, and had not thought so much about the subject. He was influenced by circumstances and political surroundings which led him into opposition to the measure advocated by Mr. Howe, but he had now lived long enough to know that Mr. Howe was right and he was wrong. He could recollect the excitement that was caused in the Province at that time. As a consequence of Howe's resolution the senior Mr. Stairs left this House and never returned to it. Mr. Huntingdon, than whom few abler men ever sat in the Lower House, separated himself from his life-long friend, Mr. Howe, on that occasion and co-operated with Mr. Johnston, while Wilkins and Smith, of Hants, seceded from the ranks of the Conservatives, and, joining Howe, enabled him to carry his measure. Finally the roads to Windsor and Truro were built. Mr. Howe's idea was to build lines east and west through the rugged and difficult country between Halifax, Windsor and Truro, and leave the remainder to private enterprise. That policy he (Dr. P.) contended was a wise one, and he now believed that if it had not been adopted we would not have had railroads in the Province for ten or twelve years later at least. He was glad to have an opportunity of publicly recanting the opinion which he then entertained. The policy then adopted by Mr. Howe was that of the Dominion Government to-day. Had the Dominion Government not adopted this policy, no private company would have attempted to build a line of railway along the canons of the Fraser River, but now we had the assurance that in a few years the Pacific Railway would be completed and great benefits would result to all the Provinces of the Dominion. He (Dr. P.) was no advocate of Government railways. He did not believe in Governments as a rule embarking in such speculations as constructing and running railroads. He was opposed to any such measure for Nova Scotia to-day. If we had such a revenue as the Dominion of Canada he would not perhaps object to it so strongly, but situated as we were with a depleted treasury, he would not entertain it. Government railways, like many other things, had had their day. They had left their mark, and we were reaping the benefit of them. The utterances and acts of public men to which he had alluded were the causes of what we saw to-day. Had it not been for them we would not have had in Nova Scotia 450 miles of railway, but it was our duty to do what they had left undone and put the capstone upon their work.

"It was but right that he should here make a remark in regard to the condition of affairs when the present Government came into power in 1878, in relation to our railroads. They found everything, he might

say, in a chaotic and unsatisfactory state, but they had now solved difficulties which then appeared insuperable. Inasmuch as we were to consider the consolidation of all the roads referred to in the bill before the House, he should speak to them in detail. It was his intention to do so very briefly. The Nictaux and Atlantic Railway was for the present shunted out on a siding but it was not intended that it should remain so. In regard to the Western Counties road, we had heard of the condition it was in when the present Government came into power. The company were to have had the Windsor Branch if they completed their line, as he understood it. He had nothing to say about the withdrawal of the Windsor Branch from the Western Counties Company and its transfer to another company. That was now in litigation, and he presumed that we would know by-and-by who was right and who wrong. When the present Government came in, work was not going on on the road. Not a mile was in running order, and he thought he was right in saying that some of the work done was defective. Of this he had spoken in strong terms two or three years since, some of which he would to-day take back, in consequence of what he had personally observed on a recent visit to Yarmouth. The present Government guaranteed the bonds of the company to the extent of £55,000 sterling, following the example of the last Government in the case of the Windsor and Arnapolis Railway. The only difference being that the loan to the Western Counties Railway was effected at 5 per cent., while in the case of the previous loan 6 per cent. was paid. It was not impossible that when the guarantee was effected the Government had the formation of a syndicate in view. As a piece of business policy there was wisdom in making the loan to the Western Counties Company, and he was pleased that the Government had done it. It was possible that that loan had been the means of accomplishing the business before the House to-day. At all events, the present Government could not be charged with any political intentions in connection with the matter. The members from the counties of Yarmouth and Digby were not supporters of the present Government, but had opposed them on party divisions. There could be no political suggestion or motive therefore. The explanation probably was that the Government thought that the \$700,000 of subsidy might be required by the loan of £55,000 sterling. We were all aware some time since that a measure of this character was likely to be before the Legislature. In the month of December he (Dr. P.) went over the Western Counties Railway, and he must confess that he was agreeably disappointed. It was a good road, the bed and metal were good, there was good accommodation for passengers, and in some respects it seemed to be doing a good business. He understood that it had paid working expenses and that there was a profit of \$8,000 or \$9,000 over working expenses. But as he inspected the road he had his eyes open and he saw that it was taking the business of the Western Counties away from Halifax and handing it over to St. John. We had paid the piper to the tune of \$700,000, not including the £55,000 guarantee, and New Brunswick was reaping the benefit of it. He would like this to be borne in mind. Leave things as they were, and the people of St. John would be as much benefited by the road as if they held it in fee simple, while we would have the trade drawn away from us. He wished the people of St. John well but he did not wish them to draw away trade from Halifax that could be retained by building a connecting link of twenty miles. In reference to the Halifax and Cape Breton road, he would say that he had travelled on that road several times. He was convinced that it was a first-class road or such as we would call a first-class road in this country. It was well kept and in a satisfactory condition. The station houses along the line would be a credit to any Province and the road was more than paying its way, and had done so ever since it commenced operations. But suppose it ceased there—at the Strait of Canso—what would be the result? It would be a local road, and that only. It was now doing a fair business and was benefiting Antigonish and portions of Pictou County, but it was doing little for Cape Breton or Guysboro. Connect it with Louisbourg, and see

then what it would accomplish for the Island which, according to the hon. member from Mabou, had never yet had justice done it. (Laughter.)

"As regards Louisburg extension there was no risk in passing the measure before the House, for we were putting no money in it. When the mineral lands of this subsidy were made productive, who would reap the benefit of it? The Province. Every mining area opened would bring money into the treasury. Exception was taken to the fact that the Crown lands and minerals given to the company were not embraced in the mortgage. In the nature of things this could not be done, as both the minerals and lands would probably be shortly sold. The Pictou and Dartmouth branches were not to cost the Province one penny. We had heard from the hon. member from North Colchester much about the Pictou branch, and the injustice to the people of that county. The Pictou people had cut their eye teeth and knew what they wanted better than the hon. member who espoused their cause, and were determined to have it. The steam ferry at present maintained at Pictou cost \$12,000 a year. When the branch line was built there would be no necessity for it, and a cheaper ferry could do all the work. The people of Pictou would get off much more easily than those of Dartmouth. They had in their haste thrown up their hats and agreed to tax themselves to the extent of \$4,000 a year, for twenty years, if the road was carried into Dartmouth. They had done it, and he supposed they would have to adhere to it. The Newport, Pugwash and other new lines were not compulsory. They might be built or not.

"The Windsor and Annapolis Railway received subsidies at the rate of \$12,000 per mile, amounting to \$1,020,000. It was in good order, but without assistance from the Government would not have been. The Government guarantee had enabled the company to remove their wooden bridges and replace them with iron. The important roads, however, in this scheme were the Windsor and Pictou branches. Their value was beyond doubt. The Pictou line was worth \$80,000 per annum to any company, and if running powers to Halifax were given, \$10,000 additional might be relied on. We might place it in round numbers at from \$90,000 to \$100,000. The Windsor branch was said to afford a revenue of from \$40,000 to \$50,000. These two roads, which were taken by the Dominion Government as part of our debt, had been returned to us again in order that we might use them in the extension of our railway system. Hon. gentlemen should remember the paternal kindness which the Dominion Government had shown towards us in reference to these two lines. The smallest estimate we could place upon their value was \$2,000,000 or \$2,500,000. Without these two lines we would not have had any extension east or west. The conclusion we must arrive at was this: That the generosity of the Dominion Government on the one hand, and the statesmanship of the local Government on the other, had placed us in the position to have a consolidated system of roads from east to west.

"He would like now to say something about the financial aspects of the scheme. Not being a financial man he was not in as good a position to deal with this matter as some others, but he had given some attention to it, and had come to the conclusion that instead of being an injury it was going to be a great good to the country. The first question to be considered was, what were our responsibilities? In the first place, we were to guarantee the annual payment of interest to the amount of \$225,000 (the whole capital of the company being ten millions). This guarantee was to be in perpetuity. The word 'perpetuity' appeared to give a sort of electric shock to some persons, but when we saw what we had in perpetuity to meet the payment with, our fears must abate. In clause 17 of the agreement provision is made for getting the bonds out of the way. In some cases bonds might be bought up as they were offered for sale. He would not occupy time in reading the clause. The 25th clause provided for the extinction of the liability. With that clause every member of the House was familiar, or ought to be. He (Dr. P.) had never seen more attention given to any measure by hon. members than to that now before the House, and if they did not under-

stand it the fault must be their own. Provision was made for capitalization to meet this amount of interest (\$225,000). This capitalized sum, amounting to about \$1,000,000, the interest of which compounded was to extinguish the debt in time, was to be placed in the Dominion Treasury. There would be placed in the Provincial Treasury a sum of at least \$6,500,000. From this would be deducted, in the first place, the amount to be paid the Province for its interest in the roads, \$1,350,000, leaving a balance of \$5,150,000. From this would be taken in the next place the sinking fund, leaving a balance of \$4,150,000 for the purchase, construction and equipment of the road referred to in the agreement. This amount was not to be paid out at the will of the company as calls were made upon it, but proportionately as the work proceeded. We might assume that it would be fairly proportioned. The interest on the capitalized amount would be \$56,120, which was intended (1st), to extinguish the debt assumed by the Province in 41 years. (2nd) If that could not be accomplished, in consequence of the failure of the company to fulfil its engagements, the amount was to be appropriated towards the payment of the interest on the \$4,500,000; or, in the third place, it might be used for the purchase of the guaranteed bonds in the open market. He would not be sorry to see the money largely appropriated in this way, if, at any time, the bonds could be purchased below par. Let us now strike a balance to see where we would stand in the event of the total failure of the scheme. The Province would be liable for yearly interest amounting to \$225,000. To meet that we would have from interest on the sinking fund \$56,120, and interest on bonus \$67,550. These added together, and subtracted from the \$225,000, left a balance of \$101,330. He (Dr. P.) had calculated interest on the whole bonus, but \$385,000 or thereabouts of that money must be appropriated almost immediately in payment of our subsidy to the Nictaux and Atlantic road. As the Government would get for the guaranteed bonds of the Windsor and Annapolis Railway \$15,000 annually as interest, it appeared to him to be legitimate to consider only \$15,000 of the \$30,000 interest already guaranteed on the bonds of the Western Counties and Windsor and Annapolis Railroads as bad or as risky, for whoever has the branch from Windsor to the Junction would be in a position beyond all doubt to pay the interest. The Windsor and Annapolis Railway Company had paid in full this year for indemnity \$14,558, while the Western Counties Company had not paid anything. It might be asked why, if the Western Counties Company was in receipt of money above working expenses, it did not pay its interest. The answer was that their present wants were many and their future wants would be large, and it could not be expected that they would be in a position to pay interest. Parts of the road needed ballasting; rolling stock and permanent bridges were required, and allowance had to be made for depreciation. In case of a complete failure and a return to our present position, then we would have to meet interest to the extent of \$101,330, plus \$15,000 for the Western Counties road for twenty years.

The subsidy voted to the Nictaux and Atlantic Railway by the Province amounted to \$440,000. Of this they had had about \$95,000, and \$20,000 was due to laborers and others and a balance was still due. We would not be able, therefore, to put into the Dominion treasury more than \$1,000,000 of bonus. He (Dr. P.) had had some doubts as to the course he should pursue until the Dominion Government agreed to receive that amount at five per cent. There was great difficulty in investing large amounts on favorable terms. The United States Government were calling in their five per cent. bonds and getting money at three and a half or four per cent. We were therefore fortunate in getting our money placed to such advantage. In the year 1874 the Dominion Parliament passed an Act authorizing the advance of a sum of money for the purpose of constructing a graving dock at Esquimalt, in the Province of British Columbia, and in that Act the following clause was inserted:

“The Governor-in-Council may in his discretion advance from time to time to any Province in Canada such sums as may be required for local improvements in the Province, and not exceeding in the whole the amount by which the debt of the Province for which Canada is responsible then falls short of the debt with which the Province was allowed to enter the Union—such advances to be deemed additions to the debt of the Province, with permission to the Province to repay them to Canada, on such notice, in such sums and on such other conditions as the Dominion Government and that of the Province may agree upon; any amount so repaid being deducted from the debt of the Province in calculating the subsidy payable to it.”

“With that clause in their hand our Government went to the Dominion Executive and said that there was authority to receive our money. The Dominion Government said they could get money at four per cent., and asked why they should be compelled to receive ours at five per cent. The British North America Act assisted our view of the case, and the logic of the whole matter was in our favor. The Dominion Government finally agreed to take the money, and it would be safely placed in the Dominion Treasury at five per cent. He (Dr. P.) had little thought, as he stood examining the Esquimaux dry dock, that it was going to help us out of a difficulty and enable him to give a vote that he might otherwise have some doubts about. After a careful consideration of the whole subject he had no fears of an unsatisfactory result, but one thing he desired to say. He wished to see this bonus kept safely where it was to be placed. He regarded it as given to us in trust for a special object, and whatever might be the pressure or wherever it came from the Government should resist it and keep the money for the purpose for which it was given in the Dominion Treasury. He would be very sorry indeed if any portion of it was withdrawn until the sinking fund arrived at an amount which would place it beyond all peradventure. That would be forty years hence, when he would be no longer here to find fault. Then, if anything should happen the company, we would have in the Dominion Treasury \$1,000,000 of our bonus, yielding \$50,000 per annum, to relieve us in part of any difficulty.

“There were some minor matters, which had been discussed in Special Committee. One objection, which had been swept away, was the spreading of the guarantee over a larger sum than \$4,500,000. Provision had been made for the guaranteed bonds of the two Western railroads, amounting to £105,000 sterling. The Windsor and Annapolis Railway bonds had now only fifteen years to run. Those of the Western Counties Company had a longer time. This liability was to be met by the company. How it was to be done he did not know, but he trusted the Government would see that when the bonds expired, which could not now be purchased, there would be funds in their hands to meet them. He was convinced that this matter would be carefully looked to.

“When he was asked if the syndicate would fulfil their obligations he pointed to the fact that \$6,500,000, 65 per cent. of their capital, would have to be placed in the treasury, or under the control of the Government, before we assumed any responsibility—it would not be necessary for the syndicate to place that amount of cash in the hands of the Government leaving the interest upon it, but what the Government required was bonds or some other securities that could be readily converted into cash, as occasion demanded. Some people assumed that the Government would sign the guarantee before a penny was paid in, and the syndicate would thus be enabled to raise the money required. He (Dr. P.) was in a position to say that before a bond was signed the amount named would be secured to the Government. Then the bonds would be placed in the hands of the company, who could do as they liked with them. The payment of the money as the work progressed, for which provision was made, was an important matter to be borne in mind. He maintained that the Government was in a position to control the company. If the Government had the \$6,500,000 in the treasury the

thing was beyond a doubt. As to what was to become of the shareholders was not under discussion. They must take care of themselves. The President of the Grand Trunk Railway, however, was a member of the company. Was it to be supposed that he was going to sacrifice money and reputation by embarking in such an undertaking as some parties represented this to be? Or, take the Nova Scotia representatives, all able, practical and successful business men, having embarked in this speculation they had not done so to fail. (Applause.) He trusted that his hopes concerning the success of the company would be fulfilled, and that every man in Nova Scotia would eventually say that the words which he had uttered had been literally fulfilled. A question had been suggested as to the equipment of the roads—it was said that the company would never satisfactorily equip them. All that he could say was that the men composing the company were practical business men. They knew what they had before them, and he believed they would fulfil their engagements. The Pictou road was in the hands of the Minister of Railways and Canals, and unless he (Dr. P.) was mistaken, before he transferred the road, he would take care that sufficient rolling stock to efficiently carry on the work was on the road. In relation to the question of tariff, he would refer hon. members to the Railway Act of 1880. He was sure that every one who read that Act would say that no better could have been placed upon the Statute Book. [The hon. member here referred to and read the 6, 9, 10 and 11 sub-sections of clause 17 of the Act.] He thought that if these sections were not sufficiently binding nothing could be. One important feature of the Bill was that the principal offices were to be in Halifax. He regarded it as fortunate that this provision had been made. Suppose a collapse did take place, and of this he thought there was not the smallest probability, all that we would have to meet would be the interest on \$2,500,000. Now, the mortgage which we were to receive covered the entire property, including the road from Canso to Louisburg, and Eastern Extension, Pictou and Windsor branches, the Western Counties Road, the Windsor and Annapolis Railway, the running powers over the Intercolonial from Truro to Halifax, and the new branch from the Junction to Dartmouth and that to Pictou town. If the collapse referred to took place, the Province would get 450 miles of railway, built at an average cost of \$5,550 per mile. Should the company fail to carry out their undertaking, with that number of miles of road in their possession, and at that cost, he would recommend the Government, if they could not themselves successfully manage these consolidated roads, to place them in the hands of a doctor. The Intercolonial Railway had been for some time in the hands of Mr. Mackenzie. He selected Mr. Brydges, a very experienced man, to take charge. When Mr. Mackenzie retired from office, and Sir John A. Macdonald came in, the road was sinking money rapidly and there was a deficit of between \$600,000 and \$700,000 a year. What did Sir John do? He sent for a doctor, the present Minister of Railways (laughter), better known down here as Dr. Tupper, and what was the result? The result was that last year, for the first time in the history of the road, there was a surplus to its credit and this year, unless he was mistaken, the surplus from the earnings of the road would be at least a quarter of a million dollars. (Applause.) If the company allowed the road to pass out of their hands, he (Dr. P.) believed that the more immediately interested municipalities would purchase the roads themselves rather than to have them cease their operations, and run them and make money out of them. Another objection was, that the Dominion Government should take control of the Eastern Extension. He (Dr. P.) did not concur in this. If the Dominion Government would take over the road and build from Canso to Louisburg, and give us the \$700,000 required to connect Digby with Annapolis, he would recommend the Government of Nova Scotia to take it. But the Dominion Government would not entertain the proposal. Honorable gentlemen would remember the telegram sent by Sir Charles Tupper to the Attorney-General, and any persons who were in the habit of read-

ing the *Morning Herald* must have been struck with the report of an interview recently had by a correspondent of that paper with that gentleman. From these it was clear that the Dominion Government would not entertain the idea of repaying to this Government the subsidy invested in the Eastern Extension Railway or of constructing a road from Canso to Louisburg. Then came the suggestion made by many persons, that difficulties would creep in and that litigation would ensue, and the Government could not handle the syndicate. If any difficulties did occur, it would be for the Supreme Court of Nova Scotia or a court of arbitrators to settle. It struck him as singular that there should be one objector in Halifax. If one place should support this scheme more than another, it was the city of Halifax. If the people of this city wanted to get back the trade with the Western Counties, they would support the scheme. If they wanted to increase and secure the trade with the eastern part of the Province, they would give their support to the measure before us. There were some objectors in the city, but they were short-sighted and did not know their own interests or the interests of the Province as a whole. A through line to Yarmouth would accomplish much for Halifax. To-day a merchant from Yarmouth would go on board a steamer at 9 o'clock in the evening and in the morning be in St. John. He could transact his business there during the day, take the steamer again, and the following day be home. The completion of the line from Annapolis to Digby would give them the same accommodation for doing business with Halifax by rail that they now have by boat with St. John. The results of a line to Sydney, C.B., no one knew, in consequence of the state of the roads. To-day, he believed, he could reach San Francisco sooner than Sydney. If the railways were consolidated, the out districts of that Island, and other districts of the Province now almost inaccessible, would be placed in all but daily communication with the capital of the Province.

"The result would be beneficial not only to Halifax but to the whole country. There were certain distant counties necessarily left out of the scheme. This he regretted. He regretted that we had not money to build right and left—north, south, east and west. Those counties must be content to wait until Providence blessed us with a full treasury. One compensation to them would be that we would be in a position to give to those counties without railroads larger grants for other purposes than hitherto. We had been so impoverished of late years that the grants had to be curtailed, but now we could give extra amounts to compensate them to some extent for the want of railroad communication, or, where it could be done by subsidizing steamers. He believed that there was an important and a successful future in store for this long wharf of British North America. He believed that this Act for the consolidation of our railways would be an important factor in producing that result. It would add to its wealth and to its importance, and would advance all its material interests. Now, he might say here that but one tender had been referred to whereas others had been received. He (Dr. P.) believed that there was no comparison between the tender accepted by the Government and the others submitted to them. He was familiar with the details of the correspondence. In one or two instances he had been made the medium of communication between parties tendering and the Government, but he was obliged to say to the parties referred to, that it was useless for them to pursue the matter further, as the Government had a much better offer. He congratulated the Government and the Hon. Commissioner of Mines and Works for the practical ability which they had displayed in the matter. Let people say what they would, they had, in conducting this business, exhibited an amount of ability rarely shown by governmental bodies. He was glad to be able to make this remark. Their whole conduct merited, not only his approbation, but that of every man in Nova Scotia, and the time was coming, say what you would, when that ability and statesman-like conduct would be acknowledged everywhere within the bounds of Nova Scotia."

The subsequent defeat of the Holmes-Thompson Government at the polls carried with it the railway consolidation scheme advocated in this speech. Much that it contemplated has since been accomplished through a Conservative Federal Government.

SESSION OF 1884.

Previous to this time the Liberals had regained power.

In this session my father introduced a bill for the establishment of a system of fire-escapes for the Province, of which bill he was the author.

A section of the Public School Act, now undergoing revision, being found to contain a clause under which separate apartments or buildings might be provided for children of "different color," the late Hon. L. E. Baker moved to strike out this clause. This my father seconded, as follows:

"Hon. Dr. Parker said he had great pleasure in seconding the motion of his hon. friend from Yarmouth, and he did so because he deemed it a duty which he owed to civilization and humanity, and a duty which he owed to a large proportion, not comparatively to the whole population, but still to a large proportion of the taxpayers and citizens of the city of Halifax, and he would emphasize the word citizen. He himself was a British subject and he was thankful that no such legislation as that contained in the clause now before the House existed in any part of this Northern Continent with the exception of this Province. Take New Brunswick, Ontario, Quebec, or the Provinces more recently organized in the Dominion, and it would be found that there was no such restriction existing there and no such restriction in any other place, as he believed, in the British possessions. That being the case, they would present before the community, not of this Dominion alone, but before the community of nations, the unpopular position that here, in the intelligent Province of Nova Scotia, they should seek to exclude these men and the children of these men from the privileges which every citizen possessed in this Province. They called their schools free and they called them common, but with these words in the statute the schools could be considered neither free nor common; they were exclusive and uncommon. He took this ground, and to his mind it was a principle that was in violation of the constitution of the country he lived in. In this province civil rights, religious rights and educational rights were for every man and every man's child, and yet they were striving, or some persons in this city would strive, to exclude these people from the privileges which the law was supposed to confer upon every citizen. These colored people were citizens performing the duties of citizenship. When the tax collector came to their doors he did not pass by them without first collecting the taxes due by them as ratepayers, and he maintained that, with a tax in a country like ours, all the rights and privileges of citizenship should be enjoyed. He maintained that it should be with every member of this Legislature a principle that we should give to all equal rights, civil, religious and educational. He had listened with a great deal of attention, and a great deal of pleasure, yesterday, to the statements made by some of the colored men who had come before the committee—one connected with a religious body to which he belonged, and another connected with the Methodist body. They had come here as educated men and their desire was to elevate those to whom they were sent as preachers and they had done much towards that end. They had

done much to educate and elevate those people to whom they were sent. but they saw this distinction, and they saw that children living in the northern end of the city had to pass the doors of the school situate in their section, and perhaps walk a mile or miles, because the color line excluded them from the schools which they ought properly to be allowed to attend. One of them had very well put it to the committee, that they would not admit the child of a respectable colored man, who was obliged to pass the school, while the child of a prostitute might enter and receive an education there. Now there was one central idea running through all the statements made yesterday by those who opposed the passage of this amendment, and it was this—popular prejudice. But he would ask his hon. friends around these benches, what they had to do with popular prejudices? Were they here as independent men to yield to popular prejudices or were they here to legislate in view of the grand principle of the constitution of the country from which they came and to which they owed their allegiance, that every man should have equal rights and privileges in the eye of the law. He maintained that if they yielded to this pressure, which had no principle behind it but was simply a prejudice to which no respect was due, they would be degrading themselves and this Legislature. He used such a strong term, but this House was here to legislate for all the people of this country, and if they violated that principle of legislation they would be doing injustice to themselves, injustice to the community in which they lived, and more especially injustice to the class of people here seeking redress at their hands to-day. This House was peculiarly an independent body, not subject to popular prejudices but elevated above prejudice; their tenure of office differed from that of the gentlemen in the other branch of the Legislature, and they were to give judicial opinions in just such cases as this which was now before the House. He maintained that if he were to vote against this amendment he would be doing violence to the fixed principles of the constitution, and what was more, he would be doing violence to his conscience, which he trusted he would never do. Those who were present yesterday, admitted that those people had principle on their side, that the right principle was theirs, but that a pressure was brought to bear, which they had to consider. But when once a man conceded that the principle was on his side he need not fear what the prejudices against that principle might be, for no matter what prejudices might be arrayed against it, the principle in the end was bound to triumph. The time of the House was valuable and his own time was limited, and therefore he would not detain the House at much greater length, but there were one or two things more which he would refer to before sitting down. He had had the privilege of studying at one of the larger universities of the British Empire, having been partially educated at the University of Edinburgh. In that institution there sat by his side, as close to him as his hon. friend from Annapolis was now sitting, a colored man, with a very dark skin, an Ethiopian in fact; he was an unusually well educated man and he had obtained the respect of his fellow students and of his teachers and professors. Suppose that man were here to-day—suppose that man's child were here to-day, he would be excluded from these schools, yet he could attend the University of Edinburgh and obtain instruction there without the smallest attempt at hindrance. He (Dr. P.) could support this measure also from his own experience. He could well recollect the time when a little colored boy had come into his office, whom he had kept for twenty long years. That boy had grown to manhood in his employ, but the first thing he had done with him was to send him to school to be educated. The question arose where was he to send him. There was no common school system at that time, but he was a contributor to the National School and he sent him there and asked that he should be received into the school. Admission was refused. He had then gone to the late Robert Noble and Dr. Hill, one was president and the other secretary. He had

urged that he (Dr. Parker) was a contributor to the school for some years and that the principle on which the school was founded was that it was to be established for the poorer class and that all should be educated, no reference having been made in the constitution of the school to color at all. He had insisted on the right of this boy to attend the school. They did not resist. They had to acknowledge that he was right and the boy was admitted. He went there and received such an education as fitted him for usefulness in the family in which he lived and died, and died as much esteemed and respected as any other citizen. During that period there were various changes in the household but that man obtained and retained the respect, and he might say, the affection of those who were associated with him. He (Dr. Parker) had also had a good deal of experience as a physician moving about among all classes, and mingling with the poor, both white and black, and he would make this statement and make it publicly, and he knew it could not be refuted. There were some poor colored people, no doubt, as there were whites, who were not as cleanly in their persons as they should be, but he maintained this, that in his own experience, taking the lower classes of the people, the colored people were as cleanly and tidy in their habits as were the white people of their class. Like his hon. friend from Yarmouth he had travelled in the Southern States, and he had spent not long ago three months in Virginia. The Legislature was in session, and he visited it day after day. In one House—the House corresponding to this—there were six colored representatives. In the House that corresponded to our House of Assembly there were eight colored men, and the cleverest man of the whole Congress was a colored man. He had been educated as a lawyer, and would no doubt rise to eminence in his profession. Now, the gentlemen who had appeared before the committee yesterday were asking simply for their rights. They were not asking for social equality. They said they did not wish to force themselves into the unwilling presence of the white men, but all they wanted was that their children should have the same facilities for being educated and fitted for positions of usefulness and respectability in life as their neighbors, whose children were of a different color. He was greatly pleased with the way in which those colored men had presented their case. It was done intelligently with moderation and in a proper spirit, and when they told the committee what they wanted, he, for one, felt that he would do his duty in giving them justice. If he were not to do so by his voice and his vote, he would be unfaithful to the duty that devolved upon him as a legislator placed here for the purpose of guarding the interests of the people in just such questions as this. He had but one word more and he would put the matter to the House in the simple language of the golden rule, that 'we should do unto others as we would have others do unto us.' Not long ago two friends of his had had a quarrel. The one was a dogged Scotchman, firm and decided in his temper, the other was a Nova Scotian. They had a disagreement about a matter of business, and the one was about to sue the other. A few days, however, elapsed, when the Scotchman walked into the office of the other and said to him, 'I have come to pay your account.' The other said, 'I am very glad, but what has produced the change?' The other said, 'I went home and thought over the matter and put myself in your place and arguing from your standpoint, I saw in a moment I was in error and you were right. I have come to make amends and there is your money.' Now, he would just commend this to gentlemen who opposed this bill. Let them place themselves in the position of those poor colored folks and what would be the result. They would find that if they were to do in this matter as they would wish to be done by, they would give equal facilities and advantages to those people with the facilities and advantages which they themselves enjoyed. He would conclude by reading a memorandum which he had received from the present teacher of one of the public schools—Mr. Andrews—it was an important document, and bore directly upon the question before the House. The memorandum was substantially as follows:

"I have been teaching about seven years, and for the past two years as principal of the National School. A short time after taking charge of the school I was asked to allow some colored boys to attend. I consented, and since that day six have attended the different departments of the school. They have all behaved well and no disagreeable results have followed their attending the school. Before they came I told the boys that they were coming, that they wanted an education, and as their parents paid taxes like other people they had the same right there as white children. They sit, play and recite with the other boys, and I have never heard anybody object. The attendance has not fallen off, and last of all, one of the boys will be ready for the High School next summer."

"He (Dr. Parker) felt assured that if other schools would just open their doors, and proper discipline was observed, there would be no difficulty in the case."

He consistently opposed the pernicious principle of the municipal bonus to business undertakings. On one occasion he advocated a law prohibiting it. It was as odious to him as was the inordinate appetite of municipalities for borrowing money beyond their needs, and whose borrowing bills, easily enough gliding through the *elective* branch of the Legislature, he strenuously resisted and held up in the Council, unless a specially good case for the indulgence could be established.

An example of his dealing with the latter class of bills occurs above (session of 1875). An instance of his attitude toward the former class occurs in this session, as follows:

" COTTON FACTORY RAILWAY SIDING.

"On the reading of the bill to enable the city of Halifax to aid in the construction of a railway siding to the cotton factory—

"Hon. Dr. Parker said that important interests were involved in this bill and it was well that the House should consider the matter seriously before passing to the second reading. The gentlemen who were pressing the bill upon the Legislature seemed disposed to place the council in a false position with reference to matters of this kind. The argument had been pressed upon the House of Assembly and also upon the committee of the Legislative Council that the citizens of Halifax having voted in favor of the grants of this money to the cotton factory company, the credit of the city and the honor of the city were pledged in such a way that the Council could not properly veto the passage of the measure. He thought the effect of a doctrine like that was to make this body a mere machine to carry out the behests of the City Council. He trusted that such a principle as that would never be recognized in this House. While this body continued and while he had the honor of a seat in it, he would take exception to any such principle and he should always endeavor to exercise his independent judgment as a member of this House upon every measure that came before it. His convictions as to what was right in reference to this matter differed from those gentlemen who were pressing this view upon the Legislature and he intended to move that the bill be deferred until this day three months. There were several gentlemen who had recently come into this body and who were not familiar with the facts connected with the question before the House, and he would therefore briefly refer to the facts of the case. In the year 1881 a company was organized with a capital of \$330,000 to work in the neighborhood of Halifax a cotton manufactory. They sought at the hands of the city corporation a sum of money to enable them to

place a siding near their factory, having determined to place their building in the northern part of the city. The civic body entered into an agreement with them, the purport of which was that they should give \$9,000 towards this object if the consent of the Legislature could be obtained. He would emphasize the condition as to the consent of the Legislature which he had just mentioned. The City Council thus acknowledged that the Legislature must be a consenting party to any such arrangement as they proposed to make with the cotton company. Now it had been represented that it would be a dishonorable thing on the part of this Legislature to refuse its consent to such an arrangement. He repudiated that view altogether. He maintained that there were three parties whose consent was requisite to the existence of a valid agreement and if the consent of one of these three could not be obtained the proposed agreement became null and void, and no dishonor could attach to the party who having been left free to consent or to decline, had chosen to exercise his option by refusing to give his consent. At the very time that the city was pledging its credit, as the promoters of this bill had represented it had done to this cotton factory company, for a free gift of \$9,000 in aid of the construction of this railway siding, the city was in circumstances of what might be called great financial disorder. It was indebted to the commissioners of the city schools in the sum of \$53,570.22; the board of public charities \$13,361. The school teachers had been obliged to wait until a more convenient time to draw the salaries which they had earned in the service of the city. Money had to be borrowed from the bankers, or procured in any way that the civic authorities could do it and the sum total of their indebtedness was \$147,823.40. The statement in reference to the financial condition of the city was made by a gentleman who is now seeking the office of mayor and who had taken a great interest in the financial affairs of the city and had been largely instrumental in effecting an improvement in the civic finances. Hon. Dr. Parker here read from a circular signed by Mr. Mackintosh showing the financial condition of the city at or about the time when this sum of \$9,000 had been voted by the City Council to the cotton manufacturing company, and proceeded to observe that as had been mentioned by one of the gentlemen who appeared before the Select Committee, the amount of the civic taxation that the cotton company was exempt from amounted in 20 years to \$94,000. The water supply had been fixed at \$300 a year, which he thought was a very small figure. The gas company, of which his hon. friend the President of the Council, was president, with a capital of \$400,000, had paid last year in taxes nearly \$6,000—the greater portion of which was for civic taxation—besides a large sum for water, while the amount of water consumed by the gas company was small in comparison with that used by the cotton company. Reference had also been made before the committee to the fact that a single gentleman in this community employed just as many men and paid out as large a weekly amount in wages as the cotton company, and yet he had received no concessions and never sought for any such concessions as had been accorded to this company. He did not know whether that gentleman had made a fortune or not, but he hoped he would do so, for he had put forth a noble effort—while doing himself good, to do good to the community at large. He referred to the shoe factory of Mr. Taylor. The ropewalk at Dartmouth, of which Mr. Stairs was the proprietor, also required a large amount of capital and Mr. Stairs had been obliged to get his water supply by purchasing a lake which had not prior to that been worth six hundred cents, but for which he had been obliged to pay \$2,400. The town of Dartmouth had never given him a subsidy, and so far as he was aware, no subsidy had ever been asked for. Now it had been assumed that when this cotton factory company was organized it would enhance the value of property in the neighborhood to a very considerable extent, but he thought he was safe in saying that that expectation had been disappointing. He was connected with an institution which in the last thirty years had loaned four and a half

million of money, principally in the City of Halifax, to mechanics and persons owning small properties. The secretary of that corporation had informed him that he had not noticed any perceptible change in the value of property as a result of the operations of this company.

"Now, the principal point that had been urged in favor of the passage of this measure, was one to which he had referred incidentally already, namely, that it would be morally improper for this House to refuse its sanction to the bill—to his mind the morality of the question was all the other way. He maintained that a city plunged in debt, as the document of Mr. Mackintosh, to which he had referred, conclusively proved the City of Halifax was, to the extent of a quarter million, had no right to give \$9,000 to this corporation. Had he had a voice in the matter he should at once have given his vote, as a director, against any such proceeding, and he intended that this House, in view of the condition of the City of Halifax at the present day, had no right to permit such a bill as this to pass. It would produce a bad effect in other municipalities which, if this bill were allowed to pass, would be coming in and asking for the same powers that had been given to the City of Halifax. For these reasons, without occupying the time of the House to any greater length, he would move that the bill be deferred until this day three months."

The bill was deferred accordingly. It may be added that my uncle, F. G. Parker, was a director of the Company which was seeking the City's aid or bonus in this instance, and that my father was a shareholder.

SESSION OF 1885.

In this session, as chairman of the Select Committee, we find him contending with the improvident borrowing propensities of the City of Halifax—a task which often devolved upon him. At the close of a lengthy discussion upon his report on a number of city bills before the House at this time, he is thus reported:

"Hon. Dr. Parker said he had sent to the auditor asking him for a statement of the financial position of the city at the present time, to which he had received a reply. He might explain that the funded debt was brought down to date, but that the floating debt had no reference to any deficiency that might occur in the present year. The statement showed that the city had \$13,960 cash in the bank and \$45,230 taxes still to be collected. The auditor expressed the hope, therefore, that they would come out square, but added that he could not tell until the year was closed. That settled the question as to there being no fund, and placed the argument of his hon. friends who supported the \$2,000 loan, outside of the consideration of the House. He thought it proper, while referring to this matter, that he should make a personal explanation. It might be supposed by some hon. members that because he was a resident he was the owner of property here, and materially interested in this matter. He desired to say that it was not so. He did not own a single foot of ground or a house in the city, but was here as an independent member to protect the interests of the citizens of Halifax. He would therefore deal with city bills to-day just as he would deal with a bill relating to the Town of Yarmouth or Amherst. He considered it his duty as a legislator for the Province of Nova Scotia, which included the City of Halifax, to consider in every case the interests and rights of the people who were to be affected by the legislation introduced into this House. Whenever and wherever he could sustain the City Council he desired to do so because that was the body elected especially to carry

on the municipal services, but he could not sustain them in opposition to his own sense of what was just and right. He made this explanation because it might be imagined that he was interested in property. He had been in that position at one time, he was not in that position to-day, and was not likely to be in that position again if civic matters continued as at present. He hoped he might be excused for making this explanation, but he thought it proper under the circumstances.

"Hon. Mr. Black believed that the hon. gentleman would be actuated by the same principles of justice and right if he were a large property owner in the city as he now was, not being a property owner."

On an enquiry whether the Government would make an appropriation of funds to aid in the support of the families of men of the militia who were serving with the force for the suppression of the North-West rebellion:

"Hon. Dr. Parker said he would not like to allow this matter to pass without saying a single word in reference to it. In company with seven or eight members of this House yesterday, he had visited the drill-shed and had seen the men of the 63rd Regiment, who were to join the composite battalion ordered to take arms in the defence of our common country. He had been pleased with the men there and pleased with the words uttered by the commanding officer of the regiment when he spoke to the men of their duty in a spirit and terms that were most gratifying. He referred to Major Walsh, of the 63rd Regiment. In reference to the remarks made by the hon. member from South Colchester, he might say that while this Legislature, of course, had no right, in the abstract meaning of the term, to make such an appropriation, as had been suggested for the maintenance and support of those who were left behind,—the wives and children of those who had gone to fight the battles of their country—at the same time he thought it would not be amiss for the Legislature of Nova Scotia to adopt some such course as that suggested by his hon. friend. Private effort, he felt assured, would not permit those people, should the Nova Scotia militia be called away, to suffer. He felt that there was generosity and sympathy sufficient in the breasts of those left behind to take care of the wives and families of those who were called to the front, and more especially should widows and fatherless children be left behind. There was another class, too, that should have the sympathies of those who remain at home, that was the widows who were left dependent upon their sons who had gone to join the army at the front. He should be very glad as a member of this Legislature and as a citizen of Nova Scotia, and more especially as a citizen of Halifax, if some such suggestion as that made by the hon. member for South Colchester should be acted upon. They would be simply paying a compliment to the body of militiamen who had gone forward, and it would be a stimulus to them on any future occasion, should the country demand their services, to volunteer instead of being drafted for such duty. It struck him that it would be a very wise, and not a very expensive, one to carry out. He trusted that Providence would overrule the events that were transpiring in the western portion of this Dominion and that there would not be any need for our militiamen to go into that distant part to aid in the suppression of rebellion; but should such a necessity exist as should demand them, he was proud to say that Nova Scotia would not be behind the other Provinces of the Dominion, and that if a few did hesitate about going from reasons best known to themselves, the great mass of the people would be ready to co-operate in the putting down of the rebellion, and more especially to reward, as he should be rewarded, the man who was the murderer of one of the defenders of our country some years ago. He referred to the leader of this rebellion, Riel, who stood to-day as a murderer. He trusted that such action would be taken as would bring that man to justice, and

prevent him on any subsequent occasion from raising rebellion against the country. Such men could obtain everything that they merited in a country like this by constitutional means; and it was a sad thing for the country when such men were stimulated by ambition, or by such motives as operated upon their minds, to raise rebellion against the constituted authorities of the country and bring sadness and trouble into the homes of the people of this land. As individuals we should do our duty in relation to this matter. There was no man in the country worthy of the name of a man who would not put his hand in his pocket, if need be, to contribute towards the maintenance of those who were left behind under the circumstances already referred to, but he would again repeat and emphasize the word, that it would be an act that would repay the Province well if a grant were made from the public treasury for the purpose by way of contribution to the fund."

On the report of the Committee on Humane Institutions:

"Hon. Dr. Parker said he had read in this report a suggestion that the municipalities should relieve the central building at Mount Hope of a large number of the patients now in it, who were not of a dangerous class and might as well be treated in county establishments, at a much cheaper rate than they could be in the institution at Mount Hope, and where every care could be given to them and the sanitary conditions would certainly be safer than those of the institution referred to in the report of his hon. friend. This clause had been from time to time recommended by the superintendent of the institution. He believed that county poor houses should be erected, or county asylums, where a number of cases that are chronic, or at all events that were not acute, could be taken charge of. He thought this was a very feasible plan, that three or four counties or two or three counties might combine their funds in this way in some central locality and establish an institution where insane persons who were not dangerous could be treated, thus relieving the central institution. As a matter of course all acute cases would have to come here, because provision was made which could not be made in an institution such as was suggested. He had hoped that the day was not distant when some such measure would be introduced and that it would be compulsory upon the municipalities to deal with this matter so as to relieve the institution at Mount Hope. He believed that there were some 50 or 100 patients more in that establishment than there should be. No such building should be overcrowded, because the moment it was overcrowded, sickness and disease might be expected which no medical officer in charge could prevent and which no medical officer should be blamed for. It was a very difficult thing for a medical officer in such an institution to refuse admission, particularly to acute and dangerous cases, but it was not right that the institution should be overcrowded with risk to the lives and health of the inmates, and he hoped the Government, if it was not now too late to deal with the matter, would not let another session pass without this matter receiving their attention. Although those unfortunate people were deprived of their reason they were human beings like ourselves, connected with families and friends throughout the Province who thought of them with as much tenderness and affection, and perhaps more, than if they were in their right mind, who were at that institution in a position of danger and in a position in which the medical officer was powerless to help them. The drainage of the building was defective and had always been so. Under such circumstances the health of the inmates must always be threatened but the danger was intensified to a tenfold degree when the building was overcrowded. His attention as a legislator and as a professional man had been called to this condition of things not unfrequently by the superintendent, and he felt that he would fail in the performance of his duty if he permitted this report to pass without directing the attention of the House to this matter. He hoped the hon. leader of the Government would,

during the recess, think over the matter and see if he or his colleagues could not in that interval suggest some way by which he could remedy this state of things.

"The defective drainage of the institution was not the fault of this Government, as the work had been badly done at the commencement, and although it had been rectified to a certain extent, there had always been defects in the drainage and unhappily at this date there was no plan, as there should be for every public building, to show where the drains were constructed and where they met and crossed; this fact complicated the difficulties of the case. The drainage of such an institution was a difficult and expensive matter, but it was money well expended, inasmuch as it was expended in the cause of humanity and in the restoration to health of that most helpless and unfortunate class of the population. He would again repeat that he was thankful that his hon. friend had referred to this matter, it was his duty to do so, and he hoped that the Government had put in the estimates a sum sufficiently large to secure the safety of the patients in case of fire. He thought that that sum might strike some people, not so deeply interested in the matter as the members of this House were, as being a very large sum of money, but it was really an exceedingly small amount of money considering the object in view. He would give all credit to the Government for having acted so promptly with reference to this matter and he would only hope that the amendment that had been put on the statute book in relation to fire escapes, making it compulsory on municipalities to carry out the provisions of the law, would be effective."

SESSION OF 1886.

On the eve of his departure for England, during this session, we find the following report of a proceeding in the House with reference thereto:

"ILLNESS OF DR. PARKER.

"Hon. Mr. Owen stated that the Hon. Dr. Parker intended to leave for England to-morrow in consequence of ill health, and in view of the very high esteem in which that hon. gentleman was held in this House, and also as a citizen and in his professional capacity, he was sure that the absence of the hon. gentleman would be regretted, and that he would have the best wishes of this House for a very pleasant visit and for his safe return with restored health. He therefore had much pleasure in moving the following resolution:—

"Resolved That the members of the Legislative Council do hereby express regret, that the health of the Hon. D. McNeill Parker is so impaired as to render it necessary for him to deprive this House of his presence and valuable services during the remainder of the present session, and they encourage the hope that his contemplated visit to Great Britain may result in his perfect restoration to health and his return to his native Province in such strength and vigor as will enable him to prosecute his legislative and professional duties with the marked ability and efficiency that have heretofore characterized his efforts."

"Hon. Mr. Morrison begged leave to second the motion for the adoption of this resolution, and while doing so he had to express his regret that the health of the Hon. Dr. Parker was such that he was under the necessity of crossing the Atlantic in the hope that the sea breezes and the climate of England, together with the great skill of English physicians, might add to the improvement of his health. He had to say, further, that since he had been in this House he had found the Hon. Dr. Parker a genial and useful member of this branch of the Legislature, and he hoped that the hon. gentleman would not be disappointed in the object for which his present voyage across the Atlantic was undertaken, but that he might return to this House in renewed strength and vigor to assist in conducting the business of this country in the calm, quiet and forcible manner in which he had been able to conduct it in the past.

"Hon. Mr. Creelman said he was sure that the resolution moved by his hon. friend beside him expressed the sentiments of all hon. gentlemen in this House. The Hon. Dr. Parker was compelled by the loss of health to abandon his place for the present. That hon. gentleman was one of the most active members of the House, always at his post and willing to serve his country on all occasions. He (Mr. C.) hoped that he would be restored to health and return to meet such of the members of this House as should live to be here another year. He was quite sure that the resolution moved by his hon. friend would express the wishes of the whole House.

"Hon. Mr. Goudge suggested that it might be desirable that before the Hon. Dr. Parker left our shores the expression of the feelings of this House, which had been presented so forcibly and properly by the hon. mover of the resolution, should be conveyed to the hon. gentleman, and, without making any invidious distinctions, he thought that he might be permitted to say that Hon. Dr. Parker was one of the most highly esteemed of all the hon. gentlemen that had the honor to sit in this House, not only among ourselves and in the community in which he lived, but throughout the whole Province of which he was a native. Whether here or elsewhere, he believed that the hon. gentleman would adorn his native country, and that, as a Nova Scotian and a representative of Nova Scotia, he would ever be a fellow countryman of whom we might justly be proud.

"Hon. President said he felt that the House would most cordially unite in passing this resolution, but he, nevertheless, would go through the form of putting it to the House.

"The resolution was passed unanimously, and a copy ordered to be forwarded at once to the Hon. Dr. Parker."

The report of proceedings at the next meeting has the following:

"REPLY FROM HON. DR. PARKER.

"Hon. President informed the House that he had received a reply from the Hon. Dr. Parker to the resolution of the hon. House passed on Friday last.

"The reply was read as follows:

"To the President and Members of the Legislative Council.

"Gentlemen,—The receipt of the resolution which the Legislative Council did me the honor to pass to-day has taken me entirely by surprise and I know not how to express in fitting language my thanks to that body for the kindly and I may add the laudatory terms in which it is couched. I regret that I am compelled to seek leave of absence before the close of the session, but I have for sometime felt that it was imperatively necessary for me to adopt this course.

"During our longer or shorter period of service in the Council, while not unfrequently differing on public questions from some of you, I am happy to say that I have ever been treated by the whole body, both in debate and in our more private intercourse, with the utmost courtesy and consideration, which I have highly appreciated and can never forget. Your over-kind reference to the performance of my legislative duties does not, I may frankly say, suggest to my own mind a hearty response, but if I am spared to return and to resume those duties, I hope my 'sins of omission and commission' may be fewer in the future than in the past.

"Trusting that the uncompleted work of the session may, through your efforts, be brought to a satisfactory termination, and that good may result to the public and provincial interests therefrom, and wishing you individually continued health and happiness,

"I have the honor to remain,

"Yours faithfully,

"D. McN. PARKER.

"Dartmouth, April 16th, 1886.

"The reply was ordered to be entered on the journals."

SESSION OF 1887.

On the address in reply to the speech of the Lieutenant-Governor. (The resolutions of the Fielding Government for the Repeal of the Union had been passed when my father was in England in 1886.)

Hon. Dr. Parker—I wish to offer a few remarks in connection with this address before it passes, and the first thing I may say that struck me in connection with the speech was its omissions. One very important omission has been suggested, having relation to the lateness of the session. Why was the session of the Legislature postponed until the 10th day of March, when the elections took place on the 15th of June last, and all the members were qualified to take their positions? We all know the reason. It was that our friends on the opposite side of politics had determined to have a hand in the contest that was about to take place between the two parties for the reins of government at Ottawa. Now, I may say that I do not think that such a condition of things should exist. From the earliest moment in the history of Confederation I have been of the opinion that there was no propriety in any action of that kind being taken by the Legislatures of the Provinces in contests for power in the Dominion Parliament. True, it has been a custom of some standing, and if my memory serves me right, the Ontario Legislature were the first to initiate this system, by taking an active part against the Dominion Government of the day, and I may say that that bad example set by the Ontario Liberal Government has been followed to some extent by those who sympathize politically with me, and who have followed suit. The practice has been carried on with disastrous effects to those who have engaged in it, and who have neglected their duties here for the purpose of taking part in a contest with which they should not have meddled.

"Hon. Mr. Goudge—What about Ontario?"

"Hon. Dr. Parker—They went into it also and have not been benefited by it.

"Hon. Mr. Goudge—What about the Dominion Government taking part in the Ontario elections?"

"Hon. Dr. Parker—The Dominion Government stands to-day in Ontario about where it did before, as the hon. gentleman will see when a division is taken.

"Hon. Mr. Goudge—What about Mr. Mowat?"

"Hon. Dr. Parker—Mr. Mowat has a very large majority, as the local Government has in this country. But my opinion is that the local Legislature should not have interfered in the political contest at all and that the House should have been called together at an earlier day. Important measures may be brought before us, although I do not see that any of any great importance are foreshadowed in the speech. But such as they are, they will require our attention, and we all know that in the spring of the year those honorable gent'lemen engaged in agricultural pursuits and in business avocations will be obliged to attend to their own affairs and will be unable to give the attention to the legislation of the country that it demands at our hands. It has generally been the case that the meetings of the Legislature have been procrastinated to so late a day that some gentlemen have been obliged to leave and others very reluctant to remain to attend to the business of the country, and I hope that the lesson that has been taught to the local governments in this contest that has just ended will be a salutary one, and that the Government of Nova Scotia, whether Liberal or Conservative, will not in future interfere in contests for the Dominion Parliament.

"Now, there is another subject to which no reference is made in this speech, and that is with reference to the status of the Legislative Council.

I suppose that the large accession that we have had to our numbers to-day is an intimation to us that at the close of this session the doors of this chamber will be closed and that we will be requested to take our departure and go hence. I shall not be sorry, sir, if that is the case. I see a number of gentlemen, not all of them strangers to me, and remembering, as I do, the statements which have been made by leading men connected with the Liberal Party, I suppose I may assume that they have come here pledged to send us about our business. I regret to see that no allusion has been made to this matter. Now, it would hardly be right for any hon. gentleman in this House to address himself to this speech without saying a word as to the coming jubilee of Her Majesty. I quite concur in all the statements which have been made in reference to Her Majesty, and I believe the words of that beautiful song which we always hear,

‘God Save the Queen.’

are the prayer that goes forth from all the Colonies of this vast Empire, and I doubt very much whether there is any man—certainly there is no right-thinking man in the whole Empire who would not offer from the bottom of his heart the prayer that she may long be spared to reign over a happy and prosperous people.

“References have been made to our agricultural interests, our fisheries and our coal trade. That is a very important subject and suggests to me that it will be the duty of some hon. member, probably of myself, to ask the Government to place before the House a pamphlet issued in June by the local Government, in relation to these subjects. I shall ask whether a pamphlet was not issued which describes in glowing terms the Province of Nova Scotia as a field for the labor of agriculturists. In that pamphlet we have what Sir Richard Cartwright would call the bright side of the shield presented. During the past two or three years we have had the dark side.

“We have been told that all these various industries of the country are at a very low ebb, but in the pamphlet to which I have referred, and which I trust will be laid before us, it will be seen that whatever may be the views as to the prosperity of this country which the Government have presented to us at home, they have not presented the same description of our condition and prospects to the people on the other side of the water. This pamphlet was issued in June, 1886, and it states that ‘the total value of the fisheries of the Province for the year 1882 was \$7,131,418.’ The pamphlet then proceeds to refer to the farming interests, and says ‘that any practical farmer with a small capital may at once possess a good and comfortable home, and by energy, industry and enterprise, make for himself a fortune and position in Nova Scotia in a few years, such as he could not obtain in a lifetime in Great Britain. For a man of energy and industry combined with a small amount of money capital. NO OTHER PART OF AMERICA OFFERS THE SAME INDUCEMENTS OR PRESENTS THE SAME ADVANTAGE. * * The emigrant would find relief from that strain of landlordism of which he has had an overdose already. He would find himself in the midst of a population as intelligent as that of England, with everywhere an abundance of church and school accommodation. Moreover, he would find himself a citizen of a very decidedly rising country, and a healthy and a pleasant country to live in.’ This language is stronger than any that I have ever felt at liberty to use. I have recently spent a few months in the Old Country, and I have often been asked as to the condition of this country, but I have never been able to present such a glowing picture as that which this pamphlet contains. I have no doubt that any hard working farmer with a little capital could make a good living for himself, and by degrees reach a position of independence, if not of affluence, but I never felt free to speak in such glowing terms as are contained in the extract which I have read. I could certainly have said that, looking at the growth of this Province for the last twenty years, it has been constantly improving, and that it had a prospect of great and continual advancement. The pamphlet then goes on to speak of the coal trade,

and the following statements are contained in reference to that important industry. It states that the coal trade is steadily increasing. That last year one million three hundred and eighteen thousand two hundred and ninety-five tons were produced, while only one-half of that amount was produced ten years ago. It is true that in 1873 there was a falling off of \$44,000. You all know what took place about that time. There was a change of government—Sir John went out and Mackenzie came in, but things were reversed in 1878, and we find that for the next five years or in the year 1885, at least, the royalty has risen to \$104,000. How much it will be for the present year I am not prepared to say. Now what is that royalty due to? My hon. friend from Cumberland correctly says that it is due to the National Policy, and that if we had not even the small sum of fifty cents a ton imposed as a duty upon coal from the United States there would be no such result under such circumstances, for no coal would be sent to Montreal or Quebec. This large output is dependent to a large extent upon the policy adopted by the Dominion Government. In reference to fisheries, we must remember that in quite recent times the fisheries of northern Europe have extended enormously, and that the product of their fisheries are consumed by the Mediterranean trade. At one time we had a large Mediterranean trade in fish and also a Brazil trade. With reference to that subject other hon. gentlemen who sit around me can speak with fuller knowledge than I possess, but we all know that our fish trade, especially in the Mediterranean, has been largely curtailed in consequence of the competition we have had to meet from the products of Northern Europe. I will not say a word about our gold mines as a field of industry, as enough has been said in reference to that topic, but there is one matter which I wish to refer to, and but for which I would not have risen to address the House. My hon. friend from Colchester has made a statement in reference to this very matter. I refer to the memorial of the two Houses of the Legislature last year. The hon. member from Colchester has stated that a committee was appointed from this House to meet with a committee of the other House, composed of members from both sides. They met and adopted a memorial in favor of better terms. Why was this? It has been widely circulated over the length and breadth of the country that we were being unfairly dealt with as a Province, and a large number of our own friends, who had not looked into the matter and had not had an opportunity of ascertaining the real truth of the condition of things, were influenced by these reports circulated by the opposite party, and it was believed that really the Dominion was making money to a large extent out of this Province. When my hon. friend from Colchester joined that committee he had not the most remote idea that his signature would be utilized in the way in which it has been. I may say that it was a most unfair action, and I can hardly find language to express my feelings which could properly be used in a parliamentary assembly. If we had had the least impression that our sentiments would be utilized in the way they have been, that statements would go forth that both parties in this country were *dissatisfied with the union*, and that the leaders of both parties in the Legislative Council and in the House of Assembly had *expressed their dissatisfaction*—we would never have dreamed of taking the action that we did take in reference to that matter, and I say that it was a *most unfair advantage* that was taken of the co-operation given by the Opposition in this House to the resolutions proposed by the Government. When I heard of the use that was being made of that document I deeply regretted it *for the credit of the Province and of the Legislature*. Now the hon. member for Windsor has said that he hoped that both sides will join in a further memorial on this subject. *I tell him that I for one will not do it.*

"Hon. Mr. Goudge—Will you not do so in justice to your own Province?"

"Hon. Dr. Parker—After the way the Government treated the gentlemen who signed the memorial, *I would no more dream of joining with them in such a transaction than I would of cutting off my hand*. They

must learn to respect the condition and position of those who have associated themselves with these gentlemen for the purpose of attaining a common object. Now, what were the facts? I, for one, had never looked into the statements that were made as I should have done. I had never gone to the blue books and examined the items of the account. I had never gone over the credits for I had not the time to do so. That document was adopted on the 21st of April, and before the Dominion Government had time to consider it or respond to it in view of the parliamentary and administrative duties which they had to discharge, and which were engaging their whole attention, the Government of Nova Scotia introduced *their repeal resolution*. In view of such conduct as that, I have already stated what I will do, should the Government ask me to take part in any such memorial again. I was going on to say that I did not know the true position of things in respect to this matter, and very few men in this Province did know that. *The Government of Nova Scotia were evidently not as familiar with the facts as they should have been.* At Ottawa the following statement was made by Mr. Blake. He said: 'I have an interesting table of results as to the collection and distribution of our revenue for the first ten years after Confederation. For Nova Scotia the receipts were \$19,112,000; expenditure, \$21,175,000; the deficit, \$2,000,000. We find, therefore, that Ontario and Quebec have to provide and have provided for the bulk of the vast *divided expenditure* resulting from the Confederation of the various Provinces composing the Dominion. It will be seen from these statistics that some of the smaller Provinces, heavy as are their contributions, are not yet adequate contributors to—on the contrary, they are heavy drains on—the revenue of Canada; and it will be seen further that the bulk of the expenditure, I may say every shilling of expenditure, in the North-West and on the Pacific Railway, is contributed by the Province from which I have the honor to come.' Now, these were the sentiments of Mr. Blake upon the subject. I was not familiar with the facts of the case, although I had been aware of the general sentiments entertained by Mr. Blake in reference to this subject; and I may say further, that it was not until the other day that I was familiar with the real facts of the case. The Finance Minister of the Dominion happened to be speaking lately at Amherst, and he had with him a statement prepared by the Deputy Minister of Finance, which showed that the Province of Nova Scotia had received \$857,200 more of public moneys on the various *public services of the Province* than all the revenue which had been derived from the Province. The matter came up in this way. The Minister of Finance had said that Mr. Blake had made a statement that we had received a very much larger sum than we had paid into the revenues. Mr. Pipes then asked: 'Do you believe it?' And the Minister of Finance said: 'Yes, before I came here I asked Mr. Courtney to make up the whole account. He has done so, and it appears from that that the Province of Nova Scotia has overdrawn to the extent of \$857,200.'

"Now, in view of the great difference of opinion in reference to this matter, and of the conflicting statements that had gone abroad, Mr. Blake making one statement and other gentlemen making different statements, it was exceedingly important to get a correct statement before the country, and my hon. friend from Colchester entered into this arrangement with that view, and with that view alone. I may be permitted to give you a secret—that it was my intention to move a resolution prefacing it with a statement in reference to these grievances and concluding that the matter should be settled by having one commissioner appointed by the Dominion Government, one by the local government, and the other by the colonial secretary, then Lord Stanley. One could hardly expect any man going from Nova Scotia to be unbiased, however honest his intentions might be, but by means of reference to a disinterested third person, such as the colonial secretary would have appointed, we would have got at a sound statement of the relation of this Province to the rest of the Dominion, and the matter would have been settled forever. That was the view which I took of the matter at that time. But my lamented friend, who has

passed away, doubtless to a happier land, and who had long labored here faithfully and successfully—who was a worthy and an honest man—took very strong ground upon this matter, and my impression is that it was to him that I made this proposition. I certainly never had any other intention than that the real facts of the case should be arrived at. I may say, in conclusion, as to this matter, that I will never again, so long as I have a seat in this Legislature, assist the Government in such an agitation.

“I will now pass to the eighth clause of the speech, in which a reference is made to the Western Counties Railway. It has been stated that the Dominion Government have taken steps for a settlement of that matter. It is quite true that the matter is not definitely settled, but when a minister of the crown comes down and stands before a public audience and makes a statement to this effect, that now that the transcontinental line across the country has been completed, the Government is prepared to help railway construction in the lower Provinces of the Union, and that when the Windsor branch is secured they will take up and consider the question of consolidating the whole Western railway system of the Province, I think we have good reason to be sure that that work will no longer be delayed, but will be brought to a successful termination. My hon. friend from Windsor speaks as if it were the duty of the Dominion Government to plant a railway almost at every man's door. It is not their duty, but having spent enormous sums of money in railway construction in connecting the eastern Provinces with the Pacific seaboard it has done all that it was bound to do. Nevertheless the Government is willing—having accomplished this great work—to take up the subject of railway construction in the older Provinces, and the result will be that the western counties will in a short time have continuous railway connection to the city of Halifax. I have no doubt, therefore, that in a short time the county of Digby will be connected with the Windsor and Annapolis Railway—that the short line now being run through from Oxford to Pugwash will be completed, and that we shall have to thank the Dominion Government that the island of Cape Breton, to which my hon. friend who has just spoken belongs, will no longer be crying for justice, but will enjoy the advantage of a railway running throughout its whole extent to Louisburg. Then we have as a moral certainty the prospect of a short line which will connect the Canadian Pacific Railway with the port of Halifax, and which will result in a rapid expansion of the grain trade so as to bring prosperity to this city and cause it to expand at a more rapid rate than it has ever done in its past history.

“I have occupied already more time than I had intended to, as I only rose for the purpose of referring to one subject in the address, but may be permitted to say one word before I sit down in reference to the Nictaux and Atlantic Railway. The difficulties with respect to that matter were caused in the beginning by the Government, supported by my hon. friend on my left, which should have paid out the subsidy in accordance with the mileage of the road that was complete, but instead of doing so had unhappily allowed the money to be expended without securing an adequate return from the company. The Dominion Government really had nothing to do with that road. It was the Local Government that was responsible for its inception, and it was the Hon. Mr. Annand, who then occupied a seat in this House, who was responsible for the way in which the subsidy was paid. From that day to this difficulties surrounded this work, but I may say, as has already been said, that these difficulties will in a short time be over. I am glad to say that the Federal Government will soon take hold of this vexed question, which never should have been touched by the Local Government at all. They committed a grave mistake when they touched that road with no funds at their disposal. They gave a subsidy to that railway, and there it has been for fifteen years struggling and striving to live with a single wheelbarrow one day and half a dozen the next. I hope that that road will be taken up by the Federal Government, and that they will agree to become responsible for its completion.”

Later in the debate on the address he is thus reported:

"Hon. Dr. Parker—I would just like to say a few words before the address passes. My statements the other day all tended in the direction that the hon. gentlemen who signed the address to the Dominion Government, that in reference to better terms, and those who acted on the committee never for a moment were informed or dreamed that any action they had taken would be used as an argument in favor of a *repeal of the Union*, or that their names would be held out before the public as persons who were dissatisfied with the Union and were desirous of accomplishing repeal. I discussed this matter with the late Government, led by Hon. Mr. Holmes, and said to some of the members of the party that if the Dominion Government have done this country injustice there is an easy way of settling this matter—that was the mode that I referred to in the remarks that I addressed to the House on Friday, namely, to leave the matter to arbitration; not to have Mr. Blake coming in to-day with one statement, Mr. Fielding with another to-morrow, and Mr. Goudge with another, but to have some authoritative statement which would command the confidence of the whole country. Mr. Holmes and the Government of that day were desirous of getting better terms, but they never dreamed for a moment of taking any further action in case those efforts should fail. It was their determination to secure their object by legal, proper and constitutional methods. But their successors, having transmitted the memorial asking for better terms, *did not wait for a reply*, but immediately launched out into the subject of *repeal*, and demanded a settlement of this matter at the polls. That is where I say a *grievous injustice* was done to those of us on this side of the House who took part in that movement. Now the hon. member from Windsor has referred to Mr. Blake changing his opinion. He may have done so, but he never recalled the statement that I quoted in reference to the construction of the Canadian Pacific Railway having cost the Province of Nova Scotia nothing.

"Hon. Mr. Goudge—When was that statement made?

"Hon. Dr. Parker—I cannot refer to the precise date, but it was the same occasion to which I have already referred. Hon. Mr. Blake presented a calculation which had cost him a great deal of time to prepare, and in the preparation of which, in all probability, he had the assistance of a number of men competent to aid him in such a matter. The hon. member says that Hon. Mr. Blake has withdrawn this statement. Well, it is quite possible that Mr. Blake may make a statement to-day and recall it to-morrow. He seems to be as fickle as the waves of the sea driven before the wind. Just before the recent elections he recalled all that he had said in the past with reference to the National Policy. After having opposed that policy for years he at the last moment stated publicly that even if he were successful at the polls he would not interfere materially with the tariff, which has caused so much discussion and so much excitement throughout the whole Dominion. The *Toronto Grip*, which generally supports Mr. Blake and his party, presented a cartoon in a late number, in which it represented Mr. Blake and Mr. Cartwright holding on to the tail and trunk of the National Policy elephant and riding to Ottawa in that position. This was a perfectly truthful representation of the attitude of those gentlemen. It may suit Mr. Blake to make a statement one day with reference to the National Policy and change his mind the next; to make an elaborate calculation one day and confess the next day that he was mistaken. Under such circumstances he is not to be relied on. The matter should be settled beyond all cavil or dispute in some such way as that which I have proposed, so that the question would be settled once for all, and in future controversies or negotiations the line would be drawn at the date of that settlement. I do not think I need deal with this matter at any great length. *The members of this House were deceived*. I cannot say that I was personally deceived, for I was not in the country, but I was amazed and astonished when I saw what had been done by the Government, and that before the Dominion authorities had time to answer the

memorial of this Legislature, a declaration was made by the Government of Nova Scotia in favor of the separation from the Dominion; *that they were determined to dismember the Dominion and sail under independent colors.* I believe that the House is anxious to get through with this discussion and present the address to-day, and therefore I shall add nothing further to the remarks I have already made."

On the bill respecting Victoria General Hospital, by which, among other things, the institution received that name in honor of the Queen's Jubilee:

"Hon. Dr. Parker said he was very glad that the Government of Nova Scotia had resolved to celebrate the Jubilee of our Most Gracious Sovereign in the manner proposed in this bill. He did not know of any more appropriate way of doing so than to erect a humane institution or to add a large wing or wings to such an institution already erected. The point to which he would like to refer was this. In years past there had been an arrangement made with the Dominion Government that they should treat in this hospital of ours the sailors. This was done in connection with the Marine and Fisheries Department, and he would like to ask whether, before dealing with this matter and asking from this Legislature a grant of twenty thousand dollars for the purpose, they had taken the precaution to ascertain whether it was the intention of the Dominion Government to continue the present arrangement or not. This was important, because he found that there were a large number of sailors annually treated in that institution, and he would like to know if it was the intention of the Government in building the wing that these cases should be treated in the hospital. It might happen that two or three years hence these cases might be withdrawn, and a Marine Hospital might be provided as in the Province of Quebec and in Newfoundland. If so, it might be found that the Government, in making provision for such cases, would discover that they had not acted with the precaution which should have marked their procedure with reference to so important a matter.

"He found in looking over the statistics which he held in his hand (the Report of the Board of Charities) that there had been treated last year in the hospital, 614 cases, of which 106 were sailors. The number of sailors, therefore, bore a very large proportion to the whole, and it would be at once seen that the point to which he had referred was, therefore, a very important one, and he would now ask the hon. leader of the Government if any communication had taken place with the Dominion Government before they had resolved to erect this structure, as to whether the Dominion Government would continue to make use of the hospital as at present for the treatment of marine cases.

"Hon. Mr. McLeod said he was unable at present to give any positive answer to the hon. member, but he would certainly put himself in communication with the Government and reply to the question at an early day.

"Hon. Dr. Parker proceeded to say that he believed we would have a very large immigration at the port of Halifax in the future—that the Canadian Pacific was likely to deal with this question largely, and the Allan line and other lines were bringing very large numbers to our country. If sickness occurred among these immigrants, there was no place in Halifax where these immigrants could be sent, and he thought it probable that the Dominion Government would make some provision for the treatment of sickness among these immigrants, and they would also make provision for the treatment of sailors, as in the other Provinces. They had now a very good Marine Hospital at St. John, N.B., and a very large one at Quebec. There was also another one at St. Andrews, and he thought it altogether probable that a similar institution would be established by the Dominion Government at Halifax. He had another remark to make with reference to this subject, and he regretted to be obliged to make it. The other day, the Hon. Attorney-General, in dealing with this

subject, had made a statement, the purport of which was that the members of the medical profession sought hospital positions that they might obtain a portion of the paltry sum derived from the Dominion Government over and above the cost of the maintenance of the sailors. He regretted very much that a person occupying the position of the Attorney-General should have spoken as he did in reference to a matter of this kind, and should have made a remark degrading to the medical profession—alike to the present staff and to the staff that had heretofore been serving. He might say with positive certainty that the medical men who had sought these positions had never been influenced by any such sum of money as had been referred to. For many years the medical staff of the hospital had performed their duties alike to the sailors and to the sick residents of Halifax. They had to attend to these duties without any remuneration whatever and they had continued to attend to them without any reward so far as the city of Halifax and Province of Nova Scotia was concerned. After having continued to attend to them for some years it had been thought unjust to the profession in Halifax when men were paid in other Provinces for the discharge of these duties, that the medical profession in this city and Province should be called upon to treat such cases gratuitously. He had been at the time a member of the commission in charge of this institution, and they had called his attention to it. Subsequently it had been arranged that the medical gentlemen should have any surplus that might be over from this service. He thought he was authorized to say that the medical gentlemen did not receive more than \$75 each in any one year, and for that paltry sum the Hon. Attorney-General of Nova Scotia had permitted himself to make the statement to which he had referred. Had he been a private member of the House he would not have felt bound to say anything about the matter, but he was a member of the Government holding a prominent position, and it was as derogatory to that gentleman to make such a statement as it was degrading to the profession to which he had referred. He trusted that men occupying such positions, when they dealt with this or any subject concerning the learned professions, would be more guarded in future.

“With reference to the proposed expenditure, he might say that although the sum that was to be expended might strike some hon. members as being large, he did not look upon it as a very large sum considering the purposes to which it was appropriated. The amount that would be required was largely in consequence of the unfitness of the institution that now existed. When that building was erected it was constructed without consulting any medical man, although there must have been thirty members of the medical profession in the city of Halifax at that time. Instead of consulting any of them they had engaged an officer of the engineer's—a clerk in the engineer's department—who had designed the plans of an old country hospital in England built about a century ago, and the consequence was that a very imperfect structure was erected, and one which was utterly inadequate for the work for which it was intended. When it was taken possession of by the Provincial Government and the city conjointly to be a city and provincial hospital, it had been found necessary to improve and enlarge it and take down a good deal of the work that had been erected, and it was still altogether inadequate, as the leader of the Government must know, to supply the wants to which it was intended to minister. A large sum of money had been expended a few years ago on the building, and he believed that in the main it was judiciously expended, but those in charge of that matter had fallen into a mistake which the city of Halifax had fallen into in the first instance. They had a staff which should have been consulted, but they never consulted them as to the changes that were to be made; and grave and important errors were fallen into. He presumed that some hon. gentlemen were already aware that the delirium tremens ward had been placed on the ground underneath the earth, where no sick person should be placed—without light or heat. There was no medical man who would have permitted such an act to be done, and it would not have been done if the medical staff had been consulted. The Charities Board

had taken charge of the matter, and dealt with it on their own responsibility. Other things of the same character had occurred and he alluded to them in order that his hon. friend the leader of the Government, as a member of the Council, would see that the present staff were consulted in reference to any changes that were to be made in respect to this matter. There appeared to be an idea here that in the city of Halifax patients were longer retained than they should be. He thought there was a great deal of truth in connection with that idea. Formerly they had the Poor House, but latterly that had been legislated out of the hands of the Board of Charities, and out of the hands of the Government, and placed in the hands of the city of Halifax. Patients had been transferred from the Poor House to the hospital, and in that way patients got into the hospital whom it was very difficult to get out again. It was very difficult to deal with such cases, and he thought that in future, looking to the provincial interests, great care would have to be taken by those who had charge of the institution, in the admission of patients to the hospital. He had no further remarks to make, and would simply close by expressing his concurrence in the policy embodied in the Bill, and his hope that the structure would be erected in accordance with some sanitary principle."

On a bill to amend the Public School law, and designed to prevent further expansion of the educational grant:

"Hon. Dr. Parker said he did not wish to vote silently on this question, although he had only a word to say. One of the chief objections to this measure was that it limited the expenditure for education, and that it did so in a way that was not in accordance with the usage of legislation. He did not know that he recollected since he had been in this House a resolution or bill being passed providing that any definite service should be limited in such a way that the expenditure should not go beyond a certain sum. It struck him that it was not in accordance with the ordinary principles of government. In his opinion the Government of the day should deal with each service in each year as it came before them. Now this was a very important service, and he should like it to be dealt with in accordance with that principle on all occasions. Our revenue was a small one to-day, but as had already been shown and as every honorable member must feel, it was an expansive revenue. It was not limited or likely to be limited to the sum that we were receiving in the present year. If the prosperity of this Province should go on, if the manufacture of iron should come to be a more important industry than at present, if the consumption of our coal should increase 50 to 100 per cent., our revenue would be increased, and it was wrong to make a statement that we had but a limited income, and a limited one only. There was another thing that he regretted in connection with the matter. He believed that the increase, if passed, as he supposed it would pass, being a government measure, would operate very prejudicially upon the interests of education, and would lower the tone of the teaching body. Those gentlemen engaged in this profession were obliged to economize in order to make both ends meet, and the effect of this measure would be in all probability to diminish their salaries and, consequently, to lower their position as a body. He, therefore, felt disinclined to give the Government his support in passing it, although he supposed it made very little difference to the Government. The honorable member for Cumberland had called attention to a number of items, which, taken altogether, made a pretty large sum of money—sixteen or seventeen thousand dollars per annum. These expenditures were not likely to occur in the coming year. And there was one class of expenditure to which he felt bound to call attention and against which he wished to enter his protest. He referred to the sums of money promised for railroads which ought never to have been granted by a Province placed in the position of the Province of Nova Scotia. He thought it was a

wrong principle that the Government of Nova Scotia should subsidize railways north, south, east, and west, and this was a very important item of expenditure, and one which should not have been undertaken by the Province. He thought it would puzzle any honorable member in this House to point to a country with the population of Nova Scotia that was better supplied with railways in proportion to its population and area than the Province to which honorable gentlemen had the honor to belong. That was an expenditure which should not be undertaken by the Provincial Government, but should be devolved upon the Government of the Dominion. . . ."

SESSION OF 1888.

He had been urging upon the Government for some years, with persistent energy, the matter of vital statistics. He now introduced in the House, and supported, a resolution on the subject, of which there is the following report:

"VITAL STATISTICS.

"Hon. Dr. Parker said that some time ago the memorial of Stephen Selden in relation to vital statistics had been placed on the table of the House. A similar memorial had been presented ten years ago to this Legislature in connection with this subject. A committee at that time had been appointed, composed of the late lamented Hon. Mr. Cochran, of Hants, Hon. Mr. Morrison, of Colchester, and himself, to deal with the question. The committee of that day had presented a report which gave the history of the subject up to that period, and which would be found in the records of the House for the year 1878. The subject of vital statistics first attracted the attention of the country in the year 1863, and in the following year Dr. Tupper introduced a bill which is embodied in chapter 35 of the third series of the Revised Statutes. That act provided for the appointment of a board of statistics, composed of two members of the Government and the financial secretary, the latter being the head of the department. Chapter 85 of the fourth series of the Revised Statutes dealt with the subject of the registration of births, deaths, and marriages, this act having been passed under the supervision of Mr. Costley, who had been connected with the department of vital statistics for some time. The subject of vital statistics had been dealt with by Mr. Archibald Scott, a previous official of the department, and some time afterwards a large number of issuers of marriage licenses were appointed, who received some small remuneration for the registry of each birth, marriage, and death. After the passage of the B. N. A. Act it was determined that, inasmuch as the subject of census and statistics pertained to the Dominion Legislature alone, the responsibility of conducting this department would be assumed by that Legislature alone. In 1878 the sessions of Halifax protested that the treasury of the County of Halifax should not be held liable to pay any of this small tax to which the issuers of marriage licenses and registrars of births and deaths were entitled, inasmuch as the B. N. A. Act had given exclusive control of this subject to the Dominion Legislature. After considerable correspondence the question came before the Supreme Court of Nova Scotia, and a decision was finally given by the late Judge McCully in favor of the County of Halifax, and holding that the matter was one entirely for the Dominion Legislature. It was considered that after the Dominion Government had taken to itself the right to appoint all the officers of this department, and had assumed the responsibility connected with the department and had carried it on for years, it was the duty of that Legislature to bear all the expenses connected with the department. The matter, therefore, ended there, so far as the County of Halifax was concerned.

"Any person who bestowed any thought upon the importance of the subject of vital statistics would recognize how seriously important the matter was, touching as it did questions of labor, commerce, public health, and immigration. There was not an interest in the whole Province of Nova Scotia that this question did not touch and affect. In other Provinces and in all important states of the American Union a department of vital statistics had been established. The Province of Ontario had a well-organized system. On reference to the registration report of Ontario for 1885 he found that the deaths in that Province during that year from zymotic diseases were 21,565. These zymotic diseases were what was called preventable diseases, such as typhoid fever, scarlatina or diphtheria. The deaths from diphtheria alone during that year in that Province were 4,793. Having a vital statistics board in that Province, matters affecting the public health are promptly and effectually dealt with, enquiry being set on foot to ascertain any existing difference between the death rate in one locality and another, and the causes of such difference, with a view to proper precautions being taken and proper regulations enforced. The Province of Ontario was, on the whole, a very healthy Province. The death rate at Stratford was remarkably low, being only equal to 9, 4-10, while the highest rate in any city in that Province was 35, 4-10, that being the rate at Ottawa.

"It would be productive of very beneficial results if our Province had some such board of statistics. If, for instance, it became apparent under such a system, when existing here, that the Town of Bridgewater, in the County of Lunenburg, was, according to the statistics, furnishing as large a proportionate death rate as the City of Ottawa, the first duty of the Government would be to send from the central office to that district an expert to ascertain the special causes of this high death rate in that locality; and if, after investigation, it appeared that that high death rate was caused by defective drainage or bad water supply, or any similar cause, efficient remedies might be applied, with the assistance of the local authorities. This book of vital statistics from Ontario was scattered far and wide over Great Britain, and was a most efficient immigration agent. Intending immigrants naturally enquire, before finally selecting a home, as to the statistics regarding questions of health in the different competing localities, but the Province of Nova Scotia, until it could furnish an official annual statistical record, would be handicapped in the competition for desirable immigrants, and the very class of population required by the Province would be diverted by other Provinces. Australia, New Zealand, and many other colonies of Great Britain had a perfect system of statistics, which system had been instrumental in diverting immigration to these colonies. Even in the small Island of Antigua a report of a similar description to the one published by the Ontario authorities was issued and the circulation of that report had been of considerable advantage to that little island. The Province of New Brunswick was alive to its interests, and in January of the present year had passed a bill in relation to vital statistics and dealing specially with the three subjects of birth, marriage, and death. Without taking up the time of the House by making any further observations, he would now move the following resolution in connection with this question:

"Whereas, In 1864 a law was enacted by the Legislature of Nova Scotia for the registration of births, marriages, and deaths, and put into successful operation;

"And whereas, By the ninety-first section of the B. N. A. Act, 1867, it was provided that the exclusive legislative authority of the Parliament of Canada extends to "the census and statistics," and in 1868 an act was passed by the Dominion Parliament organizing a department of agriculture, by which act the census and the registration of statistics were placed under this department.

"And whereas, At the Union of the Provinces the Dominion Government found an efficient system of registration of births, marriages,

and deaths organized; and, under the authority of the B. N. A. Act, the said Dominion Government assumed the financial responsibility and patronage and the entire direction of this department in Nova Scotia, in so far as births and deaths were concerned, for a period of ten years (the solemnization of marriage having by the said B. N. A. Act been referred to the Provinces), and did, in July, 1877, abruptly close the office, pension the officers, and thus terminate the general system of vital statistics, to the serious inconvenience of the public and to the prejudices of the sanitary interests of the Province.

"Therefore resolved, That this House hereby respectfully claims, as an act of justice from the Dominion Government, the re-establishment of the said department for the registration of births and deaths in Nova Scotia."

"Hon. Mr. Fraser said that he personally was in full sympathy with this resolution, and hoped that it would receive the unanimous support of this House. The honorable member for Dartmouth deserved great credit for the persistent energy which he had displayed in regard to this question. He (Hon. Mr. F.) fully agreed with that honorable member as to advantages—nay, the necessity—of such a system for this Province, and he would be glad to render all the assistance he could in bringing about the desired system.

"Hon. Mr. Goudge asked if it was proposed that the Lower House should take concurrent action in regard to this resolution.

"Hon. Dr. Parker said that a similar resolution would be submitted to the Lower House for its consideration at once, so that the resolutions on this subject, when adopted, might go to Ottawa, as the joint resolution of both branches of this Legislature.

"The resolution was then put and adopted unanimously.

"On motion of Hon. Dr. Parker, the Honorable President was appointed a committee to transmit an address to the Lieutenant-Governor, requesting him to forward these resolutions to the Governor-General of Canada."

In this session a Government bill to abolish the Council was defeated on its first reading, by a vote of eleven to eight. The vote was not a party one. My father, with two others of the opposition, voted with the Government.

SESSION OF 1889.

On the Franchise Bill:

"Hon. Dr. Parker said he was not going to occupy very much time in the discussion of this subject. A good deal of the ground that he would otherwise have gone over had been already anticipated, and many of the facts and points naturally arising in the discussion had been already dealt with by those who had preceded him. The honorable member from Windsor had seemed to think that the Conservative party were really a very progressive body when in opposition, but a very unprogressive party when in power. He felt called upon to take issue with the honorable gentleman on that statement, and he would refresh the honorable gentleman's memory a little by referring to some of the questions not directly connected with this subject, but having a collateral bearing upon it. He would just refer to the subject of mines and minerals. The party to which the honorable member from Windsor belonged, and had belonged all his life, had constantly been bringing that subject before the country. They had had abundant opportunity to deal with it, but they had never dealt with it while in control of the Government and no practical action was taken until the late Judge Jobustone.

when he became leader of the Government, had associated with himself Sir Adams Archibald, and gone to London to settle the matter.

"Hon. Mr. Goudge asked if Sir Adams Archibald was not then leader of the Opposition.

"Hon. Dr. Parker said he was, but Hon. Mr. Johnstone was leader of the Government, and had originated the measure, and selected Sir Adams, then Mr. Archibald, to accompany him, and the admirable report that the honorable leader of the Government had presented to-day, showing a revenue from the mines and minerals of the country of over \$150,000, was the result of that mission. When those gentlemen returned from England they presented their report; and now came the point to which he wished to call his honorable friend's attention. A large number of members of the Liberal party, led by the late Chief Justice Young, had opposed that bill, and opposed it bitterly. Happily, however, the good sense of a number of the members of that party, co-operating with the party to which he (Dr. P.) had the honor to belong as a humble member, succeeded in carrying the measure. This was one instance which the allusion of the honorable member from Windsor had brought to his mind.

"Hon. Mr. Goudge asked if Sir William (then Mr. Young) had not opposed the settlement of the mines question, on the ground that it was not sufficiently advantageous to the Province.

"Hon. Dr. Parker said he did, but there was not a man in the Province of Nova Scotia to-day who was not satisfied with that settlement, and the result was seen in the report placed before the House the other day. He would like to ask who would be willing to go back to the position taken by the leader of the Opposition of that day, and place the mines and minerals of the Province in the position in which they were then—in the hands of the creditors of the Duke of York. He himself had chanced to be in London at that time, and from conversations he had had with the leader of the Government he knew the difficulties that had to be encountered, and that they were very great ones; but they had been overcome, and the end had been accomplished.

"There was another subject to which he would call attention, more closely connected with the present discussion. He referred to the ballot. That was a measure that had been carried in the Lower House by the assistance of his (Dr. P.'s) friends. Hon. Mr. Vail was leader of the Government, and they had sent to this House what the House conceived was a very poor bill, but the House did not reject the bill. They upheld and improved it. The next year the Liberal party and Government in the Lower House passed a bill to repeal the Ballot Act. The Liberal-Conservative party in the House resisted that measure, and with several members of the Liberal party associated with them, succeeded in retaining the Ballot Act on the statute book. He would like to ask now who would be willing to go back to the position of things before the Ballot Act was passed? It had, of course, been modified and improved, but it was to the Conservative members of this House that was due the credit of keeping it on the statute book.

"And now came the vexed question that was immediately before the House. The measure came from the House of Assembly, and the members of this House were called upon to exercise their judgment upon it. It had been before the country for a long number of years. The Legislature had much time occupied by it from time to time, and the country had been put to no inconsiderable expense in connection with it. In 1854, under the Howe Government, a resolution had been moved, he thought by the present Lieutenant-Governor, providing for universal suffrage. That measure had been adopted, and had remained on the statute book until 1863, when it was repealed by a Liberal Government. He might say that if he had been in the House at that time he should not have felt the same freedom in voting for a measure of universal suffrage as he did to-day, because he did not believe that the educational status of the country at that time was such as to warrant the passage of such a

measure. It was the year prior to the establishment of the normal school, and several years prior to the placing of the free school system on the statute book of the country. To-day the country was in a very different position. After the existence of the educational law for twenty-three years, he thought the Province of Nova Scotia could hardly be considered unripe for the adoption of such a system. In looking at the educational report he found that 105,231 children were at school during the year. That represented 1 in 4.10 of the whole population of the Province, the population being 400,000. Then, turning to the expenditure in connection with this great and important matter, he found that the Government had expended in the different departments of the educational service, including the Deaf and Dumb Institution and the School for the Blind, \$211,000. The total expenditure, including county fund and sectional funds, being \$675,985. If it could be said that after twenty-three years, with such a system as this, with such an expenditure as he had named, and such a percentage of children attending the public schools, the country was still unripe, he feared they would have to wait a very long time before it would be ripe. He thought the time had already come, and if we were not yet ready to grapple with this question it was about time that the schools were closed.

"The House had already heard the statements with reference to the franchise existing in Prince Edward Island, in New Brunswick, and in Newfoundland. We were in reality living in an atmosphere of universal suffrage, and he did not for a moment entertain the idea that Nova Scotia was going to continue much longer in the position in which she now stood with reference to this matter. All the changes and modifications that had been going on in recent times were in the direction of universal suffrage. The change proposed by the bill before the House was in that direction. With a qualification of \$150 real estate, or \$300 real and personal property, and an income franchise of \$250 or \$150, how far were we removed from universal suffrage?"

"Hon. Mr. Fraser—Not far.

"Hon. Dr. Parker continued. There was hardly a laborer who wielded his pickaxe and shovel or drove a team that could not qualify under this act. Very many mechanics made much larger sums than those required by the bill. He believed, therefore, that it was the duty of the Legislature not to hesitate longer to follow the example of other countries which had extended the franchise to every man of full age, with the exception provided for in the resolution. He thought, at the same time, there should be an educational qualification, and he had always been ready to support it. He believed that lawyers, physicians, surgeons, civil engineers, graduates of universities and licensed teachers should have the franchise. As to these classes of persons, their capital was their education. There were very few professional men of any of the classes he had named who had not expended a very much larger amount than that required to qualify them under this bill. Many of them had had thousands upon thousands expended upon them by their parents. Franklin had said that a parent should empty his purse into his son's brains. He was a very wise man, and no doubt looked forward to the results to be achieved by the extension of education in his own country.

"He would prohibit the following classes from the exercise of the franchise: First, those unfortunate persons who were the subjects of insanity; secondly, those who were so unfortunate as to require to receive assistance from the public funds. Then he would exclude the criminal classes; and, further, if he had his own way he would exclude every young man—not the older men who had not, perhaps, had educational advantages, but every young man who could not read or write. Then he would go further, and exclude every habitual drunkard. There might be some difficulty in the definition of a habitual drunkard, but he thought a definition sufficient for all practical purposes could easily be devised."

On a bill to authorize a loan of \$300,000 for provincial roads:

"Hon. Dr. Parker said there were very few members now present who were in the House when the Holmes-Thompson Government had proposed to borrow a large sum of money on the credit of the Province. He had opposed that bill on the ground that the Government only wanted \$300,000 and asked for authority to borrow \$800,000. It was a principle in business and it should be a principle in government as well not to obtain in this way any amounts beyond the actual need. It might be argued, and it was argued not infrequently, that a man could borrow half a million or a million to greater advantage than he could borrow a smaller amount, but that principle did not hold in these days. The Government of this country could go into the market and borrow \$150,000 or \$300,000 on low terms as well as they could borrow half a million, and when the amount borrowed was in excess of immediate needs, it presented a temptation to a Government to expend it extravagantly and injudiciously, and in ways that were not advantageous to the general interests of the country. He thought that this was a principle that should always be applied in such cases as the present, and that the Government should only borrow what they need and when they need it. He would lay this down as a principle applicable to the matter of borrowing generally, especially in these times, when money was so abundant. The existence of a large sum of money in the treasury, or the expectation of its being there, was apt to stimulate the cupidity of those who had access to it, and there were now rumors floating about this city that since this bill had passed the House the indemnity of the members of the House was to be increased to \$500. Now, the honorable member from Cumberland had referred to one of the most important public services of the country—that was the expenditure in connection with the road labor, or, rather, the performance of the road labor. Ever since he had been a boy—and that was a good many years ago—he had had an opportunity to observe the way the statute labor was performed, and he was convinced that if the tax was rated upon the inhabitants of the district and the money so raised was expended judiciously under proper supervision, it would be a gain to the road service of at least 50 per cent. Any man driving through the country and seeing this labor performed would perceive that the men who were performing it did not feel that they had any duty devolving upon them. Dozens and dozens of times he had seen men in various parts of the country performing their statute labor in a way disreputable to the district and disreputable to the overseers. He had had an opportunity of seeing the Chinese laborer in British Columbia some years ago. It was a rare thing for them to see a carriage pass, but this carriage had passed along without distracting the attention of the Chinamen from their work. They labored on with their pickaxes and shovels, while every white man rested his foot on his spade and looked on while the carriage was passing. The species of morality that characterized the Chinese laborer certainly did not extend to the men who performed the statute labor in this country. If it did, our road service would not be in the condition in which it was to-day. The secret of having good roads was in having a satisfactory statute labor law; and, although year after year attention was called to this matter in the other House, this service still remained in an unsatisfactory condition. It was one of the things that his learned friend, the leader of the Government in this chamber, and the Government that he represented here should take into consideration, and he was sure that if it was done, the large amounts appropriated to this service from the general treasury would not be needed."

Here we find him once more in advance of his time. The Road Act of 1907 established, in lieu of Statute Labor, a system such as this speech suggests.

SESSION OF 1890.

In this session the Government introduced and passed in the House of Assembly a bill for the abolition of the Legislative Council. Upon its reaching the Council it was dealt with as shown below:

" ABOLITION OF THE COUNCIL.

"Hon. Mr. Goudge, as chairman of the Committee on Privilege, to whom was referred the bill to abolish the Legislative Council, presented and read the following report:

"Your committee have considered the bill, and find that it directly attacks not merely the rights and privileges, but the very existence of the Council.

"The committee have searched in vain for any precedent to show that such a bill could originate elsewhere than in this House, whose rights, privileges, and existence are brought in question.

"Your committee are of opinion that, under the rules of this Council and the principles governing parliamentary procedure, such a bill should not originate in the House of Assembly, but should originate in this Council.

"Your committee are of opinion that the introduction of this bill in the House of Assembly was an invasion of the rights and privileges of this Council.

"For the reasons stated, your committee beg to recommend that the consideration of the bill be deferred till this day three months.'

"Hon. Dr. Parker said he rose unexpectedly to move the adoption of this report. The rights and privileges of this House were of great importance, and it was incumbent on it while it was a House to protect those rights. In 1879--some years ago--he had voted for the abolition of this House for reasons that he had not then given to the House and the public at length. One of the principal reasons was that it was not an independent body; that it was a subservient body; that the Government of the day filled the House with those who represented them, and represented them alone, and the public interests were not subserved; that those who were opposed to the Government were not in a position to assist in the government of the country in accordance with the well understood wishes of the people. The condition of things in this respect had been altered, and that to a very large extent. Bills entrusted to this House by the Government at that time were not permitted to be touched. When the bill for the construction of the Yarmouth Railway came up he (Dr. P.) had asked the then leader of the Government to modify one of the clauses of the bill so that it would place the Government and the treasury in such a position that no deception could be practised, and no amounts could be withdrawn beyond that which was contemplated by the bill. It really was understood, and the bill was intended to specify, that when the company should contribute two-thirds, the Government should give a subsidy of one-third; but those who were familiar with the history of that day knew that it was so managed for want of the precautions he had suggested, and in which his honorable friend from Colchester concurred, that between six and seven hundred thousand dollars had been contributed from the treasury, when the Province should not, according to the intention of the act, have contributed more than a hundred or a hundred and fifty thousand dollars. The history of that unhappy business had been before the country for years, but to-day he was happy to say that the neglect of the local Government of that day had been remedied by the Dominion Government stepping in and completing the work, or making arrangements by which he trusted it would eventually be completed.

"At that time there was also the argument in favor of abolition that the treasury was in a demoralized condition. The Province was in debt three or four hundred thousand dollars, and, in his innocence, he had presumed that the saving that would be effected would aid in bringing about a better condition of the provincial finances. He had lived long enough to learn that if this House had then been abolished nothing would have been saved. He had heard that the statement had been made by a very eminent authority that if this House were abolished to-morrow, nothing would in reality be saved to the country by its abolition. The reasons that had influenced him in 1879 did not, therefore, exist to the same extent to-day, and his views in the meantime had become materially modified. When the matter came before the House again in 1888 he had a second time voted in favor of abolition. He had done so with great reluctance, and not without great doubt as to the soundness of his position. He had regretted that vote once, and that once had continued until the present time. He had then resolved that if ever the question was again made a football for the advancement of the political interests of one or both the political parties represented in the Lower House it should not have the benefit of his vote. That determination had not been expressed to his two colleagues here, and he believed that not many honorable gentlemen knew how he would vote until the present moment. But he was determined now to undo what he had done in this direction in the past, and one of the reasons which disposed him to take the position he was about to take to-day in opposition to the vote that he had given on previous occasions was that the members recently added to this House were men of more independence, and men who could not be whipped into line by anyone. They took the interests of the country into consideration before the interests of the party. They did not respond to the commands of the party leaders, but used their own individual judgment as to the bills they should support or reject, and the particular provisions in such bills that they should accept or reject. There had come into this House not a long time ago, a bill for the abolition of imprisonment for debt, containing twenty-eight clauses. It was a Government bill but this House, or rather a committee of this House, deliberately dismissed it, dissected its various provisions, and amended very materially no less than twenty-five clauses of that bill. Why so? Simply because the members of this House were determined that they would let no bill go through the House unless it was one that reflected their opinions and what they conceived to be in the interests of the country. Upwards of two hundred bills had come to this House from the Lower House; very nearly half of them had required amendments, and many of the amendments were of a very material character. If this House was to be abolished, he would like to know who was to assume the responsibility of this work. What machinery was to be supplied to perform the work that had in the past been performed by this House? He could imagine the possibility of sending the bill passed by the House of Assembly to the Lieutenant-Governor and giving him the assistance of one of the ablest men in the country connected with the bar to guide and direct him on legal and constitutional questions arising in connection with the legislation adopted by this House. The Governor would then be to some extent in the place of this body. But there was no such proposal. The House had submitted to it the bare, bald proposition to sweep away the present securities for sound and accurate legislation without any suggestions as to what was to be put in its place. Suppose the proposition were to be adopted, what would be the effect of it? There would go to His Honor the Lieutenant-Governor to-day thirty-two bills before three o'clock. They had passed two branches of the Legislature. Some of those bills had given him (Dr. P.) and his friends a good deal of labor; some of them the labor of a week, not continuously, but they had been on his mind for that time, and on some of them the committee had

been at work from eight o'clock in the evening until eleven or twelve at night. Yet the head of the Legislature was expected to peruse and make up his mind as to all these thirty-two bills before four o'clock this afternoon. If he had a dozen of the ablest legal minds at his right hand to help him he would not be able to do it, and could not undertake it. This was another reason why this body should be sustained, so that the legislative acts should have *more supervision than that which was given to them in the Lower House*. It was a monstrous thing to place any person in the position of being one party to the passage of bills and not give him the opportunity to examine them critically.

"There were constantly coming up to this House from the Lower House bills which bore upon their face evidence that they had not received the attention that their importance demanded. He did not wish for a moment to say anything against another branch of the Legislature, but there was one act to which he felt justified in referring. He had taken an interest in the bills relating to the City of Halifax for years, and had taken an active part in connection with these bills. For some years he had been chairman of the Committee on City Bills, and during that period the Lower House would permit almost any bill to pass through without giving it the supervision, care, and criticism that it required, or such criticism as a legislative body ought to feel bound to give to measures which they passed. He held in his hand a volume which had been presented as a bill last year to the House of Assembly professing to be a consolidation of the acts relating to the City of Halifax. This book contained 220 pages, and consisted of 777 clauses. The House of Assembly had sent this bill to this chamber last year, and he did not think it had ever been examined by any committee of the House. It could not have been examined, because if it had been examined by responsible men in the other chamber it would never have passed. It had come to this House with amendments on scraps of paper and with a piece of elastic around it, and in that form had been presented to this House to be dealt with just on the eve of the close of the Legislature. The House had been expected to deal with that matter of the consolidation of the acts relating to the City of Halifax ever since the incorporation of the city. They had been expected to accomplish this work in three or four days, but had declined the honor.

"No doubt it was flattering to this House that the lower branch should place such confidence in it, on the eve of its abolition, as to expect it to assume such a heavy responsibility at so short a notice, but the members of this House felt obliged to decline that responsibility. It was important that the bill should pass in a correct shape, but last year this House had been obliged to say that in the shape in which it was presented it should not pass. They had dealt with the bill, therefore, as he hoped this bill would be dealt with. They gave it the three months' hoist. It had come up again this year, and the House had every disposition to deal with it fairly. They had given it two weeks or more of careful consideration, but had been obliged to come to the conclusion that, however much they would like to consolidate the acts of the city, it was impossible for them to pass such a bill, and it was accordingly deferred. He referred to this incident as furnishing one reason why there should be some such body as the Legislative Council, or some other body, at all events, if the Legislative Council were abolished, to take its place with regard to the supervision of measures presented from the Lower House. There had also come to the chamber last year bills from the city asking for power to borrow \$952,000. Such a measure had gone to the House of Assembly and been criticized there, and had passed, he believed, unamended in the main. This House had dealt generously with the city in that matter, and had given them what was requisite; but they had provided that only so much per annum should be expended, and that the several branches of the service should be subdivided, so that the money given for one service should not, as heretofore, be expended

for others. He had occupied, in referring to these matters, a longer time than he should, as he was aware that the time of the House was very valuable, and that we would soon hear the band of music announcing the arrival of His Honor the Lieutenant-Governor. If he had the time at his disposal he would have referred to his own record in connection with this matter before dealing with the general merits of the question; but he felt that it was not necessary to do so, and he would now move the adoption of the report."

The report was adopted by a vote of thirteen to four, eight supporters of the Government voting with the majority.

SESSION OF 1892.

On the bill to establish legacy and succession duties:

"Hon. Dr. Parker said he thought the Government should be in a position to place before the House the comparative scale of percentage in other countries and in this, so as to show what amounts were taken for legacy duties in England, in Ontario, in New Brunswick, and in other places. It struck him that the percentage provided for in this bill was larger than it should be. He presumed that the honorable leader of the Government had all these facts under his hand, and he would like to know what the figures were in other countries, and the percentage that corresponded with the 2½ per cent., the 5 per cent., and the 10 per cent. provided for by this act.

"In relation to the preamble of the bill, the question had also suggested itself to his mind whether the accounts were to be kept separate of the monies received under the operation of this bill, and the revenues were to be appropriated for educational and charitable purposes, and for the support of the institutions mentioned in the preamble, or whether the amount yielded by this law was to go into the general funds, and these institutions were to be provided for hereafter out of the general fund as they had been heretofore. He thought it probable that the effect of the measure upon those who had been charitably disposed, a large number of whom had contributed most generously and liberally to our public charities, would be that the amount of such contributions in the future would be very greatly reduced. The effect of the bill might be in this way to do injury rather than to confer benefit upon those charities which it was its professed object to promote. The men who would otherwise be disposed to contribute to the support of these charities would consider that the Government had undertaken to provide for them under the provisions of this bill by the means which the bill pointed out, and they would be more disposed in the future to distribute their money among their families. In this way charitable institutions might suffer unless something very distinct and positive was inserted in the bill by the Government. He thought that it would perhaps advance the interests of the offspring of those men who were possessed of wealth. He took it for granted that there would be a more general provision made for children in earlier life by those who had wealth than was the usual practice now; that they would not wait until about the time that they were dying to make a distribution of their estates, but there would probably be a division while they were yet living, and the offspring would enjoy the wealth of their parents in their earlier days. This might, perhaps, be a happy event. A great many men carried their wealth with them until they left this world, and possibly as good use was not made of the money as if it had been bestowed upon their children in earlier years. So far, therefore, as the offspring were concerned the measure would probably have a good effect. But he was very strongly impressed with the conviction that the measure would have an injurious effect upon the

charities of the land, unless there should be a positive statement providing that a separate account should be kept, and that every dollar of the money derived from this source should be appropriated to the special object for which it was ostensibly taken. Placed in a general account it would drift this way and that, and the very object for which it was now about to be taken would be frustrated by the operation of the bill. He would not occupy the attention of the House at greater length. The subject was one with which he was not familiar, as he had not studied it. He knew something about taxation in Great Britain, for he had resided there, although he did not die there. But very shortly after he was there he found that taxes were levied upon him which opened his eyes to some extent to the burdens borne by those who resided in that country."

SESSION OF 1894.

It was in this session that the Government began its questionable procedure to abolish the Legislative Council by filling vacant seats with members pledged beforehand to vote for abolition. My father at once challenged this as unconstitutional and a breach of the privileges of the House; he sharply pressed his attack, and forced the Government leader in the Council, Mr. Murray, step by step through a defence of evasion and subterfuge, to bring down the correspondence which had passed between the Government and these new members prior to their appointment. A resolution was then passed for "securing the opinion of counsel upon the question of the constitutionality of the pledges exacted from members of the House, and that the opinion so secured be referred to the Committee on Privileges." An opinion accordingly was obtained from Mr. B. Russell (now Mr. Justice Russell) and Mr. R. L. Borden, which amply justified my father's contention. The Committee on Privileges reported to the same effect, and my father moved the adoption of the report, which carried, the Government leader and some pledged members only voting to the contrary.

Pending the report of the Committee on Privileges, the Government leader had hastily introduced a bill for Abolition, and after the committee's report he moved the first reading of this bill, which motion was allowed to pass. On the motion to refer the bill to the Select Committee on Bills my father moved in amendment the "three months' hoist," which carried, substantially on the same vote as the last, after considerable debate. Subsequently the Council adopted a resolution for an address to Her Majesty the Queen "setting forth the views of this House upon the proposed change in our constitution and the manner in which it is sought to be accomplished, and also an address to His Honor the Lieutenant-Governor to forward the same."

In the debate on this resolution, Mr. M. H. Goudge, of Windsor, a supporter of the Government, closed his speech in the following terms:

"The honorable member from Dartmouth, with his mature years and great experience, had felt impelled to accede to his judgment, and

vote against the bill for the abolition of the Council. When, therefore, I find an honorable gentleman of the character, experience, and knowledge of the honorable member from Dartmouth coming to this conclusion, I think it should not be thrown in the face of honorable members who, some years ago, might have expressed a desire for abolition, that they are doing anything dishonorable when they insist on the right to vote against abolition under the changed circumstances of the country and in the position in which they find themselves placed. . . ."

Following this reference to himself, my father spoke thus:

"Hon. Dr. Parker said that, as his name had been referred to, he considered it to be his duty to offer some explanation in connection with his action upon this question in former years. In the debates that took place on this subject in 1879 and in subsequent years his reasons were given for the course that he had then taken. When he came into the House he found here a body of gentlemen who did not act independently, but were the servants of the Government. He could not move an amendment in connection with any Government bill with any chance whatever of its being even seconded by any person connected with the Government. He had submitted to the great injustice to the Province of seeing bills carried which were prejudicial to the interests of the country, and which no member of the party to which he belonged would be permitted to modify even in a single word. The gentleman who then led the Council, and who had long since departed this life, had stated to him when he—and more than he—had asked that amendments should be received which would be in the financial interests of the country, more especially one in connection with a measure having relation to the Yarmouth Railway, that such amendments could not be entertained. In that case, as every gentleman around these benches well knew, the whole amount of the Government subsidy had been taken out of the treasury and expended, and yet the road had not been completed. A great gap had been left, which had remained uncompleted until a short time ago. Now, if the simple amendment which he had suggested, and which his friends wished to carry, had been accepted by the leader of the Government, the country would have been saved the large amount required to complete that gap, because instead of paying out one-third of the cost of the road, they had paid out two-thirds, until the whole subsidy had been exhausted. It had appeared to him then to be a serious matter, and it had been a serious matter. This was one of the principal things that had prompted him to say that this Council, obedient as it was to the leader of the Government, should be abolished. He had said to himself if this was the treatment that independent men, on practical financial matters, were to receive in this House, if he was not permitted to open his mouth or to carry any measure for the benefit of the country, he would vote for abolition. They had been subservient to the Government in every particular, and had followed them, to use an expression uttered by the honorable member from Queens the other day—an expression which he regretted having heard coming from that honorable gentleman—like a spaniel; and that being the case, he felt that it was proper that they should be abolished. At the same time he felt (at that time) that such a body, otherwise disposed, and animated by a different spirit, was essential to the well-being of the Province, and that it was an essential part of the Legislature of the country. The time had at length come when the members of the House were more independent. They had a mind to think and act for themselves, and when Government measures came before them they had been willing that they should be amended; and if the Hon. Mr. Creelman or himself proposed some amendment which was in the interests of the country, there had been an opportunity of carrying them. Under these circumstances he felt that he had gone far enough; and he had, under the changed circumstances of the case, adopted a different line of action from that which he had

formerly taken, and had opposed the bill for the abolition of the Council simply because that body was being conducted on principles that accorded with his views as to the duty of an independent chamber. They did not yield obediently to the orders of the Government, but acted independently on their own sense of what was required in the interests of the country. He desired to offer just this word of explanation, in order to make clear what his position had formerly been and why he had seen fit to change."

The address to the Crown on this occasion was prepared by a committee of three, of whom my father was one.

SESSION OF 1899.

On a memorial of the Yarmouth Agricultural Society for a yearly grant to district exhibitions:

"Hon. Dr. Parker said he was strongly impressed with the fact, that it would be in the interests of the agricultural districts of Nova Scotia to adopt the ideas presented to the House in the memorial submitted to-day. He was very confident that the central exhibition, annually repeated in Halifax, would ultimately prove a failure, and involve a large loss in expenditure, which would come from the public chest. We could not have a distinctively agricultural exhibition in Halifax. If an exhibition were held here every two or three years, all our resources could be displayed to advantage. The minerals of our country might have been more extensively exhibited than they have yet been. The exhibition of animals here had not yet been what it should have been, but there was reason to believe that, if repeated, we would have exhibitions superior to what we had already seen. Then this was a fishing country, and we had not heretofore had any great exhibition of that part of our resources. We could have here the finest fisheries exhibit possible in a British possession, and he hoped that, in the next provincial exhibition, whether it came sooner or later, that matter would be attended to. He believed that would have as good an effect in advertising our country, as any department of the exhibition, next to the proper display of our mineral resources.

"What had attracted people to these exhibitions was not the display of the resources of the country, but those outside shows, the man who climbed up eighty feet and then tumbled down into a tank of water. And he thought the Government of the country should be censured, if not punished, for allowing such a performance. Suppose an accident happened, the Government of the country would be held responsible for it. Things like that were outside the scope of an exhibition. We wanted to show the world what we possessed, not to show people a man going up into the air and tumbling down into the water. As for military displays, people could see them here on many public occasions—of course not such displays as the mimic taking of Sebastopol, but imposing military displays. And yet he had heard that \$1,000 or \$1,200 had been expended on those military exhibits. He quite concurred in the suggestion that we should have a central exhibition once every two or three years—he thought, in the interests of the Province, every third year—and then let the East and West hold theirs in the intervening years. He quite concurred in what had been said by those gentlemen approaching this House by memorial, that they had been unfairly dealt with, and that the Government of the country should place them in a position to get out of the difficulties now surrounding them. He did not think he was alone in this province when he said that one provincial exhibition every two or three years—he would say three—would be in the interests of the country. (Hear, hear.) He moved that the memorial be referred to a special committee to examine, take evidence and report to this House. This was in accordance with the practice in the House, when important petitions were presented."

The debasing of the central exhibition at Halifax into a circus, vaudeville and horse-racing show, with an unrepresentative and inadequate exhibition of the country's resources attached, he was wont to regard with contempt and indignation.

By his intervention at this session he procured an amendment to the Succession Duties Act by which charitable bequests were thereafter exempted from duties.

SESSION OF 1900.

On a motion to adjourn, moved by Mr. Pipes, then the Government leader in the Council, in order to refer to the gallantry and success of the Nova Scotia troops upon the occasion of General Cronje's surrender in the South African War:

"Hon. Dr. Parker said: I have been for over thirty years connected with the Legislature of Nova Scotia—sitting in this House. At no one time in that long period, or in my life, would I have liked so much to speak here in connection with a subject so important as that brought to our attention by the hon. leader of the Government in this House. I am physically unable to speak now, but this I must say: My sympathies go out to those young men who have left our country to fight the battles of our Empire, to fight for us who remain, to uphold the honor of the flag of our great and good country, Great Britain. Those men are contending for a principle; they represent principles that we who remain behind hold dear. Day by day I have watched with great care for the tidings of those who belong to my own country, those who represent us who are here in this House. The men who have given their lives are not known to me. I did not know Wood or Hensley, but I knew their parents, and I knew the style of men they were. They have died fighting for Queen and country, and have left behind them a reputation that will long live and will be handed down to generations to come. This war is going to have an effect upon the colonies, upon Great Britain, upon the Empire, that no one living previously dreamed of. It is going to place the Empire on a footing which nothing else could have done. It has made the nations around look at the Empire, not with pride, but with timidity and fear. It is going to establish in that vast dark country civilization and Christianity, withheld by those who have heretofore ruled the country. It is going to bring the name of our Lord Jesus Christ to those who have heretofore been treated as less than human, but who yet have souls to be saved. While the sacrifice of human life, the spilling of human blood, makes one shrink, still the day will come when there will be gratitude expressed in every British community, for the results which will follow in the long years to come from this war. I suppose the object of my hon. friend, the leader of the Government, in this House, is to send a word of sympathy to those young men who represent us and who are fighting the battles of our country. I trust that a sympathetic message will go forth from this House, and also an expression of our thankfulness to God that He has upheld them in difficult and dangerous surroundings. That sympathy I have, and I feel assured that every hon. member around these benches will extend that sympathy to these brave young men, and let them know that we follow their every step, that we have them before us by night and by day, and that when they return to us as we hope a large number of them will, we will extend our hands to them in welcome, with great gratitude to them for the efforts they have put forth for us and for the Empire to which we belong. (Hear. hear.)"

That these remarks were uttered with deep emotion seems evident from this allusion by the speaker who followed:

"Hon. Mr. Drummond said: The hon. gentleman from Dartmouth has exemplified the saying, out of the fullness of the heart the mouth speaketh; while the fullness of the heart has almost choked the utterance. . . ."

On the following day my father seconded a resolution of Mr. Pipes for a committee to draft congratulatory telegrams to the Queen, and to Colonel Otter commanding the Canadian troops:

"Hon. Dr. Parker said he rose with a great deal of pleasure to second the resolution that had just been submitted. It was not necessary that he should express himself at any great length. But this he would say, that no public act of his life had given him greater pleasure than the act of rising here to second a resolution of that kind, to go forward to the Queen of our country and the man who has done honour to us, while engaged in protecting the interests of the Empire. (Cheers.)

"The motion was then put and carried unanimously.

"The members of the Legislative Council thereupon (the doors of the Chamber being thrown open) sang the National Anthem and 'Rule Britannia,' with cheers for the Queen, Colonel Otter and the Canadian Contingent, and for H company, enlisted in Nova Scotia."

The foregoing quotations from the proceedings of this session contain the last utterances of my father in the Legislative Council.

While these quotations aptly illustrate what is said hereafter of his ardently patriotic spirit, a peculiar and pathetic interest attaches to the circumstance that the last sentence uttered by him within the historic chamber of the Council spoke of "Queen" and "Empire"—and that his last *word* was "Empire."

Reference has been made in this chapter to several instances wherein my father showed that as a legislator he entertained opinions and projects which were in advance of legislative and public sentiment, but which have since been adopted and brought into effect. Two other instances of the same kind occurred as early as the session of 1876. The first of these additional examples of proposed advanced legislation was realized ten years afterwards. The other—the suggestion of a college of agriculture—was not carried into being by the Legislature until the year 1899.

A proposed amendment to the Liquor License Act subjected the keepers of places where liquors were sold to an action at the instance of those who suffered loss in person and property at the hands of individuals to whom liquor had been sold in such places and such loss was due to the sale. The Legislative Council exempted the city of Halifax from the operation of this amendment.

"Hon. Dr. Parker did not see why Halifax should seek exemption from a principle which had been found to be beneficial, any more than any other part of the Province. The facilities for obtaining drink were so numerous nowhere else, and there was no place where the application of the bill was more needed. He would be sorry to have the bill interfered with in any way. He thought it was a sound principle to make parties responsible for the results of the liquor which they sold, and that it would be attended with as good results here as elsewhere. He knew the bill would be unpopular in Halifax, but the only question for the House to consider was whether it

was right or not. It was even more important to have a stringent liquor law in the city than it was in the country. He was in a position to speak practically, and could say that a large amount of the sickness and death in the city was attributable solely to the extent to which the use of intoxicating drink was indulged in. If the bill was passed, a man who sold liquor would feel his responsibility and govern himself accordingly. Now a man might be as drunk as Bacchus and yet go into a saloon and drink until he could not take care of himself, and then be hustled into the street. He wanted to make people who took advantage of persons in this condition responsible for their actions. The public papers within the past year had given the particulars of a case where a man had died under such circumstances. This bill would give the widow of anyone suffering a similar fate an action against the person who had sold the liquor."

On the Bill for Supply:

"Hon. Dr. Parker said that last year upwards of \$17,000 had been expended on agriculture. He thought it would be for the material interest of the Province, and would elevate what is now looked upon only as a manual occupation to the dignity of a profession, if a portion of this sum were expended in such a way as to enable farmers to obtain the necessary knowledge for conducting their business on scientific principles. Large numbers of the American Colleges had Chairs of Agriculture connected with them, and at the University of Toronto they had a Professor of Agriculture at a salary of \$600. There was a similar Professorship at the University of Edinburgh. As an instance of what could be done by scientific farming he had been struck by the mention made in a late number of the *Scotsman* of a tenant farmer who had accumulated the sum of £50,000 stg. within a limited number of years in this way. Some years ago the sum of \$8,000 had been voted for the purpose of establishing a model farm. A large portion of the money was still unexpended, and if it was applied to the purpose for which it was given, and a Professor of Agriculture appointed in connection with the farm, the Agricultural Societies might accomplish more than they were doing at present, though he did not wish to depreciate their services."

Previous to 1895, for some years he had been desirous of resigning his seat, on account of increasing bodily infirmity and because changed conditions in the Council which had come about were making his duties in the House uncongenial and even irksome to him.

On January 31st, 1895, he placed his resignation in the hands of the Provincial Secretary (Mr. Fielding) for presentation to the Lieutenant-Governor, Honorable M. B. Daly. On an envelope enclosing the originals of the letters to these gentlemen on this occasion I find endorsed, in my father's handwriting: "The resignation was withdrawn before its presentation to the Lieutenant-Governor, in consequence of a deputation from the Legislative Council (headed by President Boak and others of both sides in politics) having waited on me, and requested me urgently to withdraw it." The Provincial Secretary, the leader of the Government, accompanied this deputation.

In February, 1901, notwithstanding similar opposition, he finally resigned his seat.

It was when the Legislature met a few weeks later that he

became the subject of the eulogy by his late colleagues, already referred to, and from which a few specimens are quoted in my earlier narrative.

At this time the *Morning Chronicle* said editorially:

“RETIREMENT OF HON. DR. PARKER.

“Hon. Dr. Parker has resigned his office as a member of the Legislative Council of the Province. The reason given for this action on his part is the failure of strength, owing to his advancing age, to discharge the duties as he believes they should be discharged. Dr. Parker feels that the office should be filled by a man in the vigor of health and life. It is not often this view is taken by incumbents of public office. It is generally said that inasmuch as the appointment is for life, the assumption is that a man gives, during his active years, enough service to compensate for any infirmity of later years. Dr. Parker, however, in harmony with his well known character, will not allow the public business to suffer for his own advantage, and therefore retires from the Council. This action honors Dr. Parker and the Council itself, on account of the nobility of the motive.

“We, however, regret the necessity of the course pursued, and have doubts as to the wisdom of it. For Dr. Parker’s ability and experience have been so marked that he could, we should suppose, with little expenditure of energy, add materially to the strength of the Council. In addition to this consideration we note that Dr. Parker’s retirement leaves only two Conservative members in the Upper Chamber. This is to be regretted in the interests of good government. We should be sorry even if the conditions were reversed—if there were only two Liberals and all the rest were Conservative. Of course, the present state of parties makes the inequality far worse.

“However opinions may differ on this point, there will, we believe, be no difference of opinion on the generous expressions of members of the Council concerning Dr. Parker, on the occasion of the introduction of his successor. Hon. Mr. Owen (Conservative), and Hon. Mr. Goudge, Hon. Mr. Pipes, Hon. Mr. Mack, and Hon. Mr. Armstrong (Liberals), spoke in highest terms of appreciation of Dr. Parker’s services to the public as an eminent physician and as a member of the Legislature. It is pleasing to note that the words of the Liberals were at least as strong as those of the Conservative member. This is creditable to the Liberal leaders and to our public life.”

In a more general editorial on the personnel of the Council the *Acadian Recorder* of February 14th remarked:

“Hon. Dr. Parker has seen longer service than any present member of the Council, his appointment being dated the 28th of June, 1867. Dr. Parker is one of the three members who might be classed as opposition members. His influence is not confined, however, to the narrow limits of his own party, but he enjoys the esteem of every member of the Council, and his wisdom and judgment in the questions that arise in the course of the sessions are given great weight and deference. Affiliated with one party, he is endeared to both alike, and enjoys the distinction of being consulted alike by friend and foe, speaking politically.

“[Since the above was written it has been informally given out that Dr. Parker, by sending in his resignation to the Lieutenant-Governor, has formally severed his connection with the Legislative Council. Dr. Parker will be much missed, as he has always been prompt in his attendance and assiduous in his duties ever since his appointment to that body at Confederation.]”

From the *Messenger and Visitor* (St. John) of February 27th and March 20th, 1901:

"After some thirty-four years of service, Hon. Dr. Parker, of Halifax, has resigned his membership in the Legislative Council of his native Province. The faithfulness and ability of the service thus rendered will be gratefully recognized both by those who have agreed with Dr. Parker and those who have differed with him on leading questions of public policy, and all must regret that the infirmities which come with advancing years make it necessary for him now to lay aside duties which he has so long discharged with much advantage to the public welfare. In noting Dr. Parker's retirement, the *Presbyterian Witness* says: 'The duties of the position he discharged with conscientious fidelity. No one ever accused Dr. Parker of being party to a crooked or unworthy action. In the Legislature, as in private life, he conducted himself as a gentleman and a Christian ought to do. . . . No man has served the public more faithfully than he has done, or given his time and means and mature counsel more cheerfully to the advancement of benevolent and charitable and religious institutions.' These are words which will be generally recognized as true and just. To his own church and denomination Dr. Parker has been wholly loyal in heart and eminently constant in service. Many who read these lines will recall the large debt of gratitude which they owe to him personally, and all will earnestly unite with us in the hope that, after the day of arduous toil, our honored brother may find life's evening full of peace, and bright with the assurance of that joy beyond, into which the Lord will welcome every faithful servant."

"Since our reference, a few weeks ago, to the Hon. Dr. Parker's retirement from public life, the subject has come formally before the Legislative Council of Nova Scotia, and has called forth remarks of a highly—and doubtless a most sincerely—appreciative character from a number of honorable gentlemen who have esteemed it an honor to be associated with Dr. Parker for a longer or a shorter period in the Legislature of the Province. . . . We know well that the reward which Dr. Parker has sought is not that of public eulogy. His motives for service have ever been deeper and more Christian than the desire for praise. At the same time it cannot but be pleasing to him to know that his efforts to serve the public weal are so generously recognized by the men who have wrought with him, and still more so to know that the sentiments which these honorable gentlemen have eloquently expressed find a hearty affirmative response in the hearts of men of both political parties all over the Province."

Even as the years of professional service were characterized by a journalist, competent to judge, as "fifty faithful years," it seems equally appropriate to say now, in closing the present chapter, that the period of public service rendered to his country in the Legislature constituted likewise thirty-four faithful years; for all the record of them shows not only that he had the highest of all qualities in a legislator—a sense of public duty—but that justly and conscientiously always this duty was discharged.

It remains to be added that at various times it was open to him to accept high political preferment; but his sense of professional duty and a very decided taste for a more private life led him uniformly to decline any such change of station.

CHAPTER XIII.

THE DECLINING YEARS.

"O blest retirement, friend to life's decline,
Retreats from care, that never must be mine;
How happy he who crowns, in shades like these,
A youth of labor with an age of ease;

"But on he moves to meet his latter end,
Angels around befriending virtue's friend;
Bends to the grave with unperceived decay,
While resignation gently slopes the way;
And all his prospects brightening to the last,
His heaven commences ere the world be past."

—*Goldsmith.*

WE resume now the chronicle of the years which followed the termination of my father's professional career, on August 1st, 1895.

For some years afterwards his activity in other and various directions continued unabated. His devotion to philanthropic work and to the affairs of his church suffered no relaxation. Several important private trusteeships, which a few years before had devolved upon him, afforded employment for his business abilities and occupied much of his time. His general business concerns and his correspondence of a private nature received more attention now that he had achieved his release from professional employment, and during the winter months his legislative duties still afforded him occupation. He found more time for general reading, and for professional reading as well; for though he had voluntarily "shelved" himself as a practitioner, his profound interest in everything which concerned his profession was not affected, and by the perusal of the latest books and the current periodical literature in medicine and surgery he was still absorbing knowledge and keeping himself informed about all that was coming in and going on in the professional world.

So employed, he was able gradually to accommodate himself to the radically changed conditions of life upon which he had now entered.

He sought more of the out-door life, and discovered increasing pleasure in walking and driving for relaxation only. In inclement weather, at all seasons, he took his regular exercise in walking on the long verandah at "Beechwood," which he measured, that he might know the number of turns to the mile. He never chafed

under the enforced restraints which age and diminished bodily strength had imposed upon him, nor expressed regret or disappointment concerning his retirement from practice. In referring to it he would say, jocularly, that he had still his family, reinforced by the infantry division of grandchildren, to practise upon, and these would keep him well employed professionally, though he feared the practice would not prove lucrative. With his customary unflinching cheerfulness of disposition, he philosophically accepted the changed lot, and trod with even step the final stages of life's journey. There were many seasons of illness, weakness and pain—fortunately not of long duration—but these he endured with calmness and fortitude of mind.

The difficulties with the "old patients" experienced in 1873, when general practice was relinquished, recurred now with the termination of all practice whatever. To satisfy insistent importunity which was encountered from time to time, occasional lapses into advising and prescribing had to be made. Some of these unfortunates would declare that they would "never give him up while he was alive." There is an extreme instance of an elderly woman who to this day keeps "the old doctor's" prescriptions on hand for use and a photograph of him always in view; "for," she says, "the new doctors can't understand my case, and a look at his face on the mantel generally makes me well when I feel poorly. If I am very sick I get his medicines made up again, and they cure me."

During the summer of 1895 my father collaborated with Dr. Albert S. Ashmead, of New York, formerly Foreign Medical Director of the Tokyo Hospital, Japan, in the preparation of a paper entitled, "The Introduction of Leprosy into Nova Scotia and New Brunswick. Mic-Macs Immune." This was published in the *Journal of the American Medical Association* for February 1st, 1906. A great deal of historical research and local investigation was involved in its preparation, and the article is a valuable one; but as Dr. Ashmead bore the principal part in its production it is not presented here. My father's contribution to this work is marked by his wonted thoroughness and precision of statement.

The year 1895 was closed by a visit to Toronto, where I was invalided. He and my mother spent the Christmas and New Year holiday season with me there. He was then comparatively well and pursued with zest his reading, writing, and his out-door exercise. The last time he had been in Toronto was in June, 1891. In 1883 he was there to attend meetings of the Senate of Toronto Baptist College, of which he was a member. On that occasion, with my sister Fanny, he visited friends in St. Catharines and for the last time saw Niagara and its environment.

In April, 1896, I was seriously ill in New York, after return-

ing there from Hot Springs, Virginia, and my parents were summoned by attending physicians. They remained in New York about a month, during which time my father himself was having special medical treatment, and they afterwards followed me to Toronto, where I went in May to facilitate my recovery, and where they remained with me for several weeks. I can never forget the tender care and solicitude of my father throughout this trying period, when his very presence was a benediction of healing power, by far outweighing all that such a physician as Allan McLean Hamilton or other eminent men with him in New York could accomplish for me in a very painful and critical illness. He had nothing to learn from such physicians; and, as on other occasions, to me personally and to many others, at this time of apparent physical extremity he seemed endowed with an extraordinary power in his ministry of healing—not only for the worn and pain-racked body, but also for the tired, drooping spirit of the patient.

During the summer of this year he spent some time with me in Berwick, in the Annapolis Valley. During these later years he enjoyed frequent summer sojourns in the country, at Wolfville and elsewhere. At such retired spots much of the time would be spent in delightful drives and in living out amid the bloom and fruitage of the orchards.

In the spring of 1897 he and my mother joined me in Lakewood, New Jersey, a delightful winter and spring resort. At this time he seemed to regain a fair measure of his old-time vigor. He could indulge in long walks and drives, and he found pleasure in boating upon Lake Carasaljo. By its beautiful shores, under the wide-spread pines which fringe its waters, he would sit for hours at a time with his books and papers, engaging much in conversation, which was always entertaining and profitable when he led it, thoroughly interested in all that was going on about him, and, with no restlessness, acquiring at last the art of resting.

After the demands of practice had ceased in 1895, it was noticeable that the old habit of abbreviating vacation outings, due to an overpowering impulse to resume work, gradually passed away. Not that he could learn the art of idling when he was away from home; for professional, historical, biographical, and other reading of a substantial character, to which he would give much time, together with business and professional correspondence, afforded him so much employment during occasions of travel and change of abode as to make his mode of life appear rather laborious. His busy mind, in these years of retirement, must needs satisfy itself with such occupations, which, though seemingly onerous at times to others, afforded him the restful relaxation to be found by active intellects in changing work. It was not in him to "rust out," and by no means was he worn out.

On July 6th, 1898, the Maritime Medical Association met in Halifax, and he attended its meetings, at which there was no more attentive and interested auditor of the proceedings. A report of the opening session says: "The President, Dr. D. A. Campbell, invited to the platform Dr. William Bayard, of St. John, Hon. Dr. Parker, of Halifax, and Dr. J. W. Daniel, of St. John—past Presidents of the Association."

On the 22nd of July, 1898, his only sister, Mary Sophia, died at Hampton, New Brunswick, where she had been living for some years with her daughter, Hattie Warneford. He went to Hampton the next day, attended the funeral, and with his brother Frank remained there several days. This bereavement, which left the two brothers the only survivors of the family, weighed heavily upon my father's spirit. I was with him then, as I had been in 1882, when at the family burial-place at Walton he laid the body of his father in the tomb where reposed the dust of his mother, who had died in 1866. On both these occasions his mind overflowed with memories of his early life with his beloved dead; reminiscences long hidden, but now evoked from memory by that stimulus which death supplies, and told to me.

In the address presented on August 1st, 1895, grateful reference is made to his safeguarding the interests of the profession in the Legislature. Another such reference occurs in a report of the proceedings of a meeting of the Branch British Medical Association in December, 1900, when, upon mention of the practice of publishers sending to physicians certain medical journals which were not ordered and afterward rendering bills for them: "the President stated that Hon. Dr. Parker had had a law passed in this Province which would not necessitate paying for a journal when not ordered."

The closing months of the century marked the time of his latest travel beyond the limits of the Province. To consult Dr. Bangs, of New York, and undergo a course of medical treatment by this specialist, he went to that city in September, 1900, taking with him my mother and my sister Fanny, and there remained about a month. On the homeward journey, in consequence of extensive damage to the railway caused by flooding streams in New Brunswick, the party had to go around by rail to Fredericton, and thence by boat down the St. John River to St. John. Though not in good health, he stood the lengthened journey well. He arrived home to find that his house had been invaded by burglars a few nights before—his only experience of the kind; but beyond the taking of a box containing valuable documents and books of account, the loss was not serious.

Early in 1901 a commission of physicians, appointed by Government was engaged in determining the location of the Pro-

vincial Sanatorium for Consumptives, and other questions connected with that institution. My father, though not of the commission, was consulted by the Government on these questions, and advised upon them. He did not concur with the majority of the commission on the location of the sanatorium recommended by them, and he further dissented from their opinion that a resident physician in charge was not necessary.

Earlier in his career, at the request of Government, he had closely investigated the matter of a location for a quarantine station and smallpox hospital for the port of Halifax, and in an exhaustive report (a copy of which he preserved), he recommended the site at Lawlor's Island, which was subsequently adopted.

Upon smallpox he was an authority, having had much experience with it in the earlier years of his practice, when, in a more virulent form than is now common, it was a frequent importation by shipping at the port of Halifax. Not long after he began practice there was a very threatening epidemic of the disease in the city, and he was called upon to assume the charge of numerous cases. No hospital was available, but he showed his resourcefulness by obtaining from one of his patients, the late Enos Collins, an old unused barn which stood on his property in an isolated situation. The ends were removed from this building, and my father converted it into a rough kind of open-air hospital, with two floors, which he filled with the sufferers, and there he successfully treated them.

On many questions in matters affecting the public health it was common for him to be unofficially called on to advise the governing authorities, civil and military, as in the instances above referred to. From correspondence found upon his files it appears that when the Marquis of Lorne was in Halifax, upon the assumption of office as Governor-General in 1878, he consulted my father upon a very delicate matter of this nature. The conference between them was followed by this correspondence.

My father's retirement from the Legislative Council, early in the year 1901, was a great relief to him. While he held any office, public or private, his sense of duty would not suffer him to absent himself from the discharge of its obligations. Punctuality and regularity of attendance had recently become very difficult. The feeling of obligation to attend, which oppressed him when the state of his health confined him to his home, coupled with a growing distaste for the Council under recent conditions, no doubt prompted the remark he made to a friend on the day his resignation was accepted: "Now, Arthur, I'm thankful to say, I am no longer 'Honorable'!"

In this year there died two of his lifelong professional

brethren, to whom he was bound by the closest ties of friendship and a real affection, Dr. James R. DeWolfe and Dr. William J. Almon. Both were Edinburgh University men, his seniors by a few years, and both had retired a few years before him. The former had been his neighbor in Dartmouth for many years. The latter was the son of his old master in the period of apprenticeship. The long-standing intimacy among the three had been maintained in old age by frequent association to the last. The death of these old familiars he keenly felt and sincerely mourned. Their passing from him, almost together, sundered one of the few remaining links with the long past, and brought to him a feeling that, so far as the true, tried and brotherly friendships of his youth and early manhood were concerned, he was now becoming almost alone in his generation.

What Dr. Almon's estimation of my father had been may be gathered from a saying of the doctor's, in one of those jocular moods so characteristic of him, on the occasion of a banquet given him by the profession when he retired. It is quoted in an obituary reference to my father, published in the *Morning Chronicle*, and which appears in a later chapter. At the request of the editors of the *Maritime Medical News* my father wrote a tribute to the memory of Dr. Almon, which will be found, though with no clue to the authorship, in the *News* for March, 1901 (vol. 13 at p. 105).

Of the various Halifax philanthropic enterprises with which my father was long identified, that which seemed to occupy the largest part in his large heart was the Institution for the Deaf and Dumb, and it was the last to be relinquished. He had participated in its beginnings, in the erection of the original school building, for long years had ministered to the pupils as visiting physician, and later as consultant; he had helped to nurture the Institution through the years of its development, and had stood by it bravely in all its trials, giving of his means to its sustenance, and safeguarding its interests in the Legislature to the end that adequate and increasing financial support by the Province might be obtained. Through the long term of his chairmanship of the directors, and in his earlier capacities as a director and visiting physician he made it a point to visit the Institution frequently and to get acquainted with the pupils. It was touching to witness his enthusiastic reception by these "children of silence" on such occasions, or when he presided at the annual closing exercises, or visited them at their Christmas festivities. He won their personal affection, which was testified to by simple gifts upon his birthdays and frequent letters which they would write him, to show the progress they were making in their studies, as well as by their mute exhibitions of delight at his appearance

among them at any time. When abroad, he would inspect all similar institutions within his reach and was always alert by such means, through correspondence with authorities on the subject, and through his reading, to find something to advance the methods of management and modes of instruction in the school. When the noble structure which now graces the site of the old building was erected and more land adjacent for extension purposes was acquired in the later period of his chairmanship, this good fortune of the Institution which he so dearly loved became to him a crowning joy of the labors bestowed in its behalf by his colleagues and himself.

In 1902, notwithstanding all this, he was constrained to part with this child of his affections in philanthropic work, and most reluctantly he retired from the chairmanship and the directorate, —urging that his physical condition now denied him the performance of his duty. Of course the continuance of any office of trust was deemed impossible by him when he could not perform its labors. Nominal office he would not hold in any department of work.

On this occasion the Directors passed a resolution in these terms:—

“At a meeting of the directors of the Halifax Institution for the Deaf and Dumb, held February 14th, 1902, the following minute was unanimously adopted:

“The directors would express their sincere regret that their chairman, Dr. Parker, has been compelled to resign his position on the board. Dr. Parker has been connected with the institution ever since it was founded, first as physician, then as director, and for twenty-five years as chairman of the board. During all that time he manifested a deep and ever-increasing interest in everything connected with the welfare of the deaf. He always took an active part in the management of the institution, sparing neither time nor effort in advancing its interests, and keeping it in every way abreast of the best institutions in other lands. With this in view he frequently visited schools for the deaf in Britain and the United States, making a study of the work and bringing to bear on the Halifax institution the results of his careful observations. The cause of the deaf in Nova Scotia is deeply indebted to him, for no one has acted a more important part in the upbuilding of the Halifax institution than Dr. Parker. The directors feel that his withdrawal from among them will be a very great loss. They will miss his wise counsel, and they feel that his place on the board will not easily be filled. They hope that his retirement from work may greatly improve his health and that in the evening of life he may richly enjoy that satisfaction which must flow from a blameless life spent in unceasing activity in seeking the welfare of all classes of his fellow-men.”

With reference to this resignation, the *Acadian Recorder* of February 15th, 1902, published the following editorial:

“At a meeting of the board of directors for the Institution of the Deaf and Dumb, held yesterday afternoon, the resignation of Honorable Dr. Parker as chairman of the board and director of that institution was with much reluctance accepted. Dr. Parker has acted as chairman of this philanthropic institution for twenty-eight years, and for a much longer

time has served on the board. In every way he has been a most useful and active member, never failing to render all the counsel to the board and institution that a man of such eminent professional skill and matured wisdom can alone of all men impart.

"A year ago he felt called upon to tender his resignation to the Government as a member of the Legislative Council, and it will be recalled with what feelings of sincere regret, all, whether Liberal or Conservative, heard his determination in that matter. Whatever Dr. Parker undertook he attended to it faithfully, considerably, conscientiously and well. It was because he felt that, owing to failing health, and to the fact that he had reached a time of life when he might take a rest from the world's more arduous duties, that he resigned that position he occupied with such impartial bearing in all the many vicissitudes of political struggles.

"It is for the same cause that now he has asked to be relieved from attendance and work in connection with the charitable institution which was always very dear to his heart. And it was with many feelings of keen sorrow that the other directors felt that his wishes should be met, glad, however, to know that they could still number him among the well-wishers of the institution, and trusting that he would be long spared to witness the many evidences in the success of the institution of the untiring energy and valued counsel he had always so cheerfully given to this one of our great charities.

"Of his sterling worth, his uprightness and integrity in every walk of life, it is not required that we speak in fuller detail. They are known to all classes of citizens, for the youngest of them have heard of Hon. Dr. Parker's many kindly ways. We are glad that he still lives to enjoy a little rest in this vicinity where he has so long labored so industriously; glad, too, to be able to utter these words of praise while he is yet a citizen with us.

"It is not often that it is permitted to pass upon the life of a man while yet he lives, still it is particularly fitting when nought that can be said is too flattering a testimony to his worth. Moreover the doctor is not spoiled by kindness, his own modest demeanor forbidding that. Over and above all his many qualities of hand and heart Dr. Parker was a perfect gentleman, and in saying that we compress into one word with its qualifying attribute most of the character qualities we have already enlarged upon. That Dr. Parker may live many years in the tranquil assurance of a well-merited repose is the honest wish of the *Acadian Recorder*, and in doing so we are confident we but echo the whole-hearted wishes of Halifax and Dartmouth citizens of all creeds and classes."

In the volume of the *Maritime Medical News* for 1903 is found an account of the presentation of an address and a silver tea service by medical men to the late Dr. S. M. Weeks, of Newport, N.S., in commemoration of his completing fifty years of practice. My father's name heads the signatures to this address, and I extract this paragraph from the account of the celebration:

"Congratulatory letters were read from old friends who were unable to be present, among whom was the Hon. D. McN. Parker, the venerable and beloved Nestor of our profession, who was himself a few years ago the subject of a similar jubilee demonstration, and who, though now living in placid retirement, amid 'honor, love, obedience, troops of friends,' still takes a lively interest in everything relating to medical life and work."

The 26th day of August, 1904, was the fiftieth anniversary of the marriage of my parents. For some time before that date

my father was in a state of nervous apprehension that some one would think of it, and launch upon the calm current of this summer's enjoyments a "golden wedding" function. It was habitual with him to deprecate the presentation to him of any gifts, and the thought of incurring the penalties of a "golden wedding," with the incidental golden presents, through the mere imprudence of living for fifty years after marriage (a circumstance which he said he could not avoid) was well nigh an abhorrence. Some time before the dreaded date he induced my mother to flee with him for refuge into the country until the danger of the possible calamity should be overpast; and they spent the anniversary safely in Wolfville with their children living there. However, it may be said here, in earlier life he was not so fortunate, having been very frequently made the recipient of gifts in token of the gratitude and love of numerous patients, sometimes coming in the form of legacies from abroad many years after the patient had passed from his ken.

On August 22nd, 1905, the Canadian Medical Association again met in Halifax. The sessions were held in the new hall of the School for the Blind. My father attended the opening session in the afternoon, and yielding to the solicitation of the managing doctors, he occupied a seat on the platform. Dr. John Stewart, in beginning his Presidential address on that occasion, after expressing his sense of obligation to the Lieutenant-Governor, who had made an address of welcome to the delegates, said: "Permit me also to express my pleasure in having on the platform my old friend and colleague the Honorable D. McN. Parker, one of the founders of the Association." These words were received with tumultuous applause by a large audience of medical men representing all parts of Canada, and by the general public who were present.

At the same session Dr. D. A. Campbell delivered the address in Medicine, in which he reviewed the growth and organization of the medical profession in Nova Scotia. In referring to the organization of this Association, for all Canada, in 1867, when the union of the Provinces had widened the outlook of the profession, he mentioned "the fact that the honor of first presiding over the deliberations of this important organization was accorded to a Nova Scotian"—Sir Charles Tupper, to whom he paid a just tribute. Proceeding, Dr. Campbell said: "And I cannot omit mention of the second President of this Association, also a Nova Scotian, and the ablest practitioner in the Province, chosen for that place of honor because of his sterling character, public spirit and successful professional career, one who fortunately is still with us, an inspiring influence for all that is noble and good—I refer, of course, to the Honorable Dr. Parker."

The acclamation which had greeted the reference made by the President, earlier in the session, was repeated in response to this allusion.

This was the last appearance of my father in a meeting of any professional society or gathering. It proved to be a farewell to his professional brethren of the Province and of Canada, in any united capacity. He passed from their midst that day, and they saw his face no more.

By this time (1905) his vision had become much impaired by cataract, on both eyes, which had been making its tedious growth now for some time. In 1904 reading became laborious and was accomplished usually by the aid of a large magnifying glass, while the irregular character of his handwriting surviving from this period attests the difficulty with which he wrote. Though more feeble in his movements, he still took exercise in walking, but the functional disorders of body, which had afflicted him so long and had been so patiently endured, confined him increasingly to the house. He thought much of going into hospital at Montreal for treatment, and at the same time undergoing an operation for cataract; but specialists advised him that the eyes were not yet ready for such an operation and he was persuaded to forego the idea of hospital treatment as well.

Towards the close of the year 1904 began the cheerful, loving ministry of reading to him and writing for him, through which my mother and my sister Fanny became as eyes to the blind during the remainder of my father's stay on earth. His keen interest in the topics of the day as discussed in the current press and periodical literature, as well as in books, remained unabated; and in the upper sitting-room, now the centre of the family life because he chiefly occupied this apartment—a room always specially dear to him—he would be seated for hours at a time listening to the readers, with placidity of mind and cheerfulness of aspect, often engaging in animated commentary or discussion on subjects suggested by the reading.

To see him so engaged rebuked at once the thought that he might be in any wise dispirited or disappointed under the sore deprivation to which he must now submit. Patient and uncomplaining in this, as in the hours of pain and sleeplessness and all things adverse, he always was. His defective sight still permitted him to move about, both in and out of doors, with comparative freedom; but it was with some difficulty that he recognized faces and distinguished persons. About this time, too, it was that he began to recognize an inability to call up some word he wished to use, and experienced slight lapses of memory in conversation. His memory as to persons, facts and events relating back many years was perfect, but the things of yesterday would slip from his mind. Of these incidents of old age he was very conscious, and

they tended to a distaste for seeing visitors, except old friends, and all the members of his family—in the larger sense. With these he could converse with freedom, but to entertain the casual guest and maintain conversation visibly embarrassed him. For this reason he more and more secluded himself. The old spontaneous spirit of general hospitality seemed unconsciously to pass slowly from him and he became much shut in from society and the world external. Yet he was almost always to be found in his old-time cheerful frame of mind and with the old-time cheery manner. This sunset period of life, gilded by the devoted love of those he loved, and by the reflection of the spiritual life and light within him, was in all respects supremely happy.

In these latest years his mind would turn much to the things of long ago, and he found great pleasure, when there was opportunity, to talk of the past, as to which his speech would flow fluently from the springs of his remarkably retentive memory. His conversation at such times was always delightful, and often highly amusing when he would fall into one of his old-time moods of anecdote and humor.

He would dwell much upon spiritual themes, but I cannot say that he did so more than in earlier years. Spiritually minded he always was, and he had always great freedom in profitably turning conversation to such subjects and directing it. His was not a life whose old age had been reserved for the consideration of the after life and its concerns. Jean Paul Richter said: "A man must not so much prepare himself for eternity, as plant eternity in himself—eternity serene, pure, full of depth, full of light and all else." In truth, such a planting had been a long process in the spiritual husbandry of my father's inner life. Long ere these closing years the harvest had matured in rich fruition. Long had he possessed, to a degree uncommon, an inward personal knowledge of the world within and the world above, in Christian life and experience—a knowledge which entered into the very fibre of his character and stood revealed in the life external.

Frequently in this period he used to express the liveliest satisfaction in that, throughout his life, he had made it a practice to familiarize himself with the Scriptures and to store his memory with his favorite chapters and portions of God's Word. For in this time of failing eyesight he could explore, at will, the treasure houses of memory for comfort and spiritual up-lift from these sources. It was an unfailing delight for him to do so; and he did not fail to admonish his grandchildren and others to follow his practice, that the same benefits some day might accrue to them.

In these declining years he found much pleasure and amusement in the society of his grandchildren, of whom, in 1905, there were eleven, ranging in age from four to seventeen years. He was

eager to be with them, and a pleasant sight it was to see him seated in the midst of a group of these little people beneath the sheltering beeches, or presiding over their amusements on the lawns, at the old home. His inborn love for children, which seemed to contribute to the success he had met in dealing with this difficult class of patients in the days gone by, appeared to blossom now afresh in the days of his old age and to shower its blessings on the pathway of these infant lives. The recollection of his tender ministrations to their needs in times of illness, often when he was physically unfit for the exertion of visiting them, can never fade from the memory of their parents.

On the 9th of August, 1905, death claimed from him his youngest and only surviving brother, Francis. He was not well enough to attend the sick bed as often as he wished, but did so up to the measure of his strength. The severing of this last bond of family union remaining to him on earth, out of all his father's family, was a deep sorrow. Though seldom demonstrative in his affections or other emotions at this time of life, his spirit bowed low under the sense of loss and isolation which came to him now. Eternity seemed nearer to him than ever before; but he was cheered by the reflection that he had gained one more tie to the life which was to come, in the translation of one more loved spirit to welcome him beyond the bourne whither he knew his own spirit must ere long follow on.

The year 1906 in the retirement of home was marked by no special features or occurrences to distinguish it from the few immediately preceding. In June he made his last annual visit to Wolfville to see children and grandchildren residing there. He was then visibly more feeble in body, and his eyesight had failed much since he had been there a year before. He was still clinging to the idea of an operation for cataract, but his strength and general condition would not permit him to undergo this.

When the British Medical Association held its memorable meetings in Toronto, in August, 1906, a "Handbook and Souvenir of Canada," evidently written by a medical man but whose identity is not disclosed, was prepared to commemorate the occasion, and it had a wide circulation, not only among the visiting members of the Association but throughout the country generally. In the introduction to this book the author says: "Sir Henry Holland in his 'Recollections of Past Life' frequently referred with pardonable pride to the extent of his travels, and the benefits, physical and professional, that he had derived from them. The Dean of Canadian Medicine, Dr. D. McN. Parker, of Halifax, who retired, after fifty years of practice, in 1895, as President of the Dominion Medical Association, attributed his success largely to his almost yearly visits to London and Edinburgh. Of all the professions

none needs a holiday season of travel more than the medical; none, for obvious reasons, has less opportunity of enjoying it."

The above statement as to the frequency of my father's visits abroad would be more accurate if cities of the United States and Canada were named in connection with those mentioned, but I give it as it is written.

This reference is quoted to illustrate the wide and living reputation which adhered to my father's name among medical men in the second decade after he had ceased to be of the profession; and time has not yet dimmed its lustre. This, probably, was the last public allusion made to him, in connection with his profession, while he lived.

The following extracts from letters belonging to this period reflect much of the beloved personality of their writer as memory pictures him and hears his voice in the years when they were penned.

After Dr. Chute had resigned the pastorate of the First Baptist Church, Halifax, to assume his professorship in Acadia University, he unfailingly wrote, each year, to my father an affectionate and tender congratulatory letter upon the occasion of his birthday anniversary. The four letters to Dr. Chute (kindly loaned by him for use here) are selected from my father's replies to these birthday remembrances.

"DARTMOUTH, N. S.,

"April 30th, 1902.

"Dear Bro. Chute:

"I am in receipt of your congratulatory letter of the 26th inst., relative to the 80th anniversary of my birth, for which I beg you to accept my sincere thanks. I should be, and I think I am, grateful to God for the many and great blessings He has permitted me to enjoy during those four score years; which are now past and gone—never to be recalled.

"*In the nature of things I cannot but feel that my sojourn here is short, and my prayer daily is that our Heavenly Father may aid and strengthen me in improving the time. During your sojourn with us as Pastor of the First Church, I am glad I have the opportunity to say, you contributed in no small degree to my spiritual comfort and welfare, by continually proclaiming the 'truth' as it is given to man in God's Word. To me, far advanced in years, and drawing near the close of life, such pulpit preaching and instruction cannot be valued or measured either by language or the pen.* . . .

"We hope ere very long to spend a few days in Wolfville, when we will have the opportunity of learning from yourself how you like your new position, and the work connected therewith.

"Yours faithfully,

"D. McN. PARKER."

“DARTMOUTH, N. S.,

“May 1st, 1902.

“My dear Son:

“I am just about finishing my replies to those friends who were kind enough to write me congratulatory letters connected with my 80th birthday.

“The day is past and gone, and I am, I trust, grateful to God, that He has spared me so long to mingle with those I love; and to whom I am bound, by the warmest bonds of affection and friendship.

“I thank you for your filial and loving letter of the 26th ult., and for the expressions of affection it contains. Your consoling and comforting quotation from God’s Word, ‘Thou wilt keep him in perfect peace whose mind is stayed on Thee,’ has for long years strengthened me spiritually, and increased my faith in, and love for, Him who first loved us; then died for us, and is now our Advocate; at the right hand of His, and our, Father in Heaven.

“I had a short and well expressed note from Fred in connection with my ‘four score years’ birthday, and replied to it early after its receipt. . . .

“I will get Lord Roberts’ book as soon as it is to be had. I know I will be interested in it, and will enjoy it, especially as the print is large. My eyesight, I am sorry to say, is getting ‘no better fast,’ as one of Tupper’s Minudie French patients said to him in the long years past when the question, ‘How are you?’ was asked him. . . .

“We are all as well as usual here. Laura and Mac were with us on the evening of the 28th. as also Dr. Stewart, for a short time, who brought me a hyacinth in bloom, to let me know that, although not mingling now with my professional brethren, as in former days, I am not altogether forgotten. . . .

“Ever your affectionate Father.

“D. McN. PARKER.”

“W. F. Parker, Esq.,

“Elmslea Cottage,

“Wolfville, N. S.”

“DARTMOUTH, N. S.,

“April 29th, 1903.

“Dear Brother Chute:

“I thank you most sincerely for your very kind congratulatory letter of the 27th inst., on the occasion of my being about to enter upon my 82nd year.

“In anticipation, 81 years is a long period; but retrospectively—just the opposite. Nearly all of the friends of my boyhood, and early manhood, have passed away from earth.—many of them I am assured to heaven. Now the companions

of that period are beyond my vision, and the sound of my voice; but, thank God, I have faith to believe that I shall in the future—and probably in the near future—be able to renew with many of them a higher and holier friendship in heaven. The very thought of the continuity of that new relationship tends to break down and overcome the sting of death, and the victory of the grave. How much we owe to the cross of Christ! And to His utterance, '*It is finished.*'

"May God bless you in your new sphere of labor, and may those you love—of your own family and friends—be among the saved.

"With my affectionate regards to yourself, your wife and family,

"I remain,

"Yours faithfully,

"D. McN. PARKER."

"DARTMOUTH, N. S.,

"April 27th, 1904.

"Dear Brother Chute:

"To-morrow is my birthday and if I am spared to see it, I will have entered upon my 83rd year.

"In this connection permit me to tender you my heartfelt thanks for your more than kind letter of the 24th inst., and let me say that I have deeply regretted your absence from the pastoral charge of the church with which I have been connected for more than fifty years. My health is now seriously impaired, and I very seldom cross the harbor—and then only when urgent business matters demand my attention. I have not been able to visit Laura and her half-dozen children during the whole winter.

"Happily I have found a congenial church home where *God's Word* is preached in simplicity and earnestness; and the great fundamental truths of the gospel are placed before us by Dr. Kempton—as the spirit of the Lord prompts him to deliver them.

"During the severe and boisterous weather of the winter I could not venture out very often, but now, I hope to fill my seat with more regularity. I attended the services in the mornings of the last two Sabbaths, and listened with much pleasure and profit to both the sermons.

"I hear of 'you and yours' quite often—through Will's correspondence, but am looking forward to the warm weather of June when (D. V.) I may have the pleasure of meeting you and yours once more.

"I feel and know that I am not anchored to life on earth but for a brief period, and I thank God that I can say I am constantly looking forward to the end without doubts or fears—relying on the precious promises—always remembering that the

blood of Jesus Christ cleanseth from all sin. The promises are innumerable and I have faith to rely absolutely on them.

“With my kindest regards to Mrs. Chute and your family,

“I remain,

“Yours faithfully,

“D. McN. PARKER.”

“DARTMOUTH, N. S.,

“April 28th, 1905.

“My Dear Brother Chute:

“I thank you most sincerely for your very kind and affectionate letter of yesterday.

“It is to me a matter of happy recollections that I had so long the pleasure of sitting under your preaching and hearing the Word of God proclaimed in its entirety and integrity. Those were times of spiritual growth and prosperity—followed, I regret to say, by that which I considered hostile to the teachings of God’s Word.

“Now I am glad to say that with Dr. Kempton as my pastor, I am enabled to listen and partake of the truth as in the years gone by. It was a sad sacrifice when the *command* came to me to rise and depart from the old structure, so long known to me as my church home; but I have never regretted it even for a single hour. It was like removing from darkness into light, and now, I am in all human probability anchored in the Dartmouth church until the end of life. . . .

“I commenced my 84th year this morning—feeling fairly well; but my sight is growing more and more dim. And this to a man of my habits is a great deprivation. A large portion of my reading is done now *through the ears*, by the aid of my wife and Fanny. Such is God’s will, and consequently it cannot but be right. The past winter has practically been spent in the house. I cannot walk fast enough to keep myself warm, and what with high winds and storms, I have been almost anchored to ‘my ain fireside’ for months.

“My wife and Fanny join me in affectionate remembrances to Mrs. Chute and yourself.

“I remain,

“Yours faithfully,

“D. McN. PARKER.”

“Please excuse errors of omission and of commission. Within the past two weeks, in writing, if I take the pen away from the paper I get adrift and cannot find the place to resume my subject.

“D. P.”

An account of the last things connected with the life now fast ebbing to its source is postponed to a future chapter, while, in the next, we briefly touch upon one department of that life’s activity which necessarily calls for some consideration.

CHAPTER XJV.

"DENOMINATIONAL."

"Not slothful in business; fervent in spirit; serving the Lord."—
Romans 12: 11.

It is not proposed here to examine or separately consider my father's life in respect of his religion or his spiritual characteristics and experience. In previous chapters perhaps enough has been said, more or less incidentally, to disclose something of the inner springs and the outer manifestations of his religious life. In this aspect of his personality, I would rather allow his letters and his other utterances by pen and speech to reveal the man he was than to attempt a studied delineation; yet something more of this phase or side of his character will appear later, and to some extent from the testimony of others.

A visitor to my father's library at "Beechwood" will be confronted by a filing cabinet, one drawer or compartment of which bears upon its face the word which forms the title for this chapter. This compartment with its legend, in my father's precise and methodical way, is representative of the fact that his religious denomination and its business filled a distinct and considerable place in the affairs of his life.

In every department of his multiform activity, such was the intensity of his nature that not only what he did was done thoroughly, but what he was he was thoroughly. We have seen it in the professional sphere, in his political capacity and in all business to which his energies were directed. So, he was a denominational man thoroughly—through and through. Yet it was not in his nature nor among his conceptions to be what is sometimes termed, in a sectarian sense, narrow or narrow-minded. No man ever breathed who had a wider and fuller Christian charity than had he. He gave freely of the love of his large, loving spirit to Christians and churches of all denominations, and freely of his means as well. A Baptist who would contribute money, as he did, to aid in building churches of the Roman Catholic faith, for instance, in localities where he believed they would do a good work (and Christians of this faith are commonly supposed to be the sectarian antipodes of the Baptists) can hardly merit the charge of narrowness in his religious views. The great majority of his intimate and dearest friends, moreover, were

not of his denomination, and he was equally beloved by adherents of all the varying forms of Christian faith. While deploring the apparently hopeless divisions among Christians of various forms of faith and practice, his principle of action was: "Let every man be fully persuaded in his own mind." For himself only had he chosen the corps of the universal Christian forces in which he would enlist. He could recognize the unity in diversity; and as touching other men of other views he would sometimes use the laconic Indian phrase: "All one brother."

After mature consideration and at a mature age, as we have seen in an earlier chapter, and for the reasons stated there, having cast in his lot with the people of the old Granville Street Church in taking upon himself the vows and obligations of a Christian, it necessarily followed, for a man with his strong sense of loyalty to a cause, his devoted spiritual nature and his recognized capacity as a man of affairs and a leader of men, that he should not only seek to employ himself beyond the mere limits of his own church in the organized work of the Baptist body in which his church participated, but that he should be sought out and chosen for such service in the cause. And so it came about that early he became prominent as a leading layman in denominational enterprises.

Founded in 1827, as an outcome of the disruption in St. Paul's Church a few years before, the Granville Street Church, through its leading members, among whom were James W. Nutting, Dr. Lewis Johnstone and Edmund A. Crawley (afterward Rev. Dr. Crawley), was mainly instrumental in the establishment of Horton Academy in the following year, and in the organization of the Baptist Education Society which carried on its work. Ten years later Acadia College was founded through the efforts of this Society. The fundamental design of both institutions was to supply the denomination with an educated ministry. The thirty-nine articles barred the gateway to King's College, and in 1838 when Dalhousie College was re-opened by the Government and resuscitated by the Presbyterians, to whom it was handed over, the Baptists deemed themselves rejected from participation in its benefits. Hence, Acadia, or, as it was first named, Queen's College.

To understand the ardent spirit of loyalty and affection which for many years afterwards animated the supporters of Acadia College, and more especially those of them who, like my father, could recall the stirring events of 1838, it is necessary to know something of the fierce struggle for higher educational privileges which the founders of the institution went through to secure them.

Rev. Dr. E. M. Saunders, in his "Sketch of the Origin and

History of the Granville Street Baptist Church,” written upon the occasion of its jubilee in 1877, speaking of this period says:—

“But the special work of this church in connection with collegiate education was not finished when the academy was founded. At first no more than a high school was planned. . . . There was no decided policy adopted at the time in regard to denominational colleges. It would seem that, at that day, had all the colleges then existing—King’s at Windsor and Dalhousie at Halifax—been free from bigotry and exclusiveness, the Baptists would have been willing to cast in their lot with them in common collegiate work. But it soon became evident to some that ostracism was the policy to be pursued toward the Baptists. About ten years after the founding of the academy, the friends of education among the Baptists in Halifax interested themselves to secure for Dr. Crawley a professorship in Dalhousie College. One prominent Presbyterian minister favored the movement, but the effort did not succeed, and the defeat could be accounted for only on the hypothesis that Dr. Crawley was a Baptist. This act arrested the attention and stirred the heart of the Baptist body. A new departure was the result. On this church again fell the onus of leading in this movement. The Baptists throughout the Province were aroused, and they had the courage of their convictions. They rose up and asked the Legislature for a college charter. They were sneered at and ridiculed; but God was with them, and the walls of Acadia arose, and the charter was granted. Popular meetings at Annapolis, Halifax and Onslow, the circulating of petitions to the Legislature, battles on the floors of Parliament and in the press, are now, in the retrospect, the witnesses of the opposition and struggles through which the denomination had to pass before it came into full and peaceable enjoyment of its educational rights and privileges.

“It is now known that the leaders of this campaign were the same men who had been raised up to lead in the establishment of Horton Academy. The late Judge Johnstone, in Parliament, before his constituents in Annapolis County, and at the associational meetings; Dr. Crawley measuring swords with the eminent statesman, the late Governor Howe, at Onslow; and J. W. Nutting and John Ferguson in the columns of the *Christian Messenger* of that day, were the men who led the Baptists to that victory, the crown of which is Acadia College on the brow of the hill at Horton. They won the battle. Denominational colleges are now deeply rooted in the hearts of the people of this Province, especially in the hearts of the Baptists.”

My father had been closely associated with the Halifax men who were the Baptist leaders in this contest, first while engaged in medical study between 1838 and 1841, afterward when Halifax became his home. He had been all the while an attendant at the historic church which supplied these leaders and which was contributing largely in money to carry on the infant college—“the child of Providence,” as it was fondly called. In 1838, and later, he had closely and sympathetically followed the campaigns of the Baptists against Joseph Howe and his subservient Legislature. Moreover he was an alumnus of Horton Academy. Through these various influences, when he became a Baptist in 1852, he became, naturally, an inheritor of the zeal for denominational education and Acadia College which Dr. Saunders has briefly pictured in his sketch.

Thus strongly predisposed, he became an ardent advocate of denominational or Christian education in general (in the

academic and collegiate stages) as opposed to the principle of colleges conducted by the State; of the small college system, as opposed to a large and central institution, for doing the work required for a degree in Arts.

From his denominational standpoint, apart from the general question of which class of college could do the better work in education—a predominant part of which he considered to be the formation and development of character in young men, upon a religious basis—he saw that the Baptists, at some disadvantage in consequence of their system of independence in church government, would be unified and strengthened by having a group of educational institutions as their own distinctive possession. In his view, these higher schools would be a general and central object around which the denominational life would concentrate—a very heart of the Baptist body, into which its benevolence would gather, and whence a stream of beneficent influence would flow to vivify all the churches, as a return for the investment.

In his speech in the Legislative Council upon the Halifax University Bill, in 1876, he thus expressed himself in contending that the small colleges, where the professors were daily in close touch with the students individually, could do more effectual work in mere mind training than the large institutions. "We were told the other night by a prominent gentleman at Temperance Hall that one professor could instruct five hundred students as well as twenty. I maintain the contrary, and I speak both from some experience of large institutions as well as of small ones. A professor lecturing to a small number of students has an opportunity of examining them repeatedly and closely, thus ascertaining whether the seed he is sowing is taking root or not, and whether they are taking in that which he is imparting. In the large colleges the professors deliver their lectures, and then go out without knowing whether the students have taken in what they have been saying or not."

In the same speech, the following quotation which he made from Dr. Fyfe, then Principal of Woodstock Baptist College, Ontario, and a high educational authority, expresses my father's ideal of higher education in its wider significance than mere mind training: "What I prefer and what I insist on is that each denomination should furnish the highest education for its members. The state colleges (teaching schools) fail egregiously, and must fail, in the formation of character—in the development of spiritual culture. It is so in London University—it is so in Toronto. There is no blinking of this aspect of the question. They can teach Latin, Greek and merely secular subjects. But the motives and aims of life, the conscience and the whole spiritual nature, or the department of faith they never touch. And I hold that no Christian can overrate this loss."

Among all the philanthropic causes in which he was enlisted, the cause of the Horton institutions seemed to be the dearest of them all. The unwavering attachment which he cherished for them and his devotion in their service, as now recalled, would appear singular in these days of changed conditions and more materialistic aims but for a recognition of the circumstances we have detailed and the knowledge of my father's characteristics which we have. The cult of these institutions of learning was portion of his practical religion. He was wont to make them a regular object of his prayers, both in family worship and in public devotional meetings of his church. His prayers were supplemented by his gifts. From the time of his settlement in Halifax he was an enthusiastic and liberal contributor to their support. He has been known to borrow considerable sums of money to give in times of their especial need, when their managers, of whom he was one, were obliged to put their hands deeply into their own pockets to keep the doors open. Such donations in this department of his benevolence, as in others, were often made anonymously.

Not long since, a Baptist minister, in addressing a meeting at Wolfville, illustrated the old “Acadia” spirit, which he now missed, by telling that many years ago, when he was a student there, he had been in Dr. Parker's hands for medical treatment, and upon asking what fee he owed, the physician said, with impressive earnestness, “Pray for Acadia College, always, that is the only fee I ask of you.”

In 1860 he was appointed to the Board of Governors, on which he served from that time continuously until the summer of 1889. In this sphere of influence he was a conspicuous figure and a leader in the work, for which he was eminently qualified by his good judgment, business ability, tact, resourcefulness, and by his cheery courage in facing the discouragements and financial embarrassments which too often beset the Board in those years of almost continuous anxiety and care—when there was no Rockefeller, no Carnegie to relieve distressful situations. In punctuality and regularity of attendance at meetings in Wolfville and elsewhere he was an example to his colleagues, although invariably he was obliged to make personal sacrifice and much preliminary arrangement of his professional and other work in order to be present.

In the Legislature he was the champion of his denomination on all occasions when grants to colleges and academies were under discussion; and he successfully maintained the cause of equal rights for all, in the years when state aid was granted.

In representing the cause and needs of the college before the annual Baptist Convention of the Maritime Provinces he was a ready and forceful advocate, and there his views on educational

policy and duty were invariably heard with marked attention and respect. Upon special occasions, at gatherings of the denomination having special reference to educational matters it was usual for him to be sought as chairman.

On May the 9th, 1877, at a time of financial crisis, there was a special and large meeting of the body at Paradise, Annapolis County, in order that the governors might present their case to the people. He presided there, and from a brief of his address on that occasion, found in one of his notebooks, one can gather enough to indicate that his speech from the chair must have been a notable one. On the 4th of December, 1877, two days after the college building was utterly swept away by fire, a large emergency meeting convened at Wolfville, at which he presided. I witnessed his animated, masterly conduct of that meeting, when he seemed inspired, and to inspire all present, with a dauntless faith for the future of his beloved work. Even before he left home, by telegraphing abroad and by personal solicitation he had raised considerable funds for rebuilding—from sources which no one else but he could reach; and when, somewhat in the style of an auctioneer, after a rousing, telling speech, he undertook to raise a large sum on the spot, the meeting surrendered at discretion to his impassioned spirit, and that night the governors were placed in a position to “arise and build.” When the new college building was nearing completion in 1879 the students of college, academy and seminary united in presenting the bell which now hangs in the college belfry. For the presentation ceremony the assembly hall in the new college was used for the first time. There my father presided and on behalf of the Board of Governors accepted the address of presentation and the gift, delivering in reply one of his earnest and happy addresses to the students.

When the jubilee of the college was held in 1888 with assemblies and ceremonies extending over several days, he was asked to preside at the principal meeting, but he was not able to be present. For the same reasons which at this period were moving him to reduce work outside his profession he had reluctantly sent in his resignation of office on the Board of Governors, and this had come before the Convention just previous to the jubilee meetings at the college. How the resignation was received is shown by the following extracts from a letter of the Convention's Secretary:

“WOLFVILLE, N.S.,
September 7, 1888.

“HON. D. McN. PARKER, M.D., D.C.L.

“Dear Brother,—At the late annual meeting of the Baptist Convention of the Maritime Provinces, your resignation of office as a governor of Acadia College was duly presented, in agreement with your wish. On motion of Rev. S. B. Kempton, it was unanimously and heartily,

“Resolved. ‘That the secretary write Dr. Parker, expressing our appreciation of his services to the college, and requesting him to allow his name to remain upon the list of governors for the coming year.’

“I think the adoption of the foregoing expresses better than any words of mine the value members of Convention place upon your long and efficient services as governor. In one sense no one can appreciate, because no one knows, the time and care, the prayer and labor you have bestowed upon the work here during the long years you have held a place, a foremost place on the governing board. But I know from the warm response whenever your name is mentioned in Convention, as well as from conversation with a large number of the best men in the denomination, that our body is not forgetful of your labors of love or of the value of those labors.

“We are grateful for such a man, far-seeing and faithful, able and willing to contend for the Gospel and for the institutions designed to promote the best welfare of the people.

“Your services have in themselves been of the greatest value and I believe your example is equally potent as a means of stimulating others.

“Be assured, dear brother, of the esteem and gratitude of all who intelligently prize our denominational enterprises.”

At the same time the Jubilee Committee addressed him in these terms:

“The Committee of Arrangements for the College Jubilee wish to express their regrets that you were not able to be present at those exercises and to preside on Wednesday evening.

“The friends of the college remembering your faithful services for these many years in its behalf and your liberal contributions towards its support, would have felt that it was but just that you should act as chairman of the crowning meeting of the jubilee.

“The committee avail themselves of the opportunity to make renewed expression of their sense of obligation to you for all your labors in behalf of the college. They unite in the hope that your health and strength may be long continued.”

Having regard to the condition of his health and his probable inability to be present at all the meetings of the Governors (a matter of imperative duty with him while he retained office) he felt obliged to press the resignation from the Board in the next year. On September 2nd, 1889, we find, the Secretary of the Convention wrote him as follows:

“HON. DR. PARKER, Halifax:

“Dear Sir and Brother,—At the late Annual Meeting of the Baptist Convention of the Maritime Provinces, held at Fredericton, N.B., August 24-28, 1889, the following resolution was moved by Rev. Dr. Sawyer, seconded by Rev. Dr. Saunders, and strongly supported by Rev. S. B. Kempton and S. Selden, and unanimously and most heartily passed:

“Resolved, That the sincere and hearty thanks of this Convention be tendered to the Hon. Dr. Parker for his most valuable and continuous services from 1860 till the present time upon the Board of Governors of Acadia College, and our regret that the condition of his health has caused him to press his retirement from the Board. Long may his life be spared to aid us with his wise counsels, as he has so uniformly and effectively for the past thirty years.”

In connection with my father's retirement from his profession, the Reverend A. W. Sawyer, D.D., then President of Acadia College, paid the following tribute to his services in the cause of education, which was published in the *Messenger and Visitor* of August 14th, 1895.

" A WORD MORE.

"Every reader of the *Messenger and Visitor*, at all acquainted with the facts, must have felt that the acknowledgment of Dr. Parker's generous and unswerving support of all the benevolent enterprises of the denomination was amply deserved. But his relations to one of these objects have been so intimate and his services in its behalf so valuable that they should be especially noted. For nearly the entire period of his professional life Dr. Parker has been officially connected with the management of our educational institutions. His contributions for their financial support have been frequent and large. He has been one of the most constant in his attendance on the meetings of the Board of Governors in Wolfville and elsewhere, although that attendance must often have seriously interfered with his professional practice. His counsels were always wise and helpful. Oftentimes his courage and cheerfulness in circumstances of discouragement have led to success from the brink of defeat.

"Such faithful devotion to the interests of our educational institutions deserves special acknowledgment. The example ought to be an incentive to similar devotion on the part of many young men in the same good work.

"A. W. SAWYER."

The editor supplemented this in these words:

"We publish with pleasure in another column President Sawyer's 'Word More' referring to the great value of the services rendered by Hon. Dr. Parker to the denomination in connection with our educational work, and especially as a governor of Acadia College. The tribute is richly merited. The college and its kindred institutions have always had a place near the heart of the denomination. Many have loved them well. But among all who have held them dear and labored to promote their welfare it would be difficult to name one who has shown a more constant, unselfish and practical friendship than has the honored brother of whom the President of the College writes."

During the time when that remarkable man and denominational leader, the Reverend John Mockett Cramp, D.D., of the Isle of Thanet, England, occupied the Presidency of Acadia College (1851 to 1869), and for years afterwards, he and my father were very intimately and confidentially associated, not only in educational work but in denominational affairs generally. Each had for the other a deep regard and a warm affection. In temperament they closely resembled one another, and Acadia College was to the one what it was to the other. Their common work on its behalf was a strong bond of fellowship. When Rev. Thomas A. Higgins wrote his biography of Dr. Cramp, my father, at the author's request, made to the book the following contribution, which, as the edition of that work was small, I wish to embody here: first to help perpetuate the memory of Dr. Cramp—one of my father's most intimate and distinguished friends—and for the further reason that, although in what he wrote my father effaces himself, one may discern, between the lines, something of the place which he himself occupied in those strenuous years of effort on behalf of the college to which reference has been made, and in denominational

life more generally, during the middle decades of the last century. Again, it is fitting that this tribute to Dr. Cramp should find place here, because my father wrote it.

Dr. Higgins says:

"The following is an expression of regard from the Hon. Dr. Parker of Halifax, one of the most efficient members of the Board of Governors during Dr. Cramp's connection with the college:"

My father wrote:

"My first meeting with Dr. Cramp was on the occasion of his preaching in Granville Street Church, a short time before he entered upon his duties at Acadia College. I was impressed both with the matter of the sermon and with the manner in which it was delivered. The fundamental truths of the Gospel were proclaimed with ability and power, and I left the house feeling that a scholarly man, an experienced Christian and an able preacher was about to be added to the Baptist ministry of our Province.

"Immediately after my connection with the denomination, I became interested in our educational institutions at Wolfville, and subsequently was placed on the Board of Governors of the college. Here my relations with Dr. Cramp were, at first, of a business character, but I very soon learned to appreciate his ability and worth, and to entertain a warm friendship for him, which continued until his removal by death.

"The work in which he was engaged, and to which he was devoting the energies of the best years of his life, giving to our institutions his matured thought, his time and his money, was the connecting link that brought us very often together, and cemented our friendship. During the earlier years of his connection with Acadia his trials were many. Apart from those incidental to the educational and general management of a college, inadequately equipped with a teaching staff, there were financial difficulties almost continually present, and few were the men who, surrounded by such circumstances as he had to contend with, would have continued the struggle and retained the position. Yet, through all and every difficulty, while others were depressed, faint-hearted, and often lacking in faith, he was buoyant, cheerful, fertile in resources, and always relying faithfully on the strong arm of the Lord.

"When he announced, by telegram, to his brethren in Halifax that his faithful colleague and 'right-hand man,' Isaac Chipman, was buried beneath the waters of Minas Basin, our hearts failed us, and our first thoughts were: Can our institutions survive the shock? Will Dr. Cramp not be disheartened and relinquish the contest? But no such thoughts found a lodgment in his mind.

His motto had been and was, 'Trust ye in the Lord forever.' He trusted, labored, and conquered; and as a result of his 'faith and works' Acadia lives, and will continue to live, sending forth from her halls young men mentally qualified to fight the battle of life, many of them to contend against the common enemy of mankind—to fight the battles of the Lord—thus imparting annually additional vigor and strength to our denomination and increased stability to the moral and social structure of our country.

"His versatility of talent was only equalled by his untiring industry. The governing board ever found him, although always burdened with work, ready and willing to assume additional duties, when emergencies arose and the necessities of the hour called for such extra labor.

"Notwithstanding his many and varied engagements as professor, president and *ex-officio* governor of the college, he made the time to perform the arduous duties of corresponding secretary of the Foreign Missionary Board of the Convention of the Maritime Provinces—and dearly he loved the work, for he was imbued with the missionary spirit and with the desire that God's Word should be carried, by those whom he himself had educated, to the far-off lands of the heathen.

"His facile pen was constantly engaged in advancing our educational, denominational and general interests, and, when necessary, in defending and upholding our doctrinal views as Baptists.

"The familiar initials 'J. M. C.' were noticed in the *Christian Messenger* with great frequency, and I am free to say that the subjects there discussed by him always attracted marked attention, and the articles of no correspondent of that denominational journal were more gladly welcomed by its readers than those which emanated from his pen.

"When physically able, his familiar face was always seen at our associations and conventions, where, as the head of our most important organization (Acadia College) and as the result of his ability and practical experience, he very early came to be acknowledged a leader in all departments of our denominational work.

"With voice and pen he was always ready to aid the cause of temperance, and never lost an opportunity of assisting its advancement. In this all-important moral reform, also, he became an active leader. Few men's minds were stored as his was with historic facts, whether these had relation to Biblical, ancient or modern secular history, or to the origin and growth of the different denominations of the world. Hence his companionship was additionally interesting to those who were fortunate enough to claim him as a friend.

"His work entitled 'Baptist History' has had a wide circulation, and will long keep his name prominently before our denomination.

“ Let me briefly narrate an incident which will show how highly it is appreciated by those who dwell beyond our borders.

“ Returning from Western Canada a dozen or more years ago, I spent a Sunday in Albany, the capital of New York State, and by accident was directed to the church then presided over by Dr. Lorimer. After the morning service I had some conversation with him, and on learning that I was from Nova Scotia he asked me if I knew Dr. Cramp, to which question I replied affirmatively, when he continued in words to this effect: ‘ What a grand work his “ Baptist History ” is! It should be in the house of every Baptist family. So highly do I and my church value it that we have supplied our colporteur or colporteurs with two hundred volumes, that it may be spread over this section of our land, and be made the means of educating our people in the history and principles of our denomination.’

“ Dr. Cramp has, by precept and example, left his impress on the minds and lives of a large number of young men who were educated mentally and spiritually under his supervision. These, or many of them, went forth from him into the world bearing in mind, and in their hearts, his teachings. Numbers of them engaged in secular occupations; happily many more went throughout our own country and to other lands to preach the Gospel to their fellow-men, in heathen as well as in Christian communities; but wherever they went they carried with them this ‘ impress,’ and also a great respect and admiration for the life and character of him who had been their instructor and friend. Those who, like myself, were present, year after year, at the anniversary meetings of Acadia, will long remember his addresses to the graduating classes. They were so happily expressed, with pathos and power so appropriate to the occasions and the circumstances, that I feel assured none could have listened to them without emotion. Let me say in conclusion, that Dr Cramp came to us—I speak of the denomination—a stranger, in whom very many of our number had no special interest, but as time passed, and we were brought into contact with him, his genial, companionable nature, his mental and moral characteristics, his love for our people, his long years of able and untiring labor for our best interests, together with his great generosity in contributing annually four hundred dollars (\$400) to the funds of the college, from a very limited professional income connected with the presidential office, gave him a home in the denominational heart, and now that he has gone from us, we who were his contemporaries, and in a limited sense his co-laborers, as we think of him and the great work he accomplished, will ever hold his memory in affectionate remembrance.

“ D. McN. PARKER.”

For many years my father rendered faithful and laborious service on the Convention's Board of Ministerial Aid and Relief, and he filled other offices of responsibility for the denomination, involving, principally, the administration of trust funds.

In the Convention, the parliament of the Baptists in the three Maritime Provinces, he was regular in attendance and evinced a most lively interest in all the business conducted by that representative and very democratic assembly. As a debater he carried weight. His was a commanding influence over the minds of the majority, and he swayed them as a leader of their thoughts and deliberations. His convictions upon all matters of denominational polity were strong. Backed, as they always were, by his impressive earnestness in expression and by the very force of his character, his opinions upon doubtful or debatable questions seldom failed to convince and guide the thinking, leading men of Convention. In 1870 he was elected president of this body, following the Reverend Dr. Cramp in that office.

Although not in the ordinary acceptation of the term a representative Baptist—if indeed there could be one under the Baptist system of independent churches, with the divergent and somewhat perplexing variety of tenet and practice found among their adherents—my father came to be regarded and widely known as an exponent of the denomination, if not a type. On one occasion, at a dinner in Ottawa, where, in speaking, he followed a prelate of the Roman Catholic Church, Sir John A. Macdonald, who presided, introduced him, facetiously, as “the Baptist Bishop of Nova Scotia.”

In the old Granville Street Church (afterwards called the First Baptist Church, Halifax), where his denominational affections were centred in a church home, for over fifty years he was a faithful member and trusted office-bearer. It is not too much to say that during all this time, through his precept, through his example, through his generous financial aid, his membership in it was a tower of strength to that church. Indeed, I have often heard it suggested that but for his support it would probably have ceased to exist—in the days of its adversities long ago. Yet notwithstanding the prominence in church life which naturally resulted from his mental and spiritual endowments, from his zeal for the church, and, in some measure, from his social position, he was no Diotrephes, but notably and sincerely humble in everything pertaining to the church work and fellowship.

No one could take church life and duty more seriously than did he, and I have never found a man to whom his church and its spiritual welfare meant more, a man in whose life his church interests occupied a larger part.

The church's poor, its erring member, for whom he felt a

sense of personal responsibility, ever found with him the outstretched hand to help, the wise and timely word of admonition and encouragement. Heaven only has the record of his personal Christian work among the people of “Granville Street,” but there have been many scores of witnesses from among them to bless his name for what he was to them.

In the Sunday School, for many years in the busiest period of his life, he conducted an adult Bible-class. Always a close student of the Bible, his preparation for this work was exhaustive, his conduct of the class eminently attractive and successful. No tax imposed upon his time and strength by this labor of love was deemed too great by him.

In the old days, on Granville Street, before the fashion of “supplying” the pulpit during temporary absences of the pastor was in vogue, I have known him to occupy the pulpit and conduct public worship himself—on which occasions he would read a sermon.

In the mid-week services of the church he was frequently called upon, under similar circumstances, to lead the meeting. His addresses from the platform or from the floor, and the prayers which he would offer, were always striking and impressive features on these occasions. For extempore addresses on Scripture themes he was rarely gifted. His careful preparation of addresses when filling the pastor’s place in prayer-meetings, and for other social gatherings of the church, is attested now by his notes or outlines of them, which remain in orderly arrangement as they were filed away by his own hand—mute testimonies alike to that spirituality of mind and fidelity to church duties which marked his whole life.

He was scrupulously regular in his attendance upon all the public exercises and business meetings of the church, often giving to them three evenings out of the week, besides attending thrice on Sunday. It is well remembered by some of the children how, after the removal to Dartmouth in 1868, no inconsiderable portion of this day of rest seemed to be spent by them on highway and ferry—in Sabbath-day journeys. At the most active period of their father’s life, only emergencies in his practice would prevent his attendance, though often late, at Sunday morning service. Even the old Sunday horse “Tom” recognized the rule of punctuality at public worship; for when left at the Argyle Street office door, or at a patient’s door within sound of the bells of St. Paul’s, the chime for church was the signal for him to start, and his master not infrequently had to follow on foot to the Granville Street Church door, where he would be greeted with a reproachful turn of the head from “Tom”—as who should say, “What, late again!”

The history of old “Granville Street” was marked by troubles, at various times, but never more so than by the events of 1867,

which tried the souls of members and proved the stuff that men were made of. The church then was well-nigh rent in twain over most serious questions involving the moral character of the pastor, who was a very prominent figure in the Baptist body. A church council composed of leading men of the denomination, from various churches throughout the Province, was called to "Granville Street" to deliberate and advise. It found the pastor guiltless. The church, by a majority vote, rejected the findings and refused to accept the advice of the council. My father was a leader of this majority. His own view of the evidence, his lofty conception of duty, his keen sense of honor and his inviolate conscience left him no alternative, though to do what he deemed right wrought an estrangement between him and the old Judge in Equity, James W. Johnstone, which was never fully healed, and separated him from the church fellowship of many others, friends and family connections, who then quitted "Granville Street" forever. It was long ere the church recovered from this shock. To my father it was one of the most serious jars in his life. But through evil and good report, in storm and in sunshine, he was ever steadfast in the loyalty he bore to this church of his adoption; and true to his convictions then, as ever, he patiently, bravely bore its sorrows as he exulted in its joys.

In old age, when deprived of the privilege of regular attendance upon the services of the church, we discover in the two following letters the same undying spirit of church attachment which characterized the earlier years. These letters (kindly loaned by Rev. Dr. Chute) are examples from a series of responses which, in his latest years, my father made to the church's notice of its annual roll-call meeting. Within the lines of these letters, too, he has embodied, in a very few words, the spirit and essence of his personal religion.

" DARTMOUTH, January 31st, 1899.

" To the Pastor and Members of the First Baptist Church, Halifax,

" Dear Brethren and Sisters:

" I am in receipt of your circular of the 12th inst., inviting me to be present at our Annual Church ' Reunion and Review,' on February 1st. I very much regret my inability to meet with you on that occasion, that I might in person take some part in the proceedings of the evening, but, as I shall be absent, I will say on paper that it is a continual sorrow with me that I am deprived of the privilege of mingling with you at the week-night services, and not unfrequently, also, on those of the Lord's day. No person can appreciate the spiritual value of such services as those who, having for long years been partakers in such blessings, find themselves

deprived of them in consequence of physical infirmity, old age or other causes. It is a blank, and a want, that words either spoken or written cannot well and faithfully delineate. Remembering the character and objects of these annual meetings, it is necessary that my words should be few. First, let me say that since I gave my attention (under influences from above that I could not resist) to spiritual things, and began to seriously appreciate their importance, I have never once regretted having cast in my lot with God's people. Neither have I ever once regretted that in the year 1852 I united with the Granville Street Baptist Church (now the First, Halifax), and thus became associated with the Baptist denomination of the three Maritime Provinces, sympathizing with them in their varied trials and difficulties, as well as in their successes and victories for Christ. If my memory serves me correctly, all those who welcomed me into their fellowship, who constituted the membership of Granville Street Church in 1852—forty-six long years ago, or thereabouts—have one after another been removed from earth, I trust to be forever with the Lord, in His kingdom of heaven. In the nature of things, ‘the places that now know me will soon know me no more,’ and one of the happiest thoughts I have, when contemplating the all-important future, is, the happy meetings—in the presence of the Lord—which await me in heaven, with those with whom I have been associated in church fellowship during the long years past.

“I have an abiding faith in the promises of God's Word, and am comforted with the assurance that when called upon to say farewell to earth—notwithstanding oft-recurring shortcomings, sins of commission and of omission—I shall be received, as one of the redeemed, into the everlasting kingdom—a sinner, saved by grace and the all-atoning blood of Christ. God is love! and with Him there is neither variableness nor shadow of turning.

“Praying that His blessing may rest upon and ever abide with you,

“I remain,

“Yours faithfully

“D. McN. PARKER.”

“DARTMOUTH, February 13th, 1901..

“My Dear Pastor:

“I am in receipt of your card asking me to be present at the ‘Roll Call’ of our church this evening. Were I differently circumstanced I would deem it a duty, and a privilege, to be present with you. As you are aware, I am not physically able to accomplish that which five or six years ago I could do without discomfort or risk. The days are now but few ere I shall enter upon my eightieth year—should God see fit to add that brief period to my

life. Nearly forty-nine of those years have been spent in the membership of this church. In May, 1852 (the date of my baptism), I was the junior; now, if I mistake not, I am the senior member on our roll.

"These figures and dates have a tendency to depress me when I think of the little I have accomplished for the cause of Christ, and the many opportunities that were permitted to pass me by unimproved during that long period. But thanks be to God—I am in His hands, the hands of a loving Father and a gracious Saviour—'The man Christ Jesus,' in whose pardoning mercy I have an abiding faith and in whose everlasting promises I am assured, that 'every jot and every tittle' of them will in His own time and in His own way be fulfilled. The church—*our church*—is daily on my mind, and I pray God to bless and be with it continuously, in all its membership and in all its interests.

"I remain,

"Affectionately yours,

"D. McN. PARKER."

"As a P.S. I add a brief portion of God's Word which often recurs to my mind, in these days when men everywhere are giving their thoughts very largely to the subjects of *Wealth and the World*: 'Man's life consisteth not in the abundance of the things which he possesseth.'"

I draw the curtain over the ending of his relations with this church. Christian charity requires this; but those who loved my father and revere his memory cannot forget.

In the chapter which precedes this there are two letters of his own which say all that need be said upon this painful episode which came about—a very anti-climax—to terminate a membership of over "fifty faithful years," a membership whose course had been illumined by such a record as I have perhaps too lightly sketched. Of the church where he then found refuge, spiritual sustenance and happiness he speaks himself, in the letters just referred to. If, as he said at this deplorable juncture in his church experience, he was "too old to fight" for the Gospel of Jesus Christ, he was none too old to enjoy its ministry in the little Dartmouth church where he sought sanctuary for a little, ere he should exchange it for the great congregation who "have washed their robes and made them white in the blood of the Lamb . . . and serve Him day and night in His temple."

CHAPTER XV.

FROM LIFE TO LIFE.

"There is no death! The stars go down
To rise upon some fairer shore,
And bright in heaven's jewelled crown
They shine for evermore.

"There is no death! The leaves may fall,
And flowers may fade and pass away;
They only wait through wintry hours
The coming of the May.

"There is no death! An angel form
Walks through this earth with silent tread;
He bears our best loved things away,
And then we call them 'dead.'

"And ever near us, though unseen,
The dear immortal spirits tread;
For all the boundless universe
Is life—There are no dead!"

—*Lord Lytton.*

The year 1907 brought a gradual but more perceptible failure of my father's bodily strength. A weariness of spirit seemed now to overshadow and oppress him, while his general interest in things about him was visibly diminished. Yet his mental faculties remained unaffected, except in the slight particulars already mentioned. The placid, undisturbed routine of home life gives nothing further to record until the autumn came—the season prophetic of decay. As the year declined to rest for its night of winter there were significant indications that so his earthly course was slowly fading to its rest, in harmony with nature.

Disease, which long, resourcefully and manfully he had baffled in its progress, was now at length relentlessly grappling with a closer grip upon the frame enfeebled by the weight of years, the vitality exhausted by long duration of the conflict. If he recognized this himself he did not speak more of the approaching end than he had been accustomed to do in the preceding years of waiting. With full knowledge of the nature, course and final phases of his malady, he was always expectantly ready for the foregone conclusion. He knew for years before that this might come suddenly, and the alternative forms in which it might appear. Such knowledge disturbed him not a whit, and he would

as calmly speak of the physical aspects and prospects of his case as if another were the subject and he only the interested physician.

As for the spiritual side of his situation, he had long preserved that quiet and assured demeanor of expectant fortitude and faith which is expressed in the language of the patient patriarch: "All the days of my appointed time will I wait, till my change come"; and, again, in the language of the militant apostle who, in his old age, wrote: "For I know whom I have believed, and am persuaded that He is able to keep that which I have committed unto Him against that day." There was no standing room for disturbed thought here.

Suddenly, in mid-October, though not without some earlier warnings, there appeared an aggravation of his more serious symptoms, which foreboded that the end might now be nearer than supposed. This seemed to pass away, but the rally of his shattered strength was illusory, and about the 22nd of the month he began to fall into periods of mental lethargy, not long continued at first but gradually lengthened, and deepening into a state of semi-consciousness. Some days later there were hours of what seemed total unconsciousness, and then it became apparent that soon, in the most merciful form which the termination of his disease could assume, the poison which had been slowly sapping the worn-out forces of nature must dominate the brain, and he would lapse into the condition of diabetic coma—complete, and final. And so it proved.

I reached his bedside on the evening of October 26th—the first day in which he had not risen as usual to occupy the accustomed chair in the sitting-room upstairs. He was then quietly lying in a lethargic state; but when I spoke, almost immediately he roused himself, whispered words of welcome and endearment and asked me: "Where is Fred?" He seemed to understand the conversation which went on about him, but had evident difficulty in shaking off the torpor that was on him, scarcely participated in it, and his speech was hardly above a whisper. He said he felt no pain. Later in the evening he got up for a few minutes, and then, more fully aroused, he was able, for the last time, to transact a matter of business. This required his signature to a document; and then, for the last time he wrote—his name.

In the days that followed he rarely spoke, but recognized at intervals the watchers at his bedside. Once, when asked if he suffered pain, he wearily answered in a distressful tone: "Pain, pain"; but there was no indication of severe suffering. At night he would be restless, and several times was under the influence of delirium, fancying he was being detained against his will in hospital, and once, apparently, that he was on shipboard

and was being prevented from getting into a boat to leave the vessel. At such times, though never violent, he would exert unnatural strength, his voice would resume full power, and the old-time strong will, with the habit of requiring obedience, would be asserted.

His old friend Dr. Thomas Milsom, who has lately followed him into the eternal rewards of a well-spent life, a physician much regretted and beloved, did all that could be done to smooth the last brief stage of life's passage. Miss Sarah Kline, whose assiduous attentions in assisting my mother and sister he recognized, was the last person to whom he consciously spoke. My sister Mary was detained in Toronto by domestic cares. My sister Laura, with her husband and children, was in Europe. There remained of the family to watch and wait only my mother, my sister Fanny and myself.

On Saturday, the 2nd of November, coma, like an artificial anæsthesia, shut out the closing scenes from the cognizance of the sufferer, casting its benign shadow over the intellect, and death was claiming the exhausted bodily frame as its own. He never regained consciousness, or recognized any of us, nor could he now take any more of the slight liquid nourishment which he had been receiving. Thenceforward there was merely the passive resistance of what remained of a vigorous constitution against the progress of dissolution. He lay for the most part quietly, his eyes half closed; but sometimes, especially during the night, would make feeble, groping efforts to rise from his bed, as if mechanically the sinking energies of his indomitable will power and strong vitality resented the near approach of the unconquerable conqueror of all mankind and fain would vanquish him.

On Monday, the 4th, in the afternoon, his breathing grew suddenly very rapid, then somewhat slower but more labored, and stertorous. This seeming indication of the approaching end passed off, and again he breathed naturally. Soon after four o'clock I left the room for a short time, when I was recalled by a quick, agonized exclamation of my mother: "Come, I think he is going!" There was now heard in the breathing the unmistakable sign of the end, and the ashen grey of death was on the face. He lay peacefully, restfully, his shoulders high upon the pillows, his head erect, seeming to look death in the face intently and unafraid, and yet to peer expectantly beyond. Though to all external appearance he was still unconscious, it was as if the weary, slumbering wayfarer heard in his dreams the voice of Him whom he trusted say: "Seek ye My face," and answered from the inner consciousness of a yet abiding and unshaken faith: "Thy face, Lord, will I seek." I held both hands with

one of mine, watching fixedly. There was no movement indicative of any pain or struggle. For perhaps five minutes after my return to the bedside he breathed slowly and heavily; then there was a pause of about thirty seconds, followed by one soft exhalation like a sigh—which was the last breath; and so he fell asleep. As the last breath died, my mother cried: "Lord Jesus, receive his spirit!" And then, as the eyes of that sweet spirit opened upon some glorious vision within the veil and saw the King in His beauty, I closed the sightless eyes of his clay.

The passing of the soul was marked by a circumstance which cannot fade from the memory of those who witnessed it, and which impressed the beholders with a feeling that this was not death, but a translation.

The day had been till then dark, gloomy, with a heavy, black, forbidding cloud resting low above the harbor and the city as the day declined. At the instant when the spirit took its flight and my mother cried her parting prayer, there burst from this cloud and streamed across the beloved face and form, like a flash of angels' wings descending to receive him, a glorious flood of sunshine. Then it seemed that through the waves of this radiance upon him he saw someone, or heard a voice he knew and some glorious revelation burst upon his soul. For instantaneously the features of the dear old countenance, recently so worn, haggard and distressed in its appearance, changed, cleared and lighted up; and with a quick, startled glance of recognition—such as I have seen upon his suddenly awaking out of sleep when one approached or spoke to him—there came upon his face a look of infinite happiness and peace, together with a smile, the half-forgotten smile of years long gone, answering in its radiance the effulgence which enveloped him. The transfiguration, for such it seemed to be, awed us, and awakened an agony of desire to pass with him unto whom he recognized with that smiling joy, to hear the voice he heard, to see the vision that he saw.

My mother, my sister Fanny and Sarah Kline were the other witnesses of his departure—the passing of one of the purest, bravest, gentlest and most manly spirits that ever has graced earth by its presence or been welcomed into heaven to hear the Master's greeting: "Well done, good and faithful servant; enter thou into the joy of thy Lord."

As he remained in his human form with us from then until the Friday afternoon following, there continued the same transfigured expression of the countenance, yet shaded into a sweet austerity which appeared more fully to express knowledge and vision. But it seemed as if the hand of death had rolled the later years away, for we looked upon a face grown younger by twenty years or more, without a line or furrow left by age or

care—the face of my father as I long ago remembered him, but carved out in purest marble.

During the days he lay encoffined in the western parlor, many visited that room to look upon his face for the last time. The rich and the poor met together, the white and the black, men and women of all conditions, and of no condition; old patients and pensioners, persons never seen before by me, who poured forth broken acknowledgments of what he had done for them and of how they loved him for it. Could these tributes have been collected just as they were spoken from the overflowing heart and trembling lip, we would have fuller, illuminating knowledge of how closely the life now ended had been an imitation of the Master, in that he “went about doing good.” In these few days and at the funeral service the love of the people for “the old doctor,” the kind counsellor, the secret benefactor, the friend who never forgot a friend howsoever humble the station in life might be, the exemplary man, flowed in successive waves of deep emotion. Strong men bowed themselves and sobbed beside his body, rained tears upon his face and kissed it. Of the women it were superfluous to speak.

The burial had been set for Thursday afternoon, but a violent storm, which rendered the landing of vehicles from the ferry on the Halifax side impossible, compelled postponement for a day.

His funeral, on Friday afternoon, November 8th, was, to the last degree, simple, chaste and solemn: simple in the absence of all parade and ostentation; chaste in its refinement and arrangement—devoid of any show of music, wreath or flower; solemn in its offices of religion, and in the universal display of grief, so real and general that it pervaded the whole assemblage which gathered in the home for the last rites celebrated there.

This service was impressively characterized by the reading of three of my father's favorite selections from the Scriptures. The Reverend Mr. Hockin, of the Dartmouth Methodist Church, read the 14th chapter of the Gospel of St. John. He was followed by the Reverend Dr. E. M. Saunders, for many years pastor of the Granville Street Church, who offered prayer. The Reverend Thomas Stewart, of St. James' Presbyterian Church, Dartmouth, then read the 90th and the 121st Psalms. The Reverend S. B. Kempton, my father's last and much loved pastor, next addressed the assembly. The following is an epitome of this address:

“In the decease of our dear friend a rare and beautiful spirit has gone from earth to heaven. To a disposition naturally amiable and generous Divine grace gave an adornment visible to all who knew him. With great industry and care he cultivated the best that was in his

nature until he attained an excellence of moral greatness too seldom seen in this evil world. He was a loyal and loving disciple of the Lord Jesus—sat at His feet, accepted His work, imbibed His spirit, and grew into His likeness. He has bequeathed to his family and friends a most valuable and precious legacy, a stainless reputation, a striking and beautiful example of a godly life, precious memories of kind words and noble deeds, and a rich store of prayer in their behalf—'had in remembrance before God.' These we may now overlook or forget, but God will not. Answer will come in due time to all whom he carried in his heart.

"St. Paul said: 'We brought nothing into this world and it is certain we can carry nothing out.' This is strictly true, in the sense in which the writer meant it to be understood, but it is also true, that the richest asset of our dear friend's life he carried with him—his splendid character. What Dr. Parker was here on earth, the devout, loving disciple of Christ, sanctified by the Holy Spirit of God, he is now among the saints in light. He has not lost his personality. The life he lived here is his still. It is not as though a drop of water had fallen back into the ocean, whence it came, or as an electric spark had flashed in brilliancy for a moment and then vanished.

"Abraham is Abraham in heaven as truly as he was Abraham on earth. Moses and Elijah appeared on the Mount of Transfiguration ages after being in heaven, but their personality had not disappeared. Heaven does not destroy our individuality, it rather enhances the beauty of it and gives opportunity for its fuller manifestation. These 'shall shine forth' in the Kingdom of their Father.

"In all that we can say of the excellence of our deceased friend we glorify the Lord Jesus. For it was through Him he became what he was as a man and a Christian. Let us endeavor to follow the example in our conduct and speech and spirit, of him whom we so sincerely mourn to-day. We may have the same guidance that led him so safely along the rugged way of life—if we will but accept. Christ is as ready to teach us as He was to instruct him; and He will as freely aid us in all our efforts to live Godly in this present evil world as He ever has been to aid others. By His assistance we too may live generous, useful, happy lives, and inherit glory and immortality in the end.

"Our Lord's words to His disciples, when they were filled with sorrow at the thought of His going away, are for us in our seasons of bereavement. He said: 'I will not leave you comfortless, I will come to you.' And He did as He had promised. He visited His disciples after His resurrection. He comes to them still. He will come to this home. But it will not be with ostentation, and signs and omens. He will come as the morning comes, gently, sweetly, scattering the gloom and chill of sorrow with the warmth and brightness of His love. Expect Him. Bid Him welcome. Encourage Him to remain with you."

The service, almost Puritanical in simplicity, yet dignified by its very character and impressive in its spiritual fervor, was closed by Dr. Saunders, who pronounced a benediction. It was altogether in harmony with my father's expressed wishes—and with himself.

The funeral procession was very large and representative. On the Dartmouth side, when its head had reached the lower canal bridge the rear extended far toward the house, on Pleasant Street. The largest of the ferry boats, from which all other vehicles were excluded, could not carry all the carriages which followed the procession of men on foot. At the Halifax landing hundreds of people joined and followed in his train, while hun-

dreds more, with bared heads, lined the sidewalks of George Street. The members of his profession, in a body, joined the cortège there. Up by St. Paul's, close by the old Argyle Street house, where so much of his work was done, we bore him, and by North Street, past my mother's girlhood home, where they were married, more than fifty-three long years before. At the Institution for the Deaf and Dumb, which he had served and loved so long, the flag was half-mast high, and the boys, formed on the street in military array with the male members of the staff, saluted as the body passed, while the women teachers and the female pupils stood grouped in the windows at attention. As we wended our slow progress through the central part of the city and the north end there was a touching tribute witnessed in the crowding to the roadside of old men and women to see the funeral pass, many of them crippled by infirmity and age, all of them bearing the unmistakable marks of poverty. With bared heads, silent, reverent, wistful, they stood and gazed upon the passing bier. Representative of his poorer class of patients and beneficiaries in the long ago, they seemed with one accord to have left their humble homes and to have ventured into unaccustomed places to do honor to the dead, whose life in its unstinted service to them and to their kind had won their gratitude and love.

In Fairview Cemetery, new and lacking art, but soft in its harmonies with Nature that he loved, we laid him down beside the dust of the baby boy and girl gone on before him. Dr. Kempton performed the brief, soul-jarring rite of burial, concluding with the Lord's Prayer and the benedictory ascription: "Now unto Him that is able to keep you from falling, and to present you faultless before the presence of His glory with exceeding joy. To the only wise God our Saviour, be glory and majesty, dominion and power, both now and ever, Amen"; and all of earth was past and done.

That out of nine grandsons, only Arthur and Allan could be present to take earthly leave of their grandsire and attend upon his obsequies, was matter for regret. That the parents of the others were likewise deprived of this sweet sorrow was also a regrettable incident at this memorable time.

We reared no costly mausoleum nor monumental marble. He had expressly forbidden it, and he prescribed himself the simple stone which was to mark his body's resting-place, with the words which were to be carved upon it. In death, as in life, his wishes gave law to the family; but without departing, we hope, from the spirit of these instructions, we added merely these words to the prescribed inscription: "A Beloved Physician"—to indicate, at a glance, his profession, and his place in the hearts of a com-

munity which had known his life and loved him. A small, plain, granite stone shows where he lies, and bears these words:

" IN MEMORY OF
DANIEL McNEILL PARKER

BORN

AT WINDSOR, N.S.

APRIL 28, 1822.

DIED

AT DARTMOUTH, N.S.

NOV'R 4, 1907

AGED 85 YEARS

A BELOVED PHYSICIAN."

The tributes paid his memory in the funeral, and in very many letters received after his death by my mother from all classes of persons and from many lands, were remarkable, considering that he had outlived most of the contemporaries of his active life and had been so long retired from public notice. The letters, being so largely personal to my mother, it were perhaps better to withhold. They are so numerous, and so varied in their testimony to the love and admiration which the individual writers had for my father, that any selection at all representative of their character could scarcely be made. Yet, I venture to choose five which are representative of his friendships, and of the universal love which was cherished for him. The writers are: Dean Bullock; Sister Agnes Gertrude, of the Halifax Infirmary; Dr. John Stewart; Sir Charles Tupper, Bart.; and Mr. Henry G. Mott, formerly of Dartmouth.

" 76 SOUTH ST., HALIFAX,
" November 6, '07.

" My Dear Mrs. Parker:

" You will find it easy to believe that our deepest sympathy is with you in the great sorrow that has come into your home, and that our prayer, 'God comfort you in your bereavement,' goeth not forth out of feigned lips.

" The name of Dr. Parker has been a household word in our family for many a year—the genuine affection our dear mother had for him, both as friend and physician, has been shared by all the children, and his gentle ministries will ever be to us a pleasant, grateful, and honored memory.

" It is not only his intimate, personal friends who are sharing your sorrow—his departure is a loss to the whole community, for I know no department of social or public life that is not to-day poorer by the withdrawal from it of his wholesome influence, and every citizen of his native province has cause to be a mourner for his ended beautiful life.

"We have respected, though reluctantly, the special request that no flowers be sent, for it would have afforded us real satisfaction to lay a few white blooms upon the coffin of our friend—as our fitting tribute to a man, who through his long career 'wore the white flower of a blameless life.'

"May the good and gracious Father in whose safe keeping your husband rests be to you a very present help in your time of need, and in addition to the Divine consolation of His grace,

"May all love, His love unseen but felt, o'ershadow thee,
The love of all thy sons encompass thee,
The love of all thy daughters cherish thee
Till God's love set thee at his side again."

"Believe me, dear Mrs. Parker,

"Yours in sympathy,

"HERB BULLOCK."

"HALIFAX INFIRMARY,

"November 7, 1907.

"My Dear Mrs. Parker:

"In this your great hour of sorrow you will receive many messages of heartfelt sympathy, but may I be permitted to say I feel none can be more sincere than those of the Sisters of the Infirmary, where for so many years your dear husband cheered and comforted them in their arduous work.

"His genial manner and kind words did much, yes, very much, towards lightening the burden inseparable from the pioneer days of this institution. But though he has gone from us, his great and noble desire to help poor suffering mankind has left its impress on the hearts of those who knew him and so 'his works live after him.'

"To you, dear soul, and to Miss Fannie and his other beloved children has come the o'erwhelming sorrow of parting, but let us ever look up and beyond to that day when we shall again be united to all our dear ones, in that land where partings never come and the weary are at rest.

"With kind love from Sisters Austin, Francis, and all our Sisters to you, and Miss Fannie,

"Believe me sincerely yours in our Lord,

"SISTER AGNES GERTRUDE."

"14 CHALMERS ST., EDINBURGH.

"Tuesday, November 19, '07.

"My Dear Mrs. Parker:

"I have just learned of your great loss, and I feel that I must write a line to tell you how much I sympathize with you and your family in your bereavement.

"When I said good-bye to Dr. Parker in the end of March, I fully expected to see him again. It did not appear to me that he had failed much during the year.

"But, considering his age, and his strenuous life, and the ailments which troubled him during these last years, the end, I suppose, cannot have come upon you quite unexpectedly.

"I had not heard that he was weaker than usual, until last week, and then I feared the news the next mail would bring.

"I feel, and I know that I have lost a very kind friend, and I grieve to think that I shall see him no more on earth.

"I have no words to tell you how much I admired and respected your husband. His invariable kindness to me touched me very deeply, but even had I not come so closely in contact with him as I did, I could not but love him.

"To my mind he was the ideal of what a medical man should be. His calm, gentle face and his sweet kind smile attracted me from the very first, and his high and noble character, his keen interest in every department of our profession and the kind and modest way in which he, who had more experience than any of us, would take part in the discussions at our society meetings, set a pattern for us all.

"There is no one left to take his place. And I am sure that although he retired from active practice, he still wielded an influence; for his name and fame were in all the country, and we who came after him must have felt inspired to follow in his path.

"And we must not grieve too much for his loss. That would be selfish. He is now happy before the God whom he loved and served with the strength of his whole life.

"With kindest regards, believe me,

"Yours very sincerely,

"JOHN STEWART."

"RAVENSCOURT, WINNIPEG.

"November 10th, 1907.

"My Dear Mrs. Parker:

"I was greatly distressed when Mrs. Fullerton to-day brought me the *Halifax Herald* announcing the death of your dear husband and the dearest and most beloved friend I have ever known. A few months younger than myself, we met at Horton Academy more than seventy years ago. We became closely attached friends, and from that time to the hour of his departure to a better world not the slightest cloud has ever for a moment dimmed our intimate association. I have read the glowing eulogies of the *Halifax Herald* upon his life and character, public, professional and personal, every word of which will be endorsed by all who knew him. How deeply I sympathize with you no words can tell. I have been anxiously looking forward to the time when I could visit my dearest friend, but the serious and severe illness of my dear wife since May last has prevented my having that great pleasure. My son Willie has several times told me of his recent visit to your hospitable home and the wish and hope expressed by my dear friend to me, alas! that can never be. After a long life spent in discharging every public and private duty he has been called to receive in a better world the reward of a just man made perfect. What a comfort it must be to your bereaved heart to know that his life of devotion to every Christian duty leaves no doubt of his eternal happiness. My wife and sons join me in tendering our sincere and deep sympathy to you and your family. Believe me, my dear Mrs. Parker, to be

"Ever yours faithfully,

"CHARLES TUPPER."

"ST. JOHN'S, N.F.L.D.,

"November 9th, 1907.

"My Dear Mrs. Parker:

"This week's home letters told me of the serious illness of the doctor, and the papers by yesterday's mail announced the end. I hope you will allow me to express, at this earliest opportunity, the very sincere sympathy with yourself and family which my heart prompts. Words of mine would but weakly convey the worth of our dear old Dartmouth doctor, or estimate the sorrow that is being expressed and felt at this time.

"In the good Providence of God it was ordered that the days of his years should greatly exceed the span allotted to man, so that 'he has come to his grave in a full age, like as the shock of corn cometh in in his season.' Aunt Kate's letter told me that 'he was now quietly slipping away; a good man going to rest.' This is a consoling thought, and suggests, as applicable, words from the *Golden Legend*:

"Time has laid his hand
Upon my heart, gently, not smiting it,
But as a harper lays his open palm
Upon his harp, to deaden its vibrations.'

"The purpose of this letter is to express my sorrow at the removal of one who was very kind to me and mine in the days that are gone, and sympathy with you in time of great grief. My heartfelt prayer is that the good God who spared the doctor's life so long, and made it a blessing to so many, will comfort and support you in this hour of trial, until, in the process of time, that great union shall be effected, 'when there shall be no more parting, neither sorrow nor crying.'

"On that happy Easter morning
All the graves their dead restore,
Father, sister, child and mother
Meet once more.

"Soul and body re-united
Thenceforth nothing shall divide;
Waking up in Christ's own likeness
Satisfied.'

"With every good wish for you and yours, believe me, dear Mrs. Parker,

"Very sincerely yours
"HENRY G. MOTT."

From a few of the obituary references in the press the following extracts are culled, omitting, where possible, mere biographical statements, to copy which would involve long and unnecessary repetition, while adding nothing to what has been already written in these pages.

TRIBUTES FROM THE PRESS.

"The death of Hon. Daniel McNeill Parker at Dartmouth, N.S., this week, removes one of the landmarks of public life in Canada, and one of North America's most distinguished medical men. He was in his eighty-sixth year, and had been in the Legislature of his Province almost since Confederation, retiring a few years ago, when the weight of years made him feel the necessity of rest. He had been a member of the Government of Nova Scotia and many times had an opportunity of entering the wider field of Dominion politics. He was a gentleman of most retiring disposition, however, and though his advice on public affairs was often sought and acted upon, he always declined entering the federal arena.

"Dr. Parker's useful and distinguished life sustained the noble character of his ancestry.

"His public life both in his profession and in other spheres was restlessly busy and strenuously active. With all his might he did whatever came in his way as duty. The testimonials from those with whom he co-operated in the various societies and institutions which he served shows that he was trusted, esteemed and honored as few men have ever been.

"His practice in Halifax was very large, and during the latter part of his professional career he was the leader of the staff of city physicians, who admired, loved and trusted him.

"He was the first surgeon in Halifax to perform an operation with the use of an anæsthetic, having first had it administered to himself to prove its safety. The first case in Halifax of the removal of ovarian

tumors—which had counted their victims by the hundreds of thousands—was performed by Dr. Parker, he having assisted Dr. Keith, of Edinburgh, the distinguished specialist in such operations.

"While he was uniformly a supporter of the Liberal-Conservative party, he was never an offensive partisan—indeed never a partisan. Once or twice he was induced by the Government which he opposed to withdraw his resignation of his seat in the Legislative Council, and when he did resign, the testimony of his fellow members to his industry, his good judgment, his fairness, uprightness and integrity were most flattering.

"From an early period in his profession he became generally known in the city and in every good direction exerted a most salutary influence. In his deportment he had the genial and courtly manners of the old school. A large percentage of his patients were, because of their limited means, never required to pay fees. His kindness of heart, urbanity of manners and delicate consideration for the feelings of all classes, made him a general favorite. His patients loved him. With his name may be appropriately associated kindness, modesty, honor, fidelity, integrity, benevolence and all other words that indicate the characteristics of the highest type of the Christian gentleman. Such true, pure, grand lives tend to leaven and purify the communities in which they are spent."—*Montreal Daily Star*.

"After a long, useful and honorable career as a physician, surgeon and public man, Hon. Dr. D. McNeill Parker died at his residence in Dartmouth yesterday afternoon at 4.30 o'clock, aged 85 years. One of the leading medical men of the city, speaking of him yesterday, said that in 1883, when he came into almost daily contact with the doctor, he was in the very zenith of his fame and occupied a position in the then medical world that was second to none. He had been a keen and brilliant student and had distinguished himself in his course at Edinburgh, both at the University and the Royal College of Surgeons; and in addition to his scholastic and professional training he possessed qualifications that soon placed him high above the average practitioner of his day. His word, in surgical and medical matters, was final, and his presence in any serious situation, in either capacity, was invaluable.

"At that time no operation at the Hospital was undertaken without consultation with him, and even then he had won a wide reputation in both medicine and surgery. Since that time the two, medicine and surgery, have been separated, and in the present day students have great advantages as specialists, which were not possible then. Yet Dr. Parker, by his zeal, talents and perseverance, occupied a position which was altogether unique in the medical profession.

"Outside of his widespread reputation as a surgeon and physician, Dr. Parker was a man of the very highest integrity and unbending honesty. He was a warm personal friend and follower of Sir Charles Tupper. About 1867 he was appointed a member of the Legislative Council, but gave up his seat about ten years ago because of failing health and overwork. He had intended resigning some time previously, but retained his seat for a time at the earnest request of Premier Fielding.

"In addition to his many and wearying professional duties, he occupied several important positions in connection with the public institutions of the city and province.

"After fifty years of active professional and public life, during which his name had become a household word for everything that is good, he decided to retire and enjoy the rest he had so nobly earned. His high reputation for probity and honesty is well illustrated by the words of Dr. Wm. J. Almon. Dr. Almon was retiring from active life, and in addressing his many friends at a dinner they were giving him, said: 'I feel that I am unfit for anything but heaven, and, when I look at Dr. Parker sitting over there, I do not feel fit for that.'

"In all the branches of the art and science of medicine great advances were made during Dr. Parker's long career, but amid all the evolutions and advances he was ever in touch with the times; a diligent student in a progressive science. The appreciation of his skill and knowledge was shown by his medical brethren in the fact that he has held all the high offices in the medical societies and organizations of the Province, as well as the Presidency of the Dominion Medical Association.

"His interest in these associations was always active and practical, and their growth and stability were due in many cases to his fostering care. In the course of a very busy life, devoted to the practice of medicine, during which he was the guide, counsellor and friend of many families in the community, he always found time to identify himself with the medical charities of the Province.

"Not only were the charities directly connected with his profession benefited by his aid and counsel, but also the Institution for the Deaf and Dumb, the Home for the Aged, the Industrial School, the School for the Blind, and others with the growth of which he was closely identified. Although the cares and responsibilities of his profession were so great, nevertheless he did not fail in his duty as a citizen, but occupied for many years an influential position in the councils of his country.

Amongst his other public services he guided and guarded all legislation referring to the medical profession in such a painstaking and careful manner that the high and satisfactory position occupied by the profession to-day is largely due to his untiring zeal and rare good judgment.

"These services and those in connection with the Medical Board are fully appreciated by medical practitioners from one end of Nova Scotia to the other."—*Halifax Morning Chronicle*.

" . . . We tender the bereaved family our most sincere sympathy, and in doing so cordially recognize the debt of gratitude under which his noble life has placed especially the city in which that life was spent, and in which he has been so highly esteemed by all who knew him. Halifax has received into its commercial, moral, social, intellectual and spiritual life the ennobling, uplifting and purifying influences of a large number of princely men, among whom Dr. Parker holds a prominent place."—*Halifax Herald*.

"There passed away at his residence, in Dartmouth, at 4.30 yesterday afternoon, the Honorable Daniel McNeill Parker, M.D., former member of the Legislative Council for Halifax, and one who had risen to the greatest eminence in the medical profession in this Province and indeed in the Dominion. Dr. Parker's grandfather came from Yorkshire, England, settling in Hants County in 1774. He was born at Windsor, on April 28th, 1822, a son of Francis Parker, a lifelong resident of Walton, who for many years was one of the leading men in Hants County. Dr. Parker was thus in his eighty-sixth year. He was educated at Windsor and Horton, received his degrees of M.D. and L.R.C.S. at Edinburgh and the Royal College of Surgeons.

"He came to Halifax in the late thirties and entered the employ of Dr. W. B. Almon who, as was the custom of physicians in that day, carried on the business of a druggist. On the death of Dr. Almon young Mr. Parker took full charge of the druggist establishment in the interest of the widow and was thus engaged for a year or two—preparing himself the while with a thorough knowledge of the pharmacopœia. Then he went to Edinburgh and on his return selected Halifax for his future labors.

"Dr. Parker continued the practice of his profession in Halifax from that time till about a decade ago. No surgeon enjoyed the confidence of his patients more than Dr. Parker, and few citizens have been held in higher esteem by his fellows than the late honored member of the Legis-

lative Council. A Baptist in religious profession. He was a staunch member of the First Baptist Church and was naturally thrown into close connection with Acadia College, of the Board of Governors of which institution he was a valued member. He was for a number of years a director of the Institution for the Deaf and Dumb and always took a deep interest in its welfare.

"Dr. Parker's business interests naturally took him outside his chosen profession, and for many years he was a director of the Halifax and Dartmouth Steamship Company, of the Halifax Gas Company, and the Nova Scotia Benefit Building Society. Interested always in sick and suffering humanity, he had a very warm spot in his heart for the Hospital for the Insane at Dartmouth, situated near his own residence, and for some time was chairman of the commissioners of that hospital. As a member of the committee on humane institutions in the Legislative Council he used his influence and voice to plead the cause of the mentally afflicted, and frequent were the visits he made to that hospital, manifesting his deep interest in the housing and professional care of those detained there. At different times he was also connected with the staff of the Provincial and City Hospital, now Victoria General Hospital, and Halifax Poor Asylum, now called the City Home. In the old days he was president of the Halifax Mechanics' Institute.

"Though interested in many benevolent and charitable institutions, though his business acumen was sought for on commercial boards, it was in his chosen profession of medicine and surgery that his greatest achievements were recorded. He was the 'family physician' in many a home, and he was both skilful and sympathetic in his treatment. He enjoyed a very large and lucrative practice in this city and Dartmouth, and was frequently called in consultations over the Province, his advice in serious and complicated cases being much sought after. He was, indeed, at the head of his profession, and was President of the Provincial Medical Association of Nova Scotia, and was further honored by election to the presidency of the Canadian Medical Association.

"In politics Dr. Parker was a Liberal-Conservative. In 1867 he was appointed to the Legislative Council and continued a member of that body till his resignation in 1901. He was a man then, and ever since, prized for his sterling worth, his uprightness and integrity and his great business and executive ability. He was always an active member of that body and set himself to the task of perfecting any legislation that came before him. Ever anxious to do what was right and just in connection with private bills as with public measures, no detail was too unimportant to be neglected by him. In the earlier days he took an active part in the debates of the House. Ill-health and the fact that he could not give that attention to important duties in the Council, which he felt his position warranted, induced him to tender in 1901 his resignation to the Government. He was not a partisan in his discussion of measures, and on more than one occasion he had given his vote against his party when the interests of the Province were deeply concerned and greater than the ends sought by his party allies. Many and genuine were the expressions of regret given utterance to by his colleagues when six years ago he severed his connection with the Legislative Council. He was one of nature's noblemen. He had a tender regard for the feelings as well as the rights of others, and his dealings with his fellowmen were grounded on justice. 'Do unto others as you would that they should do unto you' was the motto which guided his public and private life. Though Dr. Parker's life has been a retiring one for the last few years the memory of his kindly disposition, his eminent services to mankind and his Christian character has not faded and will not soon fade. His life was an example to many, and his death is a fitting occasion for reflecting on the sterling qualities of citizenship evident in his life."—*Acadian Recorder, Halifax.*

"The Honorable Daniel McNeill Parker, M.D., for many years a citizen of Dartmouth and a gentleman universally respected, passed to his long rest at his residence at 4.30 Monday afternoon surrounded by members of his family. For many years Dr. Parker, as he was generally called, held the premier place in this Province among the members of his profession. During the latter part of his life, and until a few years ago Dr. Parker was called as consulting physician to all parts of the Maritime Provinces. He was easily first in his profession for many years.

During the many years of his practice he became endeared to hundreds of families, who looked upon him not only as their valued medical adviser but as a treasured friend. His connection with a large range of activities and his well known sterling integrity made him a trusted adviser in a great range of business matters. He could always be trusted.

"Dr. Parker took a deep interest in social and philanthropic work.

" . . . He led above all things a truly Christian life, and the world will be the better for his work.

"In 1867 he was appointed to the Legislative Council, in which chamber he sat until 1901, when he resigned owing to fulness of years. In that chamber he ever held the highest esteem of the members of both sides of politics. He was not narrow-minded but on several occasions voted against his party when he thought it was wrong. His services in the Council were most valuable. At all times his sterling worth, ability and integrity gained for him the greatest respect, and his views always commanded deep and careful attention. . . .

"The citizens of Dartmouth who knew Dr. Parker will join with us in tendering those dear to him who are left behind the most sincere and heartfelt sympathy. In his death this town loses one of its best citizens and a man of a fast disappearing type, honorable, true, tender, courtly, and unafraid. Howe, Johnston, Tupper, Young, Doyle, Halliburton were his friends and contemporaries. They have written a large page, not only in the history of Nova Scotia but of Canada, and three at least of their number have won Imperial fame. They were a group of giants and have done this country great service. To have been associated with such men is much, but in his sphere of life, in his sympathies and in his activities he was quite their peer."—*Dartmouth Patriot*.

"The death on Monday of last week, at his home in Dartmouth, N.S., of Hon. Dr. D. McN. Parker, removes at a ripe old age a man abundantly worthy to rank in respect to natural and professional ability and personal character among the best men whom this country has produced. Dr. Parker had reached the age of eighty-five, and had accordingly outlived most of his contemporaries and the fellow-workers of his earlier years. Dr. Parker's reputation in his profession, both as physician and surgeon, was very high, his ability and skill were widely recognized, and for many years he held a prominent position among the most distinguished of his profession in the Maritime Provinces. The appreciation of his ability by his medical brethren is shown by the fact that he has held all the high offices in the medical societies and organizations of the Maritime Provinces as well as the presidency of the Dominion Medical Association.

"It was a strenuous life that Dr. Parker lived. His mind was alert, vigorous, eager, and his heart was quick to respond to every call of duty. His eminence in his profession brought him many calls from near and far as well as many invitations to service in connection with medical, benevolent and other public institutions. The confidence which was generally felt, not only in his professional ability but in the value of his judgment in all practical matters, caused his counsel and co-operation to be much sought after in connection with such institu-

tions, and so far as possible he responded to these demands upon his time and strength. The vigor of Dr. Parker's mind and the force of his will, supported by his fine physique, carried him through prolonged labors which would have been impossible to most men, but the time inevitably comes when the stress and strain of such labors tell upon the strongest constitution, and accordingly Dr. Parker found it imperative, some years ago, to lay aside the more arduous duties connected with his profession and his public activities. The last years of his life have been spent quietly in his Dartmouth home, with an occasional winter visit to a more genial clime, and though the advance of old age witnessed a gradual diminution of his powers, nature dealt kindly with the good man, so that he has come to the end without any very serious illness or discomfort, and it is a satisfaction to all his friends to know that his mind remained unclouded until the last. His confidence in the Saviour in whom he had so long trusted and in the verities of the religion which had been his support and comfort in the noon-day of his strength remained firm unto the end.

"As a citizen Dr. Parker's life was one worthy of admiration and imitation. It may be said that nothing which in his judgment pertained to the public good failed to elicit his sympathy, and he was ready to aid every good work. Toward the poor he was especially sympathetic and generous, and in countless instances professional services were rendered without fee or reward except the consciousness of having performed a generous deed and the gratitude of those to whom help had been given. Dr. Parker was actively interested in the political affairs of the country. Had he desired a political career, he might doubtless have attained distinction in public life and given invaluable service to the country. But evidently he judged, and wisely, too, no doubt, that the sphere of most valuable service for him was to be found in his profession and its associated activities. He however accepted appointment to the Legislative Council of his Province, and during the thirty years or more in which he held a seat in that body he rendered service the value of which is cordially recognized by both political parties. When the time came that Dr. Parker felt that he should lay aside his political duties, he was persuaded to remain a few years longer in the Council at the solicitation of the Premier of that day, who was a political opponent.

"In the denomination of which he was for so many years a member and a faithful supporter, Dr. Parker was admired, loved and trusted in an eminent degree. Providence has given to us in these Provinces, outside the ranks of the ministry, many good and strong men who have served the Baptist cause with much faithfulness and ability, but there is certainly none to whom the denomination is more deeply indebted than to Dr. Parker. It is ten years and more, perhaps, since he has been seen at any of our denominational gatherings, and many of the younger people who now attend those meetings have not known Dr. Parker personally; but the people of middle age and older can bear testimony to the fact that in the days gone by his presence at our conventions was a benediction and an inspiration. It was much to see his genial, handsome face, to hear his cheery speech, to feel the influence of his earnest spirit, the force of his practical counsels, and to observe the careful consideration which he was ready to give to all matters having important bearing upon the denomination's life and work. Dr. Parker was deeply interested in the educational work of the body, and for many years rendered it valuable service as a member of the Board of Governors. Every minister of the denomination who was acquainted with Dr. Parker felt that he had in him a personal friend, and one who was ready at any time to give to him or his family gratuitously the benefit of his professional skill. By all who knew him he was respected, trusted and beloved. He was one in whom natural gifts of a high order had been turned to large account in the service of his fellow men, and

the favor of God rested upon him. He was one whose character and whose work has done honor to his manhood and to his profession as a Christian. The influences of such a life, so attractive in its personality, so strong in faith, in love, in unswerving loyalty to truth and righteousness and so richly fruitful in generous and beneficent activities, is far beyond our power to measure. Such lives constitute a real word of God. They bring us a message from above. They help us to believe in the things unseen and eternal."—*The Maritime Baptist*, St. John.

" . . . In 1845 he began his medical practice in Halifax. It lasted fifty years. He was soon carried by forces, that always make way for their possessors, to the front rank in his profession. But his large vision of life did not allow him to keep strictly within the sphere of the medical practitioner. Christian and charitable enterprises appealed to him, and received his moral and pecuniary support. No institution in the city failed to receive from him a helping hand, but he never neglected his profession. . . .

"After making his fuller surrender to his Saviour, he found his home in a church singularly rich in culture, piety and pure spiritual power. Nor were these influences lost on the young physician. He imitated and absorbed the best that he found in his new spiritual home, and never failing to look to Christ by whose blood he had been bought, as the only perfect example to follow, he grew in grace and in the further knowledge of his Lord and Saviour. Nor did this growing cease until consciousness faded away, when the call came to him in his beautiful home in Dartmouth to come up higher into the home whose lustre eclipses every earthly dwelling place. . . .

"As Dr. A. H. Strong said, after the taking to his rest of the Rev. A. J. Gordon, of Boston: 'God has taken him from us and we have no longer with us his great conscience, strong faith and noble heart.' Great conscience, strong faith and noble heart were central elements in our lamented D. McNeill Parker, and I am not sure but Dr. Strong has overstated the matter when he said we have these forces no longer with us. It is true they are not with us in their full and sensible power, as they were when their possessors gave them efficiency by the presence of their great and Christ-like personalities. I knew A. J. Gordon intimately only as classmate and I am conscious that his power has never been absent from me since. Thousands and tens of thousands into whose lives he poured in riper years the riches of his own consecrated spirit, must still be conscious that 'the great conscience, strong faith and noble heart,' of Dr. Gordon are still with them. For forty years, fourteen of which I stood in the relation of pastor to Dr. Parker, I have had the freedom of his home, and the openness of his heart. I feel sure that during the little of time that remains to me, there shall abide with me a full consciousness of the presence of these noble qualities, influencing and strengthening my heart and sustaining my life. A great conscience, like a great man, gives careful consideration, not alone to the more important matters of life, but to its minute details as well. It was great in its power. This would have been known by anyone who might have had the temerity to lay a hand on it, and obstruct the course indicated by its dictates. No man or combination of men ever did, or ever could have conquered the regnant conscience of D. McN. Parker. It was proof against all seductions, against all terrors. But to him this endowment was no capricious, wild helmsman. Like everything else in life it was taken to the Word—the certain 'thus saith the Lord'—for correction and full authority. Then it was a supreme power. By it I have seen his face set like flint in the presence of inducements to disregard its commands. Then it was, God was in Christ and Christ in the heart of a faithful servant. Here is the hiding of Majesty and of power. But this conscience ordered and directed his whole life. Had he offended the lowliest member of the community or the church, and I

do not know that he ever did, then following that same Christian conscience he would go to such an one and never rest until Christian fellowship was fully restored. His faith, too, ever nourished by constant reading of the Word, by prayer and fellowship with his brethren, always seemed strong, phenomenally strong—strong in respect to the permanence, the prosperity and the success of every good undertaking. It was not a faith that begat oppressive gravity in his professional or social life. No. He was a light-hearted, cheerful Christian. His affable manners opened the way to the hearts of all. I see him now at the door of the church, on Sundays, after having made hurried calls on the more pressing cases among his patients, greeting friends and strangers as they entered the house of God. He was tireless and constant in all such duties. His great heart! It was an ocean filled with Christ, and oh, how true to friends, how kind and loving to all. It took him to the cottages of the poor, as well as to the dwellings of the rich. Tens of thousands of dollars of charges to the poor were never sought after—were never paid. No minister of the Gospel ever got a bill from Dr. Parker. Long journeys were made into the country to attend them and their families in their sicknesses, but no money was ever taken for it. Nor was this the only outflow of his noble soul to ministers of the Gospel. Many a young minister received from him a helping hand. Nobility characterized the outflow of his heart, fidelity his duties and his dealings with his fellow men; and rocklike assurance, his confidence in the Gospel of Christ.

"Like the steady outflow of Dr. Parker's love through life, was the ceaseless stream of his liberality. To him giving was a spiritual treasury. This true and upright life captured the confidence and esteem of the public at an early day, and held them firmly until the last. A prince among men and a prince in Israel has ended a life at eighty-five and a half years, through which flowed a ceaseless stream of light and power from Christ the Son of God, the substitutionary sacrifice for a lost, guilty world.

"The last half century of the life of this servant of God has been grand, the eternal future of the same life will be glorious in the presence of his Saviour, and in the company of so many whose sweet fellowship he enjoyed on earth."—E. M. Saunders, D.D., in the *Maritime Baptist*.

"I would express my estimation of the worth of this brother beloved. I have a high sense of his honor, his straightforwardness, and his gentlemanly bearing. His manner with ministers was felt and appreciated; he seemed to esteem them for their office's sake, and attended them professionally without making any charge.

"How constant he was in his attendance at the convention, and how he hung on hour after hour while the hard business was being transacted! We had a good set of men in those days, with whom we were closely associated. I refer to Drs. Cramp and Crawley, Dr. Sawyer, Dr. I. E. Bill, Dr. T. H. Rand, the Higginsons, Wm. Cummings, Avar Longley, T. R. Black, A. F. Randolph, Dr. DeBlois and others now enjoying the rest provided for such men. Those were the days when we had to wrestle through the independent foreign mission question, the education of women, the theological chairs at Acadia, and the bringing in of home-missions. Dr. Parker was always there in his place, giving his reasons, and voting to his judgment.

"He was a good specimen of the cultivated colonist. There was ever that about him that showed he had been abroad. His speech, his manner, his whole bearing, was far removed from that of the ordinary professional man in the Provinces. While visiting in the neighboring Republic, and having many friendships there, he was to the core a Briton. His ways were English ways.

There was ever a savor of the Christian about him; not that he obtruded his religion on one; still there was that indefinable something

that made you feel that you were in the company of one who followed Jesus. I remember, when being in the old Granville Street Church, looking around for the Doctor without detecting his presence, and how just as I was closing my discourse the door opened and Dr. Parker sat down in the back seat. In his busy days he made it a rule always to attend the house of God, though sometimes he received nothing more than the benediction.

"Such men are rare."—D. A. Steele, D.D., in the *Maritime Baptist*.

"By the recent demise of Hon. Dr. Parker, the profession in this city and province has lost its most distinguished member—distinguished alike for his professional knowledge and skill, his high reputation, and the unusually long period of his beneficent public services. . . .

"If there is one lesson more than another that Dr. Parker's whole life and beneficent career must impress upon his professional brethren and his fellow citizens, it is that afforded by his example of unremitting and conscientious devotion to duty. He looked upon his profession as imposing upon him a duty to his very utmost for his fellow man, and this, combined with his goodness of heart and great kindness of disposition, made him an untiring worker in the relief of suffering and for the benefit of mankind. Whatever Dr. Parker did he did with all his might, not for hire, but as the faithful and hearty performance of a duty; and it is quite certain that the case of the poor man, who could not pay a dollar for advice, got from him the same conscientious consideration and careful treatment as the case of the richest among his many patients. As a physician, and as a man, Dr. Parker leaves behind him a memory that is an inspiration to faithful work and rectitude of life."
—*Maritime Medical News*.

CHAPTER XVI.

CHARACTERISTIC AND GENERAL.

"For in my mind is fixed, and touches now
My heart the dear and good paternal image
Of you, when in the world from hour to hour
You taught me how a man becomes eternal."

—Dante.

CHARACTER might be defined as the combination of the intellectual and moral qualities in a man which make him different from another. It is "what a man is himself." Emerson has termed it "his organization, or the mode in which the general soul incarnates itself in him."

Without attempting an analysis of my father's character, an undertaking too presumptuous, it is fitting and seems necessary to enquire what there was in his mental conformation, moral attributes, in the very spirit of this man, which made him so remarkable for virtue, which so signally distinguished him for goodness, kindness and benevolence; which, apart altogether from his intellectual endowments and professional achievement, made him so beloved and won the eulogy of his fellow men, even in his lifetime—as we have seen.

Doubtless there were prenatal influences. As has been suggested in the chapters dealing with his ancestry, the better and finer qualities which might well have been derived from a fusion of the Quaker and the Covenanter blood seemed to be innate in him, through ancestral inheritance. A nature serious, earnest and devout was with him congenital. From childhood he was amiable, affectionate, truthful and sincere. Underlying his innate virtues, beneath his strong natural qualities, there was from early youth a deep under-current of respect for the obligations of religion and a devout adherence to its outward observances. He was reared in a Christian home, surrounded by an atmosphere of religion, and was blessed in being born of a mother whose instruction, life and influence bore fruit in him. Such educational processes of his tender years developed early a strict regard for purity, truth, justice, love of his fellow men and a desire to make his life a contribution to their welfare. In youth he matured in mind with unusual rapidity, though not a precocious child. In subjective religious experience there is no indication that he was abnormal in early life. On the contrary, we have seen that he made no

public profession of a religious character until he had reached mature years. But when he did so it seemed as if the pent-up current of a deep religious fervor, which from early youth had flowed beneath the surface of his life, generating in him a love for his God and a spirit of reverence toward the ordinary and external Christian duties, burst forth with unusual and irresistible power, flooding his soul with those strong qualities of a true Christian which adorned his beautiful life and made him, humanly speaking, a triumph of Christianity.

As compared with other systems of religion, it is claimed for Christianity as its distinctive characteristic principle that it is not a creed merely, but a life, an imitation of the God-man, its founder. Paul of Tarsus, that typical hero of the infant Church, said, ". . . Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me and gave Himself for me." The last passage from the Scriptures which trembled to my father's lips ere he passed into the unconsciousness which preceded death, was: "To me to live is Christ, and to die is gain." Here was the prime factor of his life and the secret which explains it. Here was the hiding of his power. Endued richly with this mystic life and power, to which his natural attributes gave more than ordinary reinforcement, he obeyed assiduously what Carlyle called "the God-given mandate, Work thou in well-doing," and with no self-consciousness or ostentation, but in all sincerity, humbly and full of all simplicity, he devotedly cultivated and successfully practised "Applied Christianity" in all his relations with his fellow men. It is *the life* that tells, and not the profession nor the forms of faith.

Let me illustrate here, by a single instance out of many, this potent, telling influence of the life my father lived. A clergyman, writing in January, 1899, says: "I was talking with a gentleman who has evidently been a good deal disturbed as to his faith in the verities of religion by the literature of the day, and who yet feels the unrest of a soul adrift. When I referred to something the Bible said, he replied that there was so much uncertainty about the Bible that one did not know what to think; and then he said: 'But for the life of such a man as Dr. Parker, I fear I should give up all faith in the spiritual, and lose heart entirely.'" The writer of that letter adds: "I thought afterwards of the words of St. Paul: 'Ye are manifestly declared to be the epistles of Christ.' The true Christian is evidently the world's Bible. To furnish, by one's life, anchorage for a soul that would otherwise drift helplessly to ruin is to have lived not in vain."

And now, as if to illustrate how "he being dead yet speaketh" in the life he lived, there comes, as I write these lines, a letter from a college president in a distant land, who says: "Whenever

I think of your father there always seems to come a benediction with the thought and a quickening desire to play the man and do my little part in the uplift of mankind."

Applied Christianity, to resume Carlyle's phrase, is essentially the application of the Golden Rule in one's dealings with his fellow men. Herein we may discover more directly how it was that my father won the love that was so widely borne him throughout life, and the reverence paid his memory now that he has put on immortality; for, as a recent writer in the field of practical ethics has put it: "As we give to the world so the world gives back to us. Thoughts are forces, like inspires like and like creates like. If I give love I inspire and receive love in return." The late Hon. Samuel Milton Jones, of Ohio, paraphrased the Golden Rule, the supreme law of life, in this way: As you do unto others, others will do unto you; and he said: "The Golden rule is the law of action and reaction in the field of morals, just as definite, just as certain here as the law is definite and certain in the domain of physics. . . . I use the word love as synonymous with reason, and so when I speak of doing the loving thing I mean the reasonable thing. When I speak of dealing with my fellow men in an unreasonable way, I mean an unloving way." This sweet reasonableness, in my father, was eloquently referred to by one of his colleagues in the Legislative Council, among the eulogies pronounced upon his character there after he had resigned his seat. The reference will be found in the paper of 1906 which is prefixed to these memoirs. That speaker said, moreover, that all my father's dealings with his fellow men emanated from the bed rock of justice, and he spoke truly; for the fundamental principle of "Applied Christianity," which my father's life illustrated and which, reduced to its lowest terms, is love, walks hand in hand with justice, if indeed the two are separable concepts.

The Honorable W. E. Forster, speaking in the British House of Commons during General Gordon's last days at Khartoum, said of him: "God's guidance and government are to him the strongest and greatest realities of life."

This greatest conviction of that man of strong convictions, the martyred Gordon, represents exactly my father's fundamental attitude of mind in all the affairs of his own life, in all the relations of human life in general, in world history and the destiny of nations. He was therefore naturally a man of prayer, but notably so. Who that has bowed with him at his family altar, where twice daily he convened his household, can forget the simplicity, the fervid earnestness, the trustful directness of the petitions which he was wont to offer then, and how he emphasized the plea for daily guidance in daily life. The passing guests, whoever they might be, or however thoughtless of religion and its claims

upon them, shared in this domestic rite of devotion, and I know of impressions then left upon the souls of some of these which will not fade to all eternity. At family worship his custom was to read the Bible in course, and though he rarely commented upon the day's lessons from the Scriptures, he had a memorable and unusual facility in applying these lessons in the course of his prayer which followed. In his private devotions, it is known that professional work which lay before him for that day, or the next, was made a special subject upon which Divine guidance was sought. The cases of patients critically ill were individually committed to the "Great Physician of body and of soul alike," and before serious surgical operations he would seek Divine assistance and commend the result to God. The sweet, childlike simplicity of his religious nature is seen in this—that to the very close of conscious life, after retiring to rest at night he made it a practice to repeat the childhood's prayer his mother taught him, the simple verse lisped by so many generations of children:

"Now I lay me down to sleep,
I pray the Lord my soul to keep;
If I should die before I wake,
I pray the Lord my soul to take;
And this I ask for Jesus' sake. Amen."

As illustrative of his habit of prayer and his fixed belief that it was indeed "the Christian's vital breath," there is this incident which I have heard him relate. He was travelling all night by coach, many years ago, with a man who was a noted sceptic in all matters of religion and distinguished as a powerful controversialist on the subject, highly educated and socially influential. This person turned their conversation upon Christianity, and an animated argument ensued. So clever and subtle was his opponent's presentation of his views that my father, unaccustomed then to be put upon the defensive in such matters, was momentarily staggered. "But," said he, "the promise of Christ to the disciples flashed at once across my mind: 'When they shall lead you, and deliver you up, take no thought beforehand what ye shall speak, neither do ye premeditate; but whatsoever shall be given you in that hour, that speak ye: for it is not ye that speak, but the Holy Ghost.' I put up a word of silent prayer for help and reminded God of that promise. Then the thoughts and the answers to the arguer's came to me at once, and I believe I had the best of it, for the man soon after that grew more quiet, and then dropped the subject altogether."

Thus, as it seems to me, a true Christian's faith, expressed in terms of love and loving service, and sustained by prayer, essentially made my father what he was in himself and also what he was to others. The source and essence of his life's power

having been thus accounted for, let us glance at some personal characteristics of the man.

As if to reinforce the influence of his life and facilitate the conquest of affection from his fellows, nature had gifted him with a rare and attractive power of personality.

Though not above the average height, he possessed a well-formed figure, tending to stoutness in middle life, but active, alert, symmetrical and capable of bearing prolonged effort. His features were unusually handsome, his profile "clean cut," with the facial angle nearly approaching the rectangular, the forehead lofty, the temples protuberant, the whole head rotund, exquisitely moulded, large in proportion to the body and strikingly intellectual in its contour. His mouth was signally expressive of firmness and decision. The countenance was mobile, capable of an unusual range and variety of expression reflective of any mood or emotion which might possess him. Its expression, when at rest, was dignified yet benign and winsome. It seemed to signify a consciousness of inward strength and peace. The face was one that showed the soul within. The whole man was an impressive example of manly beauty, and his very appearance betokened the man he was.

His was a gracious, kindly presence. His manners were wonderfully winning. In them there was a certain courtliness of demeanor belonging to the earlier decades of the last century—something which seems to be becoming obsolete in these days, when, largely through a saturnalia of free and indiscriminate so-called education, society at large, but particularly in the professions, is becoming transformed by the upheaval of uncultured lower strata to the surface and the word "gentleman" seems almost an anachronism. He knew naturally the graces of life, those graceful courtesies which make life noble, and one saw in him the little things, those little gracious things that make a man liked and win the hearts of men. There was about him that indefinable something, to which we cannot give a name, which made him attractive to everybody, fascinating to many, without the display of any art or striving after effect on his part, and which irresistibly arrested attention, created a personal interest, made friends and won affection. He possessed a personality at once gracious, gentle, kind, virile, magnetic and compelling.

Turning to characteristics which may be discovered in his moral qualities, habits of thought and the ordering of his life: it may be said at once that he was a Puritan in his *simplicity*, which reigned supreme in his home, in his domestic life, in his customs and in the practice of his profession. It was paramount in his putting his religion and its duties before all other considerations of life: in his devotion to the sanctity of the Sabbath; in his uncompromising hostility to looseness of morals, of manners

and of conversation; in his willingness to sacrifice for principle and conscience. But he was a Puritan without the severity and intolerance which the use of that designation might suggest to some.

With this simplicity there was necessarily involved *truth* and a love of truth. He was therefore intolerant of all sham, pretence and dishonesty, in private or in public life. He could "suffer fools gladly," but not a humbug. An example of inflexible honor, uprightness and liberality himself, his large and generous nature could never brook anything dishonorable, petty or mean.

Obedience to the mandate found in what Carlyle termed "the Gospel of Work"—"work in well-doing"—my father translated into terms of *duty*: duty to God and man in fulfilment of "the first and great commandment," and of the second, which "is like unto it." For in Applied Christianity, rooted and grounded on love, love implies duty and duty performed expresses love. Duty, then, was fundamental, and a guiding principle. With the strictest fidelity he practised this leading principle of duty as the end of life, God-ward and man-ward; inculcated it everywhere and made it a household precept. With him it was a watchword. His own sense of its infinite nature he powerfully impressed upon others by the very force of his example. His devotion to duty is emphasized as a lesson from his career by the *Maritime Medical News*, as quoted in the last chapter. Using the word "duty" in its widest acceptation, this is the great lesson of his life, for it embraces and expresses all else. What more can be said of a man than that he did his duty.*

It is a mistake to suppose that, exemplary as is the record of his life, he enjoyed immunity from conflict with himself and "the old Adam" of a fallen nature. Temperamentally he was a man of strong passions, an indomitable will, a hasty temper, and quickly moved by impulse. Not the least admirable quality he possessed, therefore, was his power of *self-control*, with the strict guard which he ever kept upon his life. "Think before you speak" he used to say, to check some hasty or inconsiderate speech or judgment in another; and this maxim of his always seemed to me a self-imposed, well-tried law of conduct which he practised in self-government.

"Given to hospitality" he was, but never ostentatiously. He had not to climb the social ladder through advertisement of garish show, of rout and ball and banquet. His social tastes, whether in his own entertainment of friends or otherwise, were simple and refined. He enjoyed a dinner or a tea party with chosen spirits and loved friends, or an evening in a full drawing-

*"Religion consists in our recognizing all our duties as Divine commands."—*Immanuel Kant*.

room spent with music, which he loved, and conversation. On such occasions the spontaneous gaiety of his nature and the buoyancy of his spirits would assert themselves and he would abandon himself to a thorough enjoyment which it was a delight to witness. He was a brilliant conversationalist, an excellent raconteur, and would charm his guests with the variety, from grave to gay, and the rich quality of his conversation, reminiscences and anecdote. He was an ideal host. In summer, especially, he loved to entertain in small house parties his friends from abroad. It gave him infinite pleasure to keep old friends about him so, but many times he found pleasure as great in giving the freedom of his hospitable home to patients in a convalescent stage, for whom he would prescribe the pure country air and quiet rest which were to be found at "Beechwood." To ministers of the Gospel he was particularly lavish, in having them make his home their own from time to time. Nor were others unprovided for, even to old Ben Christmas, the converted but afterward, alas, lapsed Indian, who occupied the same guest chamber he would have had were he a paleface chief—and washed.

Of his home life it seems enough to say that all the recollection of it is a blessed memory. Strict he was, in claiming obedience from his children and in the necessary discipline of home life pursuant to his high ideals for conduct, his lofty sense of duty and of what was right in all things; but his household was ruled by love, and the altogether reasonable nature of his requirements excluded anything that savored of exaction. Punctuality in every duty and on all occasions he insisted on. In himself this virtue was proverbial. In professional or other business, in all his engagements and in the routine of his daily life he was always "on time." This was a phase of that delicate consideration for others which was a characteristic. The only instance I can recall when he "lost his temper" was when a dilatory coachman failed to have his carriage ready in time to catch a certain ferry boat, and so made him fifteen minutes late for an engagement of importance. Memory pictures him just now, up betimes on a dark winter's morning, clad in his dressing-gown, and pivoting his razor on a lengthy wooden strop, making his round of the children's quarters to rouse them out, stooping for his "good-morning" kiss, and playfully applying the razor strop to stimulate the sluggish. Later, there sometimes followed from the foot of the lower stair after the prayer-bell rang, the quick summons to the tardy: "Come at once; come as you are"; and a motley group of children, half-clad and half-ashamed, would troop to morning worship.

Too rarely he allowed himself a half-holiday with the chil-

dren. When he did, a drive with him to the delights of "Bellevue," or to Cow Bay, with its surf-beaten beach of finest sand, over which the North Atlantic in its stormy moods drives white-maned sea horses with resistless fury into the lagoon beyond; or a winter's afternoon of skating with him amid the wooded beauties of the Dartmouth lakes—on which occasions he seemed literally to renew his youth—would be a pleasure that was never to fade out of mind.

The virtues which he practised for himself he strove to inculcate in his children, grandchildren and any others who might be in the home: simplicity, honor, justice, truth, kindness, usefulness for service, economy of time, and the obligation of the fear of God. On a stormy Sunday afternoon or evening when going to Sabbath-school had been out of the question, even for himself, his teaching of the day's lesson to his household, gathered about the long table in the dining-room, became a pleasure even to the child most restive, and impatient of the ordinary restraint of Sunday-school instruction. He was an ardent, sedulous student of the Bible, had a wide knowledge of the book, with a profound insight into its truths and mysteries, while his qualities as an instructor upon this text-book of his life and practice it would be hard to find excelled.

But to enter further on sweet memories of home with him would carry the writer far beyond the limits of these pages, and is not within the purpose of this memoir. Much there is that must remain in memory unexpressed, and much that seems too sacred to be told in print.

A few other general traits remain to be enumerated, if I would hold up faithfully the mirror to this rare and lovely character.

He was an earnest man—very much in earnest, eager and intent in everything that for the time being might occupy his attention, from a critical surgical operation at noonday to a game of bagatelle at evening with his children; in his serious study of his cases when the midnight oil burned low; in his hour of relaxation in the hayfield on a summer's afternoon. Whatsoever his hand, or brain, might find to do, he did it with his might. He knew no half measures in anything.

His mind was wonderfully active, alert and energetic, turning with an equal facility to so many diverse things in business and philanthropy that he was what one might call a many-sided man. So numerous were the positions which he filled in connection with charitable and business enterprises at one time and another, that in the paper prefixed to these memoirs I have failed to catalogue them all. All this meant the expenditure of thought and valuable time; but he was always a standing illustration of the

seeming paradox that busy men have most time to take on more work. That the many things which occupied him did not oppress and distract his mind and energies was due to his admirable faculty for system and order in all things, through which he was able to marshal his duties and engagements in respect to time, place and opportunity. The same genius for method and regulation obtained and ruled in the minutiae of domestic life, and in the management of professional labors, in all their various and intricate particulars. Attention to detail was a habit of his lifetime.

He was of a generous nature, and his liberality with his means was commensurate with his great heart. His sympathies flowed in practical benevolence into many channels of public and private charity, and were lavished, but in a discriminating manner, upon the poor and the unfortunate. But this was without ostentation, and he strove to avoid anything like publicity in his almsgiving. Little of the extent of his benefactions to the poor, the friendless and the outcast is known but to very few beyond the recipients; for he let not his left hand know what his right hand did. In subscription lists for charitable objects "A friend" could usually be recognized as designating this contributor.

In the more private charities of his life, gifts and loans of money to ministerial and medical students to assist them in their education were favorite methods of helping deserving young men. The loans were usually such in name only, and not expected by him to be repaid, although they sometimes were. "Some day when you earn the money you can pay me" he would say, and left this at their option. The former class he helped forward to the goal for their work's sake. He loved youth, and where he recognized merit and a sterling character, or thought he did, to the medical tyro he was always nobly kind. Of such he had many protégés, to whom he was invariably generous and helpful, and he exacted no return whether of money or of service. By some of them he was deceived and disappointed, but this did not discourage him; he had his reward in the others when he came to see them filling spheres of usefulness in the life of his profession.

The case of the late Dr. C. will serve as an illustration. He had been a young policeman, on a beat which brought him frequently in contact with my father on Argyle Street. Fired with an ambition to study medicine, he made bold to entrust his secret to the Argyle Street doctor, for whom he had conceived a great admiration, and to seek advice from him. The result of the interview was that my father sent him to Horton Academy for some further preliminary education and afterwards took him into the office as a student, foregoing, as he frequently did, the customary premium of a hundred pounds for instruction. Long afterwards, when he had

prospered, the doctor came to the Hollis Street office, where I chanced to be, and without explanation handed to my father a voluminous roll of bank notes. In astonishment the latter said: "What is this, C.?" "That is a debt I owe you, doctor," he replied. "What do you mean? You owe me nothing." "Oh, yes I do;" answered Dr. C., "I have owed you a hundred pounds for about thirty years, and it should have been paid long ago, but here it is at last." I well remember how my father threw back his head and laughed, then said, in his quick, decisive way: "Nonsense, nonsense, C., nothing of the kind!" But he was evidently moved by the unusual incident. Earnestly pressed, with broken expressions of grateful regard, to accept the money, kindly but emphatically the old preceptor declined to take the premium, which, as he said, he had never thought of as a debt and had forgotten. Several times was the money moved back and forth between them on the table, and then with real reluctance it was taken by this appreciative pupil when almost forcibly thrust into his hand. But, not to be defeated altogether, Dr. C. converted no small part of his premium into a handsome collection of books which soon afterwards found their way to the office, and these could not be rejected without wounding the feelings of the donor.

The widows and children of deceased medical men in poor circumstances my father seemed to regard as wards of the profession, and treated them accordingly. It was characteristic of him that when a noted specialist, in another country, whose advice and treatment he had once received, died leaving his family inadequately provided for, my father should make a substantial remittance to the widow. This he regarded merely as a duty, a debt he owed, because, as he whimsically remarked, "Dog will not eat dog in our profession, so her husband would take no fee for helping me."

But it was in the practice of his profession that he found fullest scope for his benevolent disposition, and here he never wearied in well-doing. Poverty, suffering, sorrow were as three keys which never failed to open the way to a sympathetic attention and skilled ministry. His was a wider, loftier conception of the profession than that it was a trade to live by. With him there was no respect to persons, no discrimination looking to reward when calls came for his services. Like "pale death" with whom he fenced for stake of human life, he knocked with equal beat upon the door of poor and rich and met the king of terrors where he chose his ground. The testimonies to my father's ministry in humble homes, the abodes of poverty and wretchedness, are countless; but its record is on high. Was sickness caused or recovery retarded by lack of proper nourishment or body comforts: he supplied the need, as he would furnish medicine. Was drink the source of

household misery: he "took the man in hand," labored for his reformation, and often did he win. Was unemployment found to be the cause of honest poverty: he looked up some work to do and gave the means of livelihood. Did death obtain the mastery over him: he knelt in prayer beside the dying, pointed the way to victory over death, gave consolation to the parting soul, assuaged the sorrow of the lowly home. The poor: they were sick and he visited them; they were an hungered and he gave them meat; naked and he clothed them. All this for him, was merely duty—all in the day's work—a debt he owed his Lord; but how cheerfully, how unselfishly, how lovingly discharged! As one ponders it, conviction comes that here was indeed the crowning beauty of his life, because it is here this man most evidently reflects the man of Nazareth.

Ministers of the Gospel, and their families, were always attended free of charge. His classification of "the poor," who were not to be charged, was extremely wide. To one familiar with the work of his office, it would sometimes seem that this was not the office of a physician but a free dispensary. His ledgers tell a tale in graphic form. Down their columns the words "poor," "no charge," written by his hand across the face of entries when he would be making out accounts to render, or merely nominal charges entered, occur so often that one is at no loss to comprehend the disproportion between the extent of his practice as recorded there and the income which it yielded—comparatively, a pittance. System required the record of the work; charity expressed it not in terms of dollars. The sending of a receipted bill, an enclosure of money in lieu of one, or the thrusting of a bank note into a poor patient's hand when a bill was asked for, were samples of little tricks of charity, beneficent practical jokes, which seemed to amuse and gratify him. Once I was in the office when a poor old clergyman, long under treatment, but then cured, asked what was the amount of his bill. "Yes, I'll get it for you," said his physician, retiring to the inner office. Returning quickly, he placed in the old gentleman's hand a ten dollar "bill" and closed his fingers over it. Overwhelmed with emotion, the patient struggled to express himself, but was gently taken by the shoulders and with a laugh thrust out into the lobby. "There, there, Mr.—, that is your bill. I am very busy now; good morning"—and the bill was settled.

He was notably modest, retiring; shrinking from public notice and from comment on himself and upon anything he might have done which naturally would attract attention. Vanity or self-appreciation was foreign to his nature. In the humility that possessed his spirit he seemed to be quite unaware that professionally, or by force of character, he was distinguishable in any

respect from any of his fellows. To himself, he was naught else but a mere man trying to do his duty in the sphere where his God had placed him. If he was successful in saving a life, or accomplishing any good, and this was mentioned in his presence, he disclaimed any credit, attributed it to the blessing of God upon his efforts, and turned the conversation from himself. Though quietly grateful for appreciation, anything like praise was distinctly distasteful to him.

Yet, modest and humble as he was toward self, he was forceful, masterful in disposition, of marked physical and moral courage, and a born leader of men. He dominated the counsels of his fellows in many spheres of service and left upon all with whom he worked or shared responsibilities the impress of his personality, strong for the right, stimulating to effort, inspiring to action. He could be overcome, but would not fail.

On the physical side, there comes to me now the scene when, in 1875, after the harbor had been sealed with ice for several weeks the boats of the Ferry Company, of which he was the president, were to be set in motion again, if possible, and the manager and others thought that this could not be done. Convinced that the strong north wind then blowing would free the boats at Dartmouth if a channel were cut far out as he suggested, my father overruled their view of the situation. Brushing them all aside, and seizing tools himself, he ordered a gang of men to follow him. Out on the breaking ice he led them, on a bitter afternoon, fell once into the icy water, was rescued by his men, marked out his cut beyond, worked with the men, directing everything, and next day had the satisfaction of seeing the ferry service once more in operation.

An instance of his physical courage and the force of his very personality is related by my mother. They were returning late one night from "Bellevue" and took their way to Argyle Street along Barrack or South Brunswick Street. Here, before a house which was a low resort for abandoned characters, their attention was arrested by loud noises indicating a fight within, and by a little boy crying bitterly out on the sidewalk. The child told a story of ill-usage and how he had been thrown out of the house. Filled with righteous wrath, and taking the boy up in his arms, my father burst into the house upon a scene where a roomful of soldiers and denizens of this disreputable quarter, men and women, were engaged in a fierce drunken brawl. Striding into the midst of it, sternly and in peremptory tones he demanded order; then holding up the boy, called "Whose child is this?" Instantly the tumult ceased. They knew him, and such was their respect for him and their sense of shame in his presence, that not only was there an immediate calm, but soldiers and civilians slunk from

that presence and cleared the room without one word. A woman owned the child as hers, and after administering a severe rebuke to the keepers of the place my father resumed his way, afterwards sending up an officer of police to see that all continued right. Perhaps to the grandsons, as it does to me, this scene will recall the "ignobile vulgus" in Virgil's vivid relation of Neptune calming the waves, and the lines:

"Tum, pietate gravem ac meritis si forte virum quem
Conspexere, silent, arrectisque auribus adstant;
Ille regit dictis animos, et pectora mulcet."

That he was public-spirited as a citizen sufficiently appears from the preceding narrative and its testimonies from other pens. But it remains to be said that, in an imperial sense, he was intensely patriotic, with an ardent love of the Old Country, its institutions and what the Crown of Britain stands for. He had that old-fashioned form of patriotism which found expression in deep personal loyalty to the sovereign and the royal family. The following incident may serve to illustrate this. When it was known in Halifax that the Prince Consort was seriously ill, as the result of exposure while laying the cornerstone of an Edinburgh public building in 1861, my father's concern and distress of mind were acute. In December, learning that the mail packet from England was coming up the harbor, he drove full speed to the head of the market wharf, and as the ship passed close in he stood up in his carriage, waving his whip to attract attention, and hailed the captain on the bridge: "What news of the Prince?" "He is dead, doctor," was the answering hail. This, I believe, was the first announcement of the news in Nova Scotia. My father sank down in the carriage as if he had received a blow. Speaking of it afterwards, he said, "My first thought was: what will become of those boys!"

When the last war in South Africa was in progress, I never saw anyone so concerned as he was for the success of the British arms, so mortified by the blundering of British officers and the mishandling of brave men to their undoing. It was new and inexplicable to him to read in the press despatches, which he fairly devoured, of wholesale surrenders of British troops. He would throw down his paper when it came to this, spring to his feet and pace the room with flushed face and flashing eyes, his lips quivering with suppressed emotion. The war, to him, was made inglorious by such incidents, and his pride of country was severely wounded.

Canada, as yet, was young to him. Proud as he was of it, and warmly devoted to the little Province that was his own, his love of country was colored by United Empire Loyalist traditions and

found headquarters, so to speak, where old-time colonists locate? "home"—the old home-land.

I need not dwell upon his inflexible conscience and its power, his exalted sense of what was right and what was wrong. This phase of his character shades into those attributes of the man which I have already designated as fundamental. He brought to the judgment seat of conscience the very minutiae of life. Conscience judged righteous judgments for his guidance, because his God was on the throne of his life and guided conscience. Dr. E. M. Saunders, in the tribute which is found in the last preceding chapter, has touched this chord, which, vibrating sweet and full and strong throughout the harmonies of the life we now consider, blended with compelling power into the very *motif* of that life. There remains to be suggested that it is men endowed as he was in this particular respect and given to the cultivation of conscience as was he, who make and purify the public conscience by the very impress of their own upon society. Of such are the leaven and the salt. Faith wanes, society decays without their influence. They are too few.

There were two characteristics of my father which I cannot refrain from mentioning here. They are worthy of all respect and of imitation, none the less so because they appear to be rather uncommon. These may seem, to some, insignificant; but there is nothing little to the really great in spirit, and it is frequently the little things in conduct that most graphically illustrate the man. Especially is this true in the domain of conscience. He was an inexorable debt payer. He thought it wrong to owe money, or to purchase anything which could not be paid for at the time. This extended to the smallest current accounts in his domestic economy, and even to the harassing of tradesmen who were slow in rendering him their bills. "Keep out of debt, no matter what it is," was one of his maxims; and he would illustrate to his family the consequence of its neglect, from the history of many a family he had known. Promptness in the discharge of all duty was the other trait I have in mind; the performance of any work on the day when it was due, the doing of the hard things first, and at once. Often would he quote, and enforce by example, the somewhat trite but much neglected rule: "Never put off for to-morrow what you can do to-day." By its observance his own work was always ready and on time.

Though I would hesitate to enter upon any discussion of his qualifications in a professional respect, or of the elements of his success in the profession which he adorned, yet there were certain characteristics made manifest in his practice which, as tending to explain success and deserving of imitation, it will be well to notice. It must be premised, of course, that the main

elements of success in his professional career were not of his own choice or discoverable in his methods. The most successful physician, or the surgeon of the lion's heart, the eagle's eye, and the lady's hand, like a true poet, is born, not made. So, the fundamental qualifications for his profession, which most radically distinguished him, were constitutional, or of his very organization. As Emerson expresses it, the calling was in his character. "Each man has his own vocation. The talent is the call."

In his professional labors, he impressed one as being filled with a deep-seated, constant, and, on occasion, anxious sense of responsibility for the great interests, the issues of health, of life and death, which were entrusted to his care. It was his duty that such interests should not suffer. Here conscience reigned supreme. It colored every endeavor, every phase of him as a practitioner. Success for any personal fame or emolument that might come to him out of it all never seemed to him a factor in his work.

He was remarkable in the untiring industry bestowed upon his cases in study and research. He had that infinite capacity for taking pains, which is called, by the short-sighted, genius. After the hardest day of work, night and the small hours of the succeeding morning would find him seated at his table strewn and piled with books, the latest medical periodicals and his own case-books—searching out, absorbing knowledge for application to his current practice, or deep in thought evolving some expedient for the morrow, or sometimes merely reading "to keep up." His painstaking thoroughness was nowhere more conspicuous than in his methods of arriving at a diagnosis. The patient, and others who could testify, were exhaustively questioned and cross-examined upon symptoms, their origin and progress, personal and family history, habits of life, diet, and some things that to the unknowing would appear irrelevant. Careful notes of information so derived were made and afterwards transcribed into a case-book. The many volumes of these books which he accumulated, annotated with records of the treatment and results obtained, became his text-books of experience, most valuable to him and a working reference library in themselves. His thorough-going physical examination of a patient was equally remarkable. Having "suffered many things of many physicians" in my own person, both in the United States and Canada, all of them eminent men, I have found but one out of all the number who was comparable to my father in point of thoroughness in the two respects which I have mentioned. Since his death this same characteristic of him has been incidentally mentioned to me by several of his patients as a circumstance in his methods which impressed them. In treatment, both as surgeon and physician, he was quick to think,

fertile and ready of resource, never at a loss to know what should be done, and how to do it on the moment. But there is a sealed portal here through which it is not given unto us to enter with him. We cannot discuss or illustrate the details of actual medical practice, nor follow within the arena of the operating room. His inviolate reticence on all these things formed part of his code of honor and marked his lofty sense of the ethics of his calling. The limitations of any writer not of the profession would, at all events, forbid intrusion here.

Yet of the open, known and conspicuous traits of this physician, moving from house to house, alert and eager in his ministry of healing and good will to men, there is somewhat yet to say. That subtle, indescribable thing which we call personal magnetism was in him a quality decidedly pronounced. I do not mean that he was conscious of any power over patients through what is called animal magnetism or hypnotism, though by the exertion of his compelling power of will and the habit of command he would frequently and beneficially arouse to self-control, and dominate the weaker-minded, the neurotic patient or the victim of hysteria. But unconsciously to him the mere charm of his kindly, genial, assuring, conquering personality wrought irresistibly upon the minds and sensibilities of patients, securing confidence, begetting hope and winning love. The sufferer felt at once that here was a man surcharged with tender sympathy, one who fain would share the burden if he could. A gentle, tireless solicitude, that was brotherly toward the elder, fatherly to the younger patient, was evidenced in all his actions in the sick-room, stamped in the very expression of the countenance and radiating in the sunny smile which, even as it lighted up his face, appeared to shed an influence of bright content about the pillow of the sick. His very presence would become a source of seeming strength and courage to the sufferer, who, impatiently awaiting the quick, springing footsteps in the hall, the cheery greeting and the laughing pleasantry for the family below, would often say: "It was like sunshine in the room when *he* came in." The very tone and manner of the habitual query: "How do you feel to-day?" or the mere gentle touch of "the lady's hand," while inspiring trustful hope, bore in upon the consciousness a sense of that quality of sympathy which is only born of love. Yet, gentle, tender, full of sympathy as he was, he was most decided with the patient and the household, firm, and would enforce obedience as one who had the right. He was a noble type of the sympathetic physician—unhardened in his sensibilities by many years' familiarity with human suffering.

Even a chance sight of suffering in a public place moved him to kindly sympathy, and relief. Some one told me, not long since, that he saw my father once on a ferry boat attracted by a

stranger, evidently poor, whose ill-clad, wasted frame was racked by a distressing cough. A prescription, hastily penciled, was handed to this poor fellow, with a sum of money and the kindly, quiet words: "You must not neglect that cough. Get this made up and I think it will help you." That was characteristic.

On his seventy-sixth birthday (1898) my mother presented to him an engraved copy of the celebrated painting, "The Doctor," by Luke Fildes. When she had conducted him to where it hung, he stood long before it, tears welled in his eyes and overflowed, and he was speechless from emotion. He was an old man then, grown old amid many just such scenes in humble homes as that depicted by the artist; but the picture thus strangely, strongly stirred his sympathetic spirit. In it was the touch of nature that made him kin to the whole world of human sorrow that he knew, and knew too well. Who can tell what moving memories of many a like living picture were evoked from mind by this mere "counterfeit presentment" of an episode so commonplace in his experience—but rather, how in that hour he lived through again and bore once more the sorrows of the poor!

A significant feature of his whole professional career was the uniformly friendly relations maintained between him and all other members of the profession. On the part of those practitioners who were most intimately associated with him and therefore knew him best there was for him a real and warm affection. His kindly, sympathetic interest in his juniors won their love. His spirit of unselfish helpfulness found gratification in finding practice for beginners, and in aiding them, out of his experience, in their difficult cases. They felt always free to go to him for counsel, or to make him the confidant of their troubles. To juniors he was known as "Uncle Daniel," a nickname of affection which prevailed in the profession, but always reverently applied. Among seniors, he was a stranger to anything like a spirit of jealousy, of emulation or of criticism. With him, all were colleagues, confrères—words he often used. He was wont to emphasize this brotherly bond of the profession. He manifested this fraternal disposition himself and was happy in the return of it by most of those who were his contemporaries, if not by all of them. The broad, tolerant spirit of fair play, mutual helpfulness and brotherhood which marked his own dealings with the whole profession was cultivated in some others through unconscious imitation. As an examiner of medical students he had the reputation of being eminently fair in the character and methods of his examinations; quick to appreciate true merit veiled by diffidence or embarrassed by lack of aptitude in expression; patient and just to all, but not to be deceived by any glib, impudent pretence.

A not less significant feature of his practice is seen in his

dealings with those who were his debtors for professional service. Of that large class of persons who, while able to pay the doctor, are wilfully, dishonestly neglectful of the obligation, *sine die*, he was perhaps too tolerant. He never sued for a professional account but once, and that was when a man denied that services charged for had been rendered to his family. This was a challenge of professional and personal honor. A writ was promptly issued—and the fellow paid the bill. Large sums upon the books went uncollected, for want of time, perhaps, to look after the evasive and delinquent, but oftener far, for lack of inclination to do so. When he closed his practice finally, the books of account which represented what it owed him were considered sealed forever. Nor would he hear remonstrance on the subject. "If any people want to pay," he said, "they know where I am to be found." Some did. Perhaps some others thought that he was rich and therefore not in need of money—a plea for stealing that is much in vogue. Rich he was, but not in money, which he did not esteem for self.

When he was gone to his account: "How much did he leave? What was he worth?" Thus the prying, busybody, money-addled world spirit. Well, he left it all; but what? The answer is not far to seek. Marcus Aurelius wrote: "Every man is worth just so much as the things are worth about which he busies himself." What was his worth? His children and his children's children point with pardonable pride, and gratefully, to the stainless record of his nobly busy life, to its precious memories, to "a cloud of witnesses," out of all classes of his fellow men, who watched and knew that life and felt the power of its sweet beneficence. When he lay dead, a man who knew remarked: "He was too good to die rich." According to the vulgar estimate, he died comparatively poor. Had he been a servant of the time-spirit, this, with his abilities and opportunities, had not been. But he served God; and by the grace of God he earned and bequeathed to all who should come after him the incorruptible, unfading value of his life, expressed in terms of the worth of things about which he busied himself: Godliness first, "profitable unto all things;" then: "whatsoever things are true, whatsoever things are honest, whatsoever things are just, whatsoever things are pure, whatsoever things are lovely, whatsoever things are of good report," if there were "any virtue" he thought on these things and followed them.

Said Carlyle: "In the being and in the working of a faithful man is there already (as all faith from the beginning gives assurance) a something that pertains not to this wild death-element of time; that triumphs over time and is, and will be when time shall be no more."

Grown gray in labor, the heavy tasks laid down and from all

mortal labor free, crowned with honor and revering love, he who is the subject of these memoirs has entered on eternal life, for which his whole existence here had fitted him. In mortal life his influence was great; now that he has put on immortality, it may be greater. Though his mortal form be dust, yet "ever near us, though unseen," the shadow of his spirit will rest upon us, stimulating to reflection and inspiring to action. Though his tongue be still in death, memory will put a tongue into every gentle, loving act of his, which will summon us to imitate his efforts and to emulate his example. Such a man as he rests from earthly labors; he does not die. A great orator has said: "How poor this world would be without its graves, without the memory of its noble dead. Only the voiceless speak forever." If this be true, no prouder mound than yonder unpretentious tomb which hides thy dust, sweet spirit, shall dot thy native land; no voice, clear and persuasive from the realm of the voiceless, lead us more nobly on than thine!

THE END.

APPENDICES

APPENDIX "A."

RECOLLECTIONS OF TRAVEL—TWO OCCASIONS WHEN MY FATHER WAS MISTAKEN FOR A CLERGYMAN.

Contributed by my sister Fanny.

"In the summer of 1893 father and I spent three weeks in Cape Breton and Guysboro County, going by rail to Heatherton, driving from there by private conveyance to Guysboro town; from there we went by boat to Mulgrave, and thence by boat through St. Peter's Canal and the lakes to Sydney, by way of Baddeck and Whycocomagh; and then to Mulgrave again and on to Canso. While at Canso a doctor called at our hotel and asked for Dr. Parker. Our genial landlady, Mrs. W. by name, said: "There is no such person here; but a Presbyterian minister and his daughter arrived last night by the boat." There was no end of a laugh on the part of the doctor and father when they met on the street next day.

"We visited the Hazel Hill cable station, and while there met the, then, Vice-President of the Commercial Cable Company, Mr. Ward, who offered us a trip up to Mulgrave on the S.S. "Mackay-Bennett," in preference to returning in a very uncomfortable and malodorous small steamer—an offer which was eagerly accepted. We were royally entertained while on board the cable ship, the trip taking about four hours. There were on board, besides ourselves, Mr. Ward, his wife and son, of New York, a party of ladies and gentlemen from Hazel Hill who came up for the trip and returned the same evening.

"The other incident I recall was in the spring of 1895, while in Washington. One evening father and I attended a large negro Baptist church. It was a beautiful building, with a grand pipe organ, and the music was excellent. The pastor, whose name was the Rev. Arthur Brooks, a fine specimen of a Southern negro preacher, gave us, as father afterwards said, one of the best sermons he had ever listened to. His delivery and language were both fine, and at times he was most eloquent. The deacons, four in number, sat up in front of the pulpit on a lower platform. One of them, an old man, with pure white wool, and an extensive *shirt bosom bedecked with an enormous diamond pin*, had divers and sundry naps during the sermon. Before the service began,

the minister arose and swept down upon father, who shrank from observation by trying hard to make himself small; but, alas, it was of no use. The parson mistook him for a brother parson, of the white persuasion, and wished him to take a seat in the pulpit and assist in the service. All I could hear was poor father protesting vigorously: 'But I am a medical man—a medical man!' Finally he was left in peace and we enjoyed the remainder of the exercises very much."

APPENDIX "B."

TWO OF THE LECTURES BEFORE THE MECHANICS' INSTITUTE.

VITALITY.

Session 1846-7.

LADIES AND GENTLEMEN:

The choice of a scientific subject, for an occasion like the present, often causes the lecturer more trouble than the actual preparation of one after a selection has been made; at least I have found it so in my limited experience, and when catering for your tastes this evening had nearly concluded to discuss some dozen, but as each one suggested itself to my mind it was rejected, not from being void of interest but either from its having appeared before you within a limited period, or from the difficulty of rendering it popular.

At length out of the many *Vitality* was selected, to which I beg your attention whilst I briefly consider its more important and interesting phenomena. In extent the subject is vast, for vitality, as it relates to earth, was born with its creation; the two as to existence are equal, but whilst the latter (as is the belief of the Christian world) must eventually have an end, a period of non-existence, the former looks forward to no such era; its watchword is, and ever will be, *the future*. No word or collection of words in any language can convey so much that is important, so much that is interesting to the thoughtful mind, as that now under consideration. Its existence implies life, its want death. Look where you may on the earth's surface, into the depths of the ocean, or high above either into the atmosphere which bounds our globe, and on all will you find the word engraven, and that too in forms so numerous as to be placed far beyond the numerical conception of any human mind. Even the drop of water which I now suspend from the point of my finger contains numberless animalcules, and these are all endowed with "vitality," which, by the aid of a microscope would, to a certain extent, be perceptible to the sense of vision of any individual present. The subject embraces much of import in connection with metaphysics, but it is not my object so to discuss it, but rather to view it physiologically; and in so doing I shall endeavor to strip it, in so far as I conveniently can, of technicalities, avoiding abstruse and unprofitable theories, and to bring it before you in a manner adapted for the occasion. Different definitions of *the term* have been given by scientific men, but to these I need not refer, as they, as well as all who have given the subject consideration, must agree in the following, viz., that "Vitality" is a power inherent in certain organized bodies, to resist decomposition and putrefaction, the chemical relations constituting organization of their particles preponderating over other chemical relations or affinities, the tendency of which latter is to produce disorganization and death of the bodies in which this peculiar principle holds its seat; and further, that vital action or life obviously involves and conveys to the mind the idea of *constant change*. Thus we do not consider any being as alive which is not undergoing some continual alteration perceptible to the senses, though in very many instances this alteration may be so trifling in its amount as scarcely to be recognized unless by frequent observation and comparison. One cannot but be impressed with this idea or fact whilst viewing, under almost any circumstances, the face of nature. The flowers of the field,

the blades of grass which constitute the aliment of, and indirectly yield "Vitality" to a large portion of the animal creation, are examples familiar to you all. Our footsteps may crush, or the cold of northern climes may depress their vital actions, changing the color of the grass from a beautiful green to a sombre brown, yet a brief period suffices to effect a visible alteration, for no sooner has their wintry protector, "snow," been removed than we perceive color and life in all its vigor restored to them. This then, is one of the many instances in which change and vitality are to be seen walking hand in hand.

It may be asked what is the condition of a seed which remains unchanged during a period of centuries, and at last vegetates when placed in favorable circumstances, as if it had been ripened but the year before? To this, I would reply, that the seed is not alive in the common acceptation of the word, that is, it undergoes no change, but is possessed of the *property* of vitality, or the power of performing vital actions, when aroused to them by the necessary stimuli, such as warmth, moisture and air. Its condition is closely allied to that of a human being in a profound sleep; he then is not a feeling, thinking man, but is capable of feeling and thinking when aroused from his slumber and his mind put into activity by impressions of external objects. The analogy is more striking, and, indeed, more perfect, if we compare the buried seed to a human being in a state of "trance," in which it is sometimes impossible to detect the slightest symptoms of existing life; and the want or absence of decomposition alone informs us that *dormant vitality* still holds its seat in the apparently inanimate mass. From the observations already made you will have perceived that vitality and life are synonymous terms, and that organization is essential to both. In attempting to define the one I have given you the physiological definition of the other; throughout my lecture, therefore, the two terms will be used indiscriminately.

I have in passing made reference to the animal and vegetable kingdoms, as possessing this principle, and would observe that even in the lowest grades of each life must exist, otherwise they would be classed as belonging to the mineral world. The despised *worm*, which changes its position only line by line, is endowed with vitality as well as the highest of the animal creation, not even excepting man, in whom the most elevated state of organization and existence is to be observed. *Sponge* is a regularly organized and living substance, and from its possessing some of the properties of the animal kingdom belongs to the same great division as ourselves. The *lichens* adhering to the sides of rocks are vegetables of a very low order, still they live, vitality marking their birth and progressive increase. An example of a body or substance void of life is a stone which is regular and crystalline in its formation, being composed of atoms aggregated so as to form a mass, but it possesses not vitality. Change is not inherent in it, and any alterations that may take place, as increase, etc., are due entirely to external causes; hence, it takes its rank in the *Mineral*, or lowest of the three kingdoms into which naturalists have divided the contents of our globe. With these preliminary and explanatory remarks I now hasten to consider the primary and ultimate formation of all organized bodies possessing vitality, a subject deeply interesting, which was formerly involved in much darkness and doubt, but the discoveries of modern physiologists, effected principally through the medium of the microscope, have tended vastly to dispel these, substituting in very many instances for vague theories the light of established facts.

All substances perceptible to the senses, whether animate or inanimate, are composed of an aggregation of atoms almost inconceivably minute which are combined and held together by "cohesive attraction," a power exerting its influence throughout nature, and which, but for the opposing force of repulsion (this being brought into action by the expansive qualities of heat or caloric) would render earth a lifeless void by drawing together everything it contained into one condensed mass:

of inanimate matter. But so nicely has the Creator of the universe balanced these two contending forces that the one beautifully neutralizes the effects of the other, and the harmony of nature consequently remains undisturbed. Animals, vegetables and minerals alike, partake of this atomic formation, but how different the result of the combination in each, how diversified in appearance, structure and action are the three kingdoms. Vitality characterizes the two former, while the latter, speaking of it as a whole, is a collection of lifeless particles.

In the animal and vegetable worlds these atoms may readily be resolved into their constituent principles, carbon, hydrogen, oxygen and nitrogen. The three latter are transparent gases, and you are all familiar with the former under the name of charcoal. At least these four elementary bodies, chemically combined, compose nearly the whole of the animal and vegetable structure; a small amount only of iron and sulphur, with some saline substances forming the residue.

In both these living kingdoms numerous atoms combine to form vesicles, or cells (little globular bodies), from which arise all structures possessed of vitality.

It may appear strange to many of you that from particles of matter so small as to be imperceptible to the unaided vision (measuring only from 1-250 to 1-1000 part of an inch in diameter), the most majestic trees of our forests owe their early existence, as well as their present dimensions, but strange though it may seem it is true, and it will now be my object to explain to you the development of the higher classes of vegetables from the cells contained within what is commonly called the seed, and to trace them from this primitive state to maturity.

Within the external envelope of the seed are two distinct sets of cells, one constituting the *germ* of the future tree, and the other its nourishment—both descriptions, and indeed each vesicle possesses, as regards vitality, an independent existence, but on the application of the essentials to germination, viz., heat, moisture and air, the germ or embryo preys upon and derives nourishment and life from the cells, which everywhere surround it. This then is the first vital act in the process of vegetation. The "germ" soon becomes elongated and changed in character, at the expense of the surrounding cells, when it bursts through the external envelope, presenting two pointed extremities or shoots, the superior eventually forming what is known as the stock or stem of a plant, and the inferior its root. From this period to the termination of its life, the vegetable derives its nutriment from the earth and air, the little rootlets, thus early formed, acting as so many mouths for its future sustenance. We will now fancy the incipient stem above the surface, and its leaflets expanded and performing all the functions of leaves. How then or by what principle of vital action has it reached this state, and how after having opened itself to the light of day does a thing so trifling, which could be crushed to atoms by our footsteps, become in time the English oak, the Norway pine, or our own stately forest tree? Why, merely by the generation of new cells, and the extension of those already in existence, for each individual cell, the necessary aliment being supplied it, possesses and inherits the power of constructing others similar in character to itself, and these again in their turn produce more and so on *ad infinitum*, the whole being moulded into form by a law of nature concerning which we have no knowledge. One of the most surprising facts in physiology is, that as the mass increases by the formation and development of additional cells (these all being precisely similar, as far as human observation has been able to discern), the different tissues entering into its composition, should be so diversified in appearance, actions and general construction. While I can offer no satisfactory explanation as to the cause I can give you the mode in which these various parts of a plant are developed, that is to say, I can describe the metamorphosis of these cells into the woody fibre, sap vessels, etc., which enter into the structure of a large portion of the kingdom now

under consideration. And first, let us look at the formation of the fibrous tissues, which takes place as follows: Numbers of elongated cells are so arranged in parallel rows that their extremities meet, the one running into the other, as it were. These, at first independent cells, gradually by the power of cohesive attraction assisted by the pressure of surrounding parts and a vital affinity which is exercised between the different vesicles themselves, assume the form of lengthy vegetable fibres which constitute the bulk of what we designate wood. The vessels which convey the sap from the roots to the leaves have an origin in common with the woody fibre, that is, vesicles produce both structures, but while the one is a nearly solid elongated mass, the other is a canal or tube running through the entire plant from its base to its summit. Here also parallel rows of cells, less elliptical than in the last case, arrange themselves one upon another with the most nice exactness and those parts which coalesce (these being in the axis of the plant's growth) are gradually seen under the microscope to disappear, the sides of the vesicles adhering closely to each other so as in the end to form a perfect tube, adapted for the transmission of fluids. Precisely as here described are formed the spiral vessels and other tissues entering into even the most delicate parts of a plant, as for example the leaves or lungs on which the vitality of the vegetable kingdom so much depends.

The subject of my lecture, not unlike a tree, branches in all directions, consequently in the short space allotted for its delivery but a glance, and that a contracted one, can be taken of its more important divisions.

Nutrition is involved in, and indeed is essential to, vitality, both in vegetable and animal life. We will therefore, without further preface, briefly discuss the subject in relation to the former.

While the stem of a plant ascends, mechanically supported by its skeleton, the woody fibre, the root, takes an opposite direction and dips downwards, more or less obliquely, towards the earth's centre, burrowing its way through places that you would imagine impossible. Why these contrary courses should be adopted, by different parts of the same structure, seems difficult of explanation. Doubtless the influence exerted on vegetables by light and the atmosphere, may be connected in some degree with the ascent of the stem, and in this way I would theoretically account for the conical form assumed by the branches of trees, as in the oak, pine, etc.—in which we observe the lowest arms extending in a horizontal direction, beyond those above, as if for the purpose of seeking light and air, without the pale of the branches which surmount them. The descent of the root may perhaps be attributed in part to its wedge-like form, the progressive increase which it is undergoing, causing it to exert a mechanical action in its burrowing course, and here it is probable that the *attraction of gravity* may lend a helping hand. However, while these hypotheses are not improbable, the matter for the present must be referred, with many other unsettled points in vegetable physiology, to the "Vital Phenomena attending Vegetation." The roots of some plants are single, while others are numerous, diverging and extending in all directions from the main portion, as in trees, where they act like so many anchors, chaining, as it were, the mass above to the one locality, while from their increased extent of surface, they are enabled to glean from the earth a greater amount of nutriment than if there was less subdivision. The spongioles, or extreme ends of the roots, are alone endowed with the power of secreting, or absorbing from the earth that which nourishes and affords increase to the vegetable. All other parts beneath the surface act as conductors to transmit the nutriment so absorbed, and to give mechanical support to the parts above. These little extremities are possessed of a high degree of vitality, and without them no plant could exist. They do not select all matters indiscriminately that come within the sphere of their action; on the contrary, they exercise their selective endowments with the nicest distinction, collecting and transmitting only such

matters as are suitable for the growth and life of the structures with which they are connected. These are, for the most part, carbonic acid, and water, holding various substances in solution, the less nutritious portions being rejected and left for other purposes. Thus it is, that after a succession of crops, the fields which have borne them become unable, their nutritive qualities having been impaired, to produce further, and hence the necessity of a rotation, each one requiring somewhat less of nutriment from the land than that which preceded it. The loss of vegetative power in land, and its inability to yield sustenance for a series of crops of the same description, has been attributed, in part of late years, to the property discovered to belong to roots, viz., that of excreting certain substances injurious to the growth of the species producing it, and perhaps in a less degree to vegetation in general. Thus the poppy tribe throw off by their roots a matter closely allied to opium. The deadly nightshade acts in a similar manner—the excretions of its roots being nearly the same as the belladonna in common use, which, while it acts in a manner inimical to the repetition of the same growth, is supposed not to exert such a deleterious influence on other descriptions of vegetables. At least this is a theory lately advanced, in relation to vegetable nutrition, which, I doubt not, will be found by further experiment and observation to be in a great measure correct. This then, it is probable, is partly the cause why wheat cannot be grown in two successive seasons from the same soil, or at least, if it is, the quality the second year will be very much inferior to that of the first. It is a singular fact and worthy of remark, as it is corroborative evidence of what has just been stated, that a successive change of crops has a tendency to destroy noxious insects, as those which are produced by one crop cannot be supported by another of a different description.

But to return—the *Spongioles* are cellular, and the material which they have selected and absorbed from the earth passes from cell to cell to the body of the root, enters the tubes, or vessels, and by them is conveyed to the lungs, or leaves of the plant, where, being spread out in meshes of delicate vessels, it is acted on by the air and light, the former receiving certain of its constituents in exchange for others; it is thus rendered nutritious and vitalizing, and is transmitted by a second and distinct set of vessels to every part of the vegetable structure. Those parts, or islands of the plant, which do not receive their supply directly from these nutritious vessels, absorb it by a vital act, inherent in the cells composing them, which draws, as it were, the vegetable blood, or purified sap, from vesicle to vesicle until at length it reaches the most central cells. It is in this way that the pith of trees derives its nourishment, which is transmitted in a fluid state through the cells composing their medullary rays, or those lines observed in a transverse section, radiating from the centre to the circumference. From this purified sap are formed the successive annual deposits, observed in the higher classes of vegetables, the skin or bark, and the various secretions, oils, etc., which pervade the different parts of a plant. It is this, its blood, absorbed by the spongioles, and purified by the leaves, that nourishes and enlarges, that gives to and sustains vitality in the vegetable structure. In short it is to it (the plant) "the food of life." You may ask how or by what power it is, that the sap ascends to the leaves, and is again distributed to every part of the tree, when no heart, or propelling centre exists in their organization. This is a question easier asked than solved, for, notwithstanding the great amount of research expended on the subject, we still remain, and probably will continue, in ignorance as to the true cause of this vital action. Many theories have been propounded, such as capillary attraction, vascular contractility, galvanism, etc. Yet I regret to state that no one of these is based on a sound foundation. All have failed when put to the test of a correct physiological analysis. It is therefore enough for me to add as an *ultimate fact* that such actions do occur, and to confess my ignorance of the principle on which they are effected. The foregoing observations are applicable principally to the

higher classes of vegetables, having an origin from seeds, in which we observe organization and vitality more strikingly developed than in those lower in the scale of existence, some of which will now be the subject of a few remarks.

The Cryptogamic division embraces those plants having no flowers, such as "seaweeds," lichens, fungi, etc. This class also differs from those already mentioned in possessing no seeds. In origin they are cellular, and indeed their whole structure is nothing more or less than an aggregation of vesicles, which do not, as in other plants, undergo changes and become fibres and tubes, but continue, throughout their life, simply as cells, endowed with certain vital properties necessary and adequate to their existence, growth and reproduction. Possessing no canals to convey their nutritive principles from part to part, it necessarily follows that the cells of which they are altogether composed, must perform the office of vessels, and this they do most effectually, by some hidden power, as little understood as the circulation in vegetables of vascular structure. Suffice it to say, that the aliment, derived either from the earth, water or the atmosphere, passes in a liquid or gaseous state through the walls of the different vesicles, nourishing and imparting vitality to each in its course.

"*Algae*," or seaweeds, are the vegetation of the deep, where they afford nutriment, and consequently life, to thousands of the animal creation, making the ocean their dwelling place. Besides they serve other important ends in nature, such as filling up, by their constant increase, the beds of rivers, and changing the course of streams and currents. The Red Snow, discovered by Parry and other Arctic travellers and formerly classed among the Fungi, has more recently been described as belonging to the Algous division of cryptogamic plants.

Lichens possess a low degree of life, and are attached generally to inanimate masses, as rocks, walls, etc., into the crevices of which their minute tendrils push themselves, thus fixing the plant so firmly to the spot that mechanical means often fail in effectually removing them. But what force cannot do, a limited knowledge of vegetable nutrition will here effect, for these cryptogamic growths derive sustenance principally from the moisture of the air, and if covered, if only for a short time with earth, light being absent, death and decomposition follow, when their removal will be easy. I am induced to make this remark, from knowing the difficulty persons frequently experience in keeping "tombstones" clear of this species of vegetation, which not only renders the inscription indistinct, but also by degrees destroys the stones from the singular property possessed by them of generating and depositing "oxalic acid," which, acting chemically on the material, makes small holes and fissures, in which water collects, and this expanding during its conversion into ice, the stone is thus by degrees mechanically broken, so that in the course of time hardly a trace of it is left to mark the spot beneath which has been deposited a human frame robbed by death of its vitality. Slow, diminutive, and almost imperceptible though this action may be, yet it is one of the modes by which nature, in a series of centuries, has ordained that mountains should be raised to the same level as the earth, on which originally stood their base.

Placed lowest in the scale of vegetative existence, we find the "Fungi," familiar to you all in a variety of forms, as puffballs, toadstools, mushrooms, &c. Besides these, mould, mildew and fermentation are fungous growths, and these constitute the lowest forms in which vitality can be conceived to exist. They live but to die, for even the highest classes of fungi retain life but for a brief period, it may be for days, or even longer, but oftener we may count their duration by hours. A fungus in dying resolves itself into myriads of imperceptible particles, each of which is a reproductive germ, capable, the essentials to its vegetation being at hand, of producing a plant of the same species; and these minute atoms pervade all nature, at all times and seasons. We move not an inch, or lay our hands on anything tangible without coming in contact with some of them, and even at every inspiration we draw into our

lungs countless numbers of vegetables. The disease called "Rust" which so often attacks wheat growing in soil over-manured, or in damp situations, or seasons, is of fungous growth, the germs producing it having had their dormant vitality aroused by one or the other of the above causes. These germs, being incorporated in the substance of the wheat, before it is sown, well informed farmers, to avoid loss consequent on Rust, destroy them before the grain is put in the ground by soaking it in saline, or corrosive solutions. Decay, incipient or advanced, or a tendency thereto, is absolutely essential to the production of this species of vegetation. This fact is beautifully and poetically expressed in the following lines by Pope, who says:—

" See dying vegetables life sustain,
See life dissolving vegetate again;
All forms that perish other forms supply,
By turns we catch the vital breath and die."

Thus, you will have observed that old shoes are more liable to acquire mould than new ones both being in situations equally damp. Mould is often formed in the very centre of cheese, and it may have reached this locality in more ways than one. It is perfectly possible that the cow may have eaten some of these fungous germs when grazing, and parted with them again in her milk, where they remained during the various processes employed in manufacturing it into this article of commerce, to be developed, at some future period, in its very heart. But, while there is no improbability in this, the more easy and satisfactory way of accounting for it is, that while in the state of curd the germs were deposited on it, and there remained dormant and imperceptible until circumstances induced a vegetative action.

Fermentation, familiar to all housekeepers who make their own yeast, is partly a chemical process, and partly a fungous vegetation. By the former decomposition is commenced, when the mass is seen to increase, by the development of the germ, which before lay in an inert state.

A very singular species of fungous vegetation is that observed in damp wine cellars, where a kind of mould collects around the walls and corks of the bottles, the vapour of the wine serving as their *stimulus* as well as nourishment. Philosophers have not yet discovered whether an excess of the stimulus produces in these low-born vegetables the same effects (*viz.* intoxication) as in certain higher members of the animal creation. However, both man and mould, when under its pernicious influence, adhere to the principle and adopt the motto "of a short life and a merry one." Any quantity of wine escaping in a moist and ill-ventilated cellar will resolve itself into a large and more substantial description of Fungi, which is frequently observed in the wine vaults of the London docks, where also this species of vegetation may be seen hanging in dark and cloud-like masses from the brick arches which surmount the buildings. A singular circumstance relating to this subject came under the notice of Sir Joseph Banks. Having a cask of wine, rather too sweet for immediate use, he ordered it to be placed in a cellar to ripen. At the end of three years he directed his butler to ascertain the state of the wine; when on attempting to open the cellar door, he could not effect it, in consequence of some powerful obstacle. The door was therefore cut down, when the cellar was found to be completely filled with a firm fungous vegetable production, so substantial as to require an axe for its removal. This appeared to have grown from, or to have been nourished by, the decomposed particles of the wine, the cask being empty and buoyed up to the ceiling, where it was supported by the surface of the fungus. Had Sir Joseph been a superstitious individual, he might very readily have construed this into an admonition from nature to relinquish all intimacy with "Bacchus" and the juice of the grape, and take instead of wine that drink which she has so abundantly provided for all living things, vegetable as well as animal, *viz.* cold water, but like those of the olden time he took not, I believe, this crypto-

gamic hint, but kept on in the even tenor of his way, and enjoyed in moderation life while it lasted.

Professor Monnen, of Germany, in 1845 produced a well written article on the disease or rot which in that year first attacked the potato. In this he attributes the affection to be one of vegetable parasitic production; and says that by microscopic observation he detected a fungous growth called "Black mould" (*Botrytis Nigra*) occupying all parts so diseased, which he imagined was the cause of the affection, and as a preventive to its further progress recommended potato depots, cellars, etc., to be thoroughly cleansed, sprinkled with lime and the seed to be well washed with a solution of lime, bluestone and sea salt; which acts precisely similar to the corrosive and saline solutions mentioned when speaking of the rust of wheat. Knowing as we do that these fungous germs pervade all nature, this explanation, to an unscientific person, would appear not only plausible, but highly probable, but if you will bear in mind the following sentence, which escaped me only a few minutes since, and which I gave not as theoretical, but as an established fact, you will at once perceive the fallacy of the Professor's arguments. I then said that "decay, incipient or advanced, or a tendency thereto, is absolutely essential to the production of this species of vegetation" (the fungous). Hence the necessity of the actual existence of the disease, or an established tendency to it, before the appearance of the "black mould" in question. Monnen, either forgetting or being ignorant of the known fact above alluded to, has merely given us effect for cause; and notwithstanding the many inquiries instituted for the detection of its origin, we still remain in ignorance as to the true nature of the potato disease.

Before leaving the subject of fungous vegetation, I would briefly remark that, living as these plants do on decaying animal and vegetable matter, they, in common with certain tribes of insects, serve a wise purpose, and are subservient to a beautiful law of nature by which the putrescence of the atmosphere, following such decay, is prevented, the fetid exhalations arising therefrom being absorbed by them as nutriment, hence the term "scavengers of nature," sometimes applied to fungi, is by no means inappropriate.

An instance of vegetable decay in the higher orders of plants, producing aliment for, and thus indirectly yielding vitality to, themselves, and those of an equal rank, as well as to the lowest class of plants, is to be observed in the falling of leaves from trees, which, undergoing decomposition, are converted into carbonic acid, water, etc., and these are absorbed by the spongioles as vegetable food. Here is an example of a plant actually feeding on that which but a short period before was a part and parcel of itself. Another instance, though not exactly a parallel one, of the destruction and death of some of the vegetable creation being the means of giving life to other members of the same kingdom, has no doubt been observed by all present. I allude to a forest being destroyed by fire, and the ground on which it stood soon becoming covered with plants altogether different in appearance, though not in structure, from those burnt. The explanation of which is, that comparatively deep beneath the surface seeds have existed probably for centuries, but for want of the essentials to germination, viz., heat, moisture and air, their dormant vitality has never been aroused until the fire by its expansive and pulverising properties gives free ingress to them, when young plants of a different class from those destroyed spring up with surprising rapidity. Here is a remarkable example of the vital principle remaining inert for a period of unknown length being aroused from its trance of ages to activity immediately on the application of the necessary stimuli. The existence and duration of the vital spark, so to speak, under such circumstances, is one of the most surprising features embraced by the subject of my lecture, and cannot fail to strike us all with wonder and astonishment, indicating as it does in Nature's language, which is vastly stronger than words, the unlimited resources of Nature's Architect, who destroys by His element a structure of His own formation, only that, by its death, birth may be given to another equally chaste and beautiful in its appearance and construction.

A partial cessation in the vital acts of the vegetable creation is observed in all northern climes during the winter. The leaves of a tree having fallen off necessarily implies that its growth has for the time being ceased, but although it may want these, its lungs, still, unless the sap is completely consolidated by intense cold, a languid circulation is perceptible, which is again brought into full activity, on the approach of spring, by the expansion of the buds, which open, and in so doing, either by producing a vacuum or from some other cause, act as a stimulus to the fluids.

So much time has been occupied in discussing vegetable phenomena in relation to vitality that it will not be in my power, interesting though the subject is, to dwell for any length on "*animal life*."

In distinguishing between animals and vegetables of the higher classes we find no difficulty; but it is not so when we descend to the lowest grades of the two kingdoms, where, in many instances, to decide the point requires the nicest discrimination. This leads me to draw a line of demarkation between the two, and to define each by naming certain attributes peculiar to it.

"Vegetables" are fixed to certain localities. They possess no sensibility, as far as we are able to detect. The "sensitive plant" has frequently been quoted to disprove this; however, its properties may be said to depend rather on "irritability" and its peculiar mechanism than on the existence of a nervous system. They have no stomachs, or receiving depots for food, and their nutriment consists wholly of inorganic matter. Now in animals spontaneous motion is always supposed to exist, and the greater number, if not all, even of zoophytes, if they possess not a perceptible nervous system, are endowed with sensibility. A stomach, or some modification of this organ, always characterizes animals, and it has not the power to convert inorganic into organic matter for the sustenance of the being possessing it. On the contrary, organized nutriment is essential to "*animal vitality*," hence the dependence of the one kingdom, for life, on the other.

Both creations are of cellular origin and structure, and throughout the two we observe the most striking analogies, and these are not confined to the lowest grades of each kingdom, nor to their fully developed members, but are to be seen in their highest divisions, and that, too, even in their earliest stages of existence. Thus if we contrast the egg of a bird with the seed of a tree we find this statement as to analogy verified. The yolk of the egg corresponds to the germ of the seed, and each owes its first marks of vitality to the vitalizing effects of the albumen with which it is surrounded, this being in the animal production what we know as "the white of an egg." Certain conditions are equally requisite for the development of both, as, for instance, warmth, which the seed derives from the sun's rays, and the egg from the parent; artificial heat, however, serves the same end.

I have always descended the ladder of vegetable life, commencing with the higher species and terminating with the lowest, and will now take a retrograde course, and climb, with more rapidity than I could wish, the steps of "*Animal Vitality*," beginning at its most inferior, sponge, and ending on its summit, man.

Sponges, technically termed *Porifera*, the basis or skeleton of which you are all familiar with, are the connecting link, uniting, as it were, the two living kingdoms of Nature. For a long time it was a matter of doubt to which of the two they belonged, but they are now almost universally acknowledged as members of the animal division, and this conclusion has been founded on two principal grounds, viz., on the existence of a gelatinous animal membrane, which, during the life of the sponge lines the whole interior and is in some way concerned in the production of certain nutritive actions, to be afterwards described, and also on the power of spontaneous motion possessed, though only for a brief period, by the young animal. The gelatinous membrane just mentioned is studded with small yellow opaque spots, which are all reproductive germs, and under the microscope are frequently observed to detach themselves from the parent and to assume an independent existence. At this early period it (the germ

or young sponge) is endowed with the power of moving to and fro, which it does by the aid of cilia, or hair-like appendages attached to its front aspect. Spontaneous motion is produced by these cilia being made to strike the water much as do the feet of a dog when swimming. If obstructed in its course by any resisting body it rebounds and circumnavigates it, resuming as soon as possible its original direction. In this way it paddles itself along, it may be for hours or even days, until at length, finding a convenient and desirable locality, it attaches itself to it for life. The cilia, having now served the purpose for which they were intended, drop off and are no longer perceptible. Should the embryo animal, when in motion, come in contact with another of the same species, they coalesce, and the one becomes engrafted, as it were, into the other so perfectly that in a short period no trace of two distinct germs can be observed, the two having merged into one, and now perform all their actions in common. This animal amalgamation, if I may so term it, bears a striking analogy to the process of "grafting" in the vegetable kingdom, in which a limb or bud of one tree may, by artificial means, be so attached to another as to live and perform its vital actions equally as well as when connected with the parent plant. The germ, being now stationary, soon enlarges and becomes in the course of time, by the process of cellular development, fully matured, having its soft structures deposited on, and attached to, a silicious skeleton, the sponge of everyday use.

In these larger animals, sometimes even by the naked eye, we can perceive currents of water issuing from the circular orifices with which they abound, and being scattered with opaque articles of matter in every direction. This water has entered the mass through the myriads of microscopic pores which it possesses, and has been collected within its gelatinous stomachs, from whence, after having deposited its nutritious particles it is expelled by the large orifices above named. These motions are not constant, but generally continue for a period of four to six hours, when, either from exhaustion or its nutritive wants being supplied, the animal seeks repose before resuming them again. How this forcible expulsion of the fluid is effected has not been discovered, but arguing from the general analogy existing between sponge and other zoophytes, many physiologists have concluded, perhaps prematurely, that it is of ciliary origin. Here, then (in sponges), we have evidence of animal life, and that, too, in its minimum degree. As we ascend the graduated scale of this kingdom at each progressive step, vitality presents itself to our senses in a more striking light. Not far removed from the "Porifera," as regards simplicity of construction and life, are the "Polypi," generally known as Polypes. Of these there are almost endless varieties. Sometimes several, each adequately adapted for a separate and distinct life, are collected together, living in a state of republicanism, as it were; that is, each exists as much for the good of the general mass as for itself. Oftentimes, again, myriads upon myriads are intimately associated for some common purpose, as is the case with Coral Polypes, whose object in life is to build, by secreting calcareous matter from their structure, these animal forests of the deep. In formation, as in origin, Polypes are cellular, being developed like sponge from opaque germs attached to the matured animal, which are analogous to the buds of vegetables, and consequently capable of producing others similar in character to the one from which they were detached. Although all kinds are not alike in structure and appearance, yet a concise description of one will suffice for the whole. A Polype is generally elongated in form, having a central cavity, or stomach, running its entire length; and this does away with the necessity of a vascular system, as well as very many of the more complex organs possessed by higher animals, because almost all parts of the Polype are in immediate contact with its food, and the lining membrane of the stomach absorbs and applies it directly to the economy of the animal. Its mouth opens directly into its stomach, and around its margin are hair-like appendages, which are frequently tubular. These are called the "tentacula," and

serve by their motions and contractions to propel a fluid current (containing their aliment) through the mouth into the central cavity. The tentacula are elongated by being filled with the water as it passes outward when the animal contracts itself, and this reversed current is materially aided by the "cilia" lining the inner membrane. The shortening or contraction of the tentacular tubes is effected simply by the return of the water, as they empty themselves. These few remarks embrace the general outline of structure and vital actions of the animals in question, but I cannot leave the subject without particularizing one species—the "Hydra," or fresh-water polype, which derives its name from a fabulous monster. This animal is nothing more than a short tube, having one orifice, its mouth, more dilated than the other, around which are tentacula of considerable length, for the purpose of encircling and carrying into its central cavity any minute particles they may meet with adapted for its nourishment. The Hydra is endowed with vitality of a peculiar kind and extent, and displays a remarkable tenacity of life and tendency to reproduction. Thus, as small a creature as it is, you may cut it into fifty pieces, which in a very short time will become fifty distinct animals, each of which will be as perfect an Hydra as the one originally subdivided. Besides, you may engraft one portion into any part of another, and in this way produce endless numbers of monsters. These singular phenomena are observed throughout the entire family of polypti, but not to the same extent as in the Hydra. Indeed, you may turn the creature inside out, and almost immediately that which before was its skin will be converted into its stomach, the original organ having assumed the appearance and actions of the external lining. Here we have vitality displayed in one of its most surprising and extraordinary garbs, than which a more wonderful phenomenon exists not throughout the whole domain of nature. One would hardly imagine that anything bearing analogy to the dormant vitality of vegetable seeds long buried could be found in the animal creation; still such exists in very many animalcules, and indeed even in some of the more highly developed "Annelida" or worms, which may be kept in a dry state for an indefinite period, and when moistened with water resume again their activity. The "Rotifer Redivivus," or wheel animalcule, presents a more striking instance. It can live only in water, but may be deprived of this fluid and reduced to perfect dryness. Here all vital action ceases, yet this particle of dust, after remaining for years in this state, may immediately be restored to life by the application of a drop of water, when vitality, with its accompanying phenomena, will be observed just as if it had never been removed from its native element. The "Vibrio Tritici," an animalcule resembling an eel in shape, infesting diseased wheat, and the "Filaria," a thread-like parasitic worm, dwelling in the eye of the horse, particularly in India, exhibit the same dormant state of life. Many other examples might be enumerated, but those just quoted will suffice to display the analogy to which I so recently made allusion.

To trace vitality through the different grades and classes of animals would be an endless undertaking, and even to touch them, however lightly, would require several lectures. I therefore cannot, on the present occasion, do more than recommend the subject for the study of your leisure hours, and in so doing can insure to you much that is beautiful and instructive and an ample mental recompense for the little trouble it may occasion you.

This recommendation, then, must serve as the conducting medium by which I am thus rapidly to be conveyed from the lowest rung in the ladder of animal life to its antipode, the summit, or, to adopt that which is real for the figurative, I will in conclusion briefly consider vitality in relation to the highest and greatest work of creation—man.

In viewing the subject of Life, in connection with human beings, nearly all my remarks will be more or less applicable to animals, removed, even many grades in the scale of existence, from man.

The whole of the many tissues entering into our structures—nervous,

muscular, osseous, vascular, fibrous, etc.—are formed precisely as are the fibrous and vascular systems in vegetables; that is, by the coalescing and further development of series of cells; each tissue assuming to itself certain appearances, vital actions and principles by which it may be distinguished from its fellows. Yet, while all are thus different, and apparently enjoying an independent existence, by a beautiful and incomprehensible feature of creation, the one tissue, or system of tissues, is dependent on the others for vitality. Thus if the stomach and heart wanted their muscular fibres, food could not be digested, or the blood circulated, and consequently they themselves, as well as all other parts of the human frame, would be mere collections of non-vitalized matter. *Bone* is simply the basis, or foundation, on which the other tissues are placed as superstructures. Devoid of its closely adhering envelope, the "periosteum," through the medium of which it is nourished, immediately its vitality ceases, even though it should still continue attached to the animal frame and be surrounded on all sides by living tissues. It is then lifeless, like the skeleton which ornaments the surgeon's library.

A *muscle* consists of bundles of fibres, collected within a thin sheath, each fibre entering into its composition being, as regards contractibility, independent of its neighbor, yet the whole, their accustomed stimulus being applied, act in unison as if by one common consent; concentrating their inherent contractile power for the same effort or end. Thus, if I wish to raise any object from the table, the mind, being the receptacle or source from which the wish had its origin, transmits its command through the medium of the nerves supplying certain muscles in the arm, and these, in obedience, being subservient to the will, at once make the effort and the thing is removed. In this case the stimulus is the mind which exerts its influence, by the agency of the nervous system, not on one, but on several muscles, and these act as much in concert as do the several bundles of fibres composing each. These remarks are applicable only to the voluntary division of the muscular system. The second, or involuntary set, are not subject to the will, as, for example, the heart and stomach, which are hollow, involuntary muscles, yet their vitality is as marked and their actions performed with the same energy and order as if they belonged to the voluntary class. The blood in the former, and the food in the latter, acting as their stimulus to contractility.

Nerves are generally smaller than muscles, but precisely similar as regards their structure; that is, they are composed of bundles of fibres collected together for certain ends.

I should have stated before that the fibres of the muscular system are tubular and contain a semi-fluid granular pith (so to speak) called "Sarcolemma," to which their vital actions and contractile power are to be referred. The same remarks are applicable to the nervous tissues, or fibres, which also are tubular and contain a highly vitalized fluid, on which depend all nervous phenomena. These tubular fibres of nerves vary in diameter from 1-2,000 to 1-15,000 part of an inch.

There are three descriptions of this tissue. The first two are termed "nerves of sensation and of motion," and in most instances the fibres composing each run their course within the same external envelope, without being at all connected, unless it may be in the brain. Should the point of a needle cause you pain by coming in contact with your finger, it is because it has pierced a sensitive nervous fibre. The sensation is conveyed by *this single fibre*, so small as to be imperceptible to the unaided vision, through the spinal cord to the brain, which receiving the impression, quicker than thought a command is given to a fibre, or fibres of motion, to remove the finger from the offending instrument, and this is effected by the aid of the muscular system. Here we have the explanation of the sudden jerk following the prick of a needle, and it is also a practical definition of the two sets of nervous fibres in question, as well as an example of the aid and protection afforded by one set of tissues to another.

Besides nerves of sensation and of motion there is a third division.

called sympathetic, or "nerves of organic life," from being distributed principally to the different organs concerned in nutrition. The stomach and heart are to a great extent under their influence, yet we feel them not, neither are we aware, under ordinary circumstances, that their accustomed actions are being performed (that is, as regards sensation). Taking into consideration the general nature of the nervous system, this may at first sight appear strange, but when we come to look more deeply into the matter, a new light strikes our admiring gaze, and we view it, no longer as an anomaly, but, on the contrary, as a high and wise provision intended for our comfort and enjoyment; for were it otherwise, and if each digestive act of the stomach, and each contraction of the heart required a mental conception and a mental effort before it could be performed, then would our minds be constantly occupied and our thoughts wholly absorbed by these two nutritive phenomena *alone*. Resting on the spine, midway between the two sets of false ribs, is a large collection of these organic nerves (one might almost term it the organic brain). A sudden and severe blow over this part, known as the pit of the stomach, frequently causes collapse of the whole system and immediate death. This is the cause of many prizefighters dying whilst engaged in the brutal sport of "the Ring." Were it not for the protection afforded the true brain by its bony envelope, the skull, it would require but a very slight injury there to produce an entire cessation of vitality, either in man or the lower animals possessing it. If asked in what portion or tissue of the human frame vitality existed in its maximum degree, I would reply: the brain and nervous system, the seat and centre of all sensations. In it the mind, the possession of which so elevates man above all other terrestrial animate beings, has its abode. Like a general it governs by its mental powers or resources the external movements of the being possessing it, and to a great extent exercises control over the internal organs of our composition. Its commands are conveyed, not by fleetly-mounted aides-de-camp, but by its subservient nerves, with a rapidity not to be contrasted even with thought, to parts most distant, which yield a ready obedience to its mandates. The conducting lines of the "electro-magnetic telegraph" are its nerves, the battery or machine generating its non-tangible principle is *its* brain. Miracles, we may almost say, can be worked by this subtle unknown thing, yet it is subservient to a human machine, and like the steam-engine, which bounds o'er space, and aids in the support of the political vitality of nations, by intimately connecting their integral portions, had its origin in the mind or man. Both appear "like things of life," but it is not so. They inherit not vitality or that elevating principle which gives life and character to organized matter. Closely and essentially connected as the brain is with every part of the frame, still disease, or the surgeon's knife, may destroy comparatively large portions of it without impairing its vitality or mental resources, and *human* life may even be supported for a time without a brain at all—that is, if the upper part of the spinal cord, from which originate the nerves concerned in respiration, should be perfect, as has been proved by the birth of anencephalous monsters which have existed, I can hardly say lived, for days, and food being placed in their mouths is swallowed and digested.

A glance at nutrition, and then I shall have done. Food being received into the stomach undergoes there certain changes, and in passing from it is acted upon by the bile, which alters its character, when it is absorbed in the state of chyle, by a set of vessels termed "lacteals." These collect and transmit it through the "thoracic duct" to a large vein at the root of the neck. Having now entered the circulation it becomes changed in character and appearance, and passes through the right side of the heart to the lungs, where, being acted on by the air we breathe, it receives a quantity of oxygen, giving off in its place carbonic acid. This blood, which was before, dark and impure, is now florid and is returned from the lungs to the left side of the heart, which, contracting, propels it forcibly to every portion of the body, to nourish, support and strengthen

it. This wonderful and life-giving fluid is composed of "liquor sanguinis" and "red corpuscles," each of which (in minute physiology) may be divided into many constituents, not requisite to be enumerated on the present occasion. It is the former which transudes through the walls of the vessels and forms and regenerates the various tissues. This, I may add, is a disputed point, many physiologists, and among them Dr. Martin Barry, attributing this office to the "red globules." However, I think the grounds in favor of the former doctrine sufficiently conclusive to justify me in advocating it; for the diameter of the corpuscles in question is, on an average, 1-3,500 part of an inch, and it has been satisfactorily shown that the walls of blood-vessels will not permit of the passage of granules under 1-25,000 or 1-30,000 part of an inch—hence the inconsistency of the Barry theory. While, therefore, the "liquor sanguinis," or rather its constituent, "fibrin," forms and repairs the tissues, the red globules are subservient to respiration, and are intimately connected with the production and retention of warmth in the animal frame, but at the same time the older globules, being replaced by new ones, undergo solution and then mingle with the "liquor sanguinis" as a constituent part of it, and in this *indirect* way only can they be said to be instrumental in the growth and repair of other vital portions of the frame.

I have thus concisely, and I hope clearly, demonstrated how it is that the food which we have this day eaten is now coursing through our veins and arteries and acting as the *pabulum vite* or food of life. Previous to its (the food) being absorbed by the lacteals, as chyle, all the changes were purely of a chemical and physical nature. It now for the first time is organized and claims vitality as its own, which, although of a low degree, rapidly increases by the conversion of its albumen into fibrin as it nears the heart, and very shortly this chyle, having been subjected to the influence of the air in the lungs, is moulded into pure and florid blood. Should a bone be broken, the fibrin of the blood transudes through the walls of the vessels containing it, near the injured part, and it is converted into a hard callus which surrounds its entire circumference, and after a series of changes becomes bone, similar to that, the broken extremities of which it has united. If a muscle, nerve or vessel, be divided, kind and provident nature joins it again by a bond of union, resembling the original structure, and by one, too, that admits of the free performance of its function. This is the explanation of the feeling or sensation of a part being restored gradually after having been for some time lost from the effects of a wound, the divided nerve, or nerves, having united and resumed again their office. You have all witnessed the result of a burn, where a new skin is formed closely resembling the old, but here, as in the cases just quoted, the tissues reproduced are somewhat inferior to those destroyed. The copy is not equal to the original, even though Nature, which first constructed it, be the copyist. These parts are all restored by a process of cellular development, precisely similar to that mentioned when speaking of the formation of vegetable tissues. It is very generally believed that the whole animal body, or system, is changed every seven years. In relation to this, I would add that, although the *principle* is correct, yet no time can be fixed for this entire change of the tissues. As I told you when defining the term vitality, "the very idea of life involves change," so here we see it extensively displayed; for at every breath we draw and every motion we make, perceptible or imperceptible, there is waste of the parts engaged, and this loss of the tissues is constant, it ceases not by day or by night. To effect this change, a distinct set of vessels, termed "absorbents," is required, which, by a vital power inherent in them, take up these decaying and decayed particles and convey them into the general circulation, from whence they are removed by the excreting organs, the lungs, etc. The veins essentially aid the absorbents in this vital act and it is also surmised that the capillaries, or those minute vessels which serve as the connecting medium between veins and arteries, assist in taking up these waste molecules. Now, if there were no counteracting agent, from excess of waste, life would soon become extinct; but here again the immeasurable resources of the

Creator display themselves, for, to prevent this excess and to neutralize the effects of the absorbent system, He has endowed the blood with the vital power of repairing the loss in question, which it does by depositing its fibrin, as described only a few moments since, and this, singular to say, although apparently only a thin liquid, on being placed in contact with tissues *possessing vitality*, assumes the exact appearance, and all the properties of the parts with which it is thus approximated. In infancy and youth, the reparative process far exceeds the waste of the tissues, hence their growth and enlargement. It is thus that the little babe becomes in time the full grown man or woman. From this to middle life, the two vital acts, absorption and reparation, about neutralize each other by equality of action. It is not so, however, at a more advanced age, where waste, as must be apparent to you all, exceeds in activity the process of repair—hence the contraction of the countenance causing wrinkles, also the general diminution in size and action of the internal organs, as well as all external parts. It is this decrease in vascular action, and excess of absorption which removes the coloring matter from hair, and changes that, even of raven blackness, to the whiteness of snow—the roots of which eventually, from want of nutriment, relinquish their hold and leave the *polished scalp* unprotected, notwithstanding the most strenuous efforts made for its restoration by Rowland's famous oil, Columbia's balm and other quack nostrums. In "tabes mesenterica" (a species of consumption), where the lacteals, which absorb and convey the chyle to the blood, become obstructed by the deposit of tubercular matter in and around them, we have an example of the preponderance of absorption, or waste, over reparation; and this occurs most frequently in childhood and youth, death too frequently following, merely from inanition. In these cases the tissues dwindle away almost to nothing before the sufferer is relieved by the final cessation of vitality. It is rare indeed for a person to die purely from old age; generally they are cut off by the accession of some disease, and we cannot but wonder how life is so long sustained, knowing, as we do, the exquisite minuteness and complications of certain structures, the most trifling injury to which would cause death to reign where but an instant before life existed with all its varying and wonderful phenomena. Akenside, when speaking of seventy years being the ordinary duration of human life, aptly compares man to a musical instrument and says: "Strange that a harp of thousand strings should keep in tune so long." A beautiful idea, poetically expressed. While three score years and ten is the time generally allotted for the duration of human life, we not unfrequently meet with instances extending to double that period, or even longer. Professor Traill speaks of a case where a man in Orkney, 106 years old, walked six miles before breakfast to visit him. In Yorkshire a man followed his occupation, that of a woodman, at 108 years. Old Parr was actively engaged as a fisherman at the age of 100; he died in 1635, upwards of 152. Henry Jenkins died in 1670, aged 169. Catherine, Countess of Desmond, saw ten sovereigns on the throne of England. In the reign of James I., when 140 years of age, she rode from Bristol to London on *horseback*, a distance of about 120 miles. Ian Rovine and his wife were living in Transylvania at the age of 164, and Petrarch Lortan in the same country died in 1724 at the very advanced age of 185. These, and numerous other anomalous exceptions to the "three score years and ten" law of nature, have in recent times been attributed to the *life extending* properties inherent in "Parr's Life Pills," which are eventually intended, so say the newspapers, to do away with those at present "necessary evils," the doctors, and their accompanying *bills*—of mortality, *in toto*.

We not unfrequently read accounts of persons, particularly shipwrecked mariners, and miners, retaining life for many days without food. In these cases the fat, which under ordinary circumstances is a provision for the retention of animal warmth, is again absorbed into the circulation, from which it was originally deposited, and in this way serves to nourish the other tissues for a time. It is wonderful what a small amount of nutriment will support vitality in human beings. As an

example I would quote the case of a famine which occurred some years since in Swedish Lapland, where the inhabitants of the interior existed almost entirely on "Berg or mountain meal" found in the hollows of trees, which by Professor Trall's analysis was discovered to be "animal-cull," the nutritive constituents of which were extremely small. It is said that in days of old an ancestor of the Dalhousie family known as the "good Sir Ramsay," a sheriff of some division of Scotland, was taken prisoner by "the Black Douglas" and kept in his castle for a comparatively long time without any food whatever except a few grains of wheat which accidentally dropped through a crevice in his dungeon from a store-room above it.

Generally speaking, life will continue for a period of seven days, more or less, without food or water (air, of course, being supplied), but should the latter be obtained, life will probably exist from fifteen to twenty days, or even more. Sailors, being aware of this, when without food or drink sometimes jump overboard and remain a short time in the water, a quantity of which enters the circulation through the pores of the skin, and in this way prolong their lives. Hunger and a wasted state of the tissues appears to exert a wonderful influence on, and to excite to increased absorptive action the whole cutaneous surface or skin. A remarkable fact in illustration of this is mentioned by Dr. Watson in his chemical essays. A lad at Newmarket, reduced to a proper weight for riding a match, was weighed at nine a.m., and again at ten a.m., and he was found to have gained nearly thirty ounces in weight in the course of this hour, though he had only drunk half a glass of wine in the interim. A parallel instance is narrated by the late Sir G. Hill, then Governor of St. Vincent. A jockey had been for some time in training for a race in which that gentleman was much interested, and had been reduced to the proper weight. On the morning of the trial, being much oppressed with thirst, he took one cup of tea, and shortly afterwards his weight was found to have increased *six pounds*, so that he was incapacitated for riding. Nearly the whole of the increase in the former case, and at least *three-fourths* of it in the latter, must be attributed to cutaneous absorption, which function was probably stimulated by the wine that was taken in the one case and by the tea in the other.

Occasionally we see it mentioned in periodicals that toads, or other cold-blooded animals, have been cut out of the solid rock alive, where their discoverers assert that no air or moisture can possibly be admitted. Knowing the absolute dependence of animal vitality on the presence of air, physiologists deny its want in these contracted prisons, where the required small amount probably gains admission by a minute fissure, or fissures, which have escaped the observer's eye.

In reference to the matter laid before you I would say, "Such is life." Then what is death, or in what does it consist? Why, merely in the abstraction of vitality from a body possessing it.

Doubtless you are all aware of the fact that persons have frequently been buried alive, and these cases are more numerous than is generally supposed, particularly in countries where plague, cholera and other malignant diseases rapidly decrease the population by their ravages. Under such circumstances it is by no means uncommon to bury those destroyed *en masse* in pits which, being opened to receive new victims, have often yielded to life individuals who had been numbered among the dead. It was customary among the Romans to burn their dead and to preserve in costly vessels their ashes or remains, and Pliny mentions several instances of resuscitation when the body was on the funeral pile, and even when it was too late to save the person. Gibbon narrates a case of a Roman Emperor (Zeno, I believe) who was entombed alive. Lord Bacon, in his work entitled "Historiæ Vitæ et Mortis" ("History of Life and Death"), makes mention of several such cases which occurred about the beginning of the seventeenth century. Formerly, before medical men were aided by the Legislature in procuring subjects for scientific and necessary purposes, they, as you are all aware, were compelled to obtain them illegally, and not unfrequently were these bodies found to have been

prematurely buried. Post mortem examinations or dissections are not allowed by law to take place until twenty-four hours after death, and not seldom does even this time prove too limited. I was informed by one of my teachers, an eminent professor in the Edinburgh University, that as a student he once saw a child opened by a celebrated medical man who, to his amazement and horror, discovered by the pulsations and movements of the heart that it was actually alive. Of course vitality soon ceased to exist here.

A French abbe in 1787 was seized with apoplexy in a forest, and those who found him fancied he was dead. A crown officer ordered an investigation, which had commenced when a grossly ignorant surgeon hastily drove a scalpel into some vital part; a loud scream followed and the man instantly died, the officer making use of the following expression to those around him, "Be silent and lament." Much in the same way did the justly celebrated Berzelius destroy a woman's life, but here the case was altogether different in its nature, for vitality existed in a state so dormant as to escape the observation even of the most acute and able of the profession. However, the occurrence had such an effect on his mind as shortly after to cause his death. Several cases are on record where persons in the state of trance or swoon have by some fortunate circumstance been saved from a premature grave. Winslow, the celebrated author who wrote on this subject, was twice laid out for dead, and was on one of these occasions actually being carried to his final resting place when he was aroused from dormant to actual life. This circumstance gave origin to the work in question.

A French lady of rank was buried in a church with a valuable diamond ring on her finger, to obtain which a servant entered the place at night, and not being able to remove it easily, proceeded to cut off the finger, when the pain (ethereal vapor was not then in vogue for the performance of such operations) caused her to cry out, and some priests being at hand, hearing the noise, rushed to the place and found the lady not dead, as they had supposed, but alive, and in no small degree astonished at the novelty of her situation. The robber servant was so alarmed at the result of his operation that he fainted, and not many days after died from the shock his system had received, while the lady lived for many years.

A parallel case is said to have occurred in Dublin. The lady of Col. Russel, in Queen Anne's reign, to all appearances died suddenly on a Sunday morning just as the first bells were ringing for church. Her husband, having been devotedly attached to her, could not be made to comprehend the loss he had sustained, and in a state of frenzy declared when the day of her burial arrived that she was not dead and that he would shoot any person or persons who should attempt to remove her. The Queen, hearing of his devoted attachment to his wife, sent a kind message to him, requesting him to be reconciled to his loss, and at the same time to have her buried as the law directed. He begged Her Majesty in reply to allow him to keep her until decomposition should commence, which was granted, and, strange to say, on the following Sunday, just as the church bells began, she suddenly awoke and exclaimed, as if she had only been dozing, "Come, the second bells are ringing; it is church time."

A somewhat analogous case is recorded as having occurred on the Continent many years since. A husband left home for a place at some distance, where he had business to transact, and had only been on the road three hours when he was overtaken by a messenger, who informed him that his wife was dead. As he had so recently left her in perfect health, he believed it to be a hoax, and consequently did not return for three days, when they were making preparations for her burial. In a state bordering on madness, and perhaps wishing to atone for his apparent neglect, he sent for a surgeon and requested him to bleed her. Not satisfied with no blood following the two or three first attempts, he begged the disciple of Æsculapius to proceed, when, much to his satisfaction and delight, just as the twenty-sixth incision was being made, she abruptly

said, "Leave me alone," and in accordance with her request, sure enough she was left alone by the speedy decampment of the whole corps of lookers-on, headed by the man of the lancet. One can hardly be surprised at the exclamation, if the amount of provocation be taken into consideration. Their fright being over, the necessary aid was afforded the lady and she recovered.

The cases in question display the necessity of waiting for the accession of decomposition before interring human beings, "apparently dead," for *on it alone* can we infer with certainty the absence of vitality. When any doubt exists in relation to this in the minds of the friends or medical attendants of any individuals deceased, or even in very many cases where there is no doubt at all, in certain German cities they have receptacles or houses for the dead, kept warm, with bells attached near the coffins, so that should any come to life an alarm may be given, when the necessary medical and other assistance will be immediately rendered. A watchman is constantly on duty who, to prove his vigilance, has every fifteen minutes to move the hand of a *tell tale* clock which, by internal machinery registers the act, and in this way there is a certainty of immediate aid being rendered in case of need. As soon as the existence of decomposition has been fairly established, and not before, are they removed from this to the grave.

In dying, man and beast alike are resolved into their constituent elements, carbon, hydrogen, oxygen and nitrogen, and these display no difference in appearance or action, whether they arise from the inanimate form of the ruler of nations or that of the despised worm, which in life he has so often thoughtlessly crushed. On the contrary, death acknowledges no superiority; it dresses all its victims in similar garbs, and the elements of the haughty noble, forgetting the elevated position they held in society as organized and living matter, may now be observed coalescing and combining with those of the "poverty-stricken peasant," and these insensible particles thus united, serve a common end, viz., that of supporting vitality in vegetables and plants from the highest even to the lowest grades. Such is death, physiologically considered. For want of time I have left unsaid a vast deal of important material that might have been produced in connection with my subject. In fact, its surface only has been imperfectly skimmed; still, a wide and important field has been entered on, and attempted to be cleared, for mental cultivation, which I trust has not been uninteresting to you.

In the course of my lecture many wonderful and striking evidences of design and of existence of an All Wise Architect of Nature have been brought before your notice, and I cannot do better than to clothe my final remark in the words of Galileo, the most profound philosopher of his age, who, when interrogated by his enemies as to his belief in a Supreme Being, replied, pointing to a straw on the floor of his dungeon, that from the structure of that object alone he would infer with certainty the existence of an intelligent Creator.

INSTINCT AND MIND.

SESSION 1847-8.

LADIES AND GENTLEMEN:

Since the commencement of the present session we have here been favored with a series of lectures which, taken either singly or collectively, have been from their scientific nature and popular tendency admirably calculated to impart useful knowledge to minds susceptible of its influence and impressions. From these essays I for one can candidly say that I have derived both pleasure and much substantial information, and I doubt not that there are many in the seats before me who can bear similar testimony in favor of the literary efforts of the gentlemen who have preceded me. This, while it augurs well for the present and future usefulness of the Institute, has doubtless been the result of the gradually increasing interest displayed on the part of the public towards it, as a conducting medium to improvement and self education which, reacting on those who have from week to week addressed you, has stimulated them to exertion in the preparation of matter adapted to please and improve a taste for literature, already engendered and growing in the mind of our community.

In glancing over the printed list of lecturers, the word *doctor* holds there so prominent a position from the frequency of its repetition, that I fear you will before the session closes be literally "drugged with doctors." However, it is to be hoped that the mental physic which they have dispensed will prove more palatable than that which they are in the habit of elsewhere administering for your physical wants. If this multiplicity of doctors be a bane, be assured that on the application of the proper antidote, we will display no reluctance in being neutralized, or, in other words, the medical men, who from time to time have the pleasure of lecturing here, will gladly give place to members of other professions, if they will, for the sake of variety, permit their names to be inserted in the list to which I allude.

To-night the pleasing task of addressing you has devolved on me, and I have selected as the subject of discussion "Instinct and Mind, With Their Relations to and Influence over the Animal Economy."

At a glance you will perceive the vastness of the subject, and the impossibility of taking any other than a contracted view of it. Mind, indeed, as you are all aware, is in itself a science so extensive and abstruse that each century as it has passed on the wings of time has but contributed "the widow's mite" to the knowledge previously possessed of it, so that at the present period, even with this accumulation of ages, the ablest of modern philosophers are reluctantly compelled to confess that it is wrapt in the cloak of obscurity and doubt; and, should earth exist for nineteen other centuries beyond the present era, it is more than probable that those of our species who will then occupy its surface will be of the same mind.

I am no metaphysician, my inclinations have never tended towards its many, dark and imaginative paths, and the limited knowledge I possess of the subject of "mind" has been obtained, with reference to my profession, from the study of physiology; therefore, as a branch of this latter science will I discuss it. Should it clothe any part of my address in physiological abstruseness, either as regards ideas, or technical language, I beg that you will bear with me and seek the necessary explanations at its conclusion.

With these prefatory remarks, I hasten to view the first portion of the subject, or "instinct," which is in itself so interesting that I cannot consistently pass it over without a somewhat prolonged notice, and that it may be the better understood, I shall trace it from its lowest state of development upwards, until at length, in some of the higher mammalia, we shall find reason and judgment or mental manifestations occupying its place, and regulating almost entirely the actions of the animal.

It is universally admitted that a large proportion of the actions of the lower animals are immediately prompted by sensation, without the intervention of reason, or any process that can be construed as mental, and to these the term instinctive is usually applied. It has been further observed that in proportion as an animal has the phenomena corresponding to the intellectual endowments of man, undeveloped, precisely in that proportion is the animal under the influence of these instinctive impulses, which, so far as its own consciousness is concerned, may be designated as blind and aimless, but which are ordained by the Creator for its protection from danger, and the supply of its natural wants. The same may be said of the human infant, or of the idiot, in whom the reasoning powers are undeveloped.

Instinctive actions may in general be distinguished from those which are the result of voluntary power, guided by reason, chiefly by the two following characters: 1st—there is no experience or education required in order that the different actions which result from an instinctive impulse may follow one another with unerring precision. 2nd, these actions are always performed by the same species of animal, nearly, if not exactly in the same manner, no such variations or improvements being observed in the adaptation of means to ends, or in habits and customs, as we know to have taken place during a succession of ages in man. In other words, in the progress of life, men, either individually or embodied as nations, have gone on varying and improving in manners and customs, in the arts and sciences, from the days of Adam to the present time, but those of the animal creation, lower in the scale of life than man, in whom instinct reigns predominant, show no such onward march. They live and perform all their actions for the present—the future they know not. In illustration of this fact, I would simply state that bees, familiar to you all as ingenious natural architects, have constructed their hives with the same mathematical precision, and without the slightest perceptible difference in any one particular, from time immemorial, and hence we may reasonably infer that the first animal of this species erected and resided in a domicile precisely similar to those occupied by bees of the present day. I but a moment since stated that *instinct* was prompted by "sensation"; this is universal, a law or rule in nature so absolute that I cannot conceive an exceptional case. Now, the question may naturally enough suggest itself to your minds—What is sensation and to what is it due? My reply will be that it is *feeling*, in the common, and at the same time the most extended acceptance of the word, and that it is dependent on the existence of a nervous system, which is peculiar to the animal kingdom, nothing analagous to it having ever been discovered in the mineral or vegetable worlds. The sensitive plant has oft and again been quoted as an example to the contrary, but its motions have been beyond a doubt traced to the property of irritability, and its peculiar mechanism. Were it otherwise, and if this *single member* of the vegetable kingdom could be proved to possess a nervous tissue, reasoning analogically, we might very naturally conclude that together with sensation, *instinct* would characterize it, for nowhere in the animal world do we find a nervous system without sensation and instinctive actions. The intimate relationship of instinct with a nervous system having been established, it is evident that the best mode of discussing the former will be progressively, with the development of the latter, commencing at the lowest rung of this nervous ladder and tracing it upward toward its summit; in other words, to follow *instinct* through the animal kingdom, as we find nervous matter developed, from its most rudimentary forms until we arrive at the mammalia, in which a well formed brain exists.

Sponge is almost universally acknowledged to belong to the animal division, but I am not aware that any person has descended so low in this scale of creation in search of nervous matter. However, I think I can satisfactorily display, without the aid of microscopic eyes, its existence to you, as also that of sensation and instinct. To do this you will permit me to quote a few sentences from a lecture on "Vitality" delivered by me:

"At this early period it, the germ or young sponge, is endowed with the power of moving to and fro, which it does by the aid of cilia, or hair-like appendages attached to its front aspect. Spontaneous motion is produced by these cilia being made to strike the water much as do the feet of a dog when swimming. If obstructed in its course by any resisting body, it rebounds, and circumnavigates it, resuming as soon as possible its original direction. In this way it paddles itself along, it may be for hours, or even days, until at length, finding a convenient and desirable locality, it attaches itself to it for life." Now, what causes this speck, so to speak, of vitalized matter when in its onward course in search of a locality adapted for its permanent abode, to rebound on meeting with an obstruction, and then to circumnavigate the obstacle? My reply is, *sensation and instinct*. By the former it feels and comprehends, as it were, that a superior force is opposed to it, and the latter, instinct, points out the way of escape, and afterwards directs it in its straight and original course. Contrast this with a piece of sea-weed, or a vegetable seed which, for the sake of argument, we will fancy moving on the surface of water, and then coming in contact with a piece of wood. What is the result? Why, instead of rebounding and sailing round the obstacle, cohesive attraction holds the two together, it may be permanently, at all events until mechanically separated by the motion of the water. Mark the difference in their actions, and then the cause must be apparent. The vegetable production wants what the sponge possesses, i.e., a nervous system, and consequently it is not endowed with instinct or sensation, and hence has not the inherent power to perform the evolutions of the embryo sponge. I will quote another sentence from the same lecture: "Should the young animal when in motion come in contact with another of the same species, they coalesce, and the one becomes engrafted, as it were, into the other so perfectly that in a short period no trace of two distinct germs can be observed, the two having merged into one, and now perform all their actions in common." What is it that here causes *the lowest* of all animals to distinguish between a foreign body and one of its own species? The reply again is, *sensation and instinct*.

Having now sufficiently explained what I mean by the term instinct, we will rapidly glance at the subject in each of the four divisions into which naturalists have divided the animal kingdom, and here I may premise that which will be evident to you as I progress with the subject, viz.: that as nervous matter becomes more highly organized and developed, exactly in that proportion do the instinctive impulses give place to actions, involving more complex considerations, until finally intelligence and reason predominate and govern almost altogether the actions and movements of animals possessing these higher modifications of a nervous system. Animal life, in its lowest type, is embraced by the class termed "Radiata." They are so named from the fact of the different portions of the body radiating from the mouth as a centre towards the circumference, as in the starfish. In this division, a nervous system exists in its most diminutive and rudimentary form, and consequently we have the instinctive impulses displayed in a very primitive state. The class is vastly numerous, consisting of very many subdivisions, and among them we find the sponges, to which I have already directed your attention.

Time will not permit of my alluding to more than one other example before passing on to the second family, and I know none more interesting than the *Coral Zoophytes*, in which we have instinct developed, and almost solely confined, to one object, viz., the construction of those animal forests of the deep, named coral reefs. This instinctive propensity of constructiveness, as observed in these microscopic animalculæ, knows or acknowledges no change, but as it was in the beginning with them, so will it be at the end of time. To say that a coral polype could construct aught else than coral edifices would be stating something beyond the bounds of possibility, for the Great Architect of nature, when creating the first animal of this species, imparted to it this peculiar propensity, or instinct, which it has transmitted through myriads of generations to those which have a present existence.

One step higher brings us to the "*Mollusca*," or second division of animal life (so named from the softness of their composition). In these there is no regular and determinate formation observed; diversity as to symmetry and proportions characterizes the construction of the whole family. Their nervous system is better marked and of a more complex nature than that of the *Radiata*, which implies a greater diversity in their instinctive impulses than is met with in those of the first-named family. To this class belongs the *Cuttle-fish*, an aquatic animal, which secretes and stores up in a proper receptacle an ink-like fluid, which, when it comes in contact with any foreign body, or is pursued by an enemy, it forcibly expels and diffuses through the water, darkening it all around, and in this way often escapes destruction. Here we have an instance of an instinctive impulse nearly allied to the emotion of fear in the higher animals. This at first sight might appear as if it were an act of volition, or of the will, but such is not the case, for the youngest of the species ejects the fluid under similar circumstances precisely as does the oldest, and so protects itself from injury. Now if in the more matured animal intelligence or reason were concerned in the production of this singular phenomenon, the infant fish would display no more fear (so to speak), or inclination to escape, than a very young dog or child would, if placed in similar danger, because it is an established fact, applicable alike to all animals whose actions in advanced life are guided by an intelligent will, that in their early existence they are unable to perform the acts of the parent until time and experience have educated them, and further, that in such, the instinctive impulses displayed have relation only to their nutrition.

With this brief notice of the *Mollusca*, I must next glance at the third division, or that class of animals designated "*Articulata*," in which there is an exact bilateral symmetry of form, and the nervous system for the most part will admit of a division into two equal parts. In this family the first rudiments of a brain are detected, which in its lowest members is merely an enlarged ganglion or mass of nervous matter, situated at the extremity of the animal, that portion called the head. The mere existence even of an elementary brain will, from what has already been stated, cause you to expect that all the actions of this class of animals will be performed, if not with intelligence, at least with a high degree of perfection as regards its instinctive faculties, and such indeed is the case, in proof of which I have merely to call your attention again to the works of bees, which, with all other insects, belong to the "*Articulata*."

An aquatic animal named the "*Chaetodon rostratus*" is in the habit of ejecting from its prolonged snout drops of fluid which strike insects that happen to be near the surface of the water, and cause them to fall into it, so as to come within its own reach. Now, by the laws of refraction of light the place of the insect in the air will not really be what it appears to be to the animal in the water; but it will be a little below its apparent place, and to this point the aim must be directed. But the difference between the real and apparent place will not be constant; for the more perpendicularly the rays enter the water, the less will be the variation; and, on the other hand, the more oblique is the direction, the greater will be the difference. Now, it is impossible to imagine, but that by an instinctive perception, the real place of the insect is known to the aquatic animal in every instance, as perfectly as it could be to the most sagacious human mathematician, or to a clever marksman who had learned the requisite allowance in each case by a long experience. In short, notwithstanding the comparatively large increase of nervous matter in this class, over that of the two divisions beneath it, these and all other articulate animals seem like, and, indeed, closely resemble, machines constructed to execute a certain and definite number of operations, many of them producing results which even man, by the highest effects of his reason, has found it difficult to attain. This brings us to the consideration of the highest division of the animal creation, viz., the "*Vertebrata*." In this class, the brain, even among its lowest members, is distinctly evident.

while in its highest subdivision, "Mammalia," it bears a comparatively large proportion to the remainder of the structure. In the "*Radiata*" and "*Mollusca*" the functions of the nervous system are evidently restricted for the most part to the maintenance of the nutritive operations and to the guidance of the animal by means of its sensory endowments in the choice of food. In the "*Articulata*" its purpose appears similar, but is carried into effect in a different manner, the locomotive organs being the parts chiefly supplied by it. In the "*Vertebrata*," on the other hand, the development of all the organs appears to be subordinate to that of the nervous system, their object being solely to give to it the means of the exercise of its powers. This statement is not, of course, as applicable to the lower vertebrata as it is to the higher, but it is intended to express the general character of the group. The predominance of the nervous system is manifested, not only in the increased size of its centres (the brain and spinal marrow), but also in the special provision which we here find for the protection of these from injury; and hence the name *Vertebrata*, the vertebræ being a continuous line of bones running from the skull downwards and forming the basis of the back, which collectively serve as a canal to protect and convey the spinal marrow. The development of such large and highly organized masses of nervous matter as is observed in this division, and in particular the increased size of the brain, the seat of intelligence and the reasoning faculties, must, if you have followed and adopted the principles already laid down, at once prepare you for vastly different results to impressions or sensations from those which we have met with in the three lower divisions of animal life, where for the most part unerring instinct follows every sensation.

This increase, then, of nervous matter tends to remove vertebrated animals from the dominion of undiscerning, uncontrollable instinct, and to place very many of their operations under the influence of an intelligent will. Here uniformity, which is so remarkable a characteristic of instinct, is displaced by diversity of action, by a power of choice and of determination, guided by perception of the object to be attained and of the means to be employed, constituting the simplest form of the reasoning faculty; and the amount of this bears so close a relation to the development of the brain that it is scarcely possible to regard them as unconnected. This must be apparent to you all, if you will but notice the progressive increase in the nature of the actions of the different divisions of this great class, which will be discussed relatively and in the order of increase of the nervous matter of the brain.

Fishes and *Reptiles* are, owing to their physical construction, members of the vertebrated group, yet they possess little or no intelligence, but are governed almost entirely by instinctive impulses, which, from the well-developed state of their locomotive apparatus, are much more varied than in the classes beneath them. These facts correspond well with the size of their nervous centres, which are comparatively small, and consequently tend to bear out the general principle before alluded to. It is worthy of observation that those animals of the vertebrata which have the smallest amount of cerebral matter (brain) are the least capable of attachment to man. I am not aware that any fish or reptile has ever shown this attachment. By being long confined and fed in a limited locality they become familiar with man's appearance, as I have myself witnessed in zoological gardens, and in the extensive natural fishpond of Mr. Trott in Bermuda, but beyond this I imagine they have displayed no intelligence or susceptibility to education. *Birds* are vertebrated animals in which the brain bears but a small proportion to the remainder of the body, which implies that they can possess but a limited amount of intelligence. Indeed their actions are for the most part the result of instinctive impulses; under the direction of these they appear to select the place, procure the material and build themselves nests, as well as rear their young and perform their migrations. Every species of bird possesses certain instinctive peculiarities, which have been transmitted unchanged in the slightest particular to the present race from its earliest progenitors, in proof of which

I have but to direct your attention to the nests of swallows, which have always been the same as to locality, material and construction from the days of the earliest naturalists.

The *Educability* and *Domesticability* of any species of animal depend on the amount of intelligence and reason with which it is endowed, for no animal can be taught to perform actions not natural to it unless it possess, in a considerable degree, the power of memory combined with that of association of ideas. Now we find in the Parrot tribe, which is the most intelligent of all birds, these powers or endowments displayed to some extent, and you are all aware that they can be taught to speak and remember lengthy and varied sentences. In proportion as we find the nervous system of animals increase, and consequent thereon their intelligence, in that proportion do we observe an increasing interest and care displayed on the part of the parent towards its offspring.

Reptiles and *Fishes* show little or no concern for their eggs after they have deposited them. *Birds*, on the contrary, but seldom neglect theirs, and continue to afford them protection and warmth until the young are hatched. So far this action may be considered instinctive and void of reason, for the mother, as in the case of hens, will often sit the usual time of incubation on a stone, to which she gives the same care and protection as if it were in reality her own production. After the young have been so far matured as to be able to escape from the shell (which act in itself is highly instinctive) the young bird at the proper period pecks its prison wall until it is broken, and then, no longer a prisoner, walks forth into a new existence. Now the early age of the animal performing this operation precludes the possibility of its being a work of intelligence involving the reasoning faculties. Then, after its birth, the affection of the parent, so to speak, gives origin in its solicitude to a wider and more intelligent range of actions for the purpose of providing its offspring with food and protecting it from danger. An example in proof of this has been occasionally witnessed by sportsmen when coming suddenly on a covey of young ducks or partridges, where the mother, to draw the enemy away from her young, leaves them, limping as if her leg were actually broken, and so well does she play this game of deceit that the inexperienced are frequently deceived. Now this is an act that we must place far beyond the bounds of instinct, as it involves mental consideration of a high order in which reason and judgment are brought into action for the purpose of adapting means adequate to a definite end. All maternal ducks and partridges do not act in this way, otherwise it might be a question whether or not it was the result of instinct, and hence we may infer on reasonable grounds that there are clever birds of this species as well as stupid ones. The *parrot tribe* not only procure food for their young, but actually swallow and disgorge it in order that it may be rendered more palatable and nutritious by being impregnated with a milky secretion from the interior of their craw.

It is said that the *Ostrich*, in very warm climates, merely covers its eggs with a thin layer of sand, and then leaves them altogether to the action of the sun, while those occupying more temperate latitudes sit on theirs and thus give them the requisite amount of heat. This statement has been disputed, but its truth seems to be confirmed by analogy from a curious observation made by Mr. Knight, that a *Flycatcher* which built for several years in one of his hothouses, sat upon its eggs when the temperature was below 72°, but left them when it was above that standard. These cases, and particularly the latter, display instinct and intelligence combined, and acting in concert for a wise end.

It now devolves on me to consider briefly the subject of Instinct in relation to the *Mammalia*, or highest division of vertebrated animals, and as you are already quite familiar with the habits of some of its most distinguished members, the dog, monkey, elephant, horse, etc. (leaving man for after consideration) this part of my lecture may be more rapidly passed over than it could otherwise have been.

In the *Mammalia* the brain and nervous system is more highly organ-

ized and developed and bears a larger proportion to their whole structure than is observed in any other class of animals—and in this respect the monkey holds the most elevated position, its brain not only being relatively larger than all others, but also differing from theirs in having its surface convoluted, or in folds, as is the case in man. In this class of animals we find unerring and uncontrollable *instinct* giving place to diversified and complex actions, requiring for their performance no small degree of intelligence, reason and judgment, which in man are always considered as mental manifestations.

The high development or intelligence in Mammalia is evidently due, in part, to the greatly prolonged connection between the parent and the offspring, which we find characteristic of this class, and by which the young animal, in the exercise of its primitive perceptive and reflective powers, gradually acquires much of the knowledge possessed by the parent ere it has been cast altogether on its own resources. Thus the cat may frequently be detected teaching her kittens the art of war as it relates to the destruction of her prey (mice and rats) and doubtless these early lessons leave an indelible impression on the memory, which materially aids them in after life in the prosecution of this their natural warfare.

Monkeys and elephants have frequently been known to revenge themselves in the most ingenious manner on individuals to whom they have taken a dislike from their having either ill-treated them, or played off some practical joke at their expense, and this revenge has been known, on the part of the elephant to have been harbored for a great length of time before its perpetration. Here we have an example, in the first place of a just perception of an injury, a prolonged act of memory in retaining it, as well as the appearance of the individual who at the proper time is identified as the person from whom he or she received the injury, and lastly we have distinct evidence of reflection and judgment applied in the adaptation of means to a definite end, or in other words, in effecting the *justice* of the story—the punishment of the individual. What more could man do and what more conclusive evidence could we have in proof of *mind* in the common acceptation of the word.

It is a well known fact that monkeys can recognize an instrument of destruction, as for example a gun, and they appear to comprehend the range of their action almost, if not quite as well as a man would do; to this I can bear testimony from personal observation, having on several occasions, when riding along the mountain paths of some of the West India Islands, come suddenly upon them with and without a fowling piece. If without it they would very coolly step aside just beyond the range of my riding whip, and in the most impudent manner imaginable chatter and make grimaces at me—but if I chanced to have a gun, no sooner did they see it than off they scampered until out of harm's way, when they were as impudent as before.

In this tribe we have the powers of imitation more highly developed than in any other, which in itself displays a great amount of intelligence. It was only a short time since that a friend of mine detected a recent importation of this tribe setting off a lucifer match by rubbing it against the sandpaper on the bottom of the box. Jacko, it appears, had seen the lady performing the operation and, remembering the effect produced by the friction, took the necessary steps and the earliest opportunity "to strike a light."

Of the mammalia, dogs are by far the most susceptible of education, and show the greatest amount of attachment to man, and it is this attachment which often exhibits, apparently as subordinate to it, the high degree of intelligence possessed by this species. Well authenticated instances are on record of dogs having been the means of saving the lives of their masters, under circumstances which have displayed quite as much intelligence as is met with in some individuals of the human species.

I remember hearing of a case in point: A woodsman in felling a tree turned it towards instead of from him and before he could jump aside, was firmly pinned to the earth by it. The immense superincumbent weight prevented his extricating himself from this perilous situation and it, together with the injuries he had received, must very speedily have terminated his existence had he not received assistance. In a very short time, and when he had given himself up for lost, there being no habitation or person within call, he was relieved from a painful death by the arrival of his friends. How they came to be aware of his situation he could not imagine until on enquiry he was told that a favorite dog which had accompanied him to the woods had returned, and by howling and scratching at the door had gained admittance to the prisoner's house. The inmates at once observed something unusual in his actions, as he would howl and then earnestly look and run towards the door as if he wished them to follow him. This they did not do until he took hold of their garments with his teeth, and attempted to pull them forward. At length, suspecting an accident, they followed the animal, which immediately took the direction that they knew the man had gone in the morning, the sagacious animal all the time exhibiting by his actions evident delight. Very shortly they reached the place and found the poor man in the situation I have described.

There are undoubtedly both stupid and intelligent dogs, and the great mass of them would, it is more than probable, have been incapable of performing the same part in a similar scene. The intelligence here displayed was prompted by affection, and it is more than probable that had a stranger been similarly situated this dog would not have been the means of saving his life, but would have passed on without giving the matter a second thought, for although intellectually adequate to effecting his relief, as has been shown, he would in the case of the stranger be *morally incompetent*, if I may so express it; for, in the assumed case there would be the want of that affection, which in the reality excited and prompted to energetic action all the intelligent endowments of the animal that could possibly be brought to bear on the case in question. Now, we may reasonably suppose that, if instead of being crushed and imprisoned beneath a tree, his master had fallen into a body of water the dog would not have sought elsewhere for aid, but would have acted, as many of the same species have done under circumstances precisely similar to those here assumed, that is, he would have trusted to his own physical ability, in the art of swimming, to have saved his master. Hence the inference is striking (at least it is to me), that both the mental processes, *Reason* and *Judgment*, must have been brought forcibly into action to have prompted this dumb animal, when he perceived his own inability to rescue the man, to seek for adventitious aid. Again, observe what a depth of intelligence was shown in making the friends comprehend that an accident had occurred; here was shown an amount of rationality, quite equal to that which would have been exercised by an educated and intelligent deaf and dumb person, who would have acted precisely the same part had he witnessed the accident and considered himself unable to afford the prisoner relief; with this exception, *he*, instead of using his teeth would have pulled the friends with his hands in the direction he wished them to go—or if he were sufficiently self-possessed, and the material were at hand, he would have conveyed his wishes to the people either by talking to them with his fingers, or in writing, speech and its accompaniment being endowments which the human being, even in this imperfect and unfortunate state, can exercise, because it was so willed in *his* creation, but which are denied the dog and all other animals from the less perfect state of their mental and physical construction.

Now, if it is *mind* that would enable the deaf and dumb man thus to act, and who can deny it, surely it must be one and the same principle which actuated the dog in this instance, and that principle is *mind* in every sense of the word, which differs nothing in kind from

that of the human being but only in degree. At least this train of argument brings me to that conclusion. You perhaps may differ from me.

There are very many cases narrated where this species of mammalia has exhibited quite as much intelligence as in that just alluded to. The Alpine dog of St. Bernard, and the shepherd dog of the Scottish highlands are, as you must all know, particularly intelligent. Of one of the latter it may not be amiss for me to narrate an anecdote, the authenticity of which I can vouch for. I resided for some months in the house of a highland farmer on the "Isle of Bute" where I had frequent opportunities of observing the sagacity of the shepherd dog, which in some cases is truly remarkable, but the anecdote I allude to was told me by the farmer, and relates to the *musical ear* of one of these animals. The old gentleman was in the habit of having family worship every night, at which they all joined in singing a Psalm, the tunes being always the same as those they were accustomed to sing at the Kirk. As regularly as the night came, an old dog was in the habit of marching leisurely into prayers with the farm servants, and stretching himself before the fire. Improvements in music as well as everything else must take place, and in the course of time the old parish precentor died and another occupied his place, who introduced a new set of tunes which the old man informed me were "nae sa gude as the auld anes." But the march of improvement was onward and the younger members of his family learned them, and at length proposed that they should displace the old ones at the family altar. The old gentleman reluctantly consented, so one night the new tune was pitched and everything went on smoothly for a brief space, when up jumped the dog from before the fire and began to howl so as to destroy completely the effect of the music. They stopped for an instant and the dog reclined as before, but no sooner did they commence again than he began to growl and bark, looking angrily at each of the offenders in turn. This would not do, so he was forcibly ejected. The next night the same scene was enacted, so, suspecting what was wrong they changed the tune to the Old Hundred, or something of the kind, which appeared to act like laudanum on him, for under its influence he soon was sleeping. The end of it was that the poor dog was not again allowed to join in their evening devotions, and the old man observed in finishing the story, "the bairns thought the dug was daft," but his opinion was that "he was a vera sagacious dug." After all that has been said I think you will agree with me in thinking that the term "half-reasoning" which is often applied to elephants, dogs and monkeys is not sufficient to express the full extent of their intellectual faculties, but on the contrary, in very many cases, we should substitute for "half" the word *whole*, which is alone adequate to the reality, at all events it (the latter) is a nearer approximation to the truth than the former. Still, we must bear in mind that, contrasted with man, these faculties are but limited and confined, as to their sphere of action, for the most part within a very narrow range; perhaps in the generality of cases they will bear comparison with the mental endowments of a child three or four years of age; or in some respects the analogy would be a nearer approach to a reality if we compare the *mind* of these animals to that of a man under the influence of some forms of insanity, in whom there is a constant succession of ill-connected ideas passing rapidly through his brain. This is the case with dogs for instance, but when under the influence of strong external impressions or sensations, they have the power of changing at will the current of their thoughts and fixing them on something definite for a greater or less time, as was the case with the woodsman's dog; but remove these sensations and then the analogy continues. Now an insane man, such as I allude to, possesses not the power to change at will his swiftly passing ideas, and to substitute others in their stead, however strong the impressions or sensations may

be. An idiot can only be contrasted, as regards intelligence, with the young mammalia, as for example with a pup or human infant where instinct alone exists, which thus early in life is directed solely towards the supply of its nutritive wants. An intelligent dog is in this respect placed as far above an idiot as *man* is superior to the whole canine race. I do not mean to infer by speaking thus that the lower animals perform all their acts under the influence of an intelligent will; on the contrary, such a conclusion would be erroneous. They, and man also, have instinctive impulses incorporated with their very existence which, for the most part, are connected with their nutritive actions, and in the more matured animals the impulses become so amalgamated, as it were, with intelligence, that the line of demarkation cannot be definitely drawn between the two, and therefore, to study Instinct independently in this group we must do it in their early life.

MIND.

With this lengthy and very imperfect notice of the first division of my subject, I must now briefly discuss the second portion of it, or *Mind*.

Much that should properly come under this division has been already anticipated by the frequent allusions made to mental manifestations, in illustration of facts connected with instinct. I therefore may consistently abbreviate where it would otherwise have been necessary for me to have entered more into detail. Having no inclination to be lost in a metaphysical wilderness, I must confine myself, as was stated in my preliminary remarks, to the discussion of *Mind* as a branch of physiology.

Mind! What is it? is a question which I dare say every individual here present has at some period proposed to himself or others for the purpose of eliciting information and removing that misty veil behind which this great receptacle and source of all human knowledge lies concealed. Thought chases thought through mind itself, seeking for a satisfactory reply, yet none is found, and this hidden principle which has conceived the question and applied itself with all its subtle ingenuity to its solution, at length confesses its inability to reveal its true nature. In other words, the mind of man knows not itself. The physiologist, while he hesitates not to acknowledge his ignorance of the nature of that great principle, applies himself to the study of its manifestations or the phenomena peculiar to and emanating from it. Not so a class of philosophers named *materialists* from the nature of their belief. These men assume that mind is material, a principle composed of matter, as is its material tenement, the brain. Sophistry and argument, such as it is, have been exhausted in aid of this doctrine, and that, too, by men of no mean mental calibre. Common sense and reason, however, at once oppose and disprove an assumption so dangerous, which must appear evident to you after the term matter has been defined. By matter in philosophy is meant something that can be brought within the sphere of action of some one or other of our external senses, as sight, hearing, taste, smell or touch, so that an impression is made through the agency of one or more of these on the mind, by which it is enabled to have a just conception of its physical constitution or composition. Now while this act may be performed directly, as when I take up this candlestick, touch and vision combined give me a correct idea of it, and prove to me that it is a body possessed of extension and solidity; but very frequently we have to prove the existence of matter indirectly; in other words, we have to bring that which is not perceptible to any of our senses within range of their action. Thus, I can neither see, hear, taste, smell or feel the atmosphere of this room, yet a very simple experiment will prove to you that such exists, as when I plunge an inverted tumbler into this basin you will perceive that no water enters it. Why not? Because it is a law in natural philosophy that where one body is another cannot be, or where matter of one description exists there nothing else material can be at one and the same time. Then this experiment demonstrates distinctly the presence of a certain something that is material, which we here term atmosphere, for if the tumbler contained nothing, that is

nothing material, the water of the basin, in obedience to a well known law of nature, would instantly enter it. The same could be indirectly and quickly proved in another way, viz., by igniting phosphorus in a closed vessel containing air. Now, although we are conscious of its existence, the principle of *mind*, which I call *immaterial*, has not, and cannot, either directly or indirectly, be brought within the sphere of action of any one of our external senses. In the common acceptation of the words, no living being has either seen, heard, felt or tasted it, hence the fallacy of the material doctrine. Figuratively speaking, however, we daily see it in the arts, *hear* it in the sciences, *feel* its power as we view the works of nature and contrast her human offspring with the inferior members of the animal creation, and when in the pursuit of knowledge we hourly *taste* its sweets, as the *effects of mind* become revealed to us, through the medium of the mental labor and efforts of others of our species.

The philosopher is aware that there are two principles in nature—*Heat* and *Electricity*. How does he know this? By their effects on physical agents, or in other words by their manifestations as displayed by certain trains of phenomena peculiar to each; but does he possess any knowledge of the *principle* or *source* from which emanate these phenomena? No, he does not. Just so it is with the metaphysician, or the mental physiologist. He feels, is conscious, in short is morally certain that a principle which he designates Mind holds its seat in the brain of man but he knows this only by its phenomena or mental manifestations; further than this he knows nothing. In speaking thus my object has been merely to establish that mind is not matter in the common acceptation of that term, and in so doing to confess (beyond this) my utter ignorance of its nature. *The brain* is the only seat of *mind*, and without this, its material tenement, none of the phenomena peculiar to it can be demonstrated. Could we but fancy man as an adult, without this seat of wisdom, we would have to picture him a mere creature of instinctive impulses, allied to the lowest animals of creation. Children have actually been born, and have even lived for some weeks, in whom no brain existed. They for the most part lay motionless and exhibited not even nutritive instinct, but when food was placed in their mouths it was swallowed under the influence of a power inherent in the spinal cord termed "Reflex Action."

The brain of man is larger in proportion to the remainder of his structure than we find it elsewhere in the animal kingdom. This accords well with that general principle to which I have before alluded, viz., that in the same ratio as the nervous system increases do we find intelligence and reason developed.

The human infant, as I have before stated, is an instinctive animal, its impulses being almost altogether subservient to its nutrition. In it mind resembles the vegetable germ or seed, which being placed in circumstances favorable to its growth, strikes its roots deep into the earth and sends upwards its stem, branching in all directions, adding variety and beauty to a landscape that would otherwise be characterized by sameness—and in proportion to the amount of nourishment it receives from its ever active rootlets does it produce fruit and display its extent of surface and beauties of foliage. Now, the child inherits by creation the germ, or seed of Mind, which in infancy lies dormant, as it were, Instinct then predominating. Time, which changes all things, here works wonders, for ere long this germ is observed to exhibit evident signs of vitality and growth. Its nourishment is education which speedily develops mental phenomena, and in so doing displaces instinct, or renders it less perceptible. Gradually, and in proportion to the amount of nutriment received, does this figurative plant increase, until at length the majestic tree is formed, not perfect, never stationary, but always growing. Its summit, where is it? Why, it reaches far beyond the clouds, yes, even without the range of telescopic eyes, into space indefinite. The mariner may sound, and fail to reach the ocean's bed. The miner in search of mineral wealth may approach earth's centre;

'tis but an approach and ere these have anticipated means to effect their ends, the deep and descending roots of this figurative plant have accomplished it. Who can measure the branches of this tree, extending as they do north and south beyond the poles, east and west into space, leaving far behind the extremes of latitude? *One only!* and He is not a human mathematician. What description of fruit is it that this incomprehensible tree brings forth? The reply is embraced in that short but comprehensive word "knowledge," which is obtained alike from its summit, as it penetrates the starry firmament, its roots which search the bowels of the earth, and its evergreen branches as they extend themselves beyond the four cardinal points into space interminable. Then, as grows the forest tree from a diminutive little seed, so it is that *Mind* is developed from a little germ which always increases and produces its peculiar fruit "knowledge," so grateful and pleasant that rational man has but to taste its sweets and then he thirsts for more, and ceases not to drink until vitality is lost to mind's material tenement. What can be more interesting and instructive than to watch the growth of this mental germ, tracing it from infancy to manhood, and witnessing the diversity of its actions, contrasted with those of mere instinct, observing the gradual development of its perceptive, reflective and abstractive powers, until at length the mental tree in its maturity displays its full capabilities in the production of its peculiar fruit. 'Tis in this way, and this way only, that man can study the *human mind*, and learn to draw the line of demarkation between it and that possessed by the lower animals.

The locality of mind being established it is easy to comprehend how it is that mental actions exert their influence over the whole animal economy. The explanation is as follows: Continuous with the brain are the spinal marrow and numerous nerves, which latter are minutely distributed over every part and parcel of the body. These nerves arising either directly from the brain or indirectly through the medium of the spinal cord are of a fibrous nature, i.e. thread-like, and contained within each sheath are two distinct sets of fibres which run all the way from the brain to their points of distribution, without communicating with each other. One set of these fibres, *the sensory*, convey all the sensations, natural or adventitious, from the periphery, i.e., the extreme points of distribution, to the centre, or brain, by which the mind is made conversant with and informed as to the nature of the sensation, and then it (the Mind) acts on the instant, through the other set, or motor fibres, which are under the influence of the will, and convey its dictates to the part from whence the sensation had its origin. For instance, if you burn your finger, the sensory fibres convey the sensation to the brain where the mind comprehends and feels the injury, and quicker than thought it acts through the agency of the motor fibres on the muscles of the forearm, which remove it from further injury.

This general and brief notice of the relationship existing between the "thinking principle" and the nervous system must suffice for the present, as my time is too limited to permit me to enter more into detail. The nervous system then is the medium by which the mind rules and governs the body. Either being affected by disease reacts on the other, and it is in this way that, the corporeal man being prostrated, oftentimes produces mental debility, as well in the strongest as in the weakest minds, and *vice versa*. A fever may place a philosopher on a level with the lowest quadruped, by undermining his source of thought, and he who in health could compose a "Paradise Lost," or govern a nation with gigantic mind, cannot now concentrate or associate his ideas on any one object; vague and ill connected thoughts chase each other, as in dreaming, or in some forms of insanity, through a mind diseased; reason is dethroned, delirium reigns. It is the entire absence of or the comparatively undeveloped state of Mind in the lower animals that enables them to recover from severe injuries, which if inflicted on man would speedily terminate his existence. *Mental Emotions* acting

through the agency of the nervous system produce most singular results on the animal economy, even when in a state of health. Thus "anger" in some individuals has frequently thrown portions of the muscular system into violent spasmodic action. A case of this nature occurred not very long ago in the practice of a medical friend, in which, by indulging in an excess of passion, a man was converted into a complete arch, and rested for the space of more than an hour on his heels and the back of his head—the muscles of the back being the ones implicated. The habit of yielding to ungovernable rage often produces temporary maniacal excitement, and sometimes even permanent insanity. Here the balance between the feelings and the judgment, which is so beautifully adjusted in the well ordered mind of man, is disturbed. All the organic functions of the body are influenced, more or less, by the mental state. Thus a nurse or mother by indulging in excesses of anger or grief may either destroy or light up serious disease in the infant she nourishes and cherishes. Professor Alison mentions in his lectures the following case in illustration of this fact: "A carpenter fell into a quarrel with a soldier billeted in his house, and was set upon by the latter with his drawn sword. The wife of the carpenter at first trembled from fear and terror, and then suddenly threw herself furiously between the combatants, wrested the sword from the soldier's hand, broke it in pieces and threw it away. During the tumult some neighbors came in and separated the men. While in this state of strong excitement the mother took up her child from the cradle where it lay playing, and in the most perfect health, never having had a moment's illness; she gave it the breast, and in so doing sealed its fate. In a few minutes the infant became restless, panted and sank dead upon its mother's bosom. The physician who was instantly called in found the child lying in the cradle as if asleep and with its features undisturbed; but all his resources were fruitless—it was irrecoverably gone." Other cases analagous to this have been observed in the human species; but they are of more frequent occurrence among the lower animals. Grief, as you all know, generally causes a rapid flow of the lachrymal secretion (or tears), but if the emotion be intense, tears do not respond to it, because the mental shock acts so powerfully on the lachrymal glands through the medium of the nerves supplying them, as to deprive them of their natural action, and in these extreme cases it is only when the grief is abated that the tears flow. Insanity and idiocy have often been produced by this emotion. Bad news and sorrow have frequently been known to change the odor of the breath and color of the hair.

Fear produces results on the animal economy nearly allied to those of grief, sometimes completely prostrating both mind and body. This was fearfully demonstrated, to the destruction of thousands of human beings, during the time of cholera in Europe and America; for very generally those persons who were alarmed and dreaded the disease took it on the slightest exposure and died. Alison mentions several cases in proof of this. One was that of a gentleman who had not been in any way exposed to the influence of the disease. One day whilst walking along a comparatively unfrequented street he came suddenly in sight of the "death cart" and instantly dropped down, unable to move; the cholera attacked him immediately and in an hour he was dead. This person had from the first appearance of the disease in Edinburgh shown the utmost fear of it and ere long added another name to the list of victims. In all these cases both mind and body have been prostrated by the emotion of fear to such an extent that reaction on the accession of disease is beyond the bounds of possibility. The absence of fear caused by familiarity with the ills of mankind, is the great secret of the medical man's escaping this and diseases of a contagious nature. This emotion frequently alters and even checks, as in grief, the secretions of the body, as for example the saliva. In some parts of India this is brought practically to bear in the detection of theft. If a master suspects a servant of having stolen his property he fills the mouths of all his domestics with rice. Those who are innocent, not being under the

influence of fear and a guilty conscience, have the usual quantity, or near it, of saliva mixed with the rice, which is soon quite wet. The real offender on the contrary delivers up his in a comparatively dry state, because in him, guilt and fear of detection have so affected his mind that it reacts through the medium of the nervous system on the salivary glands, and either partially or wholly stops the secretion, and consequently he is *scientifically* detected. All the emotions, fear, grief, anger, joy, etc., differ from instinct, and yet are but partially subject to the will; consequently they hold a kind of intermediate position. The mind conceives the peculiar sensation or feeling producing them, yet it is only capable of partially subjecting them to its influence and sometimes not even at all. Thus, grief and fear may be so intense as not to be in the slightest degree under the command of the will, oftener however a volitional effort may control them to a certain extent.

After exercise the physical man requires repose; with mind it is the same, and it is more than probable that whilst sleeping soundly there is a complete cessation of thought, but, when the mental sleep is less profound dreaming and somnambulism occur, these being phenomena concerning which we know but little. In dreaming the will has not the slightest control over the train of ideas that are rapidly passing through the brain, consequently our minds are then closely allied to those of the lower animals and some insane persons. It is a singular and inexplicable fact that in this state, thought, if it may be so called, is much more active than when we are awake, as I daresay you have all noticed at times that a succession of ideas (generally having relation to something with which the mind has been previously occupied) which, in a waking state, would require hours for their completion, are gone through and ended in the brief period of a few minutes. In *somnambulism* the ideas are more fixed and connected, so much so that at times a conversation may be carried on and answers elicited to questions which have reference to the particular train of thought with which the mind is then occupied. Still, volition, under these circumstances, appears to exercise but a very limited control over the partially conscious individual. Persons in this state often rise from their beds and walk even long distances, without having any after knowledge of it, and sometimes perform most dangerous feats, which, in their waking moments, they would hardly dare attempt, or if they did, would probably fail in their performance. *Spectral illusions* or seeing things when in a healthy state that have no actual existence are of common occurrence. There is no certainty regarding their cause, but it is probable that they are the result of congestion or unnatural fullness of the blood vessels supplying the optic nerves, which by pressure impair their function. Professor Traill knew a man, an old army captain who had served under Wolfe at the siege of Quebec, in whom these spectra were of a singular character. One morning while lying awake in bed he saw the whole of that battle from its commencement to its end pictured on the wall of his room. The death of his general and the acts that he himself had performed were prominently before him, as indeed was every particular and feature of that sanguinary scene. Thinking that it was a symptom of approaching insanity he sent immediately for Dr. Traill, who at once detected the nature of the illusion and satisfactorily allayed his fears. In "*delirium tremens*," a disease consequent on habitual drunkenness, spectral illusions are of common occurrence, but these are accounted for by the existence at the time of a morbid state of the brain. *Insanity*, or mental disease, has already been frequently alluded to in illustration of certain facts connected with my subject. It takes so many forms and originates from such varied causes that no satisfactory account of it could be given within my narrow limits; therefore the references already made to it, must suffice for the present occasion.

When concluding my remarks on Instinct I stated that some of the higher mammals, as dogs, horses, elephants, etc., were possessed of

Intellectual endowments differing from those of man, not in *kind* but in *degree*, and which bear the same relation to mind's material tenement, in them, as in the human species. Before finishing I will briefly consider this difference in degree in some of its most prominent features by which the minds of man and beast will be displayed in contrast.

I am not aware that any of the lower animals ever again acknowledge their young as their offspring, or show the slightest preference for their society after they have been once fairly thrown on their own resources. How different is this from what we have all witnessed in our own species. A mother may, from long absence, forget the appearance and manners of her offspring, but in this respect only is she forgetful. Her affection and solicitude for her children commence with the first breath *they* draw and cease with *her* last.

The lower animals exhibit occasionally memory to a considerable extent, thus dogs and elephants have recognized individuals to whom they have been attached after a separation of years. In them this mental act appears to be for the most part blended with and subordinate to another phenomenon of Mind, viz., affection. But what is this contrasted with the memory of a Bloomfield who, when a poor shoemaker working in a garret, composed, revised and corrected his "Farmer's Boy" without committing a single line of it to paper. The well developed memory of a man knows no limits, acknowledges no bounds. Not satisfied with a knowledge of earth and its contents, it draws into its vortex and there imprisons the ocean with its myriads of inhabitants—the arched canopy above us with its innumerable radiant bodies. All these can it contain and govern as it were by the will, calling forth at pleasure through its ever open doors what and which of these it chooses; yet, notwithstanding this immensity of knowledge, the enquiring mind thirsts and craves for more. In short, man's memory can be contrasted only as to elasticity and extent with man's imagination. By its instrumentality *he*, while preparing for the present is not forgetful of the future, of which the lower animals are entirely ignorant; and to-day make no preparation for the morrow, unless *Instinct* urge them to the act.

The natural philosopher quotes as one of the greatest examples of extension and divisibility of matter the following: A single grain of gold may be hammered by a gold beater until it will cover fifty square inches, and each square inch may be divided into 40,000 visible parts, and if the remaining 49 square inches be similarly divided this single grain of golden matter will give a total of two million parts, which may be seen by the naked eye. It has also been calculated that 16 ounces of gold, which in the form of a cube would not measure one inch and a quarter in its side, will completely gild a quantity of silver wire sufficient to surround the earth. This is certainly material extension and divisibility carried to a wonderful extent, but apply the figurative gold beater education to mental extension and divisibility and the material example above alluded to will bear comparison with it only as a grain of sand can be contrasted as to size with the globe we inhabit.

Above all other characteristics of Mind in its most elevated degree, is *Speech*, with which, by creation, the human family was alone endowed, all other animals being deprived of it and consequently of the means of expressing by articulate sounds their feelings, and limited thoughts. It is the possession of speech which in man displays in most vivid colors his powers of Mind. In fine, language is the artist which gives to the landscape Mind, already diversified and picturesque, its finishing touches and makes man a moral, social and intellectual being admirably adapted to play his part on the stage of life and to govern by his superior wisdom those lower in the scale of animal existence than himself.

It is a singular fact, and well worthy of note, as it forms a link in a chain of evidence which tends to prove what some have labored hard

to disprove, viz., that men of all nations, no matter what their language may be, have one innate tendency, nothing analogous to which exists elsewhere than in the human family, and which we might term an instinct, were it not that the designation is generally applied to propensities of a much lower character. I allude to that which seems universal in man, to believe in some *unseen existence*. This may take various forms but it is never entirely absent from any race or nation, although like other innate tendencies it may be deficient in individuals. Travellers have occasionally tried to refute this, but it is generally believed that they have done so on unsound premises. I will close these comparisons of degree in the intellectual endowments of man and beast by glancing hurriedly at the *educability* of the two. The dog, horse, monkey and elephant display among the lower animals the greatest susceptibility to mental improvement, yet how limited is its degree contrasted with that of man. The dog of the 19th century varies in this respect but little from those of its species which lived in the ninth century. Look to the history of man as a mental or intellectual being. Mark his present state in civilized Europe and contrast him with his progenitors of 1000 years since, then ask yourselves the question, what is it that has wrought a change so wonderful, an improvement so miraculous in his state? The reply will be forced upon you—the *educability of his Mind*. It may be asked in reference to this subject whether or not *Mind*, or rather I should say mental ability, is hereditary? Viewing this question within narrow limits, or as it relates to individuals, it would appear doubtful; but looking at it in connection with the history of nations we can have little hesitation in replying in the affirmative. Every person is aware that physical endowments are, like certain diseases, hereditary, as for example, the features of the countenance. Then, if this be the case, why may not the same law be applicable to the features of the mind? Analogy derived from the lower animals is also in favor of the affirmative view of the case, as it has been frequently remarked that the offspring of intelligent dogs and others of the mammalia are generally more readily trained and educated than the young of the more stupid, so to speak, of the same species. Applying this conclusion to the *educability* of the most mentally degraded of the human family, the African bushman, or New Holland savage, these as nations would require centuries to reach the European in point of civilization, with its moral and intellectual accompaniments.

There are more than 800,000,000 members of the human family scattered over the surface of the earth, and of this immense number no two are physically alike. Diversity as great, or even more marked than this, characterizes our species when mentally considered, for each and every mind has its own peculiar mould, and differs in some particular feature or features, from that of its fellows. It is to this mental diversity that we of the 19th century are indebted for the immense and varied accumulation of knowledge which meets us at every step—the greater portion of which we can lay claim to as our birthrights. Nature, the arts and sciences are not now, as formerly, either hidden from our sight by the veil of "universal ignorance," or placed beyond our pecuniary means; on the contrary, the efforts of those who have preceded us on life's changing stage, have gradually, and to a great extent removed this veil, and portrayed them in all their wonderful beauties to our admiring gaze, and that, too, in such a manner as to be within reach of all who have the inclination to drink from the spring of knowledge. "Money," it has been said, "is the root of all evil." While I am willing to admit that it often does incalculable injury to individuals I think I can name a worse root to the tree of evil. It is *mental lethargy* or *idleness*, the great clog to education, and the true source of by far the larger proportion of crime, unhappiness and miserable poverty which characterize the present age. The acquirement of useful and scientific information is, on the contrary, one of the

greatest sources of happiness which man possesses, and when the mind is thus occupied, of course in moderation, there is nothing more conducive to health, for it (the mind), then reacts upon and exerts a wonderful influence over the corporeal man, imparting to his entire organization its healthy and happy tone. An anecdote told of an old and experienced sea captain may here be apropos. This person when at sea never allowed his men to be a moment idle—"constant employment" was his motto. One day his mate came to him and said, "I can find nothing more for the hands to do, sir." "What, nothing to do?" replied his commander; "then something must be found for them to do." He then put question after question to the first officer in order to see if everything had been done, to which the invariable reply was "Yes, sir." At last, when fairly at his wit's end, a bright idea struck him, and on the instant he cried out, "Set all hands to work to scour the anchor." Now this man was a philosopher although it is probable he was ignorant of the fact, for he was practically conversant with the effects of idleness on the human constitution, and knew that it produced unhappiness and discontent; and like a skilful physician he prescribed a remedy—a kind of *friction pill*, which in this case produced healthy action of the body, and secondary to this, a like tone of mind, dispersing discontent and mischief, and in their stead substituting a happy cheerfulness in the minds of his crew.

There are many who, lacking the inclination to seek information and being afflicted with this lethargy or idleness, would screen themselves under the cloak of mental inability; to such as these one might with propriety say, "Scour the anchor," or in other words tell them to apply the friction of education to their minds, which will very speedily raise to its proper level this imaginary obstacle, and render the path of knowledge smooth. Is it not a pleasure, I would ask, for the carpenter, as he follows his occupation, to know that the vegetable production he is moulding by his art to suit his purpose, was created originally to serve a wise end in nature—that it had inherent in it the power of selecting its food from the earth and atmosphere, and that in life it served perhaps to aid in the support of his own vitality, by generating in its leaves oxygen gas, or that principle, which, when taken into the lungs vitalizes and purifies the blood? Does it not afford the blacksmith equal gratification, while physically exerting himself at the forge, to cause his thoughts to recur to the natural history of the mineral production he is shaping into useful form, and to follow its changes by the arts, from the time it left its native bed until moulded beneath his hammer? Most assuredly it does. Besides, the man who thus obtains and exercises a knowledge of nature, the arts and sciences, is not only intellectually elevated above the ignorant, but he is also *morally* their superior. I say *morally* because I cannot but think that when the Almighty placed the germ of mind in the human brain and gave it the powers of extension, that He wished its possessor to exercise these powers and not to allow them to remain in a dormant state, but to grow, as does the oak, from a diminutive seed, until it becomes the majestic tree.

In short, ladies and gentlemen, 'tis education that forms the mind. 'tis the mind that makes the man, and it is the man, plurally and collectively considered, that makes the nation; hence it is the food and fruit of mind (or education and knowledge) that give character and power to empires. What is it, I would ask, that has made England what she is, the most powerful kingdom on the habitable globe? We must all admit that it is *education*. There man is measured not so much by his broad acres, the depth of his purse, or the appearance of his exterior, as by his mental calibre—in proof of which I need but call your attention to Elihu Burritt, the learned blacksmith of the United States who, during his recent visit to Britain, was treated by her sons among all classes from the highest to the lowest as if he were now what it is not improbable he may become, the ruler of a nation, instead of being the master of a forge.

The relative value of physical, earthly or material endowments and mental acquirements, whether the latter be the result of self-education or otherwise, cannot be better or more beautifully expressed than in the words of one of the ablest and best of philosophers, Dr. Watts, who, when hearing an impertinent remark, having reference to his own personal appearance, on the spur of the moment replied, in the spirit of poetry and reproof:

“ Were I so tall to reach the sky,
Or grasp the ocean in my span;
I would be measured by my mind,
Mind is the standard of the Man.”

APPENDIX "C."

NOTES OF SOME UNUSUAL CASES OF DISEASE, INVOLVING PRIMARILY, THE SKIN COVERING THE MAMMARY GLAND.

By D. McN. PARKER, M.D., HALIFAX, N.S.

Read before the Nova Scotia Medical Association, July, 1889.

Many years ago I met with a case of mammary skin disease possessing rare characteristics, which interested me at the time and gave me some trouble to know where to place it, pathologically. It exhibited some of the prominent external features of Idiopathic Cheloid, and had a general resemblance in its early stages to the two cases of this disease to which I shall presently call your attention. A few years later I met with a second case commencing much in the same way, with very similar conditions and symptoms. In both superficial ulceration was present peculiar in appearance, erratic, and slow in its progress.

In the last case this ulcerative process spread itself over a larger area of skin than that covering the gland, and was occasionally attended by troublesome hemorrhages. I have no notes of these cases, and my memory does not sufficiently serve me to enable me to enter into minute details, but I recollect that the only work in which I could find anything approaching a correct representation of their anatomical character was "Paget's Surgical Pathology." The article which deals with the subject is more accurately descriptive of the appearance and progress of the first than of the second case.

I now quote the paragraph in full; it occurs in the chapter relating to cancer of the breast. "A second series of hard cancers, deviating from the usual forms, consists of cases in which the nipple and the skin or other tissues of the mammary gland are peculiarly affected." I omit his statement relating to the nipple, and give you the words he uses in connection with the skin. "In other cases we find the skin over and about the mammary gland exceedingly affected. In a wide and constantly, though slowly, widening area, the integument becomes hard, thick, brawny and almost inflexible. The surface of the skin is generally florid or dusky with congestion of blood; and the orifices of the follicles appear enlarged, as if one saw it magnified—it looks like leather. The portion thus affected has an irregular outline, beyond which, cord-like offshoots, or isolated cancerous tubercles are sometimes seen, like those which are common as secondary formations. The mammary gland itself in such cases may be the seat of any form of hard cancer; but I think that at last it generally suffers atrophy, becoming whether cancerous or not, more and more thin and dry, while the skin contracts and is drawn tightly on the bony walls of the chest, and then becomes firmly fixed to them."

In connection with these two cases I have only to add that I declined to operate and both died after prolonged illnesses. My impression is that at the period of death they were from 40 to 45 years of age.

The cases now about to be the subject of remark differ materially from those just referred to. These also, are rare, and as I do not find this special form of disease included in our medical nomenclature I shall take the liberty to designate it for the time being with a name.

which will at once suggest its anatomical character, nature, and termination, viz., *Malignant Cheloid*. The variety of cheloid with which we are most familiar, is the Cicatrical or Traumatic, which frequently follows burns, scalds, certain eruptions, and local strumous affections. It is, however, to the more rare variety, the *Idiopathic or Spontaneous*, that I would now ask your attention for a few minutes. This very *interesting skin disease has but seldom crossed my path, and I have had but limited opportunities of studying it clinically, consequently I hesitate to take ground which seems to be opposed to the teaching of several recognized authorities. But, being persuaded that there is a type of the disease which, beyond all doubt is malignant, I deem it my duty to give expression to that opinion. The profession generally appear to have been impressed with the belief that it is comparatively unimportant, and is exempt from danger. Distinguished dermatologists and others assume this attitude in relation to the question. For example Erasmus Wilson says: "Cheloid rarely gives rise to much inconvenience, or attains any considerable magnitude, and when left to itself progresses very slowly, or remains stationary for a number of years, or for life, and we have known it to disappear spontaneously. Its subjective symptoms are of no great severity, being limited to itching, tingling, and smarting, and more or less uneasiness in moving the limbs, or from pressure when sitting or lying in bed. It has no tendency to desquamation or ulceration."*

Squire says: "Spontaneous Keloid once developed is apt to continue. Sometimes, although rarely, its color may become altered, and the swelling subside, but some traces of it always remain. The Cicatrical variety generally disappears completely of itself. The disappearance or diminution of keloid tumors is effected by interstitial absorption; they have no tendency to ulceration. Neither variety of keloid exerts any perceptible influence on the general health."

The lessons taught by the cases about to be submitted to the Society, have forced me to arrive at very different conclusions, and, I think when you have considered the testimony and the facts connected with these cases you will be disposed to adopt the idea that there is a type of Idiopathic Cheloid, which is not only serious in its nature, but very dangerous to life.

In Ziemssen's article on Keloid, Virchow is referred to as entertaining the opinion that there are varieties of the disease which must be considered malignant. I give the quotation as it appears in the text. "In close connection with the symptoms of keloid is its diagnosis, for we often encounter difficulties in the correct determination of both morbid processes on account of the numerous and manifold relationships of the idiopathic and cicatrical tumor. Virchow, in view of the observation that some tumid formations termed keloid are of canceroid (cancerous), others again of fibromatous or sarcomatous and even syphilitic nature, has proposed to separate from keloid altogether all growths springing from cicatrices, and to apply this term only to the formations of spontaneous origin or arising from certain pathological processes. Microscopic examination, however, failed to bear out this view in the sense desired, inasmuch as the same structure was not always found in keloids of spontaneous origin, and according to the results obtained, keloid had sometimes to be included among the fibromatous, sometimes among the sarcomatous tumors. For in the one case the formation is mainly composed of connective tissue, in analogy with the fibroma; in the other cases again the great tendency to relapses, the intractability of the affection, and the exceedingly profuse cell proliferations of the neoplasm are factors which pointed to a relationship with sarcoma." From this extract it will be evident to you that Virchow and the writer of the article in Ziemssen, while differing on some histological and microscopic points, are in accord as to the existence of a variety of cheloid, which pathologically is the very opposite of "innocent."

Let me now refer to a very instructive case occurring in the practice

of Dr. Gossip of Windsor, which I saw in consultation with him, in December, 1886, and subsequently in April, 1887. Dr. Gossip had closely watched its progress in the interval between these dates and had come to the conclusion that it approached nearer in character to Cheloid, than any other form of diseases known to him. It certainly had all the anatomical features of the idiopathic variety. But, as on the occasion of my last visit, it was evident it was running its course to a fatal termination (and I had not then read the article in Ziemssen) I found it difficult to reconcile this fact with such statements as I have quoted from recognized authorities, the more so because of the apparent absence of any other form of disease than that which was tangible and visible, seated in the skin, and subcutaneous tissue of the thorax. I have before me a letter from Dr. Gossip giving a brief history of this case, the contents of which I now submit to the Society.

He says: "I first saw Mrs. C— with the disease in question, about the beginning of December, 1886, and a few days after you saw her in Halifax. As far as I can ascertain there was no spot on the breast until a few days before I saw it, but, as far back as the April previous (about eight months), Mrs. C— was continually complaining of a numbness and coldness of the left arm, from the shoulder downwards. I may say that this anæsthetic condition of the arm seems to have left her after the disease became established in the breast. The disease when we first saw it was limited to the upper part of the left breast, which was of a thick, leathery consistence evidently affecting the whole skin and cellular tissue, but I don't think at any time it extended to the true glandular substance. The skin affected was covered with a deep, erythematous blush, or rather something more permanent and pronounced than a blush, and the color was not effaced on pressure. On palpation the feeling conveyed to the touch was that of handling a piece of sole leather, even to the sense of crackling when pressed or kneaded. The disease at first spread very gradually and continually, but afterwards more rapidly, extending to the abdominal parietes over the stomach and under the arm to the back. During the later course of the disease the increase was not continuous, as at first, but isolated patches would appear in advance, which would coalesce and then join the parent body. At the time of death the left breast, chest, side, and back, and also the right mamma were affected. At no time was there a sign of pus forming in any cavity, but the cutis vera, over the left mamma (the part first attacked) took on a sloughing condition but the ulceration never extended through the whole thickness of the skin. During the entire progress of the disease Mrs. C— suffered but little. Occasionally she would have some pain of a neuralgic character in the back and down the thigh. There was no particular constitutional disturbance, but she gradually lost strength, and towards the last a drowsiness which gradually deepened into coma intervened.

"I could not say that there were any complications; no paralysis, no albumen in urine, slight anasarca of the feet and ankles, no symptoms of cardiac disease that I remember. Mrs. C— died June 9th, so that the duration of her disease was about seven or eight months."

The succinct and valuable description of the case here given by Dr. Gossip well depicts the main features and symptoms of spontaneous cheloid, and I submit it rather than my own notes, because I saw the case but seldom and had no opportunity of watching its progress as it pursued its course to a fatal issue.

On the 1st day of May last a lady (sent by Dr. Primrose of Annapolis County) called at my office to consult me. She was tall and rather stout. Her weight was about 180 lbs. Age 56. She married rather late in life and had two children. Her family history was good. There was no record of either strumous or malignant disease. A few years since she suffered from a sharp attack of cystitis, which readily yielded to treatment. This was the only form of pelvic disease she had had. The stomach and digestive organs were acting satisfactorily.

as were the other abdominal organs, as far as could be ascertained. The appetite was good. She stated she had for several years a bronchial cough attended with a limited amount of expectoration of mucus. The principal inconvenience connected with this affection was shortness of breath, which was becoming increasingly troublesome, even on slight exertion. The shoulders were high and round. The upper part of the right posterior chest was, however, much more prominent than the left. There was emphysematous respiration most marked in the right lung, where the percussion note was clear, in contrast with that of the left in which the dullness was most distinct over the middle and upper portions, front and rear; moist rales were heard in both lungs. There was a very noticeable contraction of the left half of the chest, and the expansion of the upper and middle portions of this lung was very much impaired. It was evident that this lung (the left), was the site of extensive fibroid degeneration. The heart's sounds were normal but weak, and were heard most distinctly about the central portion of the sternum. There was nothing abnormal observed connected with the nervous system, special or general. The skin as a whole was inactive and dry. The diseased spot in that portion covering the left mammary gland first attracted attention about the last of September, 1888, in consequence of a slight irritation and itching which became localized there.

On exposing the front portion of the chest I was struck with the increased size of the left breast when compared with the right, and the peculiar appearance of the skin covering it. There was a fixed erythematous redness over the surface of this skin equal in extent to the area of the gland. The color was a deep red hue and disappeared, but only for an instant, on pressure. The diseased skin was considerably but evenly elevated above the line of that which was healthy. It was slightly wrinkled and to the touch dense and firm. The subcutaneous cellular tissue was hypertrophied and very intimately connected with the corium; but the mammary gland was apparently uninvolved. Manipulating the part produced neither pain nor discomfort. The nipple, as in Dr. Gossip's case, was healthy, not retracted, although such was apparently the case, but this was due to the elevation of the skin around it. There was a deep furrow between the two elevated portions of cellular tissue and skin, running from the margin of the breast into the left axillary region. At the bottom of this "furrow" the skin (in shape like a narrow ribbon), was undergoing the same overgrowth of its connective tissue which marked that covering the breast. She said the affected part had never received any injury or bruise beyond that which may have been caused by the pressure of the steel busk of her corsets. The general glandular system, as far as could be ascertained, was quite free from disease.

My diagnosis was idiopathic cheloid, complicated with pulmonary fibroid degeneration. I declined to interfere surgically and gave an unfavorable prognosis. She had been taking arsenic before I saw her, and although, personally, I had seen no success following the use of "Chian turpentine" in the treatment of malignant disease I advised Dr. Primrose to try it and to use externally "Pond's Extract," (i.e., Hamamelis), and if after trial no improvement resulted, to administer the perchloride of mercury, and apply the local remedies suggested by Wilson in his brief article on cheloid in Quain's Medical Dictionary.

I saw this lady a second time on the 13th of June. Her pulse was 100 and the temperature $99\frac{1}{2}$, the same as on May 1st. The breathing was shorter and more difficult. The only other change worthy of note was the extension across the sternum to the margin of the right breast, of a network of capillaries, giving the surface of the skin there the same red tint to which I have already called your attention. This condition extended also under the arm and transversely across the left chest to the angle of the scapula, but hypertrophic changes in the skin were not observable to any marked degree.

In Dr. Primrose's correspondence connected with this case he informed me that several years ago he had under his charge a woman aged 50 similarly affected. The disease first attacked the right breast, crossed the sternum to the left, and from thence extended to the left side and arm. The latter became greatly swollen and painful. There was no ulceration. Its course was rapid and terminated in death at the expiration of twelve months.

The anatomical characters of cheloid and the nature of its development are clearly and well stated by Erasmus Wilson, as follows: "At its first development cheloma occupies the fibrous portion of the corium. As it increases in bulk it pushes the vascular layer outwards and stretches the corpus papillare, obliterating the capillary network more or less completely. In its aggregate form, when it presents itself as a flat plate raised for a quarter of an inch above the level of the adjoining skin, and sinking to a similar extent into the corium, it has the appearance of being tied down by strong cords or roots at either end and frequently overlaps the healthy skin along its borders. In this state it is seen to be composed of strong, fibrous bands closely interlaced with each other, and enveloped by a smooth, transparent, pinkish layer, in which may be detected a scanty vascular plexus converging to venules which sink between the meshes of the fibrous structure. Around the circumference of one of these larger, flattened tumors, such as is commonly met with on the sternum, and measuring several inches in diameter, there will generally be observed a few scattered knots. These are developed in the fibrous sheath of the arteries at a short distance from the mass, and being thus linked to the central growth are subsequently drawn into the focus of the tumor. And the development of the so-called roots is explained by the propagation of the proliferating process, by the coats and sheaths of the blood vessels communicating with the central tumor."

I have not had the opportunity of observing the disease in all its phases, or of watching its progress at short intervals, as the cases I have seen came from a distance, and almost immediately returned to their homes, but the anatomical characters and process of development just quoted from Wilson, closely and accurately correspond with the main *external conditions* noticed by myself occasionally, but frequently by the gentlemen under whose immediate care they were.

It is stated that there is no tendency to ulceration in this disease. You will remember that in Dr. Gossip's case it was present but was superficial, not extending through the *cutis vera*.

The impression is conveyed by several writers on the subject of cheloid, that the skin immediately over the sternum (where there is but a limited amount of cellular tissue intervening between it and the bone), is the point where the disease generally has its origin, and very occasionally only allusion is made to its connection with the skin covering the mammary gland in females. The cases I have seen have been in women, and in all, the site of its first appearance was over the breast, as it was in the woman who died under the care of Dr. Primrose. The respiratory movements and the prominence of this organ in the female, subject it not unfrequently to irritation from pressure and friction, and to other injuries from without. And in a system predisposed to "fibrosis" this would seem to be a favorable site for its first appearance. In the cases which I have submitted for your consideration the disease was evidently constitutional—not local—not the result merely of a perverted condition of the nerve and vascular supply of a limited area or areas of skin, connected for the most part with the thorax, but these external conditions were beyond doubt "the local expressions of a constitutional disease."

In none of the cases seen by me did the unyielding and unelastic surface affected appear to materially interfere with chest expansion, and although fully recognizing the intimate relations existing between the skin, the respiratory, and circulatory systems, I cannot conceive that so

small a portion (small when compared with the whole cutaneous covering of the body), could, *per se*, produce results so serious as sometimes at least supervene on the invasion of this disease. We must look within the body and to other organs or systems for the additional factors concerned in effecting such fatal results as are here recorded.

In the case last mentioned the hyperplasia of the skin was, in all probability, long preceded by a fibroid condition of the pulmonary connective tissue, and, in this individual case I do not think it will be assuming too much to suggest that there is a connection between them, or in other words, that the same conditions which produced the pulmonary fibrosis were instrumental also in effecting the fibroid change in the skin of the thorax. (In this relation it will be well to remember the fact that in neither Dr. Gossip's nor Dr. Primrose's fatal cases were there symptoms of this or any other form of lung disease.) From the facts and statements which I have thus very imperfectly submitted to the society, I think it will be apparent to you that the matter is of sufficient importance to demand further and closer consideration, and it would be very gratifying to me if some of the gentlemen before me who are specially interested in pathology and histology should avail themselves of any opportunities that may offer to more thoroughly and exhaustively examine and report on this subject. Finally, let me add that one of the objects I have in view in thus taxing your time is to sound a note of warning in relation to prognosis. Some of my confrères present may not have met with "malignant cheloid," and, should it fall to their lot to come in contact with mammary cases of the disease in women who have passed the mid-period of life, I would say they should view the outlook as dreary and dark and anticipate little advantage from any form of treatment.